

## Hosker's Almanack (First Proof)



# Contents

<b>Part 1. The <i>Almanack</i> Proper</b>	<b>1</b>
Chapter 1. Primilis	3
Chapter 2. Sectilis	51
Chapter 3. Tertilis	99
Chapter 4. Quartilis	145
Chapter 5. Quintilis	187
Chapter 6. Sextilis	241
Chapter 7. September	281
Chapter 8. October	353
Chapter 9. November	393
Chapter 10. December	453
Chapter 11. Unodecember	511
Chapter 12. Duodecember	557
Chapter 13. Intercalaris	617
<b>Part 2. Supplementary Material</b>	<b>659</b>
Chapter 14. Ecclesiastes	661
Chapter 15. The Song of Solomon	675



## Part 1

# The *Almanack* Proper



## CHAPTER 1

# Primilis

### I.

#### I.1.

Thou still unravished bride of quietness,  
Thou foster-child of silence and slow time,  
Sylvan historian, who canst thus express  
A flowery tale more sweetly than our rhyme:  
What leaf-fringed legend haunts about thy shape  
Of deities or mortals, or of both,  
In TEMPE or the dales of Arcady?  
What men or gods are these? What maidens loth?  
What mad pursuit? What struggle to escape?  
What pipes and timbrels? What wild ecstasy?

Heard melodies are sweet, but those unheard  
Are sweeter; therefore, ye soft pipes, play on;  
Not to the sensual ear, but, more endeared,  
Pipe to the spirit ditties of no tone:  
Fair youth, beneath the trees, thou canst not leave  
Thy song, nor ever can those trees be bare;  
Bold lover, never, never canst thou kiss,  
Though winning near the goal yet, do not grieve;  
She cannot fade, though thou hast not thy bliss,  
For ever wilt thou love, and she be fair!

Ah, happy, happy boughs, that cannot shed  
Your leaves, nor ever bid the spring adieu;  
And, happy melodist, unwearied,  
For ever piping songs for ever new;  
More happy love! more happy, happy love!  
For ever warm and still to be enjoyed,

---

‘Ode on a Grecian Urn’, John Keats (1795 – 1821), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

For ever panting, and for ever young;  
 All breathing human passion far above,  
 That leaves a heart high-sorrowful and cloyed,  
 A burning forehead, and a parching tongue.

Who are these coming to the sacrifice?  
 To what green altar, O mysterious priest,  
 Lead'st thou that heifer lowing at the skies,  
 And all her silken flanks with garlands drest?  
 What little town by river or sea shore,  
 Or mountain-built with peaceful citadel,  
 Is emptied of this folk, this pious morn?  
 And, little town, thy streets for evermore  
 Will silent be; and not a soul to tell  
 Why thou art desolate, can e'er return.

O attic shape! Fair attitude! with brede  
 Of marble men and maidens overwrought,  
 With forest branches and the trodden weed;  
 Thou, silent form, dost tease us out of thought  
 As doth eternity: cold pastoral!  
 When old age shall this generation waste,  
 Thou shalt remain, in midst of other woe  
 Than ours, a friend to man, to whom thou say'st,  
 Beauty is truth, truth beauty – that is all  
 Ye know on earth, and all ye need to know.

## I.2.

Much have I travelled in the realms of gold,  
 And many goodly states & kingdoms seen;  
 Round many western islands have I been  
 Which bards in fealty to *Apollo* hold.  
 Oft of one wide expanse had I been told  
 That deep-browed *Homer* ruled as his demesne,  
 Yet did I never breathe its pure serene  
 Till I heard *Chapman* speak out loud & bold.  
 Then felt I like some watcher of the skies  
 When a new planet swims into his ken;  
 Or like stout *Cortez*, when with eagle eyes  
 He stared at the Pacific – and all his men

---

'On First Looking into Chapman's Homer', John Keats (1795 – 1821), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. Dr Gogarty wrote a rather good parody of this, entitled "On First Looking through Krafft-Ebing's *Psychopathia Sexualis*".



Looked at each other with a wild surmise –  
 Silent, upon a peak in Darien.

**I.3. Let the dead bury their dead.**

**II.**

**II.1.**

It little profits that an idle king,  
 By this still hearth, among these barren crags,  
 Matched with an aged wife, I mete & dole  
 Unequal laws unto a savage race,  
 That hoard & sleep & feed, and know not me.  
 I cannot rest from travel: I will drink  
 Life to the lees. All times I have enjoyed  
 Greatly, have suffered greatly, both with those  
 That loved me, and alone, on shore, and when  
 Through scudding drifts the rainy Hyades  
 Vexed the dim sea: I am become a name;  
 For always roaming with a hungry heart  
 Much have I seen and known; cities of men  
 And manners, climates, councils, governments,  
 Myself not least, but honoured of them all;  
 And drunk delight of battle with my peers,  
 Far on the ringing plains of windy TROY.  
 I am a part of all that I have met;  
 Yet all experience is an arch wherethrough  
 Gleams that untravelled world whose margin fades  
 For ever & forever when I move.  
 How dull it is to pause, to make an end,  
 To rust unburnished, not to shine in use!  
 As though to breathe were life! Life piled on life  
 Were all too little, and of one to me  
 Little remains: but every hour is saved  
 From that eternal silence, something more,  
 A bringer of new things; and vile it were  
 For some three suns to store & hoard myself,  
 And this grey spirit yearning in desire  
 To follow knowledge like a sinking star,  
 Beyond the utmost bound of human thought.

---

Matthew 8.22, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

‘Ulysses’, Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The last line of this poem is inscribed on the cross on Observation Hill in the Antarctic, which serves as a memorial to Captain Robert Scott.

This is my son, mine own *Telemachus*,  
To whom I leave the sceptre and the isle –  
Well-loved of me, discerning to fulfil  
This labour, by slow prudence to make mild  
A rugged people, and through soft degrees  
Subdue them to the useful & the good.  
Most blameless is he, centred in the sphere  
Of common duties, decent not to fail  
In offices of tenderness, and pay  
Meet adoration to my household gods,  
When I am gone. He works his work, I mine.

There lies the port; the vessel puffs her sail:  
There gloom the dark, broad seas. My mariners,  
Souls that have toiled & wrought & thought with me –  
That ever with a frolic welcome took  
The thunder & the sunshine, and opposed  
Free hearts, free foreheads – you & I are old;  
Old age hath yet his honour and his toil;  
Death closes all: but something ere the end,  
Some work of noble note, may yet be done,  
Not unbecoming men that strove with gods.  
The lights begin to twinkle from the rocks:  
The long day wanes: the slow moon climbs: the deep  
Moans round with many voices. Come, my friends,  
'Tis not too late to seek a newer world.  
Push off, and sitting well in order smite  
The sounding furrows; for my purpose holds  
To sail beyond the sunset, and the baths  
Of all the western stars, until I die.  
It may be that the gulfs will wash us down:  
It may be we shall touch the Happy Isles,  
And see the great *Achilles*, whom we knew.  
Though much is taken, much abides; and though  
We are not now that strength which in old days  
Moved earth & heaven, that which we are, we are;  
One equal temper of heroic hearts,  
Made weak by time and fate, but strong in will  
To strive, to seek, to find, and not to yield.

## II.2.

He clasps the crag with crooked hands;  
 Close to the sun in lonely lands,  
 Ringed with the azure world, he stands.

The wrinkled sea beneath him crawls;  
 He watches from his mountain walls,  
 And like a thunderbolt he falls.

## II.3. Neither cast ye your pearls before swine.

## III.

## III.1.

You meaner beauties of the night,  
 Which poorly satisfy our eyes  
 More by your number than your light,  
 You common people of the skies –  
 What are you, when the moon shall rise?

Ye violets that first appear,  
 By your pure purple mantles known  
 Like the proud virgins of the year,  
 As if the spring were all your own –  
 What are you, when the rose is blown?

Ye curious chanters of the wood  
 That warble forth dame nature's lays,  
 Thinking your passions understood  
 By your weak accents – what's your praise  
 When *Philomel* her voice doth raise?

So when my mistress shall be seen  
 In sweetness of her looks & mind,  
 By virtue first, then choice, a queen,

---

'The Eagle', Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Matthew 7.6, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

'Elizabeth of Bohemia', Sir Henry Wotton (1568 – 1639), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. The poem would seem to be dedicated to Elizabeth, Queen (consort) of Bohemia, wife of Frederick, King of Bohemia, and daughter of James I & VI. ¶15. Where Palgrave reads 'Moon', the best texts consulted read 'Sun'; but the Almanacker finds 'Moon' more pleasing. ¶15. Philomel or Philomela is a poetical term for a nightingale. According to Greek and Roman mythology (see Ὀδύσσεια XIX.518-23 and many others) Philomela was transformed into a nightingale.

Tell me, if she were not designed  
Th' eclipse & glory of her kind?

### III.2.

All night, and as the wind lieth among  
The cypress trees, he lay,  
Nor held me save as air that brusheth by one  
Close, and as the petals of flowers in falling  
Waver and seem not drawn to earth, so he  
Seemed over me to hover light as leaves  
And closer me than air,  
And music flowing through me seemed to open  
Mine eyes upon new colours.  
O winds, what wind can match the weight of him?

### III.3. The tree is known by his fruit.

## IV.

### IV.1.

She walks in beauty, like the night  
Of cloudless climes & starry skies,  
And all that's best of dark & bright  
Meets in her aspect & her eyes;  
Thus mellowed to that tender light  
Which heaven to gaudy day denies.

One shade the more, one ray the less,  
Had ½ impaired the nameless grace  
Which waves in every raven tress  
Or softly lightens o'er her face,  
Where thoughts serenely sweet express  
How pure, how dear their dwelling-place.

---

'Speech for Psyche in the Golden Book of Apuleius', Ezra Pound (1885 – 1972), Schmidt, *The Great Modern Poets*.

Matthew 12.33, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

'She Walks in Beauty', George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. This poem was inspired by a woman who was born Anne Horton, but whose name was Anne Wilmot – following her marriage to one Robert Wilmot, a cousin of the poet – when Lord Byron met her at a party in June 1814. Later, having inherited an estate from his father-in-law, Robert would take Horton as an additional surname, and thus, having climbed through the ranks of the civil service and having inherited his father's baronetcy, he died in 1841 with the much more impressive style of The Rt Hon Sir Robert Wilmot-Horton, 3rd Baronet; and thus Mrs Wilmot became Lady Wilmot-Horton.

And on that cheek & o'er that brow  
 So soft, so calm, yet eloquent,  
 The smiles that win, the tints that glow,  
 But tell of days in goodness spent –  
 A mind at peace with all below,  
 A heart whose love is innocent.

#### IV.2.

Nymphs & shepherds, dance no more  
 By sandy LADON's liliated banks.  
 On old LYCAEUS or CYLLENE hoar,  
 Trip no more in twilight ranks;  
 Though ERYMANTH your loss deplore,  
 A better soil shall give ye thanks.  
 From the stony MAENALUS,  
 Bring your flocks, and live with us;  
 Here ye shall have greater grace  
 To serve the lady of this place.  
 Though syrinx your *Pan's* mistress were,  
 Yet syrinx well might wait on her.  
 Such a rural queen  
 All Arcadia hath not seen.

#### IV.3. Where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

### V.

#### V.1.

Come live with me and be my love,  
 And we will all the pleasures prove  
 That hills & valleys, dale & field,  
 And all the craggy mountains yield.

There will we sit upon the rocks  
 And see the shepherds feed their flocks,  
 By shallow rivers, to whose falls  
 Melodious birds sing madrigals.

There will I make thee beds of roses  
 And a thousand fragrant posies,

---

John Milton (1608 – 1674), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This song concludes Milton's masque *Arcades*.

Matthew 6.21, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

'The Passionate Shepherd to His Love', Christopher Marlowe (1564 – 1593), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. Sir Walter Raleigh wrote a poem in which the beloved replies.

A cap of flowers, and a kirtle  
Embroidered all with leaves of myrtle.

A gown made of the finest wool  
Which from our pretty lambs we pull,  
Fair linèd slippers for the cold,  
With buckles of the purest gold.

A belt of straw and ivy buds  
With coral clasps & amber studs:  
And if these pleasures may thee move,  
Come live with me and be my love.

Thy silver dishes for thy meat  
As precious as the gods do eat,  
Shall on an ivory table be  
Prepared each day for thee & me.

The shepherd swains shall dance & sing  
For thy delight each may-morning:  
If these delights thy mind may move,  
Then live with me and be my love.

## V.2.

Drink to me only with thine eyes,  
And I will pledge with mine;  
Or leave a kiss but in the cup  
And I'll not look for wine.  
The thirst that from the soul doth rise  
Doth ask a drink divine;  
But might I of *Jove's* nectar sup,  
I would not change for thine.

## V.3. Whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain.

---

'To Celia', Ben Jonson (1572 – 1637), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. Much of this poem is said to be drawn from antiquity, specifically a love letter by the sophist Philostratus. There is a second verse, but the Almanacker finds it much inferior to the first.

Matthew 5.41, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

## VI.

## VI.1.

These little limbs,  
 These eyes & hands which here I find,  
 These rosy cheeks wherewith my life begins,  
 Where have ye been? Behind  
 What curtain were ye from me hid so long?  
 Where was, in what abyss, my speaking tongue?

When silent I  
 So many 1000 1000 years  
 Beneath the dust did in a chaos lie,  
 How could I smiles or tears,  
 Or lips or hands or eyes or ears perceive?  
 Welcome ye treasures which I now receive.

I that so long  
 Was nothing from eternity,  
 Did little think such joys as ear or tongue  
 To celebrate or see:  
 Such sounds to hear, such hands to feel, such feet,  
 Beneath the skies on such a ground to meet.

New burnished joys,  
 Which yellow gold & pearls excel!  
 Such sacred treasures are the limbs in boys,  
 In such a soul doth dwell;  
 Their organisèd joints & azure veins  
 More wealth include than all the world contains.

From dust I rise,  
 And out of nothing now awake;  
 These brighter regions which salute mine eyes,  
 A gift from God I take.  
 The earth, the seas, the light, the day, the skies,  
 The sun & stars are mine if those I prize.

Long time before  
 I in my mother's womb was born,  
 A God, preparing, did this glorious store,

---

'The Salutation', The Rev Thomas Traherne (1636 – 1674), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This poem, as with all the Rev Traherne's verses, was first published more than two centuries after the poet's death.

The world, for me adorn.  
 Into this Eden so divine & fair,  
 So wide and bright, I come his son & heir.

A stranger here  
 Strange things doth meet, strange glories see;  
 Strange treasures lodged in this fair world appear,  
 Strange all and new to me;  
 But that they mine should be, who nothing was,  
 That strangest is of all, yet brought to pass.

## VI.2.

*Cupid* & my *Campaspe* played  
 At cards for kisses; *Cupid* paid:  
 He stakes his quiver, bow & arrows,  
 His mother's doves & team of sparrows;  
 Loses them too; then down he throws  
 The coral of his lip, the rose  
 Growing on 's cheek (but none knows how);  
 With these, the crystal of his brow,  
 And then the dimple on his chin;  
 All these did my *Campaspe* win:  
 And last he set her both his eyes –  
 She won, and *Cupid* blind did rise.  
 O love! has she done this to thee?  
 What shall, alas! become of me?

VI.3. In vain the net is spread in the sight of any bird.

## VII.

### VII.1.

The time you won your town the race  
 We chaired you through the market-place;  
 Man & boy stood cheering by,  
 And home we brought you shoulder-high.

Today, the road all runners come,  
 Shoulder-high we bring you home,

---

John Lyly (1553 – 1606), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Proverbs 1.17, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

'To an Athlete Dying Young', Prof Alfred Housman (1859 – 1936), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.



And set you at your threshold down,  
 Townsman of a stiller town.

Smart lad, to slip betimes away  
 From fields where glory does not stay,  
 And early though the laurel grows  
 It withers quicker than the rose.

Eyes the shady night has shut  
 Cannot see the record cut,  
 And silence sounds no worse than cheers  
 After earth has stopped the ears.

Now you will not swell the rout  
 Of lads that wore their honours out,  
 Runners whom renown outran  
 And the name died before the man.

So set, before its echoes fade,  
 The fleet foot on the sill of shade,  
 And hold to the low lintel up  
 The still-defended challenge-cup.

And round that early-laurelled head  
 Will flock to gaze the strengthless dead,  
 And find unwithered on its curls  
 The garland briefer than a girl's.

## VII.2.

Gather ye rosebuds while ye may,  
     Old time is still a-flying;  
 And this same flower that smiles today,  
     Tomorrow will be dying.

The glorious lamp of heav'n, the sun,  
     The higher he's a-getting  
 The sooner will his race be run,  
     And nearer he's to setting.

That age is best which is the first,  
     When youth & blood are warmer;

---

'Counsel to Girls', Robert Herrick (1591 – 1674), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. "Counsel to Girls" seems to be Palgrave's bowdlerisation; the original title was "To the Virgins, to make much of Time" – the premise of a joke in *Dead Poets Society* (1989).

But being spent, the worse, & worst  
Times, still succeed the former.

Then be not coy, but use your time;  
And while ye may, go marry:  
For having lost but once your prime,  
You may for ever tarry.

**VII.3.** Let us eat and drink; for to morrow we shall die.

## VIII.

### VIII.1.

That's my last duchess painted on the wall,  
Looking as if she were alive. I call  
That piece a wonder, now; Frè *Pandolf*'s hands  
Worked busily a day, and there she stands.  
Will't please you sit and look at her? I said,  
'Fra Pandolf' by design, for never read  
Strangers like you that pictured countenance,  
The depth & passion of its earnest glance,  
But to myself they turned (since none puts by  
The curtain I have drawn for you, but I)  
And seemed as they would ask me, if they durst,  
How such a glance came there; so, not the first  
Are you to turn and ask thus. Sir, 'twas not  
Her husband's presence only, called that spot  
Of joy into the duchess' cheek; perhaps  
Frè *Pandolf* chanced to say, 'Her mantle laps  
Over my lady's wrist too much,' or 'Paint  
Must never hope to reproduce the faint  
Half-flush that dies along her throat.' Such stuff  
Was courtesy, she thought, and cause enough  
For calling up that spot of joy. She had  
A heart – how shall I say? – too soon made glad,  
Too easily impressed; she liked whate'er  
She looked on, and her looks went everywhere.

---

Isaiah 22.13, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

'My Last Duchess', Robert Browning (1828 – 1889), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. The narrator of the poem is Alfonso II of Ferrara. It is likely that the duke was homosexual; he fathered no children despite three marriages, nor was he known ever to have kept a mistress. At the time of her death, it was widely believed that he had had his first wife, the sixteen-year-old Lucrezia de' Medici, of whom Bronzino painted an exquisite portrait, poisoned; although later writers have suggested that she more likely succumbed to tuberculosis.

Sir, 'twas all one! My favour at her breast,  
 The dropping of the daylight in the west,  
 The bough of cherries some officious fool  
 Broke in the orchard for her, the white mule  
 She rode with round the terrace – all & each  
 Would draw from her alike the approving speech,  
 Or blush, at least. She thanked men – good! But thanked  
 Somehow – I know not how – as if she ranked  
 My gift of a 900-years-old name  
 With anybody's gift. Who'd stoop to blame  
 This sort of trifling? Even had you skill  
 In speech – which I have not – to make your will  
 Quite clear to such an one, and say, 'Just this  
 Or that in you disgusts me; here you miss,  
 Or there exceed the mark" – and if she let  
 Herself be lessoned so, nor plainly set  
 Her wits to yours, forsooth, and made excuse –  
 E'en then would be some stooping; and I choose  
 Never to stoop. O sir, she smiled, no doubt,  
 Whene'er I passed her; but who passed without  
 Much the same smile? This grew; I gave commands;  
 Then all smiles stopped together. There she stands  
 As if alive. Will't please you rise? We'll meet  
 The company below, then. I repeat,  
 The Count your master's known munificence  
 Is ample warrant that no just pretense  
 Of mine for dowry will be disallowed;  
 Though his fair daughter's self, as I avowed  
 At starting, is my object. Nay, we'll go  
 Together down, sir. Notice *Neptune*, though,  
 Taming a sea-horse, thought a rarity,  
 Which *Claus of Innsbruck* cast in bronze for me!

## VIII.2.

Go, lovely rose!  
 Tell her that wastes her time & me  
 That now she knows,  
 When I resemble her to thee,  
 How sweet & fair she seems to be.

Tell her that's young  
 And shuns to have her graces spied,

That hadst thou sprung  
 In deserts, where no men abide,  
 Thou must have uncommended died.

Small is the worth  
 Of beauty from the light retired:  
 Bid her come forth,  
 Suffer herself to be desired,  
 And not blush so to be admired.

Then die! that she  
 The common fate of all things rare  
 May read in thee:  
 How small a part of time they share  
 That are so wondrous sweet & fair!

**VIII.3.** My little finger shall be thicker than my father's loins.

## IX.

### IX.1.

Tyger, tyger, burning bright,  
 In the forests of the night;  
 What immortal hand or eye,  
 Could frame thy fearful symmetry?

In what distant deeps or skies  
 Burnt the fire of thine eyes?  
 On what wings dare he aspire?  
 What the hand, dare seize the fire?

And what shoulder & what art,  
 Could twist the sinews of thy heart?  
 And when thy heart began to beat,  
 What dread hand & what dread feet?

What the hammer? What the chain?  
 In what furnace was thy brain?  
 What the anvil? What dread grasp,  
 Dare its deadly terrors clasp!

When the stars threw down their spears  
 And watered heaven with their tears:

---

<sup>1</sup> Kings 12.10, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

'The Tyger', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Did he smile his work to see?  
Did he who made the lamb make thee?

Tyger! tyger! burning bright,  
In the forests of the night:  
What immortal hand or eye,  
Dare frame thy fearful symmetry?

## IX.2.

The merchant, to secure his treasure,  
Conveys it in a borrowed name;  
*Euphalia* serves to grace my measure,  
But *Cloe* is my real flame.

My softest verse, my darling lyre,  
Upon *Euphalia*'s dresser lay;  
When *Cloe* noted her desire  
That I should sing, that I should play.

My lyre I tune, my voice I raise,  
But with my numbers mix my sighs;  
And whilst I sing *Euphalia*'s praise,  
I fix my soul on *Cloe*'s eyes.

Fair *Cloe* blushed; *Euphalia* frowned;  
I sung & gazed; I played and trembled;  
And *Venus* to the Loves around  
Remarked how ill we all dissembled.

IX.3. Now is the accepted time.

## X.

### X.1.

I gently touched her hand: she gave  
A look that did my soul enslave;  
I pressed to her rebel lips in vain:  
They rose up to be pressed again.

---

<sup>℞</sup> 'An Ode', Matthew Prior (1664 – 1721), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

<sup>¶6.</sup> Where the Almanacker has put 'dresser', the original reads 'toilet', a word which, these days, unfortunately has less pleasant associations. <sup>¶15.</sup> The 'Loves' in this context are the three Graces of Graeco-Roman mythology.

<sup>1</sup> Corinthians 6.2, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Anonymous, Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

Thus happy, I no further meant  
Than to be pleased & innocent.

On her soft breasts my hand I laid,  
And a quick light impression made;  
They with a kindly warmth did glow,  
And swelled, & seemed to overflow.  
Yet – trust me – I no farther meant  
Than to be pleased & innocent.

On her eyes my eyes did stay:  
On her smooth limbs my hands did stray;  
Each sense was ravished with delight,  
And my soul stood prepared for flight.  
Blame me not if at last I meant  
More to be pleased than innocent.

## X.2.

I caught this morning morning's minion, king-  
dom of daylight's dauphin, dapple-dawn-drawn falcon, in his riding  
Of the rolling level underneath him steady air, and striding  
High there, how he rung upon the rein of a wimpling wing  
In his ecstasy! Then off, off forth on swing,  
As a skate's heel sweeps smooth on a bow-bend: the hurl & gliding  
Rebuffed the big wind. My heart in hiding  
Stirred for a bird – the achieve of, the mastery of the thing!

Brute beauty & valour & act, oh, air, pride, plume, here  
Buckle! And the fire that breaks from thee then, a 1,000,000,000  
Times told lovelier, more dangerous, O my chevalier!  
No wonder of it: shéer plód makes plough down sillion  
Shine, and blue-bleak embers, ah my dear,  
Fall, gall themselves, and gash gold-vermilion.

## X.3. The child is father of the man.

---

'The Windhover', Fr Gerard Hopkins (1844 – 1889), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Dr William Wordsworth, Poet Laureate (1770 – 1850), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is the seventh of a nine-line poem which begins, 'My heart leaps up when I behold'.

## XI.

## XI.1.

I, with whose colours *Myra* dressed her head,  
     I, that ware posies of her own hand-making,  
 I, that mine own name in the chimneys read  
     By *Myra* finely wrought ere I was waking:  
 Must I look on, in hope time coming may  
 With change bring back my turn again to play?

I, that on sunday at the church-stile found  
     A garland sweet, with true-love knots in flowers,  
 Which I to wear about mine arm was bound,  
     That each of us might know that all was ours:  
 Must I now lead an idle life in wishes,  
 And follow *Cupid* for his loaves & fishes?

I, that did wear the ring her mother left,  
     I, for whose love she gloried to be blamed,  
 I, with whose eyes her eyes committed theft,  
     I, who did make her blush when I was named:  
 Must I lose ring, flowers, blush, theft, and go naked,  
 Watching with sighs till dead love be awakèd?

I, that, when drowsy *Argus* fell asleep,  
     Like jealousy o'erwatchèd with desire,  
 Was even warnèd modesty to keep,  
     While her breath, speaking, kindled nature's fire:  
 Must I look on a-cold, while others warm them?  
 Do *Vulcan*'s brothers in such fine nets arm them?

Was it for this that I might *Myra* see  
     Washing the water with her beauties white?  
 Yet would she never write her love to me.  
     Thinks wit of change, while thoughts are in delight?

---

Fulke Greville, 1st Baron Brooke (1554 – 1628), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. ¶3. There was an ancient practice of divining the entrance of an unexpected guest by the patterns made by burnt material fluttering up a chimney (which Coleridge also alludes to in 'Frost at Midnight'). ¶19. Argus is a giant from Greek mythology who, having dozens of eyes, is proverbially wakeful and vigilant; however, he was lulled asleep and murdered by Mercury in order to facilitate Jupiter's illicit liaisons with Io. Vulcan, to the best of the Almanacker's knowledge, was said to have had only one full brother, Mars; the allusion here is perhaps to the trap sprung by Vulcan to catch Mars and Venus *in flagrante delicto*.

Mad girls must safely love as they may leave;  
 No man can print a kiss: lines may deceive.

### XI.2.

I have been here before,  
 But when or how I cannot tell:  
 I know the grass beyond the door,  
 The sweet keen smell,  
 The sighing sound, the lights around the shore.

You have been mine before.  
 How long ago I may not know:  
 But just when at that swallow's soar  
 Your neck turned so,  
 Some veil did fall. I knew it all of yore.

Has this been thus before?  
 And shall not thus time's eddying flight  
 Still with our lives our love restore  
 In death's despite,  
 And day & night yield one delight once more?

**XI.3.** Where no law is, there is no transgression.

## XII.

### XII.1.

Follow thy fair sun, unhappy shadow;  
 Though thou be black as night,  
 And she made all of light,  
 Yet follow thy fair sun, unhappy shadow.

Follow her whose light thy light depriveth;  
 Though here thou liv'st disgraced,  
 And she in heaven is placed,  
 Yet follow her who light the world reviveth.

Follow those pure beams whose beauty burneth,  
 That so have scorched thee,

---

'Sudden Light', Gabriel Rossetti (1828 – 1882), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.  
 Romans 4.15, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Dr Thomas Campion (1567 – 1620), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Prof  
 Auden's 'O lurcher-loving collier, black as night' was clearly written in response to this poem.  
 One can imagine P W Botha approving of these lines, but that – it hardly needs saying – is not  
 what Dr Campion is getting at.



That thou still black must be,  
Till her kind beams thy black to brightness turneth.

Follow her while yet her glory shineth;  
There comes a luckless night,  
That will dim all her light;  
And this the black unhappy shade divineth.

Follow still since so thy fates ordainèd;  
The sun must have his shade,  
Till both at once do fade:  
The sun still proved, the shadow still disdainèd.

## XII.2.

I remember rooms that have had their part  
In the steady slowing down of the heart.  
The room in PARIS, the room at GENEVA,  
The little damp room with the seaweed smell,  
And that ceaseless maddening sound of the tide –  
Rooms where for good or for ill – things died.  
But there is the room where we two lie dead,  
Though every morning we seem to wake and might just as well seem  
to sleep again  
As we shall somewhere in the other quieter, dustier bed  
Out there in the sun – in the rain.

## XII.3. Where there is no vision, the people perish.

## XIII.

### XIII.1.

In XANADU did *Kubla Khan*  
A stately pleasure-dome decree:  
Where ALPH, the sacred river, ran  
Through caverns measureless to man  
Down to a sunless sea.  
So twice five miles of fertile ground  
With walls & towers were girdled round;

---

‘Rooms’, Miss Charlotte Mew (1869 – 1928), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Proverbs 39.18, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

‘Kubla Khan’, Samuel Coleridge (1772 – 1834), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. Coleridge wrote a lengthy prose introduction to this poem, wherein he describes how he was inspired by laudanum and *Purchas’s Pilgrimes*, and how he was prevented from perfecting it by ‘a person on business from Purlock’. Xanadu = Shangdu, summer capital of the Yuan dynasty. Kubla Khan = Kublai Khan, fifth Khagan of the Mongol Empire and first Yuan Emperor of China.

And there were gardens bright with sinuous rills,  
Where blossomed many an incense-bearing tree;  
And here were forests ancient as the hills,  
Enfolding sunny spots of greenery.

But O that deep romantic chasm which slanted  
Down the green hill athwart a cedarn cover!  
A savage place, as holy & enchanted  
As e'er beneath a waning moon was haunted  
By woman wailing for her demon-lover!  
And from this chasm, with ceaseless turmoil seething,  
As if this earth in fast thick pants were breathing,  
A mighty fountain momently was forced:  
Amid whose swift  $\frac{1}{2}$  intermitted burst  
Huge fragments vaulted like rebounding hail,  
Or chaffy grain beneath the thresher's flail:  
And mid these dancing rocks at once & ever  
It flung up momently the sacred river.  
Five miles meandering with a mazy motion  
Through wood & dale the sacred river ran,  
Then reached the caverns measureless to man,  
And sank in tumult to a lifeless ocean;  
And mid this tumult *Kubla* heard from far  
Ancestral voices prophesying war!

The shadow of the dome of pleasure  
Floated midway on the waves;  
Where was heard the mingled measure  
From the fountain and the caves.

It was a miracle of rare device,  
A sunny pleasure-dome with caves of ice!

A damsel with a dulcimer  
In a vision once I saw:  
It was an abyssinian maid  
And on her dulcimer she played,  
Singing of Mount ABORA.  
Could I revive within me  
Her symphony & song,  
To such a deep delight 'twould win me,  
That with music loud & long,  
I would build that dome in air,  
That sunny dome! Those caves of ice!  
And all who heard should see them there,

And all should cry, 'Beware! Beware!  
 His flashing eyes, his floating hair!  
 Weave a circle round him thrice,  
 And close your eyes with holy dread  
 For he on honey-dew hath fed,  
 And drunk the milk of paradise.

### XIII.2.

If he from heaven that filched the living fire  
 Condemned by *Jove* to endless torment be,  
 I greatly marvel how you still go free,  
 That far beyond *Prometheus* did aspire.  
 The fire he stole, although of heavenly kind,  
 Which from above he craftily did take,  
 Of lifeless clods, us living men to make,  
 He did bestow in temper of the mind.  
 But you broke into heaven's immortal store,  
 Where virtue, honour, wit, and beauty lay;  
 Which taking thence you have escaped away,  
 Yet stand as free as ere you did before;  
     Yet old *Prometheus* punished for his rape.  
     Thus poor thieves suffer while the greater 'scape.

XIII.3. A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush.

### XIV.

#### XIV.1.

What have we done? What cruel passion moved thee  
     Thus to ruin her that loved thee?  
 Me thou'st robbed, but what art thou  
 Thyself the richer now?  
     Shame succeeds the short-lived pleasure;  
 So soon is spent & gone, this thy ill-gotten treasure.  
  
 We've done no harm; nor was it theft in me,  
     But noblest charity in thee.  
 I'll the well-gotten pleasure  
 Safe in my mem'ry treasure;

---

Michael Drayton (1563 – 1631), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Dialogue: After Enjoyment', Abraham Cowley (1618 – 1667), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

What though the flower itself do waste,  
The essence from it drawn does long & sweeter last.

No: I'm undone; my honour thou hast slain,  
And nothing can restore't again.  
Art & labour to bestow  
Upon the carcass of it now  
Is but t'embalm a body dead;  
The figure may remain; the life & beauty's fled.

Never, my dear, was honour yet undone  
By love, but indiscretion.  
To th'wise it all things does allow;  
And cares not what we do, but how.  
Like tapers shut in ancient urns,  
Unless it let in air for ever shines & burns.

Thou first perhaps, who didst the fault commit,  
Wilt make thy wicked boast of it.  
For men, with roman pride, above  
The conquest, do the triumph love:  
Nor think a perfect vict'ry gained  
Unless they through the streets their captive lead enchained.

Whoe'er his secret joys has open laid,  
The bawd to his own wife is made.  
Beside what boast is left for me,  
Whose whole wealth's a gift from thee?  
'Tis you the conqu'ror are; 'tis you  
Who have not only ta'en, but bound & gagged me too.

Though publique pun'shment we escape, the sin  
Will rack & torture us within:  
Guilt & sin our bosom bears;  
And though fair, yet the fruit appears,  
That worm which now the core does waste,  
When long t'as gnawed within will break the skin at last.

That thirsty drink, that hungry food I sought,  
That wounded balm, is all my fault.  
And thou in pity didst apply,  
The kind & only remedy:  
The cause absolves the crime; since me  
So mighty force did move, so mighty goodness thee.

Curse on thine arts. Methinks I hate thee now;  
 And yet I'm sure I love thee too!  
 I'm angry, but my wrath will prove,  
 More innocent than did thy love.  
 Thou hast this day undone me quite;  
 Yet wilt undo me more should'st thou not come at night.

#### XIV.2.

In *Aesop's* tales an honest wretch we find,  
 Whose years & comforts equally declined;  
 He in two wives had two domestic ills,  
 For different age they had, and different wills;  
 One plucked his black hairs out, and one his grey;  
 The man for quietness did both obey,  
 Till all his parish saw his head quite bare,  
 And thought he wanted brains as well as hair.

#### XIV.3. A blind man's wife needs no paint.

#### XV.

#### XV.1.

Come, madam, come; all rest my powers defy.  
 Until I labour, I in labour lie.  
 The foe oft-times having the foe in sight,  
 Is tired with standing though he never fight.  
 Off with that girdle, like heaven's zone glistening,  
 But a far fairer world encompassing.  
 Unpin that spangled breastplate that you wear,  
 That th'eyes of busy fools may be stopped there.  
 Unlace yourself, for that harmonious chime  
 Tells me from you that now it is bed-time.  
 Off with that happy busk, which I envy,  
 That still can be, and still can stand so nigh.

---

'A Fable', Matthew Prior (1664 – 1721), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Prior supplies a 'Moral' to this poem, wherein he explains that the 'honest wretch' stands for William III, and his two wives for the Tories and Whigs.

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'To His Mistress Going to Bed', Elegy XIX, The Very Rev Dr John Donne (1572 – 1631), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. ¶17. Other sources put 'softly' instead of 'safely'. ¶20. Other sources put 'revealed to' instead of 'received by'. ¶24. Be sure not to miss the rather crude, though rather good, joke for which, one presumes, this poem was censored from the 1633 *Poems*. ¶38. Other sources put 'court' instead of covet. ¶41. Other sources put 'bodies' instead of 'books'. ¶46. Other sources put 'Here is no penance much less innocence' instead of 'There is no penance due to innocence'.

Your gown going off, such beauteous state reveals,  
 As when from flowery meads th'hill's shadow steals.  
 Off with that wiry coronet and show  
 The hairy diadem which on you doth grow:  
 Now off with those shoes, and then safely tread  
 In this love's hallowed temple, this soft bed.  
 In such white robes, heaven's angels used to be  
 Received by men: thou, angel, bring'st with thee  
 A heaven like *Mahomet's* paradise; and though  
 Ill spirits walk in white, we easily know  
 By this these angels from an evil sprite:  
 Those set our hairs, but these our flesh upright.

License my roving hands, and let them go  
 Before, behind, between, above, below.  
 O my America, my new-found land,  
 My kingdom, safeliest when with one man manned,  
 My mine of precious stones, my empery,  
 How blessed am I in this discovering thee!  
 To enter in these bonds is to be free;  
 Then where my hand is set, my seal shall be.

Full nakedness, all joys are due to thee;  
 As souls unbodied, bodies unclothed must be  
 To taste whole joys. Gems which you women use  
 Are like *Atlanta's* balls, cast in men's views,  
 That when a fool's eye lighteth on a gem,  
 His earthly soul may covet theirs, not them:  
 Like pictures, or like books' gay coverings made  
 For laymen, are all women thus arrayed.  
 Themselves are mystic books, which only we  
 (Whom their imputed grace will dignify)  
 Must see revealed. Then, since that I may know,  
 As liberally as to a midwife show  
 Thyself. Cast all, yea, this white linen hence;  
 There is no penance due to innocence.

To teach thee, I am naked first. Why than  
 What needst thou have more covering than a man?

## XV.2.

Whoso list to hunt, I know where is an hind,  
 But as for me, alas, I may no more:  
 The vain travail hath wearied me so sore.  
 I am of them that farthest cometh behind.  
 Yet may I by no means my wearied mind  
 Draw from the deer: but as she fleeth afore,  
 Fainting I follow. I leave off therefore,  
 Since in a net I seek to hold the wind.  
 Who list her hunt, I put him out of doubt,  
 As well as I may spend his time in vain:  
 And, graven with diamonds, in letters plain  
 There is written her fair neck round about:  
**Noli me tangere**, for *Caesar*'s I am;  
 And wild for to hold, though I seem tame.

XV.3. A change is as good as a rest.

## XVI.

## XVI.1.

Whilst *Alexis* lay pressed  
 In her arms he loved best,  
 With his hands round her neck, and his head on her breast,  
 He found the fierce pleasure too hasty to stay,  
 And his soul in the tempest just flying away.

When *Celia* saw this,  
 With a sigh, and a kiss,  
 She cried, O my dear, I am robbed of my bliss;  
 'Tis unkind to your love, and unfaithfully done,  
 To leave me behind you, and die all alone.

The youth, though in haste,  
 And breathing his last,  
 In pity died slowly, while she died more fast;

---

Sir Thomas Wyatt (1503 – 1542), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This poem is a translation of Petrarch's *Rime* 190. The 'hind' is often said to stand for Anne Boleyn and 'Caesar' for Henry VIII. 'Noli me tangere', meaning 'Don't touch me', a phrase from the Vulgate (John 20.17).

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

John Dryden, Poet Laureate (1631 – 1700), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. These lines are sung in *Marriage à la Mode* IV.2.

Till at length she cried, Now, my dear, now let us go;  
Now die, my *Alexis*, and I will die too.

Thus entranced they did lie,  
Till *Alexis* did try  
To recover new breath, that again he might die:  
Then often they died; but the more they did so,  
The nymph died more quick, & the shepherd more slow.

### XVI.2.

Like as a huntsman after weary chase,  
Seeing the game from him escaped away,  
Sits down to rest him in some shady place,  
With panting hounds beguiled of their prey:  
So after long pursuit & vain assay,  
When I all weary had the chase forsook,  
The gentle deer returned the selfsame way,  
Thinking to quench her thirst at the next brook.  
There she beholding me with milder look,  
Sought not to fly, but fearless still did bide:  
Till I in hand her yet  $\frac{1}{2}$  trembling took,  
And with her own goodwill her firmly tied.  
Strange thing me seemed to see a beast so wild,  
So goodly won with her own will beguiled.

### XVI.3. Actions speak louder than words.

## XVII.

### XVII.1.

After the fiercest pangs of hot desire,  
Between *Panthea*'s rising breasts,  
His bending breast *Philander* rests:  
Though vanquished, yet unknowing to retire,  
Close hugs the charmer, and ashamed to yield,  
Though he has lost the day, yet keeps the field.

When with a sigh the fair *Panthea* said,  
What pity 'tis, ye gods, that all

---

℞ Edmund Spenser (1552 – 1599), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This poem would seem to be a reply or epilogue to Petrarch's *Rime* 190, which was translated by Sir Thomas Wyatt into a sonnet beginning 'Whoso list to hunt'.

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

The Rev Richard Duke (1658 – 1711), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. Dying was frequently used in seventeenth century poetry as a euphemism for reaching orgasm.



The noblest warriors soonest fall!  
 Then with a kiss he gently reared his head,  
 Armed him again to fight, for nobly she  
 More loved the combat than the victory.

But more enraged, for being beat before,  
 With all his strength he does prepare  
 More fiercely to renew the war;  
 Nor ceased he till the noble prize he bore:  
 Ev'n her much wondrous courage did surprise;  
 She hugs the dart that wounded her, & dies.

## XVII.2.

O mistress mine, where are you roaming?  
 O stay & hear! your truelove's coming  
 That can sing both high & low;  
 Trip no further, pretty sweeting,  
 Journeys end in lovers meeting –  
 Every wise man's son doth know.

What is love? 'Tis not hereafter;  
 Present mirth hath present laughter;  
 What's to come is still unsure:  
 In delay there lies no plenty –  
 Then come kiss me, sweet & so,  
 Youth's a stuff will not endure.

## XVII.3. All's fair in love and war.

## XVIII.

### XVIII.1.

Who says that fictions only & false hair  
 Become a verse? Is there in truth no beauty?  
 Is all good structure in a winding stair?  
 May no lines pass, except they do their duty,  
 Not to a true, but painted chair?

Is it no verse, except enchanted groves  
 And sudden arbours shadow coarse-spun lines?

---

'Carpe Diem', William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. This song is sung by Feste in *Twelfth Night* II.3.

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Jordan (I)', The Rev George Herbert (1593 – 1633), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Must purling streams refresh a lover's loves?  
 Must all be veiled while he that reads, divines,  
     Catching the sense at two removes?

Shepherds are honest people; let them sing:  
 Riddle who list, for me, and pull the prime:  
 I envy no man's nightingale or spring;  
 Nor let them punish me with loss of rhyme,  
     Who plainly say, My God, my King.

### XVIII.2.

One face looks out from all his canvases,  
     One selfsame figure sits or walks or leans:  
     We found her hidden just behind those screens,  
 That mirror gave back all her loveliness.  
 A queen in opal or in ruby dress,  
     A nameless girl in freshest summer-greens,  
     A saint, an angel – every canvas means  
 The same one meaning, neither more or less.  
 He feeds upon her face by day and night,  
     And she with true kind eyes looks back on him,  
 Fair as the moon and joyful as the light:  
     Not wan with waiting, not with sorrow dim;  
 Not as she is, but was when hope shone bright;  
     Not as she is, but as she fills his dream.

### XVIII.3. Appetite comes with eating.

## XIX.

### XIX.1.

If women could be fair, and yet not fond,  
     Or that their love were firm, not fickle still,  
 I would not marvel that they make men bond  
     By service long to purchase their good will;  
 But when I see how frail those creatures are,  
 I muse that men forget themselves so far.

To mark the choice they make, & how they change,  
     How oft from *Phoebus* they do flee to *Pan*;

---

'In an Artist's Studio', Miss Christina Rossetti (1830 – 1894), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'A Renunciation', Edward de Vere, 17th Earl of Oxford (1550 – 1604), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. The attribution of this poem to Lord Oxford is uncertain.

Unsettled still, like haggards wild they range,  
 These gentle birds that fly from man to man;  
 Who would not scorn & shake them from the fist,  
 And let them fly, fair fools, which way they list?

Yet for disport we fawn & flatter both,  
 To pass the time when nothing else can please,  
 And train them to our lure with subtle oath,  
 Till, weary of their wiles, ourselves we ease;  
 And then we say when we their fancy try,  
 To play with fools, 'O what a fool was I!'

### XIX.2.

Standing aloof in giant ignorance,  
 Of thee I hear and of the Cyclades,  
 As one who sits ashore and longs perchance  
 To visit dolphin-coral in deep seas.  
 So thou wast blind; but then the veil was rent,  
 For *Jove* uncurtained heaven to let thee live,  
 And *Neptune* made for thee a spumy tent,  
 And *Pan* made sing for thee his forest-hive;  
 Aye on the shores of darkness there is light,  
 And precipices show untrodden green,  
 There is a budding morrow in midnight,  
 There is a triple sight in blindness keen;  
 Such seeing hadst thou, as it once befell  
 To *Dian*, queen of earth, and heaven, and hell.

XIX.3. As you sow, so you reap.

### XX.

#### XX.1.

Hail to thee, blithe spirit!  
 Bird thou never wert,  
 That from heaven, or near it,  
 Pourest thy full heart  
 In profuse strains of unpremeditated art.

Higher still & higher  
 From the earth thou springest

---

'To Homer', John Keats (1795 – 1821), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.  
 Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'To a Skylark', Percy Shelley (1792 – 1822), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Like a cloud of fire;  
The blue deep thou wingest,  
And singing still dost soar, and soaring ever singest.

In the golden lightning  
Of the sunken sun,  
O'er which clouds are bright'ning,  
Thou dost float & run;  
Like an unbodied joy whose race is just begun.

The pale purple even  
Melts around thy flight;  
Like a star of heaven,  
In the broad daylight  
Thou art unseen, but yet I hear thy shrill delight,

Keen as are the arrows  
Of that silver sphere,  
Whose intense lamp narrows  
In the white dawn clear  
Until we hardly see, we feel that it is there.

All the earth & air  
With thy voice is loud,  
As, when night is bare,  
From one lonely cloud  
The moon rains out her beams, and heaven is overflowed.

What thou art we know not;  
What is most like thee?  
From rainbow clouds there flow not  
Drops so bright to see  
As from thy presence showers a rain of melody.

Like a poet hidden  
In the light of thought,  
Singing hymns unbidden,  
Till the world is wrought  
To sympathy with hopes & fears it heeded not:

Like a high-born maiden  
In a palace tower,  
Soothing her love-laden

Soul in secret hour  
With music sweet as love, which overflows her bower:

Like a glow-worm golden  
In a dell of dew,  
Scattering unbeholden  
Its aerial hue  
Among the flowers & grass, which screen it from the view:

Like a rose embowered  
In its own green leaves,  
By warm winds deflowered,  
Till the scent it gives  
Makes faint with too much sweet those heavy-wingèd thieves:

Sound of vernal showers  
On the twinkling grass,  
Rain-awakened flowers,  
All that ever was  
Joyous, & clear, & fresh, thy music doth surpass.

Teach us, sprite or bird,  
What sweet thoughts are thine:  
I have never heard  
Praise of love or wine  
That panted forth a flood of rapture so divine.

Chorus hymeneal,  
Or triumphal chant,  
Matched with thine would be all  
But an empty vaunt,  
A thing wherein we feel there is some hidden want.

What objects are the fountains  
Of thy happy strain?  
What fields, or waves, or mountains?  
What shapes of sky or plain?  
What love of thine own kind? what ignorance of pain?

With thy clear keen joyance  
Languor cannot be:  
Shadow of annoyance  
Never came near thee:  
Thou lovest: but ne'er knew love's sad satiety.

Waking or asleep,  
 Thou of death must deem  
 Things more true & deep  
 Than we mortals dream,  
 Or how could thy notes flow in such a crystal stream?

We look before & after,  
 And pine for what is not:  
 Our sincerest laughter  
 With some pain is fraught;  
 Our sweetest songs are those that tell of saddest thought.

Yet if we could scorn  
 Hate, & pride, & fear;  
 If we were things born  
 Not to shed a tear,  
 I know not how thy joy we ever should come near.

Better than all measures  
 Of delightful sound,  
 Better than all treasures  
 That in books are found,  
 Thy skill to poet were, thou scorner of the ground!

Teach me ½ the gladness  
 That thy brain must know,  
 Such harmonious madness  
 From my lips would flow  
 The world should listen then, as I am listening now.

## XX.2.

I know that I shall meet my fate  
 Somewhere among the clouds above;  
 Those that I fight I do not hate;  
 Those that I guard I do not love;  
 My country is KILTARTAN CROSS,  
 My countrymen KILTARTAN's poor,  
 No likely end could bring them loss  
 Or leave them happier than before.  
 Nor law, nor duty bade me fight,  
 Nor public man, nor cheering crowds,

---

'An Irish Airman Foresees His Death', William Yeats (1865 – 1939), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

A lonely impulse of delight  
 Drove to this tumult in the clouds;  
 I balanced all, brought all to mind,  
 The years to come seemed waste of breath,  
 A waste of breath the years behind  
 In balance with this life, this death.

**XX.3.** Ask no questions and hear no lies.

## XXI.

### XXI.1.

Ask me no more where *Jove* bestows,  
 When june is past, the fading rose;  
 For in your beauty's orient deep  
 These flowers, as in their causes, sleep.

Ask me no more whither do stray  
 The golden atoms of the day;  
 For in pure love heaven did prepare  
 Those powders to enrich your hair.

Ask me no more whither doth haste  
 The nightingale, when may is past;  
 For in your sweet dividing throat  
 She winters, and keeps warm her note.

Ask me no more where those stars' light,  
 That downwards fall in dead of night;  
 For in your eyes they sit, and there  
 Fixed become, as in their sphere.

Ask me no more if east or west  
 The *Phoenix* builds her spicy nest;  
 For unto you at last she flies,  
 And in your fragrant bosom dies.

### XXI.2.

Tell me not, sweet, I am unkind  
 That from the nunnery

---

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Thomas Carew (1595 – 1640), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

'To Lucasta, on Going to the Wars', Col Richard Lovelace (1617 – 1657), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Of thy chaste breast & quiet mind,  
To war & arms I fly.

True, a new mistress now I chase,  
The first foe in the field;  
And with a stronger faith embrace  
A sword, a horse, a shield.

Yet this inconstancy is such  
As you too shall adore;  
I could not love thee, dear, so much,  
Loved I not honour more.

**XXI.3.** Beauty is in the eye of the beholder.

## **XXII.**

### **XXII.1.**

He carved besides a soft and fruitful field,  
Broad & thrice new-tilled in that heavenly shield,  
Where many ploughmen turned up here & there  
The earth in furrows, and their sovereign near  
They strived to work; and every furrow ended  
A bowl of sweetest wine he still extended  
To him that first had done, then turned they hand,  
Desirous to dispatch that piece of land,  
Deep & new-eared; black grew the plough with mould  
Which looked like blackish earth though forged of gold.  
And this he did with miracle adorn.  
Then made he grow a field of high-sprung corn,  
In which did reapers sharpened sickles ply;  
Others, their handles fall'n confusedly,  
Laid on the ridge together; others bound  
Their gathered handfuls to sheaves hard & round.  
Their binders were appointed for the place,  
And at their heels did children glean apace,  
Whole armfuls to the binders ministering.  
Amongst all these all silent stood their king.  
Upon a balk, his sceptre in his hand,  
Glad at his heart to see his yieldy land.

---

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ George Chapman (1559 – 1634), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This is a translation of Homer's *Ἰλιάς* XVIII.541-592. Prof Auden wrote his own poem ("The Shield of Achilles") concerning the same portion of Book XVIII.



The heralds then the harvest feast prepare,  
Beneath an oak far off, and for their fare,  
A mighty ox was slain, and women dressed  
Store of white cakes, and mixed the labourers' feast  
In it besides a vine ye might behold  
Loaded with grapes, the leaves were all of gold.  
The bunches black & thick did through it grow  
And silver props sustained them from below:  
About the vine an azure dyke was wrought  
And about it a hedge of tin he brought.  
One path went through it, through the which did pass  
The vintagers, when ripe their vintage was.  
The virgins then, & youths, childishly wise,  
For the sweet fruit did painted cups devise,  
And in a circle bore them dancing round,  
In midst whereof a boy did sweetly sound  
His silver harp, and with a piercing voice,  
Sung a sweet song; when each youth with his choice  
Triumphing over earth, quick dances treads.  
A herd of oxen thrusting out their heads  
And bellowing, from their stalls rushing to feed  
Near a swift flood, raging and crowned with reed,  
In gold and tin he carved next the vine  
Four golden herdsmen following; herd-dogs nine  
Waiting on them; in head of all the herd,  
Two lions shook a bull, that bellowing, reared  
In desperate horror, and was dragged away:  
The dogs & youths pursued; but their slain prey,  
The lions rent out of his spacious hide,  
And in their entrails did his flesh divide,  
Lapping his sable blood; the men to fight  
Set on their dogs in vain that durst not bite,  
But barked & backwards flew: he forged beside  
In a fair vale, a pasture sweet & wide  
Of white-fleeced sheep, in which he did impress  
Sheepcots, sheepfolds & covered cottages.  
In this rare shield the famous *Vulcan* cast  
A dancing mace; like that in ages past,  
Which in broad KNOSSOS *Daedalus* did dress  
For *Ariadne* with the golden tress.

**XXII.2.**

Earth has not anything to show more fair;  
 Dull would he be of soul who could pass by  
 A sight so touching in its majesty.  
 This city now doth like a garment wear  
 The beauty of the morning: silent, bare,  
 Ships, towers, domes, theatres, & temples lie  
 Open unto the fields, & to the sky –  
 All bright & glittering in the smokeless air.  
 Never did sun more beautifully steep  
 In his first splendour valley, rock, or hill;  
 Ne'er saw I, never felt, a calm so deep!  
 The river glideth at his own sweet will:  
 Dear God, the very houses seem asleep;  
 And all that mighty heart is lying still!

**XXII.3.** Better be envied than pitied.

**XXIII.****XXIII.1.**

*Alice* is tall & upright as a pine,  
 White as blanched almonds, or the falling snow,  
 Sweet as the damask roses when they blow,  
 And doubtless fruitful as the swelling vine.  
 Ripe to be cut, & ready to be pressed,  
 Her full cheeked beauties very well appear,  
 And a year's fruit she loses every year,  
 Wanting a man to improve her to the best.

Full fain she would be husbanded, and yet,  
 Alas, she cannot a fit labourer get  
 To cultivate her own content:  
 Fain she would be (God wot) about her task,  
 And yet (forsooth) she is too proud to ask,  
 And (which is worse) too modest to consent.

*Margaret* is of humbler stature by the head  
 Is (as oft falls out with yellow hair)

---

'Upon Westminster Bridge', Dr William Wordsworth, Poet Laureate (1770 – 1850), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Two Rural Sisters', Charles Cotton (1630 – 1687), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

Than her fair sister, yet so much more fair,  
 As her pure white is better mixed with red.  
 This, hotter than the other 10 to one,  
     Longs to be put into her mother's trade,  
     And loud proclaims she lives too long a maid,  
 Wishing for one t'untie her virgin zone.

She finds virginity a kind of ware,  
 That's very very troublesome to bear,  
     And being gone, she thinks will ne'er be missed:  
 And yet withal, the girl has so much grace,  
 To call for help I know she wants the face,  
     Though asked, I know not how she would resist.

### XXIII.2.

The lark now leaves his watery nest  
     And climbing, shakes his dewy wings;  
 He takes this window for the east;  
     And to implore your light, he sings;  
 Awake, awake. The morn will never rise,  
 Till she can dress her beauty at your eyes.

The merchant bows unto the seaman's star,  
     The ploughman from the sun his season takes;  
 But still the lover wonders what they are,  
     Who look for day before his mistress wakes.  
 Awake, awake. Break through your veils of lawn!  
 Then draw your curtains, and begin the dawn.

### XXIII.3. Better one house spoiled than two.

## XXIV.

### XXIV.1.

I can love both fair & brown,  
 Her whom abundance melts, & her whom want betrays,  
 Her who loves loneness best, & her who masks & plays,  
     Her whom the country formed, & whom the town,  
     Her who believes, & her who tries,  
     Her who still weeps with spongy eyes,

---

Sir William Davenant (1606 – 1668), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. That is, it's better for two objectionable people to marry each other than for each to take a pleasant spouse.

'The Indifferent', The Very Rev Dr John Donne (1572 – 1631), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

And her who is dry cork, & never cries;  
 I can love her, & her, and you, & you;  
 I can love any, so she be not true.

Will no other vice content you?  
 Will it not serve your turn to do as did your mothers?  
 Or have you all old vices spent, and now would find out others?  
 Or doth a fear that men are true torment you?  
 O we are not; be not you so;  
 Let me, and do you, so know.  
 Rob me, but bind me not, and let me go.  
 Must I, who came to travail thorough you,  
 Grow your fixed subject, because you are true?

*Venus* heard me sigh this song,  
 And by love's sweetest part, variety, she swore,  
 She heard not this till now; and that it should be so no more.  
 She went, examined, and returned ere long,  
 And said, Alas, some two or three  
 Poor heretics in love there be  
 Which think to 'stablish dangerous constancy.  
 But I have told them, Since you will be true,  
 You shall be true to them who are false to you.

#### XXIV.2.

The long love, that in my thought doth harbour,  
 And in my heart doth keep his residence,  
 Into my face presseth with bold pretense,  
 And therein campeth, spreading his banner.  
 She that me learneth to love & suffer,  
 And wills that my trust & lust's negligence  
 Be reined by reason, shame and reverence,  
 With his hardiness taketh displeasure.  
 Wherewithal, unto the heart's forest he fleeth,  
 Leaving his enterprise with pain & cry:  
 And there him hideth, and not appeareth.  
 What may I do when my master feareth  
 But in the field with him to live & die?  
 For good is the life, ending faithfully.

---

Sir Thomas Wyatt (1503 – 1542), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This poem is a translation of Petrarch's *Rime* 140. Another translation of the same sonnet was made by the Earl of Surrey.

XXIV.3. Better the devil you know.

## XXV.

### XXV.1.

April is the cruellest month, breeding  
 Lilacs out of the dead land, mixing  
 Memory and desire, stirring  
 Dull roots with spring rain.  
 Winter kept us warm, covering  
 Earth in forgetful snow, feeding  
 A little life with dried tubers.  
 Summer surprised us, coming over the STARNBERGERSEE  
 With a shower of rain; we stopped in the colonnade,  
 And went on in sunlight, into the HOFGARTEN,  
 And drank coffee, and talked for an hour.  
**Bin gar keine Russin, stamm' aus Litauen, echt deutsch.**  
 And when we were children, staying at the Archduke's,  
 My cousin's, he took me out on a sled,  
 And I was frightened. He said, *Marie*,  
*Marie*, hold on tight. And down we went.  
 In the mountains, there you feel free.  
 I read, much of the night, and go south in the winter.

What are the roots that clutch, what branches grow  
 Out of this stony rubbish? Son of man,  
 You cannot say, or guess, for you know only  
 A heap of broken images, where the sun beats,  
 And the dead tree gives no shelter, the cricket no relief,  
 And the dry stone no sound of water. Only  
 There is shadow under this red rock,  
 (Come in under the shadow of this red rock),  
 And I will show you something different from either  
 Your shadow at morning striding behind you  
 Or your shadow at evening rising to meet you;  
 I will show you fear in a handful of dust.

### XXV.2.

I asked a thief to steal me a peach:  
 He turned up his eyes.

---

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Prof Thomas Eliot (1888 – 1965), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. These are the opening lines of *The Waste Land*.

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

I asked a lithe lady to lie her down:  
Holy & meek, she cries.

As soon as I went  
An angel came:  
He winked at the thief,  
And smiled at the dame;

And without one word said  
Had a peach from the tree,  
And still as a maid  
Enjoyed the lady.

**XXV.3.** Better to wear out than rust out.

## XXVI.

### XXVI.1.

Who are these from the strange ineffable places,  
From the topaz mountain to the desert of doubt,  
With the glow of the Yemen full on their faces,  
And a breath from the spices of Hadramaut?

Travel-apprentices, travel-indenturers,  
Young men, old men, black hair, white,

---

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

‘Arabia’, John Falkner (1858 – 1932), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. The poem has the subtitle: ‘[David George] Hogarth’s *Penetration of Arabia*’. ¶9. This poem contains a number of intriguingly obscure references, beginning with a roll-call of significant – though now largely forgotten – European explorers. Jean Louis Burckhardt (1784 – 1817) was a Swiss explorer and the first European to set eyes on the city of Petra in over a thousand years. Joseph Halévy (1827 – 1917) was an Ottoman-French-Jewish orientalist who was most notable for his exploration of the Yemen. Karsten Niebuhr (1733 – 1815) was the cartographer of the Royal Danish Arabian Expedition, and the only member of that group to return to Europe alive. Ulrich Jasper Seetzen (1767 – 1811) was murdered as an infidel by his fellow Muslims – he had undertaken an apparently sincere conversion two years before – while in search of the lost city that Burckhardt would finally rediscover. George Sadleir (1789 – 1859) was a captain in the British Army who, in endeavouring (successfully) to deliver a ceremonial sword to an Egyptian commander on behalf of Queen Victoria, inadvertently became the first European to cross the Arabia Peninsula. Jan Jansz Struys (1630 – 1694) was a Dutch sailor more famous for exploring Russia, but who, as prisoner of war in the Ottoman Empire, must have seen more of the Middle East than most Europeans of his day. The exact Slater being referred to, however, remains unclear. ¶17. The location of Samna is likewise unclear. Is this perhaps an archaic name for – or a garbled version of – Sana’a? ¶24. ‘Zobēide’ is an archaic romanisation of زبيدة, now more commonly transliterated as Zubaidah, the granddaughter, niece and wife of three distinct Abbasid caliphs, famous for constructing a series of aqueducts for Mecca and Medina.

Names to conjure with, wild adventurers,  
 From the noonday furnace to the purple night.

*Burckhardt, Halévy, Niebuhr, Slater,*  
 Seventeenth, 18th century beys,  
*Seetzen, Sadleir, Struys* and later  
 Down to the long victorian days.

A 1000 miles at the back of ADEN,  
 There they had time to think of things;  
 In the outer silence and burnt air laden  
 With the shadow of death & a vulture's wings.

There they remembered the last house in SAMNA,  
 Last of the plane-trees, last shepherd & flock,  
 Prayed for the heavens to rain down manna,  
 Prayed for a *Moses* to strike down the rock.

Famine & fever flagged their forces  
 Till they died in a dream of ice & fruit  
 In the long-forgotten watercourses  
 By the edge of Queen *Zobëide*'s route.

They have left the hope of the green oases,  
 The fear of the bleaching bones & the pest,  
 They have found the more ineffable places –  
**Allah** has given them rest.

## XXVI.2.

Loveliest of trees, the cherry now  
 Is hung with bloom along the bough,  
 And stands about the woodland ride  
 Wearing white for eastertide.

Now, of my threescore years & 10,  
 Twenty will not come again,  
 And take from 70 springs a score,  
 It only leaves me 50 more.

And since to look at things in bloom  
 Fifty springs are little room,

---

Prof Alfred Housman (1859 – 1936), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Prof Housman's 'threescore years and ten' is a direct quotation from the King James Version of Psalm 90.10; although, happily, he died at the age of seventy-seven.

About the woodlands I will go  
To see the cherry hung with snow.

**XXVI.3.** Catching's before hanging.

**XXVII.**

**XXVII.1.**

As I came round the harbour buoy,  
The lights began to gleam,  
No wave the land-locked water stirred,  
The crags were white as cream;  
And I marked my love by candlelight  
Sewing her long white seam.  
It's aye sewing ashore, my dear,  
Watch and steer at sea,  
It's reef and furl, and haul the line,  
Set sail and think of thee.

I climbed to reach her cottage door;  
O sweetly my love sings!  
Like a shaft of light her voice breaks forth,  
My soul to meet it springs  
As the shining water leaped of old,  
When stirred by angel wings.  
Aye longing to list anew,  
Awake and in my dream.  
But never a song she sang like this,  
Sewing her long white seam.

Fair fall the lights, the harbour lights.  
That brought me in to thee.  
And peace drop down on that low roof  
For the sight that I did see,  
And the voice, my dear, that rang so clear,  
All for the love of me.  
For O, for O with brows bent low  
By the candle's flickering gleam,  
Her wedding gown it was she wrought,  
Sewing the long white seam.

---

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'The Long White Seam', Miss Jean Ingelow (1820 – 1897), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.



**XXVII.2.**

The nurse-life wheat within his green husk growing,  
 Flatters our hope, and tickles our desire,  
 Nature's true riches in sweet beauties showing,  
 Which set all hearts, with labour's love, on fire.

No less fair is the wheat when golden ear  
 Shows unto hope the joys of near enjoying:  
 Fair & sweet is the bud, more sweet & fair  
 The rose, which proves that time is not destroying.

*Caelica*, your youth, the morning of delight,  
 Enamelled o'er with beauties white & red,  
 All sense and thoughts did to belief invite,  
 That love & glory there are brought to bed:  
     And your ripe year's love-noon; he goes no higher,  
     Turns all the spirits of man into desire.

**XXVII.3.** Councils of war never fight.**XXVIII.****XXVIII.1.**

Friends, romans, countrymen, lend me your ears.  
 I come to bury *Caesar*, not to praise him.  
 The evil that men do lives after them;  
 The good is oft interrèd with their bones;  
 So let it be with *Caesar*. The noble *Brutus*  
 Hath told you *Caesar* was ambitious:  
 If it were so, it was a grievous fault,  
 And grievously hath *Caesar* answered it.  
 Here, under leave of *Brutus* & the rest –  
 For *Brutus* is an honourable man,  
 So are they all, all honourable men –  
 Come I to speak in *Caesar*'s funeral.  
 He was my friend, faithful & just to me:  
 But *Brutus* says he was ambitious;  
 And *Brutus* is an honourable man.  
 He hath brought many captives home to ROME

---

Fulke Greville, 1st Baron Brooke (1554 – 1628), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. These lines are spoken by Mark Antony in *Julius Caesar* III.2.

Whose ransoms did the general coffers fill:  
 Did this in *Caesar* seem ambitious?  
 When that the poor have cried, *Caesar* hath wept:  
 Ambition should be made of sterner stuff:  
 Yet *Brutus* says he was ambitious;  
 And *Brutus* is an honourable man.  
 You all did see that on the Lupercal  
 I thrice presented him a kingly crown,  
 Which he did thrice refuse: was this ambition?  
 Yet *Brutus* says he was ambitious;  
 And, sure, he is an honourable man.  
 I speak not to disprove what *Brutus* spoke,  
 But here I am to speak what I do know.  
 You all did love him once, not without cause:  
 What cause withholds you then, to mourn for him?  
 O judgment! Thou art fled to brutish beasts,  
 And men have lost their reason. Bear with me;  
 My heart is in the coffin there with *Caesar*,  
 And I must pause till it come back to me.

## XXVIII.2.

The sweet season, that bud & bloom forth brings,  
 With green hath clad the hill and eke the vale;  
 The nightingale with feathers new she sings;  
 The turtle to her mate hath told her tale.  
 Summer is come, for every spray now springs;  
 The hart hath hung his old head on the pale;  
 The buck in brake his winter coat he flings;  
 The fishes float with new-repairèd scale;  
 The adder all her slough away she slings;  
 The swift swallows pursueth the flies small;  
 The busy bee her honey now she mings.  
 Winter is worn, that was the flowers' bale.  
 And thus I see among these pleasant things,  
 Each care decays, and yet my sorrow springs.

## XXVIII.3. Dead men tell no tales.

---

Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey (1517 – 1547), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. ¶1. Where the Almanacker has put 'sweet', the original reads 'soote', which means the same thing. ¶4. The word 'turtle' in this context means "turtledove". Where the Almanacker has put 'mate', the original reads 'make', which means the same thing.

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

## XXIX.

## XXIX.1.

If music be the food of love, play on;  
 Give me excess of it, that, surfeiting,  
 The appetite may sicken, and so die.  
 That strain again! It had a dying fall:  
 O it came o'er my ear like the sweet south,  
 That breathes upon a bank of violets,  
 Stealing & giving odour! Enough; no more:  
 'Tis not so sweet now as it was before.  
 O spirit of love! How quick and fresh art thou,  
 That, notwithstanding thy capacity  
 Receiveth as the sea; nought enters there,  
 Of what validity & pitch soe'er,  
 But falls into abatement & low price,  
 Even in a minute: so full of shapes is fancy  
 That it alone is high fantastical.

## XXIX.2.

Under the greenwood tree,  
 Who loves to lie with me,  
 And turn his merry note  
 Unto the sweet bird's throat,  
 Come hither, come hither, come hither:  
     Here shall he see  
     No enemy  
 But winter & rough weather.

Who doth ambition shun,  
 And loves to live i' the sun,  
 Seeking the food he eats,  
 And pleased with what he gets,  
 Come hither, come hither, come hither:  
     Here shall he see  
     No enemy  
 But winter & rough weather.

## XXIX.3. Don't cry before you're hurt.

---

℞ William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. It is with these lines that Orsino opens *Twelfth Night*.

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. This song is sung by Amiens in *As You Like It* II.5.

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

## XXX.

## XXX.1.

Now is the winter of our discontent  
 Made glorious summer by this sun of *York*;  
 And all the clouds that loured upon our house  
 In the deep bosom of the ocean buried.  
 Now are our brows bound with victorious wreaths;  
 Our bruised arms hung up for monuments;  
 Our stern alarums changed to merry meetings,  
 Our dreadful marches to delightful measures.  
 Grim-visaged war hath smoothed his wrinkled front;  
 And now, instead of mounting barded steeds  
 To fright the souls of fearful adversaries,  
 He capers nimbly in a lady's chamber  
 To the lascivious pleasing of a lute.  
 But I, that am not shaped for sportive tricks,  
 Nor made to court an amorous looking-glass;  
 I, that am rudely stamped, and want love's majesty  
 To strut before a wanton ambling nymph;  
 I, that am curtailed of this fair proportion,  
 Cheated of feature by dissembling nature,  
 Deformed, unfinished, sent before my time  
 Into this breathing world, scarce  $\frac{1}{2}$  made up,  
 And that so lamely & unfashionable  
 That dogs bark at me as I halt by them;  
 Why, I, in this weak piping time of peace,  
 Have no delight to pass away the time,  
 Unless to spy my shadow in the sun  
 And descant on mine own deformity:  
 And therefore, since I cannot prove a lover,  
 To entertain these fair well-spoken days,  
 I am determined to prove a villain  
 And hate the idle pleasures of these days.  
 Plots have I laid, inductions dangerous,  
 By drunken prophecies, libels & dreams,  
 To set my brother *Clarence* and the King  
 In deadly hate the one against the other:

---

R William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. These are the opening lines of *Richard III*, spoken by the eponymous villain, who at this time is Duke of Gloucester. ¶2. The sun in splendour was, with the white rose, one of the symbols of the House of York. There is also a pun here, since Edward IV, the man being praised, was the eldest surviving son of Richard Plantagenet, 3rd Duke of York.

And if King *Edward* be as true & just  
 As I am subtle, false & treacherous,  
 This day should *Clarence* closely be mewed up,  
 About a prophecy, which says that *G*  
 Of *Edward's* heirs the murderer shall be.  
 Dive, thoughts, down to my soul: here *Clarence* comes.

**XXX.2.**

Come to me in the silence of the night;  
     Come in the speaking silence of a dream;  
 Come with soft rounded cheeks and eyes as bright  
     As sunlight on a stream;  
     Come back in tears,  
 O memory, hope, love of finished years.

**XXX.3.** Good fences make good neighbours.

---

‘Echo’, Miss Christina Rossetti (1830 – 1894), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. There are two more verses to this poem, but the Almanacker finds them much inferior to the first.

Robert Frost, Poet Laureate of Vermont (1874 – 1963), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This quotation comes at the very end of Frost’s “Mending Wall”.



## CHAPTER 2

### Sectilis

#### I.

##### I.1.

I love the jocund dance,  
The softly-breathing song,  
Where innocent eyes do glance,  
And where lisps the maiden's tongue.

I love the laughing vale;  
I love the echoing hill,  
Where mirth does never fail,  
And the jolly swain laughs his fill.

I love the pleasant cot,  
I love the innocent bower,  
Where white & brown is our lot,  
Or fruit in the midday hour.

I love the oaken seat  
Beneath the oaken tree,  
Where all the old villagers meet,  
And laugh our sports to see.

I love our neighbours all,  
But, *Kitty*, I better love thee;  
And love them I ever shall;  
But thou art all to me.

##### I.2.

Now that the midday heat doth scorch my shame  
With lightning of fond lust, I will retire

---

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*.

℞ 'Ego Sum Vitis', The Rev Dr William Alabaster (1568 – 1640), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. The title is taken from the Vulgate of John 14.6.

Under this vine whose arms with wandering spire  
 Do climb upon the cross, and on the same  
 Devise a cool repose from lawless flame,  
     Whose leaves are intertwist with love entire,  
     That envy's eye cannot transfuse her fire,  
 But is rebated on the shady frame;  
     And youthful vigour from the leavèd tier,  
     Doth stream upon my soul a new desire.  
 List, list, the ditties of sublimèd fame,  
     Which in the closet of those leaves the choir  
 Of heavenly birds do warble to his name.  
 Or where was I that was not where I am?

**I.3.** Strike while the iron is hot.

## II.

### II.1.

There is no thing in all the world but love,  
 No jubilant thing of sun or shade worth one sad tear.  
 Why dost thou ask my lips to fashion songs  
 Other than this, my song of love to thee?

See where I lie and pluck the thorns of grief,  
 Dust on my head and fire, as one who mourns his slain.  
 Are they not slain, my treasures of dear peace?  
 This their red burial is, sand heaped on sand.

Here came I in the morning of my joys.  
 Before the dawn was born, through the dark downs I rode.  
 The low stars led me on as with a voice,  
 Stars of the scorpion's tail in the deep Ssouth.

Sighing I came, and scattering wide the sand.  
 No need had I to urge her speed with hand or heel,  
 The creature I bestrode. She knew my haste,  
 And knew the road I sought, the road to thee.

---

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. The *Oxford Dictionary of Quotations* lists this saying under 'Proverbs'. Dryden provides an interesting variation in the dedication to his translation of the *Aeneid*: 'We must beat the iron while it is hot, but we may polish it at leisure.'

'The Camel Rider', Wilfrid Blunt (1840 – 1922), Heath-Stubbs and Wright, *The Faber Book of Twentieth Century Verse*.



Jangling her bells aloud in wantonness,  
And sighing soft, she too, her sighs to my soul's sighs.  
Behind us the wind followed thick with scents  
Of incense blossoms & the dews of night.

The thorn trees caught at us with their crook'd hands;  
The hills in blackness hemmed us in and hid the road;  
The spectres of the desert howled and warned;  
I heeded nothing of their words of woe.

Thus till the dawn I sped in my desire,  
Breasting the ridges, slope on slope, till morning broke;  
And lo, the sun revealed to me no sign,  
And lo, the day was widowed of my hope.

Where are the tents of pleasure & dear love,  
Set in the vale of thyme, where winds in spring are fain?  
The highways of the valley, where they stood  
Strong in their flocks, are there. But where are they?

The plain was dumb, as emptied of all voice;  
No bleat of herds, no camels roaring far below  
Told of their presence in the pastures void,  
Of the waste places which had been their homes.

I climbed down from my watch-tower of the rocks,  
To where the tamarisks grow, & the dwarf palms, alarmed.  
I called them with my voice, as the deer calls,  
Whose young the wolves have hunted from their place.

I sought them in the foldings of the hill,  
In the deep hollows shut with rocks, where no winds blow.  
I sought their footstep under the tall cliffs,  
Shut from the storms, where the first lambs are born.

The tamarisk boughs had blossomed in the night,  
And the white broom which bees had found, the wild bees' brood.  
But no dear signal told me of their life,  
No spray was torn in all that world of flowers.

Where are the tents of pleasure & dear love,  
For which my soul took ease for its delight in spring,  
The black tents of her people beautiful  
Beyond the beauty of the sons of kings?

The wind of war has swept them from their place,  
Scattering them wide as quails, whom the hawk's hate pursues;  
The terror of the sword importunate  
Was at their backs, nor spared them as they flew.

The summer wind has passed upon their fields;  
The rain has purged their hearth-stones, and made smooth their floors;  
Low in the valley lie their broken spears,  
And the white bones which are their tale forlorn.

Where are the sons of Saba in the south,  
The men of mirth & pride to whom my songs were sung,  
The kinsmen of her soul who is my soul,  
The brethren of her beauty whom I love?

She mounted her tall camel in the waste,  
Loading it high for flight with her most precious things;  
She went forth weeping in the wilderness,  
Alone with fear on that far night of ill.

She fled mistrusting, as the wild roe flees,  
Turning her eyes behind her, while fear fled before;  
No other refuge knew she than her speed,  
And the black land that lies where night is born.

Under what canopy of sulphurous heaven,  
Dark with the thunderclouds unloosing their mad tongues,  
Didst thou lie down aweary of thy burden,  
In that dread place of silence thou hadst won?

Close to what shelter of what naked rocks,  
Carved with what names of terror of what kings of old,  
Near to what monstrous shapes unmerciful,  
Watching thy death, didst thou give up thy soul?

Or dost thou live by some forgotten well,  
Waiting thy day of ransom to return and smile,  
As the birds come when spring is in the heaven,  
And dost thou watch me near while I am blind?

Blind in my tears, because I only weep,  
Kindling my soul to fire because I mourn my slain,  
My kindred slain, and thee, & my dear peace,  
Making their burial thus, sand heaped on sand.

For see, there nothing is in all the world  
 But only love worth any strife or song or tear.  
 Ask me not then to sing or fashion songs  
 Other than this, my song of love to thee.

## II.2.

With what sense is it that the chicken shuns the ravenous hawk?  
 With what sense does the tame pigeon measure out the expanse?  
 With what sense does the bee form cells? Have not the mouse & frog  
 Eyes & ears & sense of touch? Yet are their habitations  
 And their pursuits as different as their forms & as their joy.  
 Ask the wild ass why he refuses burdens, and the meek camel  
 Why he loves man: is it because of eye, ear, mouth or skin,  
 Or breathing nostrils? No: for these the wolf & tyger have.  
 Ask the blind worm the secrets of the grave and why her spires  
 Love to curl around the bones of death: and ask the ravenous snake  
 Where she gets poison; and the winged eagle why he loves the sun;  
 And then tell me the thoughts of man, that have been hid of old.

II.3. He that will not apply new remedies must expect new evils.

## III.

### III.1.

O to be in England  
 Now that april's there,  
 And whoever wakes in England  
 Sees, some morning, unaware,  
 That the lowest boughs & the brushwood sheaf  
 Round the elm-tree bole are in tiny leaf,  
 While the chaffinch sings on the orchard bough  
 In England – now!

And after april, when may follows,  
 And the whitethroat builds, and all the swallows!  
 Hark, where my blossomed pear-tree in the hedge  
 Leans to the field and scatters on the clover  
 Blossoms and dewdrops – at the bent spray's edge –  
 That's the wise thrush; he sings each song twice over,

---

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This poem constitutes one of the middle sections of *Visions of the Daughters of Albion*.

Francis Bacon, Viscount St Alban (1561 – 1626), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Home Thoughts, from Abroad', Robert Browning (1828 – 1889), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Lest you should think he never could recapture  
 The first fine careless rapture!  
 And though the fields look rough with hoary dew,  
 All will be gay when noontide wakes anew  
 The buttercups, the little children's dower –  
 Far brighter than this gaudy melon-flower!

### III.2.

And thus she sung, all naked as she sat,  
 Laying the happy lute upon her thigh,  
 Not thinking any near to wonder at  
 The bliss of her sweet breasts' divinity.

III.3. Hope is a good breakfast, but it is a bad supper.

## IV.

### IV.1.

Room after room,  
 I hunt the house through  
 We inhabit together.  
 Heart, fear nothing, for, heart, thou shalt find her –  
 Next time, herself! – not the trouble behind her  
 Left in the curtain, the couch's perfume!  
 As she brushed it, the cornice-wreath blossomed anew:  
 Yon looking-glass gleamed at the wave of her feather.

Yet the day wears,  
 And door succeeds door;  
 I try the fresh fortune –  
 Range the wide house from the wing to the centre.  
 Still the same chance! She goes out as I enter.  
 Spend my whole day in the quest – who cares?  
 But 'tis twilight, you see – with such suites to explore,  
 Such closets to search, such alcoves to importune!

---

℞ George Chapman (1559 – 1634), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. These four lines are taken from Chapman's poem "Ovid's Banquet of Sense", in which the English poet imagines the Roman slipping into one of Augustus' palace gardens and watching Julia the Elder take a bath. Chapman identifies this Julia with Corinna, the heroine of Ovid's *Amores*.

Francis Bacon, Viscount St Alban (1561 – 1626), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'My Last Duchess', Robert Browning (1828 – 1889), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

## IV.2.

The dark-haired girl, who holds my thought entirely  
 Yet keeps me from her arms and what I desire,  
 Will never take my word for he is proud  
 And none may have his way with *Peggy Browne*.

Often I dream that I am in the woods  
 At WESTPORT HOUSE. She strays alone, blue-hooded,  
 Then lifts her flounces, hurries from a shower,  
 But sunlight stays all day with *Peggy Browne*.

Her voice is music, every little echo  
 My pleasure and O her shapely breasts, I know,  
 Are white as her own milk, when taffeta gown  
 Is let out, inch by inch, for *Peggy Browne*.

A lawless dream comes to me in the night time,  
 That we are stretching together side by side;  
 Nothing I want to do can make her frown.  
 I wake alone, sighing for *Peggy Browne*.

## IV.3.

When I am dead, I hope it may be said:  
 His sins were scarlet, but his books were read.

## V.

## V.1.

Hark, all you ladies that do sleep;  
 The fairy queen *Proserpina*  
 Bids you awake and pity them that weep.  
 You may do in the dark  
 What the day doth forbid;

---

'Peggy Browne', Austin Clarke (1896 – 1974), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. These lines are a translation of an Irish song by the eighteenth century harper Turlough O'Carolan ¶6. The foundations of Westport House were laid by one Col John Browne, whose descendants, eleven of whom held the title Marquess of Sligo, continue to possess the house into the twenty-first century.

'On His Books', Hilaire Belloc (1870 – 1953), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ Dr Thomas Campion (1567 – 1620), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. ¶24. Dione's oracle at Dodona was said to have been founded at the command of a black dove. ¶35. Avernus is a volcanic crater in Campania, believed by the Romans to be an entrance into Hades; an obscure proverb states that women who die unwed will have to lead some sort of procession of primates through this netherworld; for instance, one reads in *The London Prodigal* (a Jacobean play of uncertain authorship) that, "Tis an old proverb, and you know it well./ That women dying maids lead apes in hell.'

Fear not the dogs that bark;  
 Night will have all hid.

But if you let your lovers moan,  
 The fairy queen *Proserpina*  
 Will send abroad her fairies ev'ry one,  
     That shall pinch black & blue  
     Your white hands & fair arms  
 That did not kindly rue  
     Your paramour's harms.

In myrtle arbours on the downs  
 The fairy queen *Proserpina*,  
 This night by moonshine leading merry rounds  
     Holds a watch with sweet love,  
     Down the dale, up the hill;  
 No plaints or groans may move  
     Their holy vigil.

All you that will hold watch with love,  
 The fairy queen *Proserpina*  
 Will make you fairer than *Dione's* dove;  
     Roses red, lilies white,  
     And the clear damask hue,  
 Shall on your cheeks alight:  
     Love will adorn you.

All you that love, or loved before,  
 The fairy queen *Proserpina*  
 Bids you increase that loving humour more:  
     They that yet have not fed  
     On delight amorous,  
 She vows that they shall lead  
     Apes in AVERNUS.

## V.2.

When night stirred at sea  
 And the fire brought a crowd in,  
 They say that her beauty  
 Was music in mouth  
 And few in the candlelight

---

'The Planter's Daughter', Austin Clarke (1896 – 1974), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

Thought her too proud,  
 For the house of the planter  
 Is known by the trees.

Men that had seen her  
 Drank deep and were silent;  
 The women were speaking  
 Wherever she went –  
 As a bell that is rung  
 Or a wonder told shyly,  
 And O she was the Sunday  
 In every week.

**V.3.** A fool sees not the same tree that a wise man sees.

## VI.

### VI.1.

I ne'er was struck before that hour  
 With love so sudden & so sweet,  
 Her face it bloomed like a sweet flower  
 And stole my heart away complete.  
 My face turned pale as deadly pale,  
 My legs refused to walk away,  
 And when she looked, what could I ail?  
 My life & all seemed turned to clay.

And then my blood rushed to my face  
 And took my eyesight quite away,  
 The trees & bushes round the place  
 Seemed midnight at noonday.  
 I could not see a single thing,  
 Words from my eyes did start –  
 They spoke as chords do from the string,  
 And blood burnt round my heart.

Are flowers the winter's choice?  
 Is love's bed always snow?  
 She seemed to hear my silent voice,  
 Not love's appeals to know.

---

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

'First Love', John Clare (1793 – 1864), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This poem describes Clare's first meeting with Mary Joyce, the local beauty he could never possess.

I never saw so sweet a face  
 As that I stood before.  
 My heart has left its dwelling-place  
 And can return no more.

## VI.2.

Pious *Selinda* goes to prayers  
 If I but ask the favour;  
 And yet the tender fool's in tears  
 When she believes I'll leave her.

Would I were free from this restraint,  
 Or else had hopes to win her;  
 Would she could make of me a saint,  
 Or I of her a sinner.

VI.3. Dip him in the river who loves water.

## VII.

### VII.1.

You are old, Father *William*, the young man said,  
 And your hair has become very white;  
 And yet you incessantly stand on your head –  
 Do you think, at your age, it is right?

In my youth, Father *William* replied to his son,  
 I feared it might injure the brain;  
 But, now that I'm perfectly sure I have none,  
 Why, I do it again & again.

You are old, said the youth, as I mentioned before,  
 And have grown most uncommonly fat;  
 Yet you turned a back-somersault in at the door –  
 Pray, what is the reason of that?

In my youth, said the sage, as he shook his grey locks,  
 I kept all my limbs very supple

---

William Congreve (1670 – 1729), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

The Rev Charles Dodgson (1832 – 1898), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. These lines have been parodied many times, and yet they themselves were originally intended as a parody of Robert Southey's "The Old Man's Comforts and How He Gained Them".



By the use of this ointment – one shilling the box –  
 Allow me to sell you a couple?

You are old, said the youth, and your jaws are too weak  
 For anything tougher than suet;  
 Yet you finished the goose, with the bones & the beak –  
 Pray, how did you manage to do it?

In my youth, said his father, I took to the law,  
 And argued each case with my wife;  
 And the muscular strength, which it gave to my jaw,  
 Has lasted the rest of my life.

You are old, said the youth. One would hardly suppose  
 That your eye was as steady as ever;  
 Yet you balanced an eel on the end of your nose –  
 What made you so awfully clever?

I have answered three questions, and that is enough,  
 Said his father; don't give yourself airs!  
 Do you think I can listen all day to such stuff?  
 Be off, or I'll kick you downstairs!

## VII.2.

Love in her sunny eyes does basking play;  
 Love walks the pleasant mazes of her hair;  
 Love does on both her lips for ever stray  
 And sows and reaps a 1000 kisses there.  
 In all her outward parts love's always seen;  
 But O he never went within.

VII.3. He whose face gives no light shall never become a star.

## VIII.

### VIII.1.

Busy old fool, unruly sun,  
 Why dost thou thus,  
 Through windows, and through curtains, call on us?

---

℞ Abraham Cowley (1618 – 1667), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. This is the first verse of a poem called "The Change".

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

'The Sun Rising', The Very Rev Dr John Donne (1572 – 1631), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Must to thy motions lovers' seasons run?  
 Saucy pedantic wretch, go chide  
 Late school boys & sour prentices;  
 Go tell court huntsmen that the king will ride;  
 Call country ants to harvest offices.  
 Love, all alike, no season knows nor clime,  
 Nor hours, days, months, which are the rags of time.

Thy beams, so reverend & strong  
 Why shouldst thou think?  
 I could eclipse & cloud them with a wink,  
 But that I would not lose her sight so long;  
 If her eyes have not blinded thine,  
 Look, and tomorrow late, tell me,  
 Whether both th' Indias of spice & mine  
 Be where thou leftst them, or lie here with me.  
 Ask for those kings whom thou saw'st yesterday,  
 And thou shalt hear all here in one bed lay.

She's all states, and all princes, I;  
 Nothing else is.  
 Princes do but play us; compared to this,  
 All honour's mimic, all wealth alchemy.  
 Thou, sun, art  $\frac{1}{2}$  as happy as we,  
 In that the world's contracted thus.  
 Thine age asks ease, and since thy duties be  
 To warm the world, that's done in warming us.  
 Shine here to us, and thou art everywhere;  
 This bed thy centre is, these walls thy sphere.

### VIII.2.

Through the open french window the warm sun  
 Lights up the polished breakfast table, laid  
 Round a bowl of crimson roses, for one –  
 A service of worcester porcelain, arrayed  
 Near it a melon, peaches, figs, small hot  
 Rolls in a napkin, fairy rack of toast,  
 Butter in ice, high silver coffee pot,  
 And, heaped on a salver, the morning's post.

She comes over the lawn, the young heiress,  
 From her early walk in her garden wood,

---

'Still-Life', Mrs Elizabeth Daryush (1887 – 1977), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

Feeling that life's a table set to bless  
 Her delicate desires with all that's good,  
 That even the unopened future lies  
 Like a love letter, full of sweet surprise.

**VIII.3.** If the fool would persist in his folly he would be wise.

## IX.

### IX.1.

The masters go abroad to view the town,  
 And first the churches for devotions' sake;  
 And then the monuments of most renown,  
 As travellers a common custom take:  
 The girl within the chamber sate her down;  
 The men are busied; some the beds do make;  
 Some care to dress their wearied horse, and some  
 Make ready meat against their masters come.

In this same house the girl a greek had spied,  
 That in her father's house a boy had been,  
 And slept full often sweetly by her side,  
 And much good sport had passèd them between;  
 Yet fearing lest their love should be descried,  
 In open talk they durst not to be seen,  
 But when by hap the pages down were gone,  
 Old love renewed and thus they talk thereon.

---

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

℞ Sir John Harington (1560 – 1612), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. A good chunk of explanation is perhaps helpful with respect to this poem. Firstly, these lines are from Sir John's translation of Ludovico Ariosto's *Orlando Furioso*, being XXVIII v.55-65. Before our story begins, two friends, Giocondo and Astolfo (who also happens to be King of Lombardy), go on a kind of lads' holiday, seducing numerous women – they aim for a thousand each – in order to console themselves over their wives' infidelity. Believing no single man of being able to satisfy a woman's lust, they form a kind of polyandrous marriage with an innkeeper's daughter, Fiametta, who sleeps each night between the two men. In the lines here printed, Fiametta happens to bump into her Greek childhood sweetheart. The two wish to start a life together; however, Fiametta, being taken, comes up with a consolation prize. She tells her Greek paramour to sneak into her room and make love to her, and tricks both Giacondo and Astolfo into believing that the other is enjoying her instead. After these lines end, the two friends discover Fiametta's infidelity after the fact, but take being re-cuckolded with a surprisingly robust sense of humour, and allow her and the Greek to get married.

The greek demands her whither she was going,  
 And which of these two great estates her keeps.  
 She told them all; she needs no further wooing,  
 And how a-night between them both she sleeps:  
 ‘Ah!’ quoth the greek. ‘Thou tellest my undoing,  
 My dear *Fiametta*, and with that he weeps;  
 With these two lords wilt thou from Spain be banished.  
 Are all my hopes thus into nothing vanished?

‘My sweet designments turnèd are to sour;  
 My service long finds little recompense;  
 I made a stock according to my power,  
 By hoarding up my wages, and the pence  
 That guests did give, that came in lucky hour;  
 I meant ere long to have departed hence,  
 And to have asked thy sires good will to marry thee,  
 And that obtained, unto a house to carry thee.’

The wench of her hard fortune doth complain,  
 And saith that now she doubts he sues too late;  
 The greek doth sigh & sob, and part doth fain.  
 ‘And shall I die,’ quoth he, ‘in this estate?  
 Let me enjoy thy sweetness once again,  
 Before my days draw to their doleful date;  
 One small refreshing ere we quite depart  
 Will make me die with more contented heart.’

The girl with pity mov’ed, thus replies,  
 ‘Think not,’ quoth she, ‘but I desire the same;  
 But hard it is among so many eyes,  
 Without incurring punishment & shame.’  
 ‘Ah!’ quoth the greek, ‘some means thou wouldst devise,  
 If thou but felt a  $\frac{1}{4}$  of my flame,  
 To meet this night in some convenient place,  
 And be together but a little space.

‘Tush!’ answered she. ‘You sue now out of season,  
 For every night I lie betwixt them two  
 And they will quickly fear and find the treason,  
 Sith still with one of them I have to do.’  
 ‘Well,’ quoth the greek, ‘I could refute that reason,  
 If you would put your helping hand thereto;

You must,' said he, 'some pretty 'scuse devise,  
And find occasion from them both to rise.'

She first bethinks herself, and after bad

He should return when all were sound asleep,  
And learnèd him, who was thereof right glad,

To go & come, what order he should keep.

Now came the greek, as he his lesson had,

When all was hushed, as soft as he could creep,  
First to the door, which opened when he pushed,  
Then to the chamber, which was softly rushed.

He takes a long & leisureable stride,

And longest on the hinder foot he stayed,  
So soft he treads, although his steps were wide,

As though to tread on eggs he were afraid;

And as he goes, he gropes on either side

To find the bed, with hands abroad displayed,  
And having found the bottom of the bed,  
He creepeth in, and forward go'th his head.

Between *Fiametta's* tender thighs he came,

That lay upright, as ready to receive;

At last they fell unto their merry game,

Embracing sweetly now to take their leave;

He rode in post, nor can he bait for shame;

The beast was good, and would not him deceive;

He thinks her pace so easy & so sure,

That all the night to ride he could endure.

*Giocundo* and the king do both perceive

The bed to rock, as oft it comes to pass,  
And both of them one error did deceive,

For either thought it his companion was:

Now hath the greek taken his latter leave,

And as he came, he back again doth pass,  
And *Phoebus'* beams did now to shine begin;  
*Fiametta* rose and let the pages in.

## IX.2.

Let us use it while we may,  
 Snatch those joys that haste away.  
 Earth her winter coat may cast,  
 And renew her beauty past:  
 But, our winter come, in vain  
 We solicit spring again;  
 And when our furrows snow shall cover,  
 Love may return but never lover.

IX.3. No bird soars too high if he soars with his own wings.

## X.

## X.1.

My God, I heard this day  
 That none doth build a stately habitation,  
 But he that means to dwell therein.  
 What house more stately hath there been,  
 Or can be, than is man, to whose creation  
 All things are in decay?

For man is every thing,  
 And more: he is a tree, yet bears more fruit;  
 A beast, yet is or should be more:  
 Reason & speech we only bring.  
 Parrots may thank us, if they are not mute,  
 They go upon the score.

Man is all symmetry,  
 Full of proportions, one limb to another,  
 And all to all the world besides:  
 Each part may call the furthest brother;  
 For head with foot hath private amity,  
 And both with moons & tides.

Nothing hath got so far,  
 But man hath caught & kept it, as his prey.  
 His eyes dismount the highest star:

---

‘Of Beauty’, Sir Richard Fanshaw, 1st Baronet (1608 – 1666), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake’s ‘Proverbs of Hell’ from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

‘Man’, The Rev George Herbert (1593 – 1633), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. ¶8. Other sources put ‘no fruit’ instead of fruit.

He is in little all the sphere.  
 Herbs gladly cure our flesh, because that they  
 Find their acquaintance there.

For us the winds do blow,  
 The earth doth rest, heaven move, and fountains flow.  
 Nothing we see but means our good,  
 As our delight or as our treasure:  
 The whole is either our cupboard of food,  
 Or cabinet of pleasure.

The stars have us to bed:  
 Night draws the curtain, which the sun withdraws;  
 Music & light attend our head.  
 All things unto our flesh are kind  
 In their descent & being; to our mind  
 In their ascent & cause.

Each thing is full of duty.  
 Waters united are our navigation;  
 Distinguishèd, our habitation;  
 Below, our drink; above, our meat;  
 Both are our cleanliness. Hath one such beauty?  
 Then how are all things neat?

More servants wait on man  
 Than he'll take notice of: in every path  
 He treads down that which doth befriend him  
 When sickness makes him pale & wan.  
 O might love! Man is one world, and hath  
 Another to attend him.

Since then, my God, thou hast  
 So brave a palace built, O dwell in it,  
 That it may dwell with thee at last.  
 Till then, afford us so much wit,  
 That, as the world serves us, we may serve thee,  
 And both thy servants be.

**X.2.**

Lovers, rejoice. Your pains shall be rewarded,  
 The god of love himself grieves at your crying:  
 No more shall frozen honour be regarded,  
 Nor the coy faces of a maid denying.  
 No more shall virgins sigh, and say, We dare not,  
 For men are false, and what they do they care not.  
 All shall be well again; then do not grieve;  
 Men shall be true, and women shall believe.

Lovers, rejoice. What you shall say henceforth,  
 When you have caught your sweethearts in your arms,  
 It shall be accounted oracle & worth:  
 No more faint-hearted girls shall dream of harms,  
 And cry they are too young. The god hath said  
 Fifteen shall make a mother of a maid.  
 Then, wise men, pull your roses yet unblown;  
 Love hates the too ripe fruit that falls alone.

**X.3.** Prisons are built with stones of law, brothels with bricks of religion.

**XI.****XI.1.**

I dreamed this mortal part of mine  
 Was metamorphosed to a vine,  
 Which crawling one & every way  
 Enthralled my dainty *Lucia*.  
 Methought her long small legs & thighs  
 I with my tendrils did surprise;  
 Her belly, buttocks and her waist  
 By my soft nervelets were embraced.  
 About her head I writhing hung,  
 And with rich clusters (hid among  
 The leaves) her temples I behung,  
 So that my *Lucia* seemed to me  
 Young *Bacchus* ravished by his tree.  
 My curls about her neck did crawl,

---

℞ ‘Lovers Rejoyce’, John Fletcher (1579 – 1625), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. This song is appears in *Cupid’s Revenge* I.2. ¶3. The word ‘regarded’ in this context means something closer to “congealed” in modern English.

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake’s ‘Proverbs of Hell’ from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

‘The Vine’, Robert Herrick (1591 – 1674), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.



And arms & hands they did enthrall,  
 So that she could not freely stir  
 (All parts there made one prisoner).  
 But when I crept with leaves to hide  
 Those parts which maids keep unespied,  
 Such fleeting pleasures there I took  
 That with the fancy I awoke;  
 And found (ah me!) this flesh of mine  
 More like a stock than like a vine.

### XI.2.

Love in her eyes sits playing,  
 And sheds delicious death;  
 Love on her lips is straying,  
 And warbling in her breath.  
 Love on her breast sits panting  
 And swells with soft desire;  
 No grace, no charm is wanting,  
 To set the heart on fire.

**XI.3.** The weak in courage is strong in cunning.

## XII.

### XII.1.

If you can keep your head when all about you  
 Are losing theirs and blaming it on you,  
 If you can trust yourself when all men doubt you,  
 But make allowance for their doubting too;  
 If you can wait and not be tired by waiting,  
 Or being lied about, don't deal in lies,  
 Or being hated, don't give way to hating,  
 And yet don't look too good, nor talk too wise:

If you can dream – and not make dreams your master;  
 If you can think – and not make thoughts your aim;  
 If you can meet with triumph & disaster  
 And treat those two impostors just the same;  
 If you can bear to hear the truth you've spoken

---

John Gay (1685 – 1732), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. Handel set these words to music in his operetta *Acis and Galatea*.

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

'If –', Rudyard Kipling (1865 – 1936), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

Twisted by knaves to make a trap for fools,  
 Or watch the things you gave your life to broken,  
 And stoop and build 'em up with worn-out tools:

If you can make one heap of all your winnings  
 And risk it on one turn of pitch-and-toss,  
 And lose, and start again at your beginnings  
 And never breathe a word about your loss;  
 If you can force your heart & nerve & sinew  
 To serve your turn long after they are gone,  
 And so hold on when there is nothing in you  
 Except the will which says to them, Hold on!

If you can talk with crowds and keep your virtue,  
 Or walk with kings – nor lose the common touch,  
 If neither foes nor loving friends can hurt you,  
 If all men count with you, but none too much;  
 If you can fill the unforgiving minute  
 With 60 seconds' worth of distance run,  
 Yours is the earth and everything that's in it,  
 And – which is more – you'll be a man, my son!

## XII.2.

She turned in the high pew, until her sight  
     Swept the west gallery, and caught its row  
     Of music-men with viol, book, & bow  
 Against the sinking sad tower-window light.  
 She turned again; and in her pride's despite  
     One strenuous viol's inspirer seemed to throw  
     A message from his string to her below,  
 Which said: 'I claim thee as my own forthright!'

Thus their hearts' bond began, in due time signed.  
     And long years thence, when age had scared romance,  
     At some old attitude of his or glance  
 That gallery-scene would break upon her mind,  
     With him as minstrel, ardent, young, & trim,  
     Bowling "New Sabbath" or "Mount Ephraim".

---

'A Church Romance', Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. This poem is subtitled 'Mellstock: circa 1835', Mellstock being a name Hardy coined himself for a village in his semi-fictional Wessex which corresponded to his native Stinsford. The poem describes Hardy's own parents' courtship.

**XII.3.** What is now proved was once only imagined.

### **XIII.**

#### **XIII.1.**

The owl & the pussy-cat went to sea  
 In a beautiful pea-green boat;  
 They took some honey, and plenty of money,  
 Wrapped up in a £5 note.  
 The owl looked up to the stars above,  
 And sang to a small guitar,  
 O lovely pussy! O pussy, my love,  
 What a beautiful pussy you are,  
     You are,  
     You are!  
 What a beautiful pussy you are!

Pussy said to the owl, You elegant fowl!  
 How charmingly sweet you sing!  
 O let us be married! Too long we have tarried:  
 But what shall we do for a ring?  
 They sailed away, for a year & a day,  
 To the land where the bong tree grows  
 And there in a wood a piggy-wig stood  
 With a ring at the end of his nose,  
     His nose,  
     His nose,  
 With a ring at the end of his nose.

Dear pig, are you willing to sell for one shilling  
 Your ring? Said the piggy: I will.  
 So they took it away, and were married next day  
 By the turkey who lives on the hill.  
 They dined on mince, & slices of quince,  
 Which they ate with a runcible spoon;  
 And hand in hand, on the edge of the sand,  
 They danced by the light of the moon,  
     The moon,

---

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

'The Owl and the Pussy-Cat', Edward Lear (1812 – 1888), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The Almanacker's (maternal) grandfather had a picture of 'The owl and the pussy-cat', and, while pointing out the said image, used to sing the poem to his grandson.

The moon,  
They danced by the light of the moon.

### XIII.2.

She wore a new terracotta dress,  
And we stayed, because of the pelting storm,  
Within the hansom's dry recess,  
Though the horse had stopped; yea, motionless  
We sat on, snug & warm.

Then the downpour ceased, to my sharp sad pain  
And the glass that had screened our forms before  
Flew up, and out she sprang to her door:  
I should have kissed her if the rain  
Had lasted a minute moor.

**XIII.3.** You never know what is enough unless you know what is more than enough.

### XIV.

#### XIV.1.

Why should you swear I am forsworn,  
Since thine I vowed to be?  
Lady, it is already morn,  
And 'twas last night I swore to thee  
That fond impossibility.

Have I not loved thee much & long,  
A tedious 12 hours' space?  
I must all other beauties wrong,  
And rob thee of a new embrace,  
Could I still dote upon thy face.

Not but all joy in thy brown hair  
By others may be found;  
But I must search the black & fair,

---

'A Thunderstorm in Town', Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. Hardy's subtitle indicates that the poem is based on a memory of his from 1893.

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

'The Scrutiny', Col Richard Lovelace (1617 – 1657), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

Like skilful mineralists that sound  
For treasure in unploughed-up ground.

Then if, when I have loved my round,  
Thou prov'st the pleasant she,  
With spoils of meaner beauties crowned  
I laden will return to thee,  
Ev'n sated with variety.

#### XIV.2.

In our town, people live in rows.  
The only irregular thing in a street is the steeple;  
And where that points to, God only knows,  
And not the poor disciplined people!

And I have watched the women growing old,  
Passionate about pins, & pence, & soap,  
Till the heart within my wedded breast grew cold,  
And I lost hope.

But a young soldier came to our town;  
He spoke his mind most candidly.  
He asked me quickly to lie down,  
And that was very good for me.

For though I gave him no embrace  
– Remembering my duty –  
He altered the expression of my face,  
And gave me back my beauty.

#### XIV.3. He that is down needs fear no fall.

### XV.

#### XV.1.

I did not live until this time  
Crowned my felicity,

---

'The Fired Pot', Mrs Edith Hepburn (1883 – 1947), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. Despite these lines, the act of *turning down* a prospective sexual partner doesn't appear to be something the poetess ever practised herself.

John Bunyan (1628 – 1688), Bunyan, *Pilgrim's Progress*. This is a line from the shepherd boy's song in the second part of *Pilgrim's Progress*.

'To my excellent Lucasia, on Our Friendship', Mrs Katherine Philips (1632 – 1664), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The Lucasia in question was a certain Anne Owens. Orinda seems to have been the poetess's name for herself.

When I could say without a crime,  
I was not thine, but thee.

This carcass breathed, and walked, and slept,  
So that the world believed  
There was a soul the motions kept;  
But they were all deceived.

For as a watch by art is wound  
To motion, such was mine:  
But never had *Orinda* found  
A soul till she found thine;

Which now inspires, cures and supplies,  
And guides my darkened breast:  
For thou art all that I can prize,  
My joy, my life, my rest.

No bridegroom's nor crown-conqueror's mirth  
To mine compared can be:  
They have but pieces of the earth;  
I've all the world in thee.

Then let our flames still light & shine,  
And no false fear control,  
As innocent as our design,  
Immortal as our soul.

## XV.2.

Earnest, earthless, equal, attuneable,  $\wp$  vaulty, voluminous...  
stupendous  
Evening strains to be time's vást,  $\wp$  womb-of-all, home-of-  
all, hearse-of-all night.  
Her fond yellow hornlight wound to the west,  $\wp$  her wild  
hollow hoarlight hung to the height  
Waste; her earliest stars, earl-stars,  $\wp$  stárs principal, over-  
bend us,  
Fíre-féaturing heaven. For earth  $\wp$  her being as unbound,  
her dapple is at an end, as-  
tray or aswarm, all throughther, in throngs;  $\wp$  self ín self  
steepéd and páshed – quite

---

'Spelt from Sibyl's Leaves', Fr Gerard Hopkins (1844 – 1889), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. The title is probably an allusion to the Sibylline Books of ancient Rome.

Disremembering, dísmémbering, ϕ áll now. Heart, you  
 round me right  
 With: óur évening is over us; óur night ϕ whélms, whélms,  
 ánd will end us.  
 Only the beak-leaved boughs dragonish ϕ damask the tool-  
 smooth bleak light; black,  
 Ever so black on it. Óur tale, O óur oracle! ϕ Lét life,  
 wáned, ah lét life wind  
 Off hér once skéined stained véined varíety ϕ upon áll on  
 twó spools; párt, pen, páck  
 Now her áll in twó flocks, twó folds – black, white; ϕ right,  
 wrong; reckon but, reck but, mind  
 But thése two; wáre of a wórld where bút these ϕ twó tell,  
 each off the óther; of a rack  
 Where, selfwrung, selfstrung, sheathe- & shelterless, ϕ thóughts  
 agáinst thoughts ín groans grínd.

**XV.3.** Words easy to be understood do often hit the mark; where high  
 and learned ones do only pierce the air.

## XVI.

### XVI.1.

Go, my songs, to the lonely and the unsatisfied;  
 Go also to the nerve-racked; go to the enslaved-by-convention.  
 Bear to them my contempt for their oppressors.  
 Go as a great wave of cool water;  
 Bear my contempt of oppressors.

Speak against unconscious oppression;  
 Speak against the tyranny of the unimaginative;  
 Speak against bonds.  
 Go to the **bourgeoise** who is dying of her ennui;  
 Go to the women in suburbs.  
 Go to the hideously wedded;  
 Go to them whose failure is concealed;  
 Go to the unluckily mated;

---

John Bunyan (1628 – 1688), Bunyan, *Pilgrim's Progress*. These words are taken from Bunyan's introduction to *The Holy City*, his commentary on the closing chapters of Revelation.

'Commission', Ezra Pound (1885 – 1972), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. ¶35. 'Mortmain' (literally "dead hand") is an obscure piece of Anglo-Norman legalese which refers to the manner in which a legal person – as opposed to a literal or "natural" person – owns land. Said legal person was, more often than not, some sort of religious organisation.

Go to the bought wife;  
Go to the woman entailed.

Go to those who have delicate lust;  
Go to those whose delicate desires are thwarted;  
Go like a blight upon the dulness of the world;  
Go with your edge against this;  
Strengthen the subtle cords;  
Bring confidence upon the algae & the tentacles of the soul.  
Go in a friendly manner;  
Go with an open speech.  
Be eager to find new evils & new good;  
Be against all forms of oppression.  
Go to those who are thickened with middle age,  
To those who have lost their interest.

Go to the adolescent who are smothered in family –  
O how hideous it is  
To see three generations of one house gathered together!  
It is like an old tree with shoots,  
And with some branches rotted & falling.

Go out and defy opinion;  
Go against this vegetable bondage of the blood.  
Be against all sorts of mortmain.

## XVI.2.

This darksome burn, horseback brown,  
His rollrock highroad roaring down,  
In coop & in comb the fleece of his foam  
Flutes and low to the lake falls home.

A windpuff-bonnet of fáwn-fróth  
Turns and twindles over the broth  
Of a pool so pitchblack, féll-frówning,  
It rounds and rounds despair to drowning.

Degged with dew, dappled with dew  
Are the groins of the braes that the brook treads through,

---

‘Inversnaid’, Fr Gerard Hopkins (1844 – 1889), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. Inversnaid is a hamlet on the southern edge of the Scottish Highlands, famous for a nearby cave associated with the folk hero Rob Roy, and in more recent times for having a primary school with only two pupils, which subsequently closed for that reason.



Wiry heathpacks, flitches of fern,  
And the beadbonny ash that sits over the burn.

What would the world be, once bereft  
Of wet & of wildness? Let them be left;  
O let them be left, wildness & wet;  
Long live the weeds & the wilderness yet.

**XVI.3.** Oaths are but words.

## XVII.

**XVII.1.**

I bring fresh showers for the thirsting flowers,  
From the seas and the streams;  
I bear light shade for the leaves when laid  
In their noonday dreams.  
From my wings are shaken the dews that waken  
The sweet buds every one,  
When rocked to rest on their mother's breast,  
As she dances about the sun.  
I wield the flail of the lashing hail,  
And whiten the green plains under,  
And then again I dissolve it in rain,  
And laugh as I pass in thunder.

I sift the snow on the mountains below,  
And their great pines groan aghast;  
And all the night 'tis my pillow white,  
While I sleep in the arms of the blast.  
Sublime on the towers of my skiey bowers,  
Lightning my pilot sits;  
In a cavern under is fettered the thunder,  
It struggles and howls at fits;  
Over earth and ocean, with gentle motion,  
This pilot is guiding me,  
Lured by the love of the genii that move  
In the depths of the purple sea;  
Over the rills, and the crags, and the hills,  
Over the lakes & the plains,

---

Samuel Butler (1612 – 1680), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'The Cloud', Percy Shelley (1792 – 1822), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

This poem may well have been influenced by, and in any case bears a striking likeness to, riddles from the *Exeter Book*.

Wherever he dream, under mountain or stream,  
The spirit he loves remains;  
And I all the while bask in heaven's blue smile,  
Whilst he is dissolving in rains.

The sanguine sunrise, with his meteor eyes,  
And his burning plumes outspread,  
Leaps on the back of my sailing rack,  
When the morning star shines dead;  
As on the jag of a mountain crag,  
Which an earthquake rocks & swings,  
An eagle alit one moment may sit  
In the light of its golden wings.  
And when sunset may breathe, from the lit sea beneath,  
Its ardours of rest & of love,  
And the crimson pall of eve may fall  
From the depth of Heaven above,  
With wings folded I rest, on mine aEDDOTry nest,  
As still as a brooding dove.

That orbèd maiden with white fire laden,  
Whom mortals call the moon,  
Glides glimmering o'er my fleece-like floor,  
By the midnight breezes strewn;  
And wherever the beat of her unseen feet,  
Which only the angels hear,  
May have broken the woof of my tent's thin roof,  
The stars peep behind her and peer;  
And I laugh to see them whirl & flee,  
Like a swarm of golden bees,  
When I widen the rent in my wind-built tent,  
Till calm the rivers, lakes, and seas,  
Like strips of the sky fallen through me on high,  
Are each paved with the moon and these.

I bind the sun's throne with a burning zone,  
And the moon's with a girdle of pearl;  
The volcanoes are dim, and the stars reel & swim,  
When the whirlwinds my banner unfurl.  
From cape to cape, with a bridge-like shape,  
Over a torrent sea,  
Sunbeam-proof, I hang like a roof,  
The mountains its columns be.

The triumphal arch through which I march  
 With hurricane, fire, and snow,  
 When the powers of the air are chained to my chair,  
 Is the million-coloured bow;  
 The sphere-fire above its soft colours wove,  
 While the moist earth was laughing below.

I am the daughter of earth & water,  
 And the nursling of the sky;  
 I pass through the pores of the ocean & shores;  
 I change, but I cannot die.  
 For after the rain when with never a stain  
 The pavilion of heaven is bare,  
 And the winds & sunbeams with their convex gleams  
 Build up the blue dome of air,  
 I silently laugh at my own cenotaph,  
 And out of the caverns of rain,  
 Like a child from the womb, like a ghost from the tomb,  
 I arise and unbuild it again.

## XVII.2.

Beauty, I know, is good, and blood is more;  
 Riches thought most; but, madam, think what store  
 The world hath seen, which all these had in trust  
 And now lie in their forgotten dust.  
 It is the muse alone, can raise to heaven,  
 And at her strong arm's end, hold up, and even  
 The souls she loves. Those other glorious notes,  
 Inscribed in touch or marble, or the coats  
 Painted or carved upon our great men's tombs,  
 Or in their windows, do but prove the wombs  
 That bred them, graves: when they were born they died  
 That had no muse to make their fame abide  
 How many equal with the argive queen,  
 Have beauty known, yet none so famous seen?

## XVII.3. Good workmen never quarrel with their tools.

---

℞ Ben Jonson (1572 – 1637), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. These lines are taken from Jonson's verse letter to Elizabeth, the wife of the 5th Earl of Rutland (of the third creation) and daughter of Sir Philip Sidney.

George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a line from the first canto of *Don Juan*.

## XVIII.

## XVIII.1.

Yes, contumelious fair, you scorn  
 The amorous dwarf, that courts you to his arms,  
 But ere you leave him quite forlorn,  
 And to some youth gigantic yield your charms,  
 Hear him, O hear him, if you will not try,  
 And let your judgment check th'ambition of your eye.

Say, is it carnage makes the man?  
 Is to be monstrous really to be great?  
 Say, is it wise or just to scan  
 Your lover's worth by quantity, or weight?  
 Ask your mamma & nurse, if it be so;  
 Nurse & mamma, I ween, shall jointly answer, no.

The less the body to the view,  
 The soul (like springs in closer durance pent)  
 Is all exertion, ever new,  
 Unceasing, unextinguished, and unspent;  
 Still pouring forth executive desire,  
 As bright, as brisk, & lasting, as the vestal fire.

Does thy young bosom pant for fame?  
 Would'st thou be of posterity the toast?  
 The poets shall ensure thy name,  
 Who magnitude of mind not body boast.  
 Laurels on bulky bards as rarely grow,  
 As on the sturdy oak the virtuous misletoe.

Look in the glass, survey that cheek  
 Where *Flora* has with all her roses blushed;  
 The shape so tender, looks so meek,  
 The breasts made to be pressed, not to be crushed –  
 Then turn to me – turn with obliging eyes,  
 Nor longer nature's works, in miniature, despise.

---

'The Author Apologizes to a Lady for His Being a Little Man', Christopher Smart (1722 – 1771), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. Smart affixed two quotations to this poem: one from the *Ἰλιάς* (I.167) – 'ὄλιγον τε φίλον τε', which means, 'A small but dear thing' – and one from Pliny's *Naturalis Historia* – 'Natura nusquam magis, quam in minimis tota est', which means, 'Nature is nowhere greater than in the smallest of things'.

Young *Ammon* did the world subdue,  
 Yet had not more external man than I;  
 Ah charmer, should I conquer you,  
 With him in fame, as well as size, I'll vie.  
 Then, scornful nymph, come forth to yonder grove,  
 Where I defy, and challenge, all thy utmost love.

### XVIII.2.

This living hand, now warm & capable  
 Of earnest grasping, would, if it were cold  
 And in the icy silence of the tomb,  
 So haunt thy days and chill thy dreaming nights  
 That thou would wish thine own heart dry of blood  
 So in my veins red life might stream again,  
 And thou be conscience-calmed; see here it is;  
 I hold it towards you.

### XVIII.3. Conventionalty is not morality.

## XIX.

### XIX.1.

The lopped tree in time may grow again;  
 Most naked plants renew both fruit & flower;  
 The sorest wight may find release of pain;  
 The driest soil suck in some moist'ning shower.  
 Times go by turns, and chances change by course:  
 From foul to fair, from better hap to worse.

The sea of fortune doth not ever flow;  
 She draws her favours to the lowest ebb;  
 Her tide hath equal times to come & go;  
 Her loom doth weave the fine & coarsest web.  
 No joy so great, but runneth to an end;  
 No hap so hard, but may in fine amend.

Not always fall of leaf, nor ever spring;  
 No endless night, yet not eternal day;  
 The saddest birds a season find to sing;  
 The roughest storm a calm may soon allay.

---

John Keats (1795 – 1821), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

Mrs Charlotte Nicholls (1816 – 1855), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. These words are taken from the author's preface to *Jane Eyre*.

℞ 'Tymes Goe by Turnes', Saint Robert Southwell (1561 – 1595), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

Thus with succeeding turns God tempereth all,  
That man may hope to rise, yet fear to fall.

A chance may win that by mischance was lost;  
The net that holds no great, takes little fish;  
In some things all, in all things none are crossed:  
Few all they need, but none have all they wish.  
Unmeddled joys here to no man befall;  
Who least, hath some, who most, hath never all.

### **XIX.2.**

I must go down to the seas again, to the lonely sea & the sky,  
And all I ask is a tall ship & a star to steer her by;  
And the wheel's kick & the wind's song & the white sail's shaking,  
And a grey mist on the sea's face, & a grey dawn breaking.

I must go down to the seas again, for the call of the running tide  
Is a wild call & a clear call that may not be denied;  
And all I ask is a windy day with the white clouds flying,  
And the flung spray & the blown spume, & the sea-gulls crying.

I must go down to the seas again, to the vagrant gypsy life,  
To the gull's way & the whale's way where the wind's like a whetted  
knife;  
And all I ask is a merry yarn from a laughing fellow-rover,  
And quiet sleep & a sweet dream when the long trick's over.

**XIX.3.** To go naked is the best disguise.

## **XX.**

### **XX.1.**

When the hounds of spring are on winter's traces,  
The mother of months in meadow or plain  
Fills the shadows and windy places  
With lisp of leaves & ripple of rain;  
And the brown bright nightingale amorous

---

'Sea-Fever', Dr John Masefield, Poet Laureate (1878 – 1967), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

William Congreve (1670 – 1729), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Chorus', Algernon Swinburne (1837 – 1909), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This is a chorus from Swinburne's tragedy *Atalanta in Calydon*. ¶6. According to the Ὀδύσσεια XIX.519-24, Aedon killed her own son, Itylus, during a psychotic episode, for which Zeus transformed her into a nightingale – hence the bird's mournful song. ¶44. The terms 'maenad' and 'bassarid' are synonyms.

Is  $\frac{1}{2}$  assuaged for *Itylus*,  
 For the thracian ships & the foreign faces,  
 The tongueless vigil, & all the pain.

Come with bows bent and with emptying of quivers,  
 Maiden most perfect, lady of light,  
 With a noise of winds & many rivers,  
 With a clamour of waters, & with might;  
 Bind on thy sandals, O thou most fleet,  
 Over the splendour & speed of thy feet;  
 For the faint east quickens, the wan west shivers,  
 Round the feet of the day and the feet of the night.

Where shall we find her? How shall we sing to her,  
 Fold our hands round her knees, and cling?  
 O that man's heart were as fire and could spring to her,  
 Fire, or the strength of the streams that spring!  
 For the stars & the winds are unto her  
 As raiment, as songs of the harp-player;  
 For the risen stars & the fallen cling to her,  
 And the southwest wind & the west wind sing.

For winter's rains & ruins are over,  
 And all the season of snows & sins;  
 The days dividing lover & lover,  
 The light that loses, the night that wins;  
 And time remembered is grief forgotten,  
 And frosts are slain and flowers begotten,  
 And in green underwood & cover  
 Blossom by blossom the spring begins.

The full streams feed on flower of rushes,  
 Ripe grasses trammel a traveling foot,  
 The faint fresh flame of the young year flushes  
 From leaf to flower and flower to fruit;  
 And fruit & leaf are as gold & fire,  
 And the oat is heard above the lyre,  
 And the hoofed heel of a satyr crushes  
 The chestnut husk at the chestnut root.

And *Pan* by noon and *Bacchus* by night,  
 Fleeter of foot than the fleet-foot kid,  
 Follows with dancing and fills with delight  
 The maenad & the bassarid;

And soft as lips that laugh and hide  
 The laughing leaves of the trees divide,  
 And screen from seeing and leave in sight  
     The god pursuing, the maiden hid.

The ivy falls with the bacchanal's hair  
     Over her eyebrows hiding her eyes;  
 The wild vine slipping down leaves bare  
     Her bright breast shortening into sighs;  
 The wild vine slips with the weight of its leaves,  
 But the berried ivy catches and cleaves  
 To the limbs that glitter, the feet that scare  
     The wolf that follows, the fawn that flies.

## XX.2.

I so liked spring last year  
     Because you were here –  
     The thrushes too –  
 Because it was these you so liked to hear –  
     I so liked you.

    This year's a different thing;  
     I'll not think of you.  
 But I'll like the spring because it is simply spring  
     As the thrushes do.

XX.3. It's a poor sort of memory that only works backwards.

## XXI.

### XXI.1.

Come into the garden, *Maud*,  
     For the black bat, night, has flown;  
 Come into the garden, *Maud*;  
     I am here at the gate alone;  
 And the woodbine spices are wafted abroad,  
     And the musk of the roses blown.

For a breeze of morning moves,  
     And the planet of love is on high,

---

Miss Charlotte Mew (1869 – 1928), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

The Rev Charles Dodgson (1832 – 1898), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. These are the closing lines of Part I of Lord Tennyson's long poem *Maud*.



Beginning to faint in the light that she loves  
On a bed of daffodil sky,  
To faint in the light of the sun she loves,  
To faint in his light, and to die.

All night have the roses heard  
The flute, violin, bassoon;  
All night has the casement jessamine stirred  
To the dangers dancing in tune;  
Till a silence fell with the waking bird,  
And a hush with the setting moon.

I said to the lily, 'There is but one  
With whom she has heart to be gay.  
When will the dancers leave her alone?  
She is weary of dance & play.'  
Now  $\frac{1}{2}$  to the setting moon are gone,  
And  $\frac{1}{2}$  to the rising day;  
Low on the sand & loud on the stone  
The last wheel echoes away.

I said to the rose, 'The brief night goes  
In babble & revel & wine.  
Young lord-lover, what sighs are those,  
For one that will never be thine?  
But mine, but mine,' so I sware to the rose,  
'For ever & ever, mine.'

And the soul of the rose went into my blood,  
As the music clashed in the hall;  
And long by the garden lake I stood,  
For I heard your rivulet fall  
From the lake to the meadow and on to the wood,  
Our wood, that is dearer than all;

From the meadow your walks have left so sweet  
That whenever a march wind sighs  
He sets the jewel-print of your feet  
In violets blue as your eyes,  
To the woody hollows in which we meet  
And the valleys of paradise.

The slender acacia would not shake  
One long milk bloom on the tree;

The white lake blossom fell into the lake,  
 As the pimpernel dozed on the lea;  
 But the rose was awake all night for your sake,  
 Knowing your promise to me;  
 The lilies & roses were all awake.  
 They sighed for the dawn & thee.

Queen rose of the rosebud garden of girls,  
 Come hither; the dances are done,  
 In gloss of satin & glimmer of pearls,  
 Queen lily & rose in one;  
 Shine out, little head, sunning over with curls,  
 To the flowers, and be their sun.

There has fallen a splendid tear  
 From the passion-flower at the gate.  
 She is coming, my dove, my dear;  
 She is coming, my life, my fate;  
 The red rose cries, She is near, she is near;  
 And the white rose weeps, She is late;  
 The larkspur listens, I hear, I hear;  
 And the lily whispers, I wait.

She is coming, my own, my sweet;  
 Were it ever so airy a tread.  
 My heart would hear her and beat,  
 Were it earth in an earthy bed;  
 My dust would hear her and beat,  
 Had I lain for a century dead,  
 Would start and tremble under her feet,  
 And blossom in purple & red.

## XXI.2.

Seventeen years ago you said  
 Something that sounded like good-by:  
 And everybody thinks you are dead  
 But I.

---

'A Quoi Bon Dire', Miss Charlotte Mew (1869 – 1928), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. The French title appears to be somewhat untranslatable – the Almanacker only speaks a very broken form of French – but means something like, 'What good is there to say?' or, 'What's the point of saying?' Miss Mew's title, however, is without a question mark; it's unclear whether this was deliberate or an oversight.

So I as I grow stiff & cold  
 To this & that say good-by too;  
 And everybody sees that I am old  
 But you.

And one fine morning in a sunny lane  
 Some boy & girl will meet & kiss & swear  
 That nobody can love their way again  
 While over there  
 You will have smiled; I shall have tossed your hair.

**XXI.3.** There is plenty of time to win this game, and to thrash the Spaniards too.

## XXII.

### XXII.1.

Half a league,  $\frac{1}{2}$  a league,  
 Half a league onward,  
 All in the valley of death  
 Rode the 600.  
 'Forward, the Light Brigade!  
 Charge for the guns!' he said:  
 Into the valley of death  
 Rode the 600.

'Forward, the Light Brigade!'  
 Was there a man dismayed?  
 Not though the soldier knew  
 Someone had blundered.  
 Theirs not to make reply;  
 Theirs not to reason why;  
 Theirs but to do & die:  
 Into the valley of death  
 Rode the 600.

Cannon to right of them,  
 Cannon to left of them,  
 Cannon in front of them  
 Volleyed & thundered;

---

Sir Francis Drake (1540 – 1596), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'The Charge of the Light Brigade', Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The poem relates the famous and, as Lord Tennyson does his best to gloss over, clearly idiotic British cavalry charge at the Battle of Balaclava in 1854.

Stormed at with shot & shell,  
Boldly they rode and well;  
Into the jaws of death,  
Into the mouth of hell  
Rode the 600.

Flashed all their sabres bare;  
Flashed as they turned in air,  
Sabring the gunners there,  
Charging an army, while  
All the world wondered:  
Plunged in the battery-smoke  
Right through the line they broke;  
Cossack & russian  
Reeled from the sabre stroke  
Shattered & sundered.  
Then they rode back, but not  
Not the 600.

Cannon to right of them,  
Cannon to left of them,  
Cannon behind them  
Volleyed & thundered;  
Stormed at with shot & shell,  
While horse & hero fell,  
They that had fought so well  
Came through the jaws of death  
Back from the mouth of hell,  
All that was left of them,  
Left of 600.

When can their glory fade?  
O the wild charge they made!  
All the world wondered.  
Honour the charge they made,  
Honour the Light Brigade,  
Noble 600.

**XXII.2.**

Whenas the rye reach to the chin,  
 And chop-cherry, chop-cherry ripe within,  
 Strawberries swimming in the cream,  
 And schoolboys playing in the stream;  
 Then O, then O, then O, my true love said,  
 Till that time come again  
 She could not live a maid.

**XXII.3.** There must be a beginning of any great matter.

**XXIII.****XXIII.1.**

To the same purpose: he, not long before  
 Brought home from nurse, going to the door  
 To do some little thing  
 He must not do within,  
 With wonder cries,  
 As in the skies  
 He saw the moon, 'O yonder is the moon,  
 Newly come after me to town,  
 That shined at LUGWARDINE but yesternight,  
 Where I enjoyed the self-same sight.'

As if it had ev'n 20,000 faces,  
 It shines at once in many places;  
 To all the earth so wide  
 God doth the stars divide,  
 With so much art  
 The moon impart,  
 They serve us all; serve wholly every one  
 As if they servèd him alone.  
 While every single person hath such store,  
 'Tis want of sense which makes us poor.

---

℞ George Peele (1556 – 1596), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. ¶12. Chop-cherry was a traditional English children's game in which the player attempts to catch a cherry, perhaps suspended from a thread, between his teeth.

Sir Francis Drake (1540 – 1596), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
 'To the Same Purpose', The Rev Thomas Traherne (1636 – 1674), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Lugwardine (which the *Norton Anthology* spells without an *e*) is a village in Herefordshire.

**XXIII.2.**

Two or three visits, & two or three bows,  
 Two or three civil things, two or three vows,  
 Two or three kisses, with two or three sighs,  
 Two or three *Jesuses* – & Let me dies –  
 Two or three squeezes, & two or three touses,  
 With two or three £1000 lost at their houses,  
 Can never fail cuckolding two or three spouses.

**XXIII.3.**

Treason doth never prosper. What's the reason?  
 For if it prosper none dare call it treason.

**XXIV.****XXIV.1.**

I believe in you, my soul. The other I am must not abase  
 itself to you,  
 And you must not be abased to the other.

Loaf with me on the grass; loose the stop from your throat.

Not words, not music or rhyme I want, not custom or lec-  
 ture, not even the best.  
 Only the lull I like, the hum of your valvèd voice.

I mind how once we lay such a transparent summer morn-  
 ing,  
 How you settled your head athwart my hips and gently  
 turned over upon me,  
 And parted the shirt from my bosom-bone, and plunged  
 your tongue to my bare-stripped heart,  
 And reached till you felt my beard, and reached till you  
 held my feet.

Swiftly arose and spread around me the peace & knowledge  
 that pass all the argument of the earth,  
 And I know that the hand of God is the promise of my own,

---

℞ 'Two or Three: A Recipe to Make a Cuckold', Alexander Pope (1688 – 1744), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

'Of Treason', Sir John Harington (1560 – 1612), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

Walt Whitman (1819 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. These lines constitute "Song of Myself" §5.

And I know that the spirit of God is the brother of my own,  
 And that all the men ever born are also my brothers, and  
     the women my sisters & lovers,  
 And that a kelson of the creation is love,  
 And limitless are leaves stiff or drooping in the fields,  
 And brown ants in the little wells beneath them,  
 And mossy scabs of the worm fence, heaped stones, elder,  
     mullein & poke-weed.

#### XXIV.2.

Not marble, nor the gilded monuments,  
     Of princes shall outlive this powerful rhyme;  
 But you shall shine more bright in these contents  
     Than unswept stone, besmeared with sluttish time.  
 When wasteful war shall statues overturn,  
     And broils root out the work of masonry,  
 Nor *Mars* his sword nor war's quick fire shall burn  
     The living record of your memory.  
 'Gainst death & all-oblivious enmity  
     Shall you pace forth; your praise shall still find room,  
 Even in the eyes of all posterity  
     That wear this world out to the ending doom.  
 So, till the judgment that yourself arise,  
 You live in this, and dwell in lovers' eyes.

XXIV.3. I play for seasons; not eternities.

#### XXV.

##### XXV.1.

Could we stop the time that's flying  
     Or recall it when 'tis past,  
 Put far off the day of dying  
     Or make youth for ever last,  
     To love would then be worth our cost.

But since we must lose those graces  
     Which at first your hearts have won,

---

℞ William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

George Meredith (1828 – 1909), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. This is the first line of *Modern Love* XIII.

℞ 'The Unequal Fetters', Anne Finch, Countess of Winchilsea (1661 – 1720), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

And you seek for in new faces  
 When our spring of life is done,  
 It would but urge our ruin on.

Free as nature's first intention  
 Was to make us, I'll be found,  
 Nor by subtle man's invention  
 Yield to be in fetters bound  
 But one that walks a freer round.

Marriage does but slightly tie men  
 Whilst close prisoners we remain;  
 They the larger slaves of *Hymen*  
 Still are begging love again  
 At the full length of all their chain.

### XXV.2.

One word is too often profaned  
 For me to profane it,  
 One feeling too falsely disdained  
 For thee to disdain it.  
 One hope is too like despair  
 For prudence to smother,  
 And pity from thee more dear  
 Than that from another.

I can give not what men call love;  
 But wilt thou accept not  
 The worship the heart lifts above  
 And the heavens reject not:  
 The desire of the moth for the star,  
 Of the night for the morrow,  
 The devotion to something afar  
 From the sphere of our sorrow?

### XXV.3.

I dreamt a dream tonight. 'And so did I.'  
 Well what was yours? 'That dreamers often lie.'

---

'To —', Percy Shelley (1792 – 1822), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. Shelley, ever the prophet of the new secular post-Christian morality, wrote this poem as a means of propositioning his best friend's wife.

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This is a dialogue between Romeo and Mercutio from *Romeo and Juliet* I.4.



## XXVI.

## XXVI.1.

Beneath these fruit-tree boughs that shed  
 Their snow-white blossoms on my head,  
 With brightest sunshine round me spread  
     Of spring's unclouded weather,  
 In this sequestered nook how sweet  
 To sit upon my orchard-seat!  
 And birds & flowers once more to greet,  
     My last year's friends together.

One have I marked, the happiest guest  
 In all this covert of the blest:  
 Hail to thee, far above the rest  
     In joy of voice & pinion!  
 Thou, linnet! in thy green array,  
 Presiding spirit here today,  
 Dost lead the revels of the may;  
     And this is thy dominion.

While birds, & butterflies, & flowers,  
 Make all one band of paramours,  
 Thou, ranging up & down the bowers,  
     Art sole in thy employment:  
 A life, a presence like the air,  
 Scattering thy gladness without care,  
 Too blest with any one to pair;  
     Thyself thy own enjoyment.

Amid yon tuft of hazel trees,  
 That twinkle to the gusty breeze,  
 Behold him perched in ecstasies,  
     Yet seeming still to hover;  
 There! where the flutter of his wings  
 Upon his back & body flings  
 Shadows & sunny glimmerings,  
     That cover him all over.

My dazzled sight he oft deceives,  
 A brother of the dancing leaves;

---

'The Green Linnet', Dr William Wordsworth, Poet Laureate (1770 – 1850), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Then flits, and from the cottage-eaves  
 Pours forth his song in gushes;  
 As if by that exulting strain  
 He mocked & treated with disdain  
 The voiceless form he chose to feign,  
 While fluttering in the bushes.

## XXVI.2.

The fountains mingle with the river  
 And the rivers with the ocean,  
 The winds of heaven mix for ever  
 With a sweet emotion;  
 Nothing in the world is single;  
 All things by a law divine  
 In one spirit meet & mingle.  
 Why not I with thine?

See the mountains kiss high heaven  
 And the waves clasp one another;  
 No sister-flower would be forgiven  
 If it disdained its brother;  
 And the sunlight clasps the earth  
 And the moonbeams kiss the sea:  
 What is all this sweet work worth  
 If thou kiss not me?

XXVI.3. O brave new world, that has such people in 't!

## XXVII.

### XXVII.1.

She was a phantom of delight  
 When first she gleamed upon my sight;  
 A lovely apparition, sent  
 To be a moment's ornament;  
 Her eyes as stars of twilight fair;  
 Like twilight's, too, her dusky hair;  
 But all things else about her drawn  
 From may-time and the cheerful dawn;

---

'Love's Philosophy', Percy Shelley (1792 – 1822), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. This famous line is uttered by Miranda in *The Tempest* V.1. It provided the title for Huxley's dystopia *Brave New World*.

Dr William Wordsworth, Poet Laureate (1770 – 1850), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

A dancing shape, an image gay,  
To haunt, to startle, and way-lay.

I saw her upon nearer view,  
A spirit, yet a woman too!  
Her household motions light & free,  
And steps of virgin-liberty;  
A countenance in which did meet  
Sweet records, promises as sweet;  
A creature not too bright or good  
For human nature's daily food;  
For transient sorrows, simple wiles,  
Praise, blame, love, kisses, tears, and smiles.

And now I see with eye serene  
The very pulse of the machine;  
A being breathing thoughtful breath,  
A traveller between life and death;  
The reason firm, the temperate will,  
Endurance, foresight, strength, and skill;  
A perfect woman, nobly planned,  
To warn, to comfort, and command;  
And yet a spirit still, and bright  
With something of angelic light.

## XXVII.2.

Your smiles are not, as other women's be,  
Only the drawing of the mouth awry;  
For breasts & cheeks & forehead we may see,  
Parts wanting motion, all stand smiling by:  
Heaven hath no mouth, and yet is said to smile  
After your style:  
No more hath earth, yet that smiles too,  
Just as you do.

No simpering lips nor looks can breed  
Such smiles as from your face proceed:  
The sun must lend his golden beams,  
Soft winds their breath, green trees their shade,  
Sweet fields their flowers, clear springs their streams,  
Ere such another smile be made:

---

℞ Aurelian Townshend (1583 – 1651), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This poem is sometimes printed under the title "To the Lady Mary".

But these concurring, we may say,  
So smiles the spring and so smiles lovely may.

**XXVII.3.** The strongest oaths are straw to the fire in the blood.

## XXVIII.

### XXVIII.1.

That is no country for old men. The young  
In one another's arms, birds in the trees,  
– Those dying generations – at their song,  
The salmon-falls, the mackerel-crowded seas,  
Fish, flesh, or fowl, commend all summer long  
Whatever is begotten, born, and dies.  
Caught in that sensual music all neglect  
Monuments of unageing intellect.

An aged man is but a paltry thing,  
A tattered coat upon a stick, unless  
Soul clap its hands & sing, and louder sing  
For every tatter in its mortal dress,  
Nor is there singing school but studying  
Monuments of its own magnificence;  
And therefore I have sailed the seas and come  
To the holy city of BYZANTIUM.

O sages standing in God's holy fire  
As in the gold mosaic of a wall,  
Come from the holy fire, perne in a gyre,  
And be the singing-masters of my soul.  
Consume my heart away; sick with desire  
And fastened to a dying animal  
It knows not what it is; and gather me  
Into the artifice of eternity.

Once out of nature I shall never take  
My bodily form from any natural thing,  
But such a form as grecian goldsmiths make  
Of hammered gold & gold enamelling  
To keep a drowsy emperor awake;

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. This line is uttered by Prospero in *The Tempest* IV.1.

'Sailing to Byzantium', William Yeats (1865 – 1939), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Or set upon a golden bough to sing  
 To lords & ladies of BYZANTIUM  
 Of what is passed, or passing, or to come.

### XXVIII.2.

TAGUS, farewell, that westward, with thy streams,  
 Turns up the grains of gold already tried,  
 For I, with spur & sail, go seek the THAMES,  
 Gainward the sun that show'th her wealthy pride,  
 And to the town which *Brutus* sought by dreams,  
 Like bended moon that leans her lusty side.  
 My king, my country, I seek for whom I live;  
 O mighty *Jove*, the winds for this me give.

### XXVIII.3.

You taught me language; and my profit on 't  
 Is, I know how to curse.

## XXIX.

### XXIX.1.

The unpurged images of day recede;  
 The emperor's drunken soldiery are abed;  
 Night resonance recedes, night-walkers' song  
 After great cathedral gong;  
 A starlit or a moonlit dome disdains  
 All that man is,  
 All mere complexities,  
 The fury and the mire of human veins.

Before me floats an image, man or shade,  
 Shade more than man, more image than a shade;  
 For Hades' bobbin bound in mummy-cloth  
 May unwind the winding path;  
 A mouth that has no moisture & no breath  
 Breathless mouths may summon;

---

℞ 'On His Returne from Spaine', Sir Thomas Wyatt (1503 – 1542), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. This poem appears in other sources with most of the lines changed subtly; but the Almanacker finds this alternative version much inferior. ¶5. According to Geoffrey of Monmouth's *Historia Regum Britanniae*, Brutus of Troy was inspired to found the city of London in a dream.

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. This line is uttered by Caliban in *The Tempest* I.2.

'Byzantium', William Yeats (1865 – 1939), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

I hail the superhuman;  
I call it death-in-life and life-in-death.

Miracle, bird or golden handiwork,  
More miracle than bird or handiwork,  
Planted on the starlit golden bough,  
Can like the cocks of Hades crow,  
Or, by the moon embittered, scorn aloud  
In glory of changeless metal  
Common bird or petal  
And all complexities of mire or blood.

At midnight on the Emperor's pavement flit  
Flames that no faggot feeds, nor steel has lit,  
Nor storm disturbs, flames begotten of flame,  
Where blood-begotten spirits come  
And all complexities of fury leave,  
Dying into a dance,  
An agony of trance,  
An agony of flame that cannot singe a sleeve.

Astraddle on the dolphin's mire and blood,  
Spirit after spirit! The smithies break the flood,  
The golden smithies of the Emperor!  
Marbles of the dancing floor  
Break bitter furies of complexity,  
Those images that yet  
Fresh images beget,  
That dolphin-torn, that gong-tormented sea.

## XXIX.2.

Farewell, love, and all thy laws forever.  
Thy baited hooks shall tangle me no more.  
*Senec* and *Plato* call me from thy lore  
To perfect wealth, my wit for to endeavour.  
In blind error when I did persevere,  
Thy sharp repulse, that pricketh ay so sore,  
Hath taught me to set in trifles no store  
And scape forth, since liberty is lever.  
Therefore, farewell; go trouble younger hearts  
And in me claim no more authority.

---

℞ 'A Renouncing of Love', Sir Thomas Wyatt (1503 – 1542), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. ¶14. Other sources give: 'Me lusteth no lenger rotten boughs to climb.'

With idle youth go use thy property  
And thereon spend thy many brittle darts,  
For hitherto though I have lost all my time,  
Me list no longer rotten boughs to climb.

**XXIX.3.** Your tale, sir, would cure deafness.

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. This line is uttered by Miranda in *The Tempest* 1.2.





## CHAPTER 3

# Tertilis

### I.

#### I.1.

Timely blossom, infant fair,  
Fondling of a happy pair,  
Every morn & every night  
Their solicitous delight,  
Sleeping, waking, still at ease,  
Pleasing, without skill to please;  
Little gossip, blithe & hale,  
Tattling many a broken tale,  
Singing many a tuneless song,  
Lavish of a heedless tongue;  
Simple maiden, void of art,  
Babbling out the very heart,  
Yet abandoned to thy will,  
Yet imagining no ill,  
Yet too innocent to blush;  
Like the linnet in the bush  
To the mother-linnet's note  
Moduling her slender throat;  
Chirping forth thy petty joys,  
Wanton in the change of toys,  
Like the linnet green, in may  
Flitting to each bloomy spray;  
Wearied then & glad of rest,  
Like the linnet in the nest:—  
This thy present happy lot,  
This in time will be forgot:  
Other pleasures, other cares,  
Ever-busy time prepares;

---

<sup>1</sup>To Charlotte Pulteney', Ambrose Philips (1674 – 1749), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

And thou shalt in thy daughter see,  
This picture, once, resembled thee.

## I.2.

Love seeketh not itself to please,  
Nor for itself hath any care,  
But for another gives its ease,  
And builds a heaven in hell's despair.

So sung a little clod of clay  
Trodden with the cattle's feet,  
But a pebble of the brook  
Warbled out these metres meet:

Love seeketh only self to please,  
To bind another to its delight,  
Joys in another's loss of ease,  
And builds a hell in heaven's despite.

## I.3. Fetters of gold are still fetters.

## II.

### II.1.

Now in thy dazzling ½ oped eye,  
Thy curlèd nose & lip awry,  
Uphoisted arms & noddling head,  
And little chin with crystal spread,  
Poor helpless thing, what do I see,  
That I should sing of thee?

From thy poor tongue no accents come,  
Which can but rub thy toothless gum:  
Small understanding boasts thy face,  
Thy shapeless limbs nor step nor grace:  
A few short words thy feats may tell,  
And yet I love thee well.

When wakes the sudden bitter shriek,  
And redder swells thy little cheek

---

'The Clod & the Pebble', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*.

Miss Mary Astell (1668 – 1731), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'A Mother to Her Waking Infant', Miss Joanna Baillie (1762 – 1851), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

When rattled keys thy woes beguile,  
And through thine eyelids gleams the smile,  
Still for thy weakly self is spent  
Thy little silly plaint.

But when thy friends are in distress,  
Thou'lt laugh and chuckle ne'er the less,  
Nor with kind sympathy be smitten,  
Though all are sad but thee & kitten;  
Yet puny varlet that thou art,  
Thou twitchest at the heart.

Thy smooth round cheek so soft & warm;  
Thy pinky hand & dimpled arm;  
Thy silken locks that scantily peep,  
With gold tipped ends, where circle deep,  
Around thy neck in harmless grace,  
So soft and sleekly hold their place,  
Might harder hearts with kindness fill,  
And gain our right goodwill.

Each passing clown bestows his blessing,  
Thy mouth is worn with old wives' kissing;  
E'en lighter looks the gloomy eye  
Of surly sense when thou art by;  
And yet, I think, whoe'er they be,  
They love thee not like me.

Perhaps when time shall add a few  
Short years to thee, thou'lt love me too;  
And after that, through life's long way,  
Become my sure and cheering stay;  
Wilt care for me and be my hold,  
When I am weak and old.

Thou'lt listen to my lengthened tale,  
And pity me when I am frail –  
But see, the sweepy spinning fly  
Upon the window takes thine eye.  
Go to thy little senseless play;  
Thou dost not heed my lay.

**II.2.**

The look of love alarms  
 Because 'tis filled with fire,  
 But the look of soft deceit  
 Shall win the lover's hire.

Soft deceit & idleness,  
 These are beauty's sweetest dress.

**II.3.** Money speaks sense in a language all nations understand.

**III.****III.1.**

We have bathed, where none have seen us,  
 In the lake & in the fountain,  
     Underneath the charmed statue  
 Of the timid, bending *Venus*,  
     When the water nymphs were counting  
 In the waves the stars of night,  
     And those maidens started at you,  
 Your limbs shone through so soft & bright.  
     But no secrets dare we tell,  
     For thy slaves unlace thee,  
     And he, who shall embrace thee,  
     Waits to try thy beauty's spell.

'We have crowned thee queen of women,  
     Since love's love, the rose, hath kept her  
     Court within thy lips & blushes,  
 And thine eye, in beauty swimming,  
     Kissing, we rendered up the sceptre,  
 At whose touch the startled soul  
     Like an ocean bounds & gushes,  
 And spirits bend at thy control.  
     But no secrets dare we tell,  
     For thy slaves unlace thee,  
     And he, who shall embrace thee,  
     Is at hand, and so farewell.'

---

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. These lines are taken from "Several Questions Answered".

Mrs Aphra Behn (1640 – 1689), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ Dr Thomas Beddoes (1803 – 1849), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. The first verse is to be sung 'By female voices', and the second by male.

## III.2.

Thou hearest the nightingale begin the song of spring.  
 The lark sitting upon his earthy bed, just as the morn  
 Appears, listens silent; then springing from the waving cornfield, loud  
 He leads the choir of day: trill, trill, trill, trill,  
 Mounting upon the wings of light into the great expanse,  
 Re-echoing against the lovely blue & shining heavenly shell,  
 His little throat labours with inspiration; every feather  
 On throat & breast & wings vibrates with the effluence divine  
 All nature listens silent to him, & the awful sun  
 Stands still upon the mountain looking on this little bird  
 With eyes of soft humility & wonder, love & awe,  
 Then loud from their green covert all the birds begin their song:  
 The thrush, the linnet & the goldfinch, robin & the wren  
 Awake the sun from his sweet reverie upon the mountain.  
 The nightingale again assays his song, & thro' the day  
 And thro' the night warbles luxuriant, every bird of song  
 Attending his loud harmony with admiration & love.

## III.3.

I'm tired of love: I'm still more tired of rhyme.  
 But money gives me pleasure all the time.

## IV.

## IV.1.

Fair lovely maid, or if that title be  
 Too weak, too feminine for nobler thee,  
 Permit a name that more approaches truth:  
 And let me call thee lovely charming youth.  
 This last will justify my soft complaint,  
 While that may serve to lessen my constraint;  
 And without blushes I the youth pursue,  
 When so much beauteous woman is in view.  
 Against thy charms we struggle but in vain  
 With thy deluding form thou giv'st us pain,  
 While the bright nymph betrays us to the swain.

---

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. These are lines 28-44 of §31 (in Book the Second) of Blake's long poem *Milton*.

'Fatigue', Hilaire Belloc (1870 – 1953), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

'To the Fair Clarinda, Who Made Love to Me, Imagined More than Woman', Mrs Aphra Behn (1640 – 1689), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The last line is perhaps a reference to the deity Hermaphroditus.

In pity to our sex sure thou wert sent,  
 That we might love, and yet be innocent:  
 For sure no crime with thee we can commit;  
 Or if we should – thy form excuses it.  
 For who, that gathers fairest flowers believes  
 A snake lies hid beneath the fragrant leaves.

Thou beauteous wonder of a different kind,  
 Soft *Chloris* with the dear *Alexis* joined;  
 When e'er the manly part of thee, would plead  
 Thou tempts us with the image of the maid,  
 While we the noblest passions do extend  
 The love to *Hermes*, *Aphrodite* the friend.

#### IV.2.

Why cannot the ear be closed to its own destruction?  
 Or the glistening eye to the poison of a smile?  
 Why are eyelids stored with arrows ready drawn,  
 Where a 1000 fighting men in ambush lie?  
 Or an eye of gifts & graces, showering fruits & coined gold?  
 Why a tongue impressed with honey from every wind?  
 Why an ear, a whirlpool fierce to draw creations in?  
 Why a nostril wide inhaling terror, trembling, and affright?  
 Why a tender curb upon the youthful burning boy?  
 Why a little curtain of flesh on the bed of our desire?

#### IV.3.

Pale *Ebenezer* thought it wrong to fight,  
 But *Roaring Bill* (who killed him) thought it right.

### V.

#### V.1.

In the age of gold,  
 Free from winter's cold,  
 Youth & maiden bright,  
 To the holy light,  
 Naked in the sunny beams' delight.

---

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. These lines are one couplet away from closing Blake's "The Book of Thel".

'The Pacifist', Hilaire Belloc (1870 – 1953), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'A Little Girl Lost', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. Be careful not to confuse this poem with "The Little Girl Lost".

Once a youthful pair,  
 Filled with softest care,  
 Met in garden bright  
 Where the holy light  
 Had just removed the curtains of the night.

There, in rising day,  
 On the grass they play;  
 Parents were afar;  
 Strangers came not near,  
 And the maiden soon forgot her fear.

Tired with kisses sweet,  
 They agree to meet  
 When the silent sleep  
 Waves o'er heaven's deep,  
 And the weary tired wanderers weep.

To her father white  
 Came the maiden bright;  
 But his loving look,  
 Like the holy book,  
 All her tender limbs with terror shook.

*Ona*, pale and weak,  
 To thy father speak.  
 O the trembling fear!  
 O the dismal care  
 That shakes the blossoms of my hoary hair!

## V.2.

Follow your saint, follow with accents sweet;  
 Haste you, sad notes, fall at her flying feet.  
 There, wrapped in cloud of sorrow, pity move,  
 And tell the ravisher of my soul I perish for her love:  
 But if she scorns my never-ceasing pain,  
 Then burst with sighing in her sight and ne'er return again.

All that I sung still to her praise did tend,  
 Still she was first; still she my songs did end;  
 Yet she my love & music both doth fly,  
 The music that her echo is and beauty's sympathy.

Then let my notes pursue her scornful flight:  
 It shall suffice that they were breathed and died for her delight.

**V.3.** Put your trust in God, my boys, and keep your powder dry.

## VI.

### VI.1.

In futurity  
 I prophetic see  
 That the earth from sleep  
 (Grave the sentence deep)

Shall arise and seek  
 For her maker meek;  
 And in the desert wild  
 Become a garden mild.

In the southern clime,  
 Where the summer's prime  
 Never fades away,  
 Lovely *Lyca* lay.

Seven summers old  
 Lovely *Lyca* told;  
 She had wandered long  
 Hearing wild birds' song.

'Sweet sleep, come to me  
 Underneath this tree.  
 Do father, mother weep,  
 Where can *Lyca* sleep?

'Lost in desert wild  
 Is your little child.  
 How can *Lyca* sleep  
 If her mother weep?

'If her heart does ache  
 Then let *Lyca* wake;

---

Valentine Blacker (1778 – 1826), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. Sometimes attributed to Oliver Cromwell.

'The Little Girl Lost', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. Blake also wrote a poem called "The Little Girl Found".



If my mother sleep,  
*Lyca* shall not weep.

‘Frowning, frowning night,  
 O’er this desert bright,  
 Let thy moon arise  
 While I close my eyes.’

Sleeping *Lyca* lay,  
 While the beasts of prey  
 Come from caverns deep,  
 Viewed the maid asleep.

The kingly lion stood  
 And the virgin viewed,  
 Then he gambolled round  
 O’er the hollowed ground.

Leopards, tygers, play  
 Round her as she lay,  
 While the lion old  
 Bowed his mane of gold;

And her bosom lick,  
 And upon her neck;  
 From his eyes of flame  
 Ruby tears there came;

While the lioness  
 Loosed her slender dress,  
 And naked they conveyed  
 To caves the sleeping maid.

## VI.2.

Thrice toss these oaken ashes in the air,  
 Thrice sit thou mute in this enchanted chair,  
 Then thrice three times tie up this true love’s knot,  
 And murmur soft, She will, or she will not.

Go burn these pois’nous weeds in yon blue fire,  
 These screech-owl’s feathers & this prickling briar,  
 This cypress gathered at a dead man’s grave,  
 That all my fears & cares an end may have.

Then come, you fairies, dance with me a round;  
 Melt her hard heart with your melodious sound.  
 In vain are all the charms I can devise:  
 She hath an art to break them with her eyes.

**VI.3.** A dead body revenges not injuries.

## VII.

**VII.1.**

Once a dream did weave a shade  
 O'er my angel-guarded bed  
 That an emmet lost its way  
 Where on grass methought I lay.

Troubled, wildered, and forlorn,  
 Dark, benighted, travel-worn,  
 Over many a tangle spray,  
 All heart-broke, I heard her say:

'Oh my children! Do they cry?  
 Do they hear their father sigh?  
 Now they look abroad to see,  
 Now return and weep for me.'

Pitying, I dropped a tear:  
 But I saw a glow-worm near  
 Who replied, 'What wailing wight  
 Calls the watchman of the night?

'I am set to light the ground  
 While the beetle goes his round:  
 Follow now the beetle's hum;  
 Little wanderer, hie thee home.

**VII.2.**

What then is love but mourning?  
 What desire, but a self-burning?  
 Till she that hates doth love returne,

---

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

'A Dream', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*.

℞ Dr Thomas Campion (1567 – 1620), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

Thus will I mourne, thus will I sing:  
Come away, come away, my darling.

Beautie is but a blooming,  
Youth in his glory entombing;  
Time hath a wheel which none can stay:  
Then come away, while thus I sing:  
Come away, come away, my darling.

Summer in winter fadeth;  
Gloomy night heavenly light shadeth;  
Like to the morn are *Venus* flowers;  
Such are her howers: then will I sing:  
Come away, come away, my darling.

**VII.3.** He who desires but acts not, breeds pestilence.

### VIII.

#### VIII.1.

'Twas in heaven pronounced, and 'twas muttered in hell,  
And echo caught faintly the sound as it fell:  
On the confines of earth 'twas permitted to rest,  
And the depths of the ocean its presence confessed;  
'Twill be found in the sphere when 'tis riven asunder,  
Be seen in the lightning, and heard in the thunder.  
'Twas allotted to man with his earliest breath,  
Attends at his birth, and awaits him in death,  
Presides o'er his happiness, honor & health,  
Is the prop of his house, and the end of his wealth.  
In the heaps of the miser 'tis hoarded with care,  
But is sure to be lost on his prodigal heir.  
It begins every hope, every wish it must bound,  
With the husbandman toils, and with monarchs is crowned.  
Without it the soldier, the seaman may roam,  
But woe to the wretch who expels it from home.  
In the whispers of conscience its voice will be found,  
Nor e'en in the whirlwind of passion be drowned.  
'Twill not soften the heart; but though deaf be the ear,  
It will make it acutely & instantly hear.

---

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

'A Riddle', Miss Catherine Fanshawe (1765 – 1834), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. The solution to the riddle is the letter H.

Yet in shade let it rest like a delicate flower;  
Ah breathe on it softly – it dies in an hour.

### VIII.2.

Young & simple though I am,  
I have heard of *Cupid's* name;  
Guess I can what thing it is  
Men desire when they do kiss.  
Smoke can never burn they say,  
But the flames that follow may.

### VIII.3. Shame is pride's cloak.

## IX.

### IX.1.

This said, the smith did to his bellows go,  
Set them to fire, and made his cyclops blow:  
Full 20 pair breathed through his furnace holes  
All sorts of blasts t'enflame his tempered coals;  
Now blusterd hard, and now did contrarise,  
As *Vulcan* would, and as his exercise  
Might with perfection serve the dame's desire.  
Hard brass & tin he cast into the fire,  
High-prizèd gold & silver, and did set  
Within the stock an anvil bright & great:  
His massy hammer then his right hand held;  
His other hand his gasping tongs compelled.  
And first he forged a huge & solid shield,  
Which every way did variant artship yield,  
Through which he three ambitious circles cast,  
Round & refulgent; and without he placed  
A silver handle; fivefold proof it was,  
And in it many things with special grace,  
And passing artificial pomp were graven;  
In it was earth's green globe, the sea & heaven,  
Th'unwearied sun; the moon exactly round,  
And all the stars with which the sky is crowned,

---

℞ Dr Thomas Campion (1567 – 1620), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

℞ William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

℞ George Chapman (1559 – 1634), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This is a translation of Homer's Ἰλιάς XVIII.468-95. Prof Auden wrote his own poem ("The Shield of Achilles") concerning the same portion of Book XVIII.

The *Pleiades*, the *Hyads* and the force  
 Of great *Orion*; and the *Bear*, whose course  
 Turns her about his sphere observing him  
 Surnamed the *Chariot*, and doth never swim  
 Upon the unmeasured oceans' marble face,  
 Of all the flames that heaven's blue veil enchase.  
 In it two beautiful cities he did build  
 Of divers-languaged men; the one was filled  
 With sacred nuptials & with solemn feasts,  
 And through the streets the fair officious guests  
 Lead from their bridal chambers their fair brides  
 With golden torches burning by their sides.  
*Hymen's* sweet triumphs were abundant there,  
 Of youths & damsels dancing in a sphere;  
 Amongst whom masking flutes & harps were heard...

## IX.2.

Muses that sing love's sensual empery,  
 And lovers kindling your enraged fires  
 At *Cupid's* bonfires burning in the eye,  
 Blown with the empty breath of vain desires;  
 You that prefer the painted cabinet  
 Before the wealthy jewels it doth store ye,  
 That all your joys in dying figures set,  
 And stain the living substance of your glory;  
 Abjure those joys, abhor their memory,  
 And let my love the honoured subject be  
 Of love, and honour's complete history.  
 Your eyes were never yet let in to see  
 The majesty & riches of the mind,  
 But dwell in darkness; for your god is blind.

## IX.3. The cut worm forgives the plough.

---

George Chapman (1559 – 1634), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. This is the first part of "A Coronet for His Mistress Philosophy".

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

## X.

## X.1.

‘There is no God,’ the wicked saith,  
 ‘And truly it’s a blessing,  
 For what he might have done with us  
 It’s better only guessing.’

‘There is no God,’ a youngster thinks,  
 ‘Or really, if there may be,  
 He surely did not mean a man  
 Always to be a baby.’

‘There is no God, or if there is,’  
 The tradesman thinks, ‘twere funny  
 If he should take it ill in me  
 To make a little money.’

‘Whether there be,’ the rich man says,  
 ‘It matters very little,  
 For I & mine, thank somebody,  
 Are not in want of victual.’

Some others, also, to themselves,  
 Who scarce so much as doubt it,  
 Think there is none, when they are well,  
 And do not think about it.

But country folks who live beneath  
 The shadow of the steeple;  
 The parson & the parson’s wife,  
 And mostly married people;

Youths green & happy in first love,  
 So thankful for illusion;  
 And men caught out in what the world  
 Calls guilt, in first confusion;

And almost everyone when age,  
 Disease, or sorrows strike him,  
 Inclines to think there is a God,  
 Or something very like him.

---

Arthur Clough (1819 – 1861), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. These lines are from Scene VI of Clough’s *Dipsychus*.

**X.2.**

Thou shalt have one God only; who  
 Would be at the expense of two?  
 No graven images may be  
 Worshipped, except the currency.  
 Swear not at all; for for thy curse  
 Thine enemy is none the worse.  
 At church on sunday to attend  
 Will serve to keep the world thy friend.  
 Honor thy parents; that is, all  
 From whom advancement may befall.  
 Thou shalt not kill; but need'st not strive  
 Officiously to keep alive.  
 Do not adultery commit;  
 Advantage rarely comes of it.  
 Thou shalt not steal; an empty feat,  
 When it's so lucrative to cheat.  
 Bear not false witness; let the lie  
 Have time on its own wings to fly.  
 Thou shalt not covet, but tradition  
 Approves all forms of competition.

**X.3.** Hold the fort, for I am coming.

**XI.**

**XI.1.**

Winds, whisper gently whilst she sleeps,  
 And fan her with your cooling wings;  
 While she her drops of beauty weeps,  
 From pure, and yet unrivalled springs.

Glide over beauty's field, her face,  
 To kiss her lip & cheek be bold;  
 But with a calm & stealing pace;  
 Neither too rude, nor yet too cold.

---

'The Latest Decalogue', Arthur Clough (1819 – 1861), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. Clough attached a code – mocking Christ's summary of the law – to these lines.

Philip Bliss (1838 – 1876), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is the chorus to a hymn, inspired by a flag message from General Sherman.

℞ 'Laura Sleeping', Charles Cotton (1630 – 1687), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

Play in her beams, and crisp her hair  
 With such a gale as wings soft love,  
 And with so sweet, so rich an air,  
 As breathes from the arabian grove.

A breath as hushed as lover's sigh;  
 Or that unfolds the morning's door:  
 Sweet as the winds that gently fly  
 To sweep the spring's enamelled floor.

Murmur soft music to her dreams,  
 That pure & unpolluted run  
 Like to the new-born crystal streams,  
 Under the bright enamoured sun.

But when she walking shall display,  
 Her light, retire within your bar;  
 Her breath is life, her eyes are day,  
 And all mankind her creatures are.

### XI.2.

Fair as unshaded light, or as the day  
 In its first birth, when all the year was may;  
 Sweet as the altar's smoke, or as the new  
 Unfolded bud, swelled by the early dew;  
 Smooth as the face of waters first appeared,  
 Ere tides began to strive or winds were heard;  
 Kind as the willing saints, and calmer far  
 Than in their sleeps forgiven hermits are.  
 You that are more than our discreeter fear  
 Dares praise, with such full art, what make you here?  
 Here, where the summer is so little seen,  
 That leaves, her cheapest wealth, scarce reach at green;  
 You come, as if the silver planet were  
 Miled awhile from her much injured sphere;  
 And t'ease the travels of her beams tonight,  
 In this small lantern would contract her light.

### XI.3. I call a spade a spade.

---

℞ 'To the Queen, Entertain'd at Night by the Countess of Anglesey', Sir William Davenant (1606 – 1668), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

The Rev Robert Burton (1577 – 1640), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. The ultimate source of this idiom seems to be a passage from Plutarch's Ἠθικά, specifically the section containing the 'Sayings of the Spartans'.



## XII.

## XII.1.

A wet sheet & a flowing sea,  
 A wind that follows fast  
 And fills the white & rustling sail  
 And bends the gallant mast;  
 And bends the gallant mast, my boys,  
 While like the eagle free  
 Away the good ship flies, and leaves  
 Old England on the lee.

‘O for a soft & gentle wind!’  
 I heard a fair one cry:  
 But give to me the snoring breeze  
 And white waves heaving high;  
 And white waves heaving high, my lads,  
 The good ship tight & free –  
 The world of waters is our home,  
 And merry men are we.

There’s tempest in yon hornèd moon,  
 And lightning in yon cloud:  
 But hark the music, mariners!  
 The wind is piping loud;  
 The wind is piping loud, my boys,  
 The lightning flashes free –  
 While the hollow oak our palace is,  
 Our heritage the sea.

## XII.2.

Old Father *Ocean* calls my tide:  
 Come away; come away.  
 The barks upon the billows ride;  
 The master will not stay:  
 The merry boatswain from his side  
 His whistle takes to check & chide  
 The lingering lad’s delay,  
 And all the crew aloud has cried,  
 Come away; come away.

---

Allan Cunningham (1784 – 1842), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

℞ ‘A Song of the River Thames’, John Dryden, Poet Laureate (1631 – 1700), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

See the god of seas attends thee,  
 Nymphs divine, a beauteous train;  
 All the calmer gales befriend thee  
 In thy passage o'er the main:  
 Every maid her locks is binding;  
 Every *Triton's* horn is winding;  
 Welcome to the watery plain.

**XII.3.** Quiet to quick bosoms is a hell.

### **XIII.**

#### **XIII.1.**

I wonder, by my troth, what thou & I  
 Did, till we loved? Were we not weaned till then?  
 But sucked on country pleasures, childishly?  
 Or snorted we in the Seven Sleepers' den?  
 'Twas so; but this, all pleasures fancies be.  
 If ever any beauty I did see,  
 Which I desired, and got, 'twas but a dream of thee.

And now good-morrow to our waking souls,  
 Which watch not one another out of fear;  
 For love, all love of other sights controls,  
 And makes one little room an everywhere.  
 Let sea-discoverers to new worlds have gone,  
 Let maps to other, worlds on worlds have shown,  
 Let us possess one world; each hath one, and is one.

My face in thine eye, thine in mine appears,  
 And true plain hearts do in the faces rest;  
 Where can we find two better hemispheres,  
 Without sharp north, without declining west?  
 Whatever dies, was not mixed equally;  
 If our two loves be one, or, thou and I  
 Love so alike, that none do slacken, none can die.

---

George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a line from the third canto of *Childe Harold's Pilgrimage*.

℞ 'The Good Morrow', The Very Rev Dr John Donne (1572 – 1631), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

**XIII.2.**

By the rude bridge that arched the flood,  
 Their flag to april's breeze unfurled,  
 Here once the embattled farmers stood,  
 And fired the shot heard round the world.

The foe long since in silence slept;  
 Alike the conqueror silent sleeps;  
 And time the ruined bridge has swept  
 Down the dark stream which seaward creeps.

On this green bank, by this soft stream,  
 We set today a votive stone;  
 That memory may their deed redeem,  
 When, like our sires, our sons are gone.

Spirit, that made those heroes dare,  
 To die, and leave their children free,  
 Bid time & nature gently spare  
 The shaft we raise to them & thee.

**XIII.3.** No written law has been more binding than unwritten custom supported by popular opinion.

**XIV.****XIV.1.**

Now the lusty spring is seen;  
 Golden yellow, gaudy blue,  
 Daintily invite the view:  
 Everywhere on every green  
 Roses blushing as they blow  
 And enticing men to pull,  
 Lilies whiter than the snow,  
 Woodbines of sweet honey full:  
 All love's emblems, and all cry,  
 Ladies, if not plucked, we die.

---

'Hymn: Sung at the Completion of the Concord Monument, April 19, 1838', The Rev Prof Ralph Emerson (1803 – 1882), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. The Battles of Lexington and Concord were the first engagements of the American Revolutionary War.

Mrs Carrie Chapman-Catt (1859 – 1947), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Love's Emblems', John Fletcher (1579 – 1625), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

Yet the lusty spring hath stayed;  
 Blushing red & purest white  
 Daintily to love invite  
 Every woman, every maid:  
 Cherries kissing as they grow,  
 And inviting men to taste,  
 Apples even ripe below,  
 Winding gently to the waist:  
 All love's emblems, and all cry,  
 Ladies, if not plucked, we die.

#### XIV.2.

Take O take those lips away  
 That so sweetly were forsworn,  
 And those eyes, like break of day,  
 Lights that do mislead the morn;  
 But my kisses bring again,  
 Seals of love, though sealed in vain.

Hide O hide those hills of snow  
 Which thy frozen bosom bears,  
 On whose tops the pinks that grow  
 Are of those that april wears;  
 But first set my poor heart free,  
 Bound in those icy chains by thee.

**XIV.3.** A subject and a sovereign are clean different things.

#### XV.

##### XV.1.

All such proclivities are tabulated  
 By trained pathologists – in detail too –  
 The obscener parts of speech compulsively  
 Shrouded in classic latin.

But though my pleasure in your feet & hair  
 Is ungainsayable, let me protest

---

℞ John Fletcher (1579 – 1625), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. This song appears in the play *Bloody Brother*.

Charles, by the Grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith (1600 – 1649), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'The Quiet Glades of Eden', Prof Robert Graves (1895 – 1985), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

(Dear love) I am no trichomaniac  
And no foot-fetichist.

If it should please you, for your own best reasons,  
To take & flog me with a rawhide whip,  
I might (who knows?) suprisedly accept  
This earnest of affection.

Nothing, agreed, is alien to love  
When pure desire has overflowed its baulks;  
But why must private sportiveness be viewed  
Through public spectacles?

Enough, I will not claim a heart unfluttered  
By these case-histories of aberrancy;  
Nevertheless a long cool draught of water,  
Or a long swim in the bay,

Serves to restore my wholesome appetite  
For you & what we do at night together:  
Which is no more than *Adam* did with *Eve*  
In the quiet glades of Eden.

## XV.2.

The rain has come, and the earth must be very glad  
Of its moisture, and the made roads, all dust clad;  
It lets a veil down on the lucent dark,  
And not of any bright ground thing shows its spark.

Tomorrow's gray morning will show cow parsley,  
Hung all with shining drops, and the river will be  
Duller because of the all soddenness of things,  
Till the skylark breaks his reluctance, hangs shaking, and sings.

## XV.3. An injury is much sooner forgotten than an insult.

---

'The Soaking', Ivor Gurney (1890 – 1937), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

Philip Stanhope, 4th Earl of Chesterfield (1694 – 1773), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

## XVI.

## XVI.1.

Bid me to live, and I will live  
 Thy protestant to be;  
 Or bid me love, and I will give  
 A loving heart to thee.

A heart as soft, a heart as kind,  
 A heart as sound & free,  
 As in the whole world thou canst find,  
 That heart I'll give to thee.

Bid that heart stay, and it will stay,  
 To honour thy decree;  
 Or bid it languish quite away,  
 And 't shall do so for thee.

Bid me to weep, and I will weep,  
 While I have eyes to see;  
 And having none, yet I will keep  
 A heart to weep for thee.

Bid me despair, and I'll despair,  
 Under that cypress tree;  
 Or bid me die, and I will dare  
 E'en death, to die for thee.

Thou art my life, my love, my heart,  
 The very eyes of me;  
 And hast command of every part,  
 To live and die for thee.

## XVI.2.

As, in a dusky & tempestuous night,  
 A star is wont to spread her locks of gold,  
 And while her pleasant rays abroad are rolled,  
 Some spiteful cloud doth rob us of her sight;  
 Fair soul, in this black age so shined thou bright,  
 And made all eyes with wonder thee behold,

---

℞ 'To Anthea, who may command him any thing', Robert Herrick (1591 – 1674), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

℞ William Drummond of Hawthornden (1585 – 1649), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

Till ugly death, depriving us of light,  
 In his grim misty arms thee did enfold.  
 Who more shall vaunt true beauty here to see?  
 What hope doth more in any heart remain,  
 That such perfections shall his reason rein,  
 If beauty, with thee born, too died with thee?  
 World, plain no more of love, nor count his harms;  
 With his pale trophies death hath hung his arms.

**XVI.3.** An inconvenience is only an adventure wrongly considered.

## XVII.

### XVII.1.

Pack, clouds, away, and welcome day,  
 With night we banish sorrow;  
 Sweet air blow soft, mount larks aloft  
 To give my love good-morrow!  
 Wings from the wind to please her mind,  
 Notes from the lark I'll borrow;  
 Bird, prune thy wing, nightingale sing,  
 To give my love good-morrow;  
 To give my love good-morrow  
 Notes from them both I'll borrow.

Wake from thy nest, robin-red-breast,  
 Sing, birds, in every furrow;  
 And from each hill, let music shrill  
 Give my fair love good-morrow!  
 Blackbird & thrush in every bush,  
 Stare, linnet, & cock-sparrow!  
 You pretty elves, amongst yourselves  
 Sing my fair love good-morrow;  
 To give my love good-morrow  
 Sing, birds, in every furrow!

---

Gilbert Chesterton, Knight (1874 – 1936), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
 Thomas Heywood (1572 – 1641), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

## XVII.2.

Like the idalian queen,  
 Her hair about her eyne,  
 With neck & breasts ripe apples to be seen,  
 At first glance of the morn  
 In Cyprus' gardens gathering those fair flowers  
 Which of her blood were born,  
 I saw, but fainting saw, my paramours.  
 The Graces naked danced about the place;  
 The winds & trees amazed  
 With silence on her gazed;  
 The flowers did smile, like those upon her face;  
 And as their aspen stalks those fingers band,  
 That she might read my case,  
 A hyacinth I wished me in her hand.

XVII.3. When he first drew the sword, he threw away the scabbard.

## XVIII.

## XVIII.1.

A snake came to my water-trough  
 On a hot, hot day, and I in pyjamas for the heat,  
 To drink there.  
 In the deep, strange-scented shade of the great dark carob-  
     tree  
 I came down the steps with my pitcher  
 And must wait, must stand & wait, for there he was at the  
     trough before me.  
  
 He reached down from a fissure in the earth-wall in the  
     gloom  
 And trailed his yellow-brown slackness soft-bellied down,  
     over the edge of the stone trough  
 And rested his throat upon the stone bottom,

---

℞ William Drummond of Hawthornden (1585 – 1649), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. ¶1. The word 'idalian' refers to the city of Idalium, located near the more famous city of Nicosia, the former of which was the site a major shrine to Aphrodite. ¶6. In one telling of the ancient and intriguing myth of Venus and Adonis, Venus creates the red rose by shedding her blood on the petals of a white one. The earliest written source for this version is the Προγυμνάσματα of Aphthonius.

Edward Hyde, 1st Earl of Clarendon (1609 – 1674), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. The 'he' in question John Hampden, the Parliamentary general.

'Snake', David Lawrence (1885 – 1930), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Lawrence's own note indicates that he wrote this poem in Taormina in 1923.



And where the water had dripped from the tap, in a small  
clearness,  
He sipped with his straight mouth,  
Softly drank through his straight gums, into his slack long  
body,  
Silently.

Someone was before me at my water-trough,  
And I, like a second comer, waiting.

He lifted his head from his drinking, as cattle do,  
And looked at me vaguely, as drinking cattle do,  
And flickered his two-forked tongue from his lips, and mused  
a moment,  
And stooped and drank a little more,  
Being earth-brown, earth-golden from the burning bowels  
of the earth  
On the day of sicilian july, with ETNA smoking.  
The voice of my education said to me,  
He must be killed,  
For in Sicily the black, black snakes are innocent, the gold  
are venomous.

And voices in me said, If you were a man  
You would take a stick and break him now, and finish him  
off.

But must I confess how I liked him,  
How glad I was he had come like a guest in quiet, to drink  
at my water-trough  
And depart peaceful, pacified, & thankless,  
Into the burning bowels of this earth?

Was it cowardice, that I dared not kill him?  
Was it perversity, that I longed to talk to him?  
Was it humility, to feel so honoured?  
I felt so honoured.

And yet those voices:  
If you were not afraid, you would kill him!

And truly I was afraid, I was most afraid,  
But even so, honoured still more

That he should seek my hospitality  
From out the dark door of the secret earth.

He drank enough  
And lifted his head, dreamily, as one who has drunken,  
And flickered his tongue like a forked night on the air, so  
    black,  
Seeming to lick his lips,  
And looked around like a god, unseeing, into the air,  
And slowly turned his head,  
And slowly, very slowly, as if thrice adream,  
Proceeded to draw his slow length curving round  
And climb again the broken bank of my wall-face.

And as he put his head into that dreadful hole,  
And as he slowly drew up, snake-easing his shoulders, and  
    entered farther,  
A sort of horror, a sort of protest against his withdrawing  
    into that horrid black hole,  
Deliberately going into the blackness, and slowly drawing  
    himself after,  
Overcame me now his back was turned.

I looked round, I put down my pitcher,  
I picked up a clumsy log  
And threw it at the water-trough with a clatter.

I think it did not hit him,  
But suddenly that part of him that was left behind convulsed in undignified haste.  
Writhed like lightning, and was gone  
Into the black hole, the earth-lipped fissure in the wall-front,  
At which, in the intense still noon, I stared with fascination.

And immediately I regretted it.  
I thought how paltry, how vulgar, what a mean act!  
I despised myself & the voices of my accursed human education.

And I thought of the albatross  
And I wished he would come back, my snake.

For he seemed to me again like a king,  
Like a king in exile, uncrowned in the underworld,  
Now due to be crowned again.

And so, I missed my chance with one of the lords  
Of life.  
And I have something to expiate:  
A pettiness.

## XVIII.2.

Out of the night that covers me  
Black as the pit from pole to pole,  
I thank whatever gods may be  
For my unconquerable soul.

In the fell clutch of circumstance,  
I have not winced nor cried aloud.  
Under the bludgeonings of chance  
My head is bloody, but unbowed.

Beyond this place of wrath & tears  
Looms but the horror of the shade,  
And yet the menace of the years  
Finds, and shall find me, unafraid.

It matters not how strait the gate,  
How charged with punishments the scroll,  
I am the master of my fate:  
I am the captain of my soul.

**XVIII.3.** I stand astonished at my own moderation.

## XIX.

### XIX.1.

When science starts to be interpretative  
It is more unscientific even than mysticism.

---

‘Echoes’, Dr William Henley (1849 – 1903), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. The *London Book of Verse* gives the title of this poem as “Echoes”, although it is perhaps better known under the title “Invictus”.

Robert Clive, 1st Baron Clive (1725 – 1774), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. Uttered during a parliamentary inquiry into his dealings in India.

‘Self-Protection’, David Lawrence (1885 – 1930), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

To make self-preservation & self-protection the first law of existence  
Is about as scientific as making suicide the first law of existence,  
And amounts to very much the same thing.

A nightingale singing at the top of his voice  
Is neither hiding himself nor preserving himself nor propagating his species;

He is giving himself away in every sense of the word;  
And obviously, it is the culminating point of his existence.

A tiger is striped & golden for his own glory.  
He would certainly be much more invisible if he were grey-green.  
And I don't suppose the ichthyosaurus sparkled like the humming-bird.  
No doubt, he was khaki-colored with muddy protective colouration,  
So why didn't he survive?

As a matter of fact, the only creatures that seem to survive  
Are those that give themselves away in flash & sparkle  
And gay flicker of joyful life;  
Those that go glittering abroad  
With a bit of splendor.

Even mice play quite beautifully at shadows,  
And some of them are brilliantly piebald.

I expect the dodo looked like a clod,  
A drab & dingy bird.

## **XIX.2.**

How pleasant to know Mr *Lear*!  
Who has written such volumes of stuff!  
Some think him ill-tempered & queer,  
But a few think him pleasant enough.

His mind is concrete & fastidious;  
His nose is remarkably big;  
His visage is more or less hideous;  
His beard it resembles a wig.

He sits in a beautiful parlour,  
With 100s of books on the wall;

---

Edward Lear (1812 – 1888), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. The Almanacker has omitted some weaker verses.

He drinks a great deal of marsala,  
But never gets tipsy at all.

He has many friends, lay men & clerical;  
*Old Foss* is the name of his cat;  
His body is perfectly spherical;  
He weareth a runcible hat.

He reads, but he cannot speak, spanish,  
He cannot abide ginger beer:  
Ere the days of his pilgrimage vanish,  
How pleasant to know Mr *Lear*!

**XIX.3.** Let us do something today which the world may talk of hereafter.

## XX.

### XX.1.

When she rises in the morning  
I linger to watch her;  
She spreads the bath-cloth underneath the window  
And the sunbeams catch her  
Glistening white on the shoulders,  
While down her sides the mellow  
Golden shadow glows as  
She stoops to the sponge, and her swung breasts  
Sway like full-blown yellow  
Gloire de Dijon roses.

She drips herself with water, and her shoulders  
Glisten as silver, they crumple up  
Like wet & falling roses, and I listen  
For the sluicing of their rain-dishevelled petals.  
In the window full of sunlight  
Concentrates her golden shadow  
Fold on fold, until it glows as  
Mellow as the glory roses.

---

Cuthbert Collingwood, Baron Collingwood (1748 – 1810), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. Uttered on the morning of the Battle of Trafalgar.

'Gloire de Dijon', David Lawrence (1885 – 1930), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

**XX.2.**

So when the shadows laid asleep  
 From underneath these banks do creep,  
 And on the river as it flows  
 With eben shuts begin to close;  
 The modest halcyon comes in sight,  
 Flying betwixt the day & night;  
 And such an horror calm & dumb,  
 Admiring nature does benumb;

The viscous air, wheresoe'er she fly,  
 Follows and sucks her azure dye;  
 The gellying stream compacts below,  
 If it might fix her shadow so;  
 The stupid fishes hang, as plain  
 As flies in crystal overta'en,  
 And men the silent scene assist,  
 Charmed with the sapphire-wingèd mist.

**XX.3.** I know that's a secret, for it's whispered everywhere.

**XXI.****XXI.1.**

Love in my bosom like a bee  
 Doth suck his sweet;  
 Now with his wings he plays with me,  
 Now with his feet.  
 Within mine eyes he makes his nest,  
 His bed amidst my tender breast;  
 My kisses are his daily feast,  
 And yet he robs me of my rest.  
 Ah, wanton, will ye?

And if I sleep, then percheth he  
 With pretty flight,  
 And makes his pillow of my knee

---

℞ Andrew Marvell (1621 – 1678), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. These are verses 44 and 45 of Marvell's longer poem "Upon Appleton House". These two verses are said to describe a kingfisher. ¶4. For 'eben shuts' read "ebony shutters". ¶7. The word 'horror' in this context refers to awe, rather than fear and revulsion.

William Congreve (1670 – 1729), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ 'Rosalindes Madrigall', Thomas Lodge (1558 – 1625), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. This lines are taken from Lodge's *Rosalind, Euphues' Golden Legacy*.

The livelong night.  
 Strike I my lute, he tunes the string;  
 He music plays if so I sing;  
 He lends me every lovely thing;  
 Yet cruel he my heart doth sting.  
 Whist, wanton, still ye.

Else I with roses every day  
 Will whip you hence,  
 And bind you, when you long to play,  
 For your offense.  
 I'll shut mine eyes to keep you in,  
 I'll make you fast it for your sin,  
 I'll count your power not worth a pin.  
 Alas! what hereby shall I win  
 If he gainsay me?

What if I beat the wanton boy  
 With many a rod?  
 He will repay me with annoy,  
 Because a god.  
 Then sit thou safely on my knee,  
 And let thy bower my bosom be;  
 Lurk in mine eyes, I like of thee.  
 O *Cupid*, so thou pity me,  
 Spare not, but play thee.

## XXI.2.

With thee conversing I forget all time;  
 All seasons, and their change, all please alike.  
 Sweet is the breath of morn, her rising sweet,  
 With charm of earliest birds: pleasant the sun,  
 When first on this delightful land he spreads  
 His orient beams, on herb, tree, fruit, & flower,  
 Glistering with dew; fragrant the fertile earth  
 After soft showers; and sweet the coming on  
 Of grateful evening mild; then silent night  
 With this her solemn bird & this fair moon,  
 And these the gems of heaven, her starry train:  
 But neither breath of morn when she ascends  
 With charm of earliest birds; nor rising sun  
 On this delightful land, nor herb, fruit, flower,

Glistening with dew; nor fragrance after showers;  
 Nor grateful evening mild; nor silent night  
 With this her solemn bird; nor walk by moon,  
 Or glittering star-light without thee is sweet.

**XXI.3.** I feel like an old warhorse at the sound of a trumpet.

## XXII.

### XXII.1.

At SESTOS *Hero* dwelt; *Hero* the fair,  
 Whom young *Apollo* courted for her hair,  
 And offered as a dower his burning throne,  
 Where she could sit for men to gaze upon.  
 The outside of her garments were of lawn,  
 The lining purple silk, with gilt stars drawn;  
 Her wide sleeves green, and bordered with a grove,  
 Where *Venus* in her naked glory strove  
 To please the careless & disdainful eyes  
 Of proud *Adonis*, that before her lies;  
 Her kirtle blue, whereon was many a stain,  
 Made with the blood of wretched lovers slain.  
 Upon her head she ware a myrtle wreath,  
 From whence her veil reached to the ground beneath;  
 Her veil was artificial flowers & leaves,  
 Whose workmanship both man & beast deceives;  
 Many would praise the sweet smell as she passed,  
 When 'twas the odour which her breath forth cast;  
 And there for honey bees have sought in vain,  
 And beat from thence, have lighted there again.  
 About her neck hung chains of pebble-stone,  
 Which lightened by her neck, like diamonds shone.  
 She ware no gloves; for neither sun nor wind  
 Would burn or parch her hands, but, to her mind,  
 Or warm or cool them, for they took delight  
 To play upon those hands, they were so white.  
 Buskins of shells, all silvered, usèd she,  
 And branched with blushing coral to the knee;  
 Where sparrows perched, of hollow pearl & gold,  
 Such as the world would wonder to behold:

---

Dr Charles Darwin (1809 – 1882), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ Christopher Marlowe (1564 – 1593), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. These lines are taken from the First Sestiad of Marlowe's *Hero and Leander*.



Those with sweet water oft her handmaid fills,  
 Which as she went, would chirrup through the bills.  
 Some say, for her the fairest *Cupid* pined,  
 And looking in her face, was strooken blind.  
 But this is true; so like was one the other,  
 As he imagined *Hero* was his mother;  
 And oftentimes into her bosom flew,  
 About her naked neck his bare arms threw,  
 And laid his childish head upon her breast,  
 And with still panting rocked there took his rest.

## XXII.2.

I've oft been told by learnèd friars  
 That wishing and the crime are one,  
 And heaven punishes desires  
 As much as if the deed were done.

If wishing damns us, you & I  
 Are damned to all our heart's content;  
 Come, then, at least we may enjoy  
 Some pleasure for our punishment.

**XXII.3.** When you have eliminated the impossible, whatever remains, however improbable, must be the truth.

## XXIII.

### XXIII.1.

So fair a church as this had *Venus* none:  
 The walls were of discoloured jasper stone,  
 Wherein was *Proteus* carved; and overhead  
 A lively vine of green sea-agate spread,  
 Where by one hand light-headed *Bacchus* hung,  
 And with the other wine from grapes out-wrung.  
 Of crystal shining fair the pavement was;  
 The town of SESTOS called it *Venus'* glass:  
 There might you see the gods in sundry shapes,  
 Committing heady riots, incest, rapes:  
 For know, that underneath this radiant flower

---

'An Argument', Thomas Moore (1779 – 1852), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

Sir Arthur Doyle (1859 – 1930), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This famous maxim ends with a question mark in *The Sign of Four*, the text in which it first appears.

℞ Christopher Marlowe (1564 – 1593), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. These lines are taken from the First Sestiad of Marlowe's *Hero and Leander*.

Was *Danae's* statue in a brazen tower,  
*Jove* slyly stealing from his sister's bed,  
 To dally with idalian *Ganimed*,  
 And for his love *Europa* bellowing loud,  
 And tumbling with the rainbow in a cloud;  
 Blood-quaffing *Mars* heaving the iron net,  
 Which limping *Vulcan* and his cyclops set;  
 Love kindling fire, to burn such towns as TROY,  
*Sylvanus* weeping for the lovely boy  
 That now is turned into a cypress tree,  
 Under whose shade the wood-gods love to be.  
 And in the midst a silver altar stood:  
 There *Hero*, sacrificing turtles' blood,  
 Veiled to the ground, veiling her eyelids close;  
 And modestly they opened as she rose.  
 Thence flew love's arrow with the golden head;  
 And thus *Leander* was enamourèd.  
 Stone-still he stood, and evermore he gazed,  
 Till with the fire that from his countenance blazed  
 Relenting *Hero's* gentle heart was strook:  
 Such force & virtue hath an amorous look.

It lies not in our power to love or hate,  
 For will in us is overruled by fate.  
 When two are stripped, long ere the course begin,  
 We wish that one should lose, the other win;  
 And one especially do we affect  
 Of two gold ingots, like in each respect:  
 The reason no man knows; let it suffice,  
 What we behold is censured by our eyes.  
 Where both deliberate, the love is slight:  
 Who ever loved, that loved not at first sight?

### XXIII.2.

From fairest creatures we desire increase,  
 That thereby beauty's rose might never die,  
 But as the ripper should by time decease  
 His tender heir might bear his memory:  
 But thou, contracted to thine own bright eyes,  
 Feed'st thy light's flame with self-substantial fuel,  
 Making a famine where abundance lies,  
 Thyself thy foe, to thy sweet self too cruel.

Thou that art now the world's fresh ornament,  
 And only herald to the gaudy spring,  
 Within thine own bud buriest thy content,  
 And, tender churl, mak'st waste in niggarding.  
 Pity the world, or else this glutton be,  
 To eat the world's due, by the grave & thee.

**XXIII.3.** He who would search for pearls must dive below.

## XXIV.

### XXIV.1.

The waves, like ridges of ploughed land, are high;  
 Whereat the ship oft stumbling, down doth lie.  
 But, in a calm, the sea's like meadows seen  
 Level; its saltness makes it look as green.  
 When ships thereon a slow soft pace do walk;  
 Then mariners, as shepherds, sing & talk:  
 Some whistle, and some on their pipes do play;  
 And thus, with mirth, they pass their time away.  
 And every mast is like a may-pole high,  
 Round which they dance, though not so merrily  
 As shepherds do, when they their lasses bring  
 Garlands, to may-poles tied with a silk string.  
 Instead of garlands, they hang on their mast  
 Huge sails & ropes, to tie these garlands fast.  
 Instead of lasses, they do dance with death;  
 And for their music, they have *Boreas'* breath.  
 Instead of wine & wassails, drink salt tears;  
 And for their meat, they feed on nought but fears.  
 For flocks of sheep, great schools of herrings swim;  
 The whales, as ravenous wolves, do feed on them.  
 As sportful kids skip over hillocks green,  
 So dancing dolphins, on the waves are seen.  
 The porpoise, like their watchful dogs espies,  
 And gives them warning when great winds will rise.  
 Instead of barking, he his head doth show  
 Above the waters, when they roughly flow:  
 And, like as men, in time of showering rain

---

John Dryden, Poet Laureate (1631 – 1700), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a line from the prologue to *All for Love*.

'The Sea Similised to Meadows and Pastures: the Mariners, to Shepherds: the Mast, to a May-Pole: the Fish, to Beasts', Margaret Cavendish, Duchess of Newcastle-upon-Tyne (1623 – 1673), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

And wind, do not in open fields remain;  
 But quickly run for shelter to a tree:  
 So ships at anchor lie upon the sea.

**XXIV.2.**

I prithee, let me bring thee where crabs grow;  
 And I with my long nails will dig thee pignuts,  
 Show thee a jay's nest, and instruct thee how  
 To snare the nimble marmoset. I'll bring thee  
 To clustering filberts, and sometimes I'll get thee  
 Young scamels from the rock. Wilt thou go with me?

**XXIV.3.** Tomorrow do thy worst, for I have lived today.

**XXV.**

**XXV.1.**

Had she come all the way for this,  
 To part at last without a kiss?  
 Yea, had she borne the dirt & rain  
 That her own eyes might see him slain  
 Beside the haystack in the floods?  
 Along the dripping leafless woods,  
 The stirrup touching either shoe,  
 She rode astride as troopers do;  
 With kirtle kilted to her knee,  
 To which the mud splashed wretchedly;  
 And the wet dripped from every tree  
 Upon her head & heavy hair,  
 And on her eyelids broad & fair;  
 The tears & rain ran down her face.  
 By fits & starts they rode apace,  
 And very often was his place  
 Far off from her; he had to ride  
 Ahead, to see what might betide  
 When the roads crossed; and sometimes, when  
 There rose a murmuring from his men,  
 Had to turn back with promises;

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. These lines are uttered by Caliban in *The Tempest* II.2.

John Dryden, Poet Laureate (1631 – 1700), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a line from Dryden's translation of Horace's *Odes* III.29.

'The Haystack in the Flood', William Morris (1834 – 1896), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Ah me! she had but little ease;  
 And often for pure doubt & dread  
 She sobbed, made giddy in the head  
 By the swift riding; while, for cold,  
 Her slender fingers scarce could hold  
 The wet reins; yea, and scarcely, too,  
 She felt the foot within her shoe  
 Against the stirrup : all for this,  
 To part at last without a kiss  
 Beside the haystack in the floods.  
 For when they neared that old soaked hay,  
 They saw across the only way  
 That *Judas*, *Godmar*, and the three.  
 Red running lions dismally  
 Grinned from his pennon, under which,  
 In one straight line along the ditch,  
 They counted thirty heads.

So then,  
 While *Robert* turned round to his men,  
 She saw at once the wretched end,  
 And, stooping down, tried hard to rend  
 Her coif the wrong way from her head,  
 And hid her eyes; while *Robert* said:  
 'Nay, love, 'tis scarcely two to one,  
 At POITIERS where we made them run  
 So fast – why, sweet my love, good cheer,  
 The gascon frontier is so near,  
 Nought after this.'

But, 'O,' she said,  
 'My God! my God! I have to tread  
 The long way back without you; then  
 The court at PARIS; those six men;  
 The gratings of the CHÂTELET;  
 The swift SEINE on some rainy day  
 Like this, and people standing by,  
 And laughing, while my weak hands try  
 To recollect how strong men swim.  
 All this, or else a life with him,  
 For which I should be damned at last,  
 Would God that this next hour were past!  
 He answered not, but cried his cry,

'St *George* for *Marny*!' cheerily;  
 And laid his hand upon her rein.  
 Alas! no man of all his train  
 Gave back that cheery cry again;  
 And, while for rage his thumb beat fast  
 Upon his sword-hilts, some one cast  
 About his neck a kerchief long,  
 And bound him.

Then they went along  
 To *Godmar*; who said: 'Now, *Jehane*,  
 Your lover's life is on the wane  
 So fast, that, if this very hour  
 You yield not as my paramour,  
 He will not see the rain leave off –  
 Nay, keep your tongue from gibe & scoff,  
 Sir *Robert*, or I slay you now.'  
 She laid her hand upon her brow,  
 Then gazed upon the palm, as though  
 She thought her forehead bled, and – 'No.'  
 She said, and turned her head away,  
 As there were nothing else to say,  
 And everything were settled: red  
 Grew *Godmar*'s face from chin to head:  
 'Jehane, on yonder hill there stands  
 My castle, guarding well my lands:  
 What hinders me from taking you,  
 And doing that I list to do  
 To your fair wilful body, while  
 Your knight lies dead?'

A wicked smile  
 Wrinkled her face, her lips grew thin,  
 A long way out she thrust her chin: go  
 'You know that I should strangle you  
 While you were sleeping; or bite through  
 Your throat, by God's help – ah!' she said,  
 'Lord *Jesus*, pity your poor maid!  
 For in such wise they hem me in,  
 I cannot choose but sin & sin,  
 Whatever happens : yet I think  
 They could not make me eat or drink,  
 And so should I just reach my rest.'

'Nay, if you do not my behest,  
 O *Jehane*! though I love you well,'  
 Said *Godmar*, 'would I fail to tell  
 All that I know.' 'Foul lies,' she said.  
 'Eh? lies my *Jehane*? by God's head,  
 At PARIS folks would deem them true!  
 Do you know, *Jehane*, they cry for you,  
 "*Jehane* the brown! *Jehane* the brown!  
 Give us *Jehane* to bum or drown!" –  
 Eh – gag me *Robert*! – sweet my friend,  
 This were indeed a piteous end no  
 For those long fingers, and long feet,  
 And long neck, and smooth shoulders sweet;  
 An end that few men would forget  
 That saw it. So, an hour yet:  
 Consider, *Jehane*, which to take  
 Of life or death!'

So, scarce awake,  
 Dismounting, did she leave that place,  
 And totter some yards : with her face  
 Turned upward to the sky she lay,  
 Her head on a wet heap of hay,  
 And fell asleep: and while she slept,  
 And did not dream, the minutes crept  
 Round to the 12 again; but she,  
 Being waked at last, sighed quietly,  
 And strangely childlike came, and said:  
 'I will not.' Straightway *Godmar*'s head,  
 As though it hung on strong wires, turned  
 Most sharply round, and his face burned.

For *Robert* – both his eyes were dry,  
 He could not weep, but gloomily  
 He seemed to watch the rain; yea, too,  
 His lips were firm; he tried once more  
 To touch her lips; she reached out, sore  
 And vain desire so tortured them,  
 The poor grey lips, and now the hem  
 Of his sleeve brush'd them.

With a start  
 Up *Godmar* rose, thrust them apart;

From *Robert's* throat he loosed the bands  
 Of silk & mail; with empty hands  
 Held out, she stood & gazed, and saw,  
 The long bright blade without a flaw  
 Glide out from *Godmar's* sheath, his hand  
 In *Robert's* hair; she saw him bend  
 Back *Robert's* head; she saw him send  
 The thin steel down; the blow told well,  
 Right backward the knight *Robert* fell,  
 And moaned as dogs do, being  $\frac{1}{2}$  dead,  
 Unwitting, as I deem : so then  
*Godmar* turned grinning to his men,  
 Who ran, some five or six, and beat  
 His head to pieces at their feet.

Then *Godmar* turned again and said:  
 'So, *Jehane*, the first fitte is read!  
 Take note, my lady, that your way  
 Lies backward to the CHÂTELET!'  
 She shook her head and gazed awhile  
 At her cold hands with a rueful smile,  
 As though this thing had made her mad.

This was the parting that they had  
 Beside the haystack in the floods.

## XXV.2.

Alas, so all things now do hold their peace.  
 Heaven & earth disturbèd in no thing;  
 The beasts, the air, the birds their song do cease;  
 The night's car the stars about doth bring;  
 Calm is the sea; the waves work less & less:  
 So am not I, whom love, alas, doth wring,  
 Bringing before my face the great increase  
 Of my desires, whereat I weep and sing,  
 In joy & woe, as in a doubtful case.  
 For my sweet thoughts sometime do pleasure bring;  
 But by & by, the cause of my disease  
 Gives me a pang that inwardly doth sting,  
 When that I think what grief it is again  
 To live and lack the thing should rid my pain.

---

℞ 'A Complaint by Night of the Lover not Beloved', Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey (1517 – 1547), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.



**XXV.3.** A little alarm now and then keeps life from stagnation.

## XXVI.

### XXVI.1.

Come, take up your hats, and away let us haste  
To the butterfly's ball & the grasshopper's feast:  
The trumpeter gad-fly has summoned the crew,  
And the revels are now only waiting for you.

On the smooth-shaven grass by the side of a wood  
Beneath a broad oak which for ages has stood,  
See the children of earth & the tenants of air  
For an evening's amusement together repair.

And there came the beetle so blind & so black,  
Who carried the emmet his friend on his back;  
And there came the gnat & the dragonfly too,  
And all their relations, green, orange & blue.

And there came the moth in his plumage of down,  
And the hornet in jacket of yellow & brown,  
Who with him the wasp his companion did bring;  
But they promised that evening to lay by their sting.

And the sly little dormouse crept out of his hole,  
And led to the feast his blind brother the mole;  
And the snail, with his horns peeping out from his shell,  
Came from a great distance – the length of an ell.

A mushroom their table, and on it was laid  
A water-dock leaf, which a tablecloth made;  
The viands were various, to each of their taste,  
And the bee brought his honey to crown the repast.

There close on his haunches, so solemn & wise,  
The frog from a corner look'd up to the skies;  
And the squirrel, well-pleased such diversion to see,  
Sat cracking his nuts overhead in a tree.

Then out came a spider, with fingers so fine,  
To show his dexterity on the tight-line;

---

The Rt Hon Edmund Burke (1729 – 1797), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
'The Butterfly's Ball and the Grasshopper's Feast', William Roscoe (1753 – 1831), Ricks,  
*The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

From one branch to another his cobweb he slung,  
Then as quick as an arrow he darted along.

But just in the middle – oh, shocking to tell! –  
From his rope in an instant poor *Harlequin* fell;  
Yet he touched not the ground, but with talons outspread,  
Hung suspended in air at the end of a thread.

Then the grasshopper came, with a jerk & a spring,  
Very long was his leg, though but short was his wing  
He took but three leaps, and was soon out of sight,  
Then chirped his own praises the rest of the night

With steps quite majestic the snail did advance,  
And promis'd the gazers a minuet to dance;  
But they all laughed so loud that he pulled in his head,  
And went in his own little chamber to bed.

Then as evening gave way to the shadows of night,  
Their watchman, the glow-worm, came out with his light;  
Then home let us hasten while yet we can see,  
For no watchman is waiting for you & for me.

## XXVI.2.

Now hardly here and there an hackney coach  
Appearing, showed the ruddy morn's approach.  
Now *Betty* from her master's bed had flown,  
And softly stole to discompose her own;  
The slipshod 'prentice from his master's door  
Had pared the dirt, and sprinkled round the floor.  
Now *Moll* had whirled her mop with dextrous airs,  
Prepared to scrub the entry & the stairs.  
The youth with broomy stumps began to trace  
The kennel's edge, where wheels had worn the place.  
The small-coal man was heard with cadence deep,  
Till drowned in shriller notes of chimney sweep:  
Duns at His Lordship's gate began to meet;  
And brickdust *Moll* had screamed through ½ the street.  
The turn-key now his flock returning sees,  
Duly let out a-nights to steal for fees:

---

℞ 'A Description of the Morning', The Very Rev Dr Jonathan Swift (1667 – 1745), Hayward,  
*The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

The watchful bailiffs take their silent stands,  
And schoolboys lag with satchels in their hands.

**XXVI.3.** The land was ours before we were the land's.

## XXVII.

### XXVII.1.

*Cloris*, I cannot say your eyes  
Did my unwary heart surprise;  
Nor will I swear it was your face,  
Your shape, or any nameless grace:  
For you are so entirely fair,  
To love a part, injustice were;  
No drowning man can know which drop  
Of water his last breath did stop;  
So when the stars in heaven appear,  
And join to make the night look clear;  
The light we no one's bounty call,  
But the obliging gift of all.  
He that does lips or hands adore,  
Deserves them only, & no more;  
But I love all & every part,  
And nothing less can ease my heart.  
*Cupid*, that lover, weakly strikes,  
Who can express what 'tis he likes.

### XXVII.2.

Beside a chapel I'd a room looked down,  
Where all the women from the farm & town  
On holy days & sundays used to pass  
To marriages & christenings & to mass.

Then I sat lonely, watching score & score,  
Till I turned jealous of the Lord next door...  
Now by this window, where there's none can see,  
The Lord God's jealous of yourself & me.

---

Robert Frost, Poet Laureate of Vermont (1874 – 1963), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. This is the first line of Frost's poem "The Gift Outright". As subsequent lines make clear, the primary sense which the poet is trying to convey is that Frost's ancestors first possessed the land, as subjects of the Crown, but were only later possessed by the land after the Revolutionary War.

Sir Charles Sedley, 5th Baronet (1639 – 1701), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

John Synge (1871 – 1909), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

**XXVII.3.** For God's sake, if you sin, take pleasure in it.

### XXVIII.

#### XXVIII.1.

Unhappy verse, the witness of my unhappy state,  
 Make thy self flutt'ring wings of thy fast flying  
 Thought, and fly forth unto my love, wheresoever she be:  
 Whether lying restless in heavy bed, or else  
 Sitting so cheerless at the cheerful board, or else  
 Playing alone careless on her heavenly virginals.  
 If in bed, tell her, that my eyes can take no rest:  
 If at board, tell her, that my mouth can eat no meat:  
 If at her virginals, tell her, I can hear no mirth.  
 Asked why say: waking love suffereth no sleep:  
 Say that raging love doth appal the weak stomach:  
 Say that lamenting love marreth the musical.  
 Tell her, that her pleasures were wont to lull me asleep:  
 Tell her, that her beauty was wont to feed mine eyes:  
 Tell her, that her sweet tongue was wont to make me mirth.  
 Now do I nightly waste, wanting my kindly rest:  
 Now do I daily starve, wanting my lively food:  
 Now do I always die, wanting thy timely mirth.  
 And if I waste, who will bewail my heavy chance?  
 And if I starve, who will record my cursèd end?  
 And if I die, who will say, 'This was *Immerito*'?

#### XXVIII.2.

Skirting the river road (my forenoon walk, my rest),  
 Skyward in air a sudden muffled sound, the dalliance of the eagles,  
 The rushing amorous contact high in space together,  
 The clinching interlocking claws, a living, fierce, gyrating wheel,  
 Four beating wings, two beaks, a swirling mass tight grappling,  
 In tumbling turning clustering loops, straight downward falling,  
 Till o'er the river poised, the twain yet one, a moment's lull,  
 A motionless still balance in the air, then parting, talons loosing,

---

Gerald Gould (1885 – 1936), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. This is a line from Gould's sonnet which begins 'This is the horror that, night after night'.

'Iambicum Trimetrum', Edmund Spenser (1552 – 1599), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. 'Iambicum Trimetrum' means iambic trimeter, but these lines follow a very different prosody. ¶21. The word 'immerito' is Italian for 'undeserved', although in this poem it seems to be used primarily as a man's name.

℞ 'The Dalliance of the Eagles', Walt Whitman (1819 – 1892), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

Upward again on slow-firm pinions slanting, their separate diverse flight,

She hers, he his, pursuing.

**XXVIII.3.** The multitude is always in the wrong.

### XXIX.

#### XXIX.1.

Of thee, kind boy, I ask no red & white,  
 To make up my delight;  
 No odd becoming graces,  
 Black eyes, or little know-not-whats in faces;  
 Make me but made enough, give me good store  
 Of love for her I count:  
 I ask no more;  
 'Tis love in love that makes the sport.

There's no such thing as what we beauty call;  
 It is mere cozenage all:  
 For though some, long ago,  
 Liked certain colours mingled so & so,  
 That doth not tie me now from choosing new;  
 If I a fancy take  
 To black & blue,  
 That fancy doth it beauty make.

'Tis not the meat, but 'tis the appetite  
 Makes eating a delight;  
 And if I like one dish  
 More than another, that a pheasant is;  
 What in our watches, that in us is found:  
 So to the height & nick  
 We up be wound,  
 No matter by what hand or trick.

#### XXIX.2.

From these high hills as when a spring doth fall  
 It trilleth down with still & subtle course,  
 Of this & that it gathers aye and shall

---

Wentworth Dillon, 4th Earl of Roscommon (1637 – 1885), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Sir John Suckling (1609 – 1642), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

℞ 'Comparison of Love to a Streame Falling from the Alpes', Sir Thomas Wyatt (1503 – 1542), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

Till it have just off flowed the stream & force,  
Then at the foot it rageth over all.

So fareth love when he hath ta'en a source:  
His rein is rage; resistance vailleth none;  
The first eschew is remedy alone.

**XXIX.3.** An apology for the devil: it must be remembered that we have only heard one side of the case. God has written all the books.

### XXX.

#### XXX.1.

Shall I, wasting in despair,  
Die because a woman's fair?  
Or make pale my cheeks with care  
'Cause another's rosy are?  
Be she fairer than the day,  
Or the flowery meads in may –  
If she be not so to me,  
What care I how fair she be?

Shall my foolish heart be pined  
'Cause I see a woman kind?  
Or a well-disposed nature  
Joinèd with a lovely feature?  
Be she meeker, kinder, than  
Turtle dove or pelican,  
If she be not so to me,  
What care I how kind she be?

Shall a woman's virtues move  
Me to perish for her love?  
Or her merits' value known  
Make me quite forget mine own?  
Be she with that goodness blest  
Which may gain her name of Best;  
If she seem not such to me,  
What care I how good she be?

'Cause her fortune seems too high  
Shall I play the fool and die?  
Those that bear a noble mind

---

Samuel Butler (1835 – 1902), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'The Manly Heart', George Wither (1588 – 1667), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Where they want of riches find,  
 Think what with them they would do  
 That without them dare to woo;  
     And unless that mind I see,  
     What care I how great she be?

Great or good, or kind or fair,  
 I will ne'er the more despair:  
 If she love me, this believe,  
 I will die ere she shall grieve;  
 If she slight me when I woo,  
 I can scorn and let her go;  
     For if she be not for me,  
     What care I for whom she be?

### XXX.2.

Why should I blame her that she filled my days  
     With misery, or that she would of late  
 Have taught to ignorant men most violent ways,  
     Or hurled the little streets upon the great,  
 Had they but courage equal to desire?  
     What could have made her peaceful with a mind  
 That nobleness made simple as a fire,  
     With beauty like a tightened bow, a kind  
 That is not natural in an age like this,  
     Being high & solitary & most stern?  
 Why, what could she have done, being what she is?  
     Was there another TROY for her to burn?

**XXX.3.** To live is like to love: all reason is against it, and all healthy instinct for it.

---

'No Second Troy', William Yeats (1865 – 1939), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

Samuel Butler (1835 – 1902), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.





## CHAPTER 4

# Quartilis

### I.

#### I.1.

*Tune: The Holmfirth Anthem*

Abroad for pleasure as I was a-walking –  
It was one summer summer's evening clear –  
There I beheld a most beautiful damsel,  
Lamenting for her shepherd swain.

The fairest evening that e'er I beheld  
Was ever evermore with the lad I adore.  
Wilt thou fight yon french & spaniards?  
Wilt thou leave me thus, my dear?

No more to yon green banks will I take thee,  
With pleasure for to rest yourself and view the land.  
But I will take you to yon green gardens,  
Where the pretty pretty flowers grow.

#### I.2.

All last night I had quiet  
In a fragrant dream & warm:  
She had become my sabbath,  
And round my neck, her arm.

I knew the warmth in my dreaming;  
The fragrance, I suppose,  
Was her hair about me,  
Or else she wore a rose.

---

'Pratty Flowers', Anonymous, McCusker, *While Mortals Sleep*.

'All Last Night', Prof Lascelles Abercrombie (1881 – 1938), Heath-Stubbs and Wright, *The Faber Book of Twentieth Century Verse*. ¶10. Woodruffe seems to be a farm near Epsom in the County of Surrey.

Her hair, I think; for likest  
 WOODRUFFE 'twas, when spring  
 Loitering down wet woodways  
 Treads it sauntering.

No light, nor any speaking;  
 Fragrant only & warm.  
 Enough to know my lodging,  
 The white sabbath of her arm.

**I.3.** The eternal God is thy refuge, and underneath are the everlasting arms.

## II.

### II.1.

*Tune: Dark Eyes Sailor*

As I roved out one evening fair,  
 It being the summertime to take the air,  
 I spied a sailor & a lady gay,  
 And I stood to listen to hear what they would say.

He said, 'Fair lady, why do you roam,  
 For the day is spent and the night is on?'  
 She heaved a sigh while the tears did roll:  
 'For my dark-eyed sailor, so young & stout & bold.

'Tis seven long years since he left this land.  
 A ring he took from off his lily-white hand.  
 One ½ of the ring is still here with me,  
 But the other's rolling at the bottom of the sea.'

He said, 'You may drive him out of your mind.  
 Some other young man you will surely find.  
 Love turns aside and soon cold has grown.  
 Like the winter's morning, the hills are white with snow.'

She said, 'I'll never forsake my dear,  
 Although we're parted this many a year.  
 Genteel he was and a rake like you  
 To induce a maiden to slight the jacket blue.'

---

Deuteronomy 32.27, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Anonymous, Steeleye Span, *Spanning the Years*.

One ½ of the ring did young *William* show;  
 She ran distracted in grief & woe,  
 Saying, ‘*William, William*, I have gold in store  
 For my dark-eyed sailor has proved his honour long.’

And there is a cottage by yonder lea.  
 This couple’s married and does agree.  
 So maids be loyal when your love’s at sea,  
 For a cloudy morning brings in a sunny day.

## II.2.

The modest rose puts forth a thorn:  
 The humble sheep a threatening horn:  
 While the lily white shall in love delight,  
 Nor a thorn nor a threat stain her beauty bright.

II.3. Life is very sweet, brother. Who would wish to die?

## III.

### III.1.

*Tune: New York Girls*

As I walked down through CHATHAM STREET,  
 A fair maid I did meet.  
 She asked me to see her home;  
 She lived in BLEEKER STREET.

*And away, you santy,  
 My dear honey!  
 O you NEW YORK girls,  
 Can’t you dance the polka?*

And when we got to BLEEKER STREET  
 We stopped at 44:  
 Her mother & her sister there  
 To meet her at the door.

And when I got inside the house,  
 The drinks were passed around.  
 The liquor was so awful strong,  
 My head went round and round.

---

<sup>R</sup> ‘The Lilly’, William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*.

George Borrow (1803 – 1881), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Anonymous, Steeleye Span, *Spanning the Years*.

And then we had another drink  
 Before we sat to eat.  
 The liquor was so awful strong,  
 I quickly fell asleep.

When I awoke next morning,  
 I had an aching head.  
 There was I, *Jack*, all alone,  
 Stark naked in my bed.

My gold watch & my pocketbook  
 And lady friend were gone.  
 And there was I *Jack*, all alone,  
 Stark naked in my room.

On looking round this little room,  
 There's nothing I could see  
 But a woman's shift & apron  
 That were no use to me.

With a flour barrel for a suit of clothes  
 Down CHERRY STREET forlorn,  
 There *Martin Churchill* took me in  
 And sent me round CAPE HORN.

*And away, you santy,  
 My dear honey!  
 O you NEW YORK girls,  
 Can't you dance the polka?*

### III.2.

When the green woods laugh, with the voice of joy  
 And the dimpling stream runs laughing by,  
 When the air does laugh with our merry wit,  
 And the green hill laughs with the noise of it...

When the meadows laugh with lively green,  
 And the grasshopper laughs in the merry scene;  
 When *Mary* and *Susan* and *Emily*  
 With their sweet round mouths sing, 'Ha ha he!'

---

'Laughing Song', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*.

When the painted birds laugh in the shade  
 Where our table with cherries & nuts is spread:  
 Come live & be merry and join with me  
 To sing the sweet chorus of 'Ha ha he!'

III.3. We rise with the lark and go to bed with the lamb.

#### IV.

##### IV.1.

*Tune: The Lish Young Buy-a-Broom*

As I was a-travelling in the north country,  
 Down by KIRKBY STEPHEN I happened for to be,  
 As I was a-walking up & down the street,  
 A pretty little buy-a-broom I chanced for to meet.

*And she was right; I was tight; everybody has their way.  
 It was the lish young buy-a-broom that led me astray.*

She kindly then invited me to go along the way.  
 Yes was the answer to her that I did say.  
 There was me with my music walking down the street,  
 And her with her tambourine was beating hand & feet.

Straightway for KENDAL we steerèd, her & I;  
 Over yon white mountain, the weather it was dry.  
 We each had a bottle filled up to the top,  
 And whenever we were feeling dry, we took a little drop.

The night's coming on, good lodgings we did find,  
 Eatables of all sorts & plenty of good wine,  
 Good bed & blankets just for we two.  
 And I rolled her in my arms, my boys, and wouldn't you do too?

Well early the next morning we arose to go away.  
 I called to the landlord to see what was to pay:  
 Fourteen and sixpence, just for you two.  
 And a fiver on the table O my darling then she threw.

Now the reason that we parted, I now will let you hear.  
 She started off for Germany right early the next year;  
 And me not being willing to cross the raging sea –  
 Here's a health to my buy-a-broom, wherever she may be.

---

Nicholas Breton (1545 – 1626), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
 William Graham (1830 – 1891), Hart, *Folk Songs of Old England*, Vol 1.

*And she was right; I was tight; everybody has their way.  
It was the lish young buy-a-broom that led me astray.*

#### IV.2.

The rain it raineth on the just  
And also on the unjust fella,  
But mainly on the just because  
The unjust steals the just's umbrella.

#### IV.3. Life is just a bowl of cherries.

### V.

#### V.1.

*Tune: The Game of All Fours*

As I was a-walking one midsummer's morning  
To hear the birds whistle and the nightingales play.  
'Twas there that I met a beautiful maiden  
As I was a-walking all on the highway.

'Where are you going, my fair pretty lady?  
Where are you going so early this morn?'  
She answered, 'Kind sir, to visit my neighbours;  
I'm going down to LINCOLN, the place I was born.'

'May I go with you, my fair pretty lady?  
May I go along in your sweet company?'  
She turned her head round and, smiling all at me,  
Said, 'You may come with me, kind sir, if you please.'

We hadn't been walking a few miles together  
Before this young damsel began to show free.  
She sat herself down, saying, 'Sit down beside me.  
The games we shall play will be one, two & three.'

I said, 'My dear lady, if you're fond of the gaming,  
There's one game I know I would like you to learn.  
The game it is called "The Game of All Fours".'  
So I took out my pack and began the first turn.

She cut the cards and I fell a-dealing.  
I dealt her a trump and myself the poor jack.

---

Charles Bowen, Baron Bowen (1835 – 1894), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
Louis Brownstein (1893 – 1958), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
Anonymous, McCusker, *The Girl Who Couldn't Fly*.

She led off her ace and stole my jack from me,  
 Saying, 'Jack is the card I like best in your pack.'

'I dealt them last time: it's your turn to shuffle,  
 My turn to show the best card in the pack.'  
 Once more she'd the ace & deuce for to beat me;  
 Once again I had lost when I laid down poor jack.

So I took up my hat and I bid her good morning.  
 I said, 'You're the best that I know at this game.'  
 She answered, 'Young man, if you'll come back tomorrow,  
 We'll play the game over & over again.'

### V.2.

I know not how it falls on me,  
 This summer evening, hushed & lone;  
 Yet the faint wind comes soothingly  
 With something of an olden tone.

Forgive me if I've shunned so long  
 Your gentle greeting, earth & air!  
 But sorrow withers e'en the strong,  
 And who can fight against despair?

### V.3.

And he who understands it would be able  
 To add a storey to the Tower of Babel.

## VI.

### VI.1.

*Tune: Merry Green Broom*

A wager with you, my pretty fair maid,  
 Five hundred pounds to your 10:  
 A maid you will go to the merry green broom,  
 And a maid you'll no longer return O.  
 'A wager, a wager with you, kind sir,  
 Five hundred pounds to my 10:  
 A maid I will go to the merry green broom,  
 And a maid I will boldly return.

---

Miss Emily Brontë (1818 – 1848), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

℞ George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. This couplet is from the opening 'Dedication' to Lord Byron's *Don Juan*.

Anonymous, McKusker, *Little Lights*.

The maiden she sat in her bower alone:  
 She is in torment & strife:  
 If I don't go to the broom this night,  
 My love he won't make me his wife O.  
 So up and she's gone on her good white steed,  
 Away for her young man to meet.  
 She found him there and all fast asleep,  
 With a blood red rose at his feet.  
  
 She's kissed him twice on cheek & on chin,  
 Then over his body did lean.  
 There she did place five rings on his chest  
 Just so he would know she had been O.  
 Then off through the woods the young maid did go,  
 Just when her love did arise.  
 He saw the five rings laid there on his chest;  
 On his face was nought but surprise.

## VI.2.

I found a ball of grass among the hay  
 And progged it as I passed and went away;  
 And when I looked I fancied something stirred,  
 And turned again and hoped to catch the bird –  
 When out an old mouse bolted in the wheats  
 With all her young ones hanging at her teats;  
 She looked so odd and so grotesque to me,  
 I ran and wondered what the thing could be,  
 And pushed the knapweed bunches where I stood;  
 Then the mouse hurried from the craking brood.  
 The young ones squeaked, and as I went away  
 She found her nest again among the hay.  
 The water o'er the pebbles scarce could run  
 And broad old cesspools glittered in the sun.

## VI.3. The best of life is but intoxication.

## VII.

### VII.1.

*Tune: Hard Times of Old England*

---

John Clare (1793 – 1864), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

This is a line from the second canto of *Don Juan*.

Anonymous, Steeleye Span, *All Around My Hat*.



Come all brother tradesmen that travel along:  
 O pray come and tell me where the trade is all gone.  
 Long time have I travelled and I cannot find none.

*And sing O the hard times of old England!*  
*In old England very hard times!*

Provisions you buy at the shop it is true  
 But if you've no money there's none there for you.  
 So what's a poor man and his family to do?

You must go to the shop and you'll ask for a job.  
 They'll answer you there with a shake and a nod.  
 Well that's enough to make a man turn out and rob.

You will see the poor tradesmen a-walking the street  
 From morning till night for employment to seek,  
 And scarce have they got any shoes on their feet

Our soldiers & sailors have just come from war,  
 Been fighting for Queen & country this year,  
 Come home to be starved: better stayed where they were.

And now to conclude and to finish my song:  
 Let us hope that these hard times they will not last long.  
 I hope soon to have occasion to alter my song.

*And sing O the good times of old England!*  
*In old England jolly good times!*

## VII.2.

Since there's no help, come let us kiss & part –  
 Nay I have done, you get no more of me;  
 And I am glad, yea, glad with all my heart,  
 That thus so cleanly I myself can free.  
 Shake hands for ever, cancel all our vows;  
 And when we meet at any time again,  
 Be it not seen in either of our brows  
 That we one jot of former love retain.  
 Now at the last gasp of love's latest breath,  
 When his pulse failing, passion speechless lies,  
 When faith is kneeling by his bed of death,  
 And innocence is closing up his eyes –

---

'Love's Farewell', Michael Drayton (1563 – 1631), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Now if thou wouldst, when all have given him over,  
From death to life thou mightst him yet recover!

**VII.3.** If my books had been any worse, I should not have been invited to Hollywood, and if they had been any better, I should not have come.

## VIII.

### VIII.1.

*Tune: Cadgwith Anthem*

Come fill up your glasses, and let us be merry,  
For to rob and to plunder it is our intent.

*As we roam through the valleys  
Where the lilies and the roses,  
And the beautiful cashmere lies drooping its head:  
Then away, then away, then away, away,  
To the caves in yonder mountains,  
To the robbers' retreat!*

We come from yonder mountains. Our pistols are loaded,  
For to rob and to plunder it is our intent.

Hark, hark! In the distance there's footsteps approaching.  
Stand, stand and deliver, shall be our watchword.

Your gold and your jewels – your life if resisted!  
We shall laugh at your agony, and scorn at your threats.

Come fill up your glasses and let be a-drinking,  
For the moonbeams are shining all over our heads.

*As we roam through the valleys  
Where the lilies and the roses,  
And the beautiful cashmere lies drooping its head:  
Then away, then away, then away, away,*

---

Raymond Chandler (1888 – 1959), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Anonymous, Oates, *The Spyglass and the Herringbone*. George Goodenough wrote in *The Handy Man Afloat and Ashore* (1901): 'The following song always struck me as having one of the finest airs ever sung on a foc's'le. To hear the chorus pealing forth from some hundred or more throats was a thing to be remembered. The only pity is that the words are not more sensible. Such as they are they were very difficult to obtain. A bluejacket once wrote down all he could remember of them for me, but the copy got mixed up with other papers and I thought I had lost it. No one else could I find that could repair the supposed loss. Inquiries at second-hand music shops in London were fruitless. Many men could tell me that they knew the song but could not give me the words. Quite recently I came across my copy and here is the song.'

*To the caves in yonder mountains,  
To the robbers' retreat!*

### VIII.2.

The lowest trees have tops, the ant her gall,  
The fly his spleen, the little spark his heat;  
The slender hairs cast shadows, though but small,  
And bees have stings, although they be not great;  
Seas have their source, and so have shallow springs;  
And love is love, in beggars & in kings.

Where waters smoothest run, there deepest are the fords;  
The dial stirs, yet none perceives it move;  
The firmest faith is found in fewest words;  
The turtles do not sing, and yet they love;  
True hearts have ears & eyes, no tongues to speak;  
They hear & see, and sigh, and then they break.

**VIII.3.** Happiness is a mystery like religion, and should never be rationalised.

## IX.

### IX.1.

*Tune: The Blind Harper*

Have you heard of the blind harper,  
How he lived in LOCHMAVEN town,  
How he went down to fair England,  
To steal King *Henry's* wanton brown?

First he went unto his wife,  
With all the haste that go could he.  
This work, he said, it will never go well,  
Without the help of our good grey mare.

Says she, You take the good grey mare,  
She'll run o'er hills both low & high.  
Go take the halter in your hose,  
And leave the foal at home with me.

---

'A Silent Love', Sir Edward Dyer (1543 – 1607), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

℞ Gilbert Chesterton, Knight (1874 – 1936), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Anonymous, McKusker, *Underneath the Stars*.

So he's up and went to England gone.  
He went as fast as go could he.  
And when he got to CARLISLE gates  
Who should be there but King *Henry*?

Come in, come in, you blind harper,  
And of your music let me hear.  
But up and says the blind harper,  
I'd rather have a stable for my mare.

The king he looks over his left shoulder  
And he says unto his stable groom,  
Go take the poor blind harper's mare,  
And put her beside my wanton brown.

Then he's harped and then he sang,  
Till he played them all so sound asleep,  
And quietly he took off his shoes,  
And down the stairs he did creep.

Straight to the stable door he goes,  
With a tread so light as light could be,  
And when he opened and went in  
There he found 30 steeds & three.

And he took the halter from his horse  
And from his purse he did not fail.  
He slipped it over the wanton's nose  
And he's tied it to the grey mare's tail.

Then he let her loose at the castle gates  
And the mare didn't fail to find her way.  
She's went back to her own colt foal,  
Three long hours before the day.

So then in the morning, at fair daylight  
When they had ended all their cheer,  
Behold the wanton brown has gone,  
And so has the poor blind harper's mare.

And O & alas, says the blind harper,  
However alas that I came here!  
In Scotland I've got me a little colt foal;  
In England they stole my good grey mare.

Hold your tongue, says King *Henry*,  
 And all your mournings let them be,  
 For you shall get a far better mare  
 And well paid shall your colt foal be.

Again he harped and again he sang;  
 The sweetest music he let them hear.  
 And he was paid for a foal that he never had lost  
 And three times over for the good grey mare.

## IX.2.

Life is a jest; and all things show it,  
 I thought so once; but now I know it.

IX.3. I don't care where the water goes if it doesn't get into the wine.

## X.

### X.1.

*Tune: The Waters of Tyne*

I cannot get to my love if I would dee,  
 The waters of TYNE run between her & me.  
 And here I must stand with a tear in my e'e,  
 Both sighing & sickly my sweetheart to see.

O where is the boatman, my bonnie hinny?  
 Where is the boatman? Bring him to me,  
 To ferry me over the TYNE to my hinny,  
 And I will remember the boatman & thee.

O bring me the boatman. I'll gi'e all my money,  
 And you for your trouble rewarded shall be.  
 To ferry me o'er the TYNE to my honey  
 Or scull her across the rough river to me.

### X.2.

I idly cut a parsley stalk,  
 And blew therein towards the moon;

---

'His Own Epitaph', John Gay (1685 – 1732), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This couplet is on Gay's tombstone in Westminster Abbey, below Pope's epitaph on the poet.

Gilbert Chesterton, Knight (1874 – 1936), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a line from Chesterton's "Wine and Water".

Anonymous, The Spinners, *The Spinners*.

'On a Midsummer's Eve', Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Heath-Stubbs and Wright, *The Faber Book of Twentieth Century Verse*.

I had not thought what ghosts would walk  
With shivering footsteps to my tune.

I went, and knelt, and scooped my hand  
As if to drink, into the brook,  
And a faint figure seemed to stand  
Above me, with the bygone look.

I lippled rough rhymes of chance, not choice,  
I thought not what my words might be;  
There came into my ear a voice  
That turned a tenderer verse for me.

**X.3.** If this be not love, it is madness, and then it is pardonable.

## XI.

### XI.1.

*Tune: A Pilgrim's Way*

I do not look for holy saints to guide me on my way  
Or male & female devilkings to lead my feet astray.  
If these are added I rejoice – if not, I shall not mind  
So long as I have leave & choice to meet my fellow-kind.  
For as we come and as we go (and deadily soon go we!)  
The people, Lord, thy people, are good enough for me.

Thus I will honour pious men whose virtue shines so bright  
(Though none are more amazed than I when I by chance do right)  
And I will pity foolish men for woe their sins have bred  
(Though 99% of mine I brought on my own head)  
And amorite or eremite or general averagee,  
The people, Lord, thy people, are good enough for me.

And when they bore me overmuch, I will not shake mine ears,  
Recalling many 1000 such whom I have bored to tears,  
And when they labour to impress I will not doubt nor scoff,  
Since I myself have done no less and sometimes pulled it off.  
Yea as we are and we are not and we pretend to be,  
The people, Lord, thy people, are good enough for me.

And when they work me random wrong, as oftentimes hath been,  
I will not cherish hate too long (my hands are none too clean),

---

William Congreve (1670 – 1729), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
Rudyard Kipling (1865 – 1936), Kipling, *Collected Poems of Rudyard Kipling*.

And when they do me random good, I will not feign surprise,  
 No more than those whom I have cheered with wayside courtesies,  
 But as we give and as we take (whate'er our takings be)  
 The people, Lord, thy people, are good enough for me.

But when I meet with frantic folk who sinfully declare  
 There is no pardon for their sin, the same I will not spare  
 Till I have proved that heaven and hell, which in our hearts we have,  
 Show nothing irredeemable on either side the grave,  
 For as we live and as we die – if utter death there be –  
 The people, Lord, thy people, are good enough for me.

Deliver me from every pride – the middle, high & low –  
 That bars me from a brother's side, whatever pride he show,  
 And purge me from all heresies of thought & speech & pen  
 That bid me judge him otherwise than I am judged. Amen.  
 That I might sing of crowd or king or road-borne company,  
 That I may labour in my day, vocation and degree,  
 To prove the same by deed & name, and hold unshakenly  
 (Where'er I go, whate'er I know, whoe'er my neighbour be)  
 This single faith in life & death and to eternity:  
 The people, Lord, thy people, are good enough for me.

## XI.2.

I saw old duchesses with their young loves,  
 I, in a pair of very shabby gloves;  
 Even my shapeless garments could not make me sad,  
 For I remembered I was young as you, dear lad.  
 That I am lovelier without my dress  
 Gave me sweet wanton happiness.

**XI.3.** If once a man indulges himself in murder, very soon he comes to think little of robbing; and from robbing he comes next to drinking and sabbath-breaking, and from that to incivility and procrastination.

## XII.

---

'Vanity', Mrs Edith Hepburn (1883 – 1947), Heath-Stubbs and Wright, *The Faber Book of Twentieth Century Verse*.

Thomas de Quincey (1785 – 1859), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'The Dalesman's Litany', Prof Frederic Moorman (1872 – 1918), Moorman, *Songs of the Ridings*. Tim Hart wrote in the sleeve notes to *Folk Songs of Old England Vol 1* (1968): 'The words of this song were collected by F W Moorman who was president of the Yorkshire Dialect Society during the latter part of the 19th century. The beautiful haunting melody was written only a few years ago by Dave Keddle of Bradford to whom we are indebted for allowing its inclusion on this record. Although the lyrics were originally in broad dialect Tim translated

**XII.1.***Tune: The Dalesman's Litany*

It's hard when folks can't find their work  
 Where they've been bred an' born;  
 I were young I always thought  
 I'd bide 'mong t'roots an' corn.  
 I've bin forced to work i' towns,  
 So here's my litany:  
 From HULL, an' HALIFAX, an' hell,  
 Good Lord, deliver me!

When I were courtin' Mary Ann,  
 T'owd squire, he says one day:  
 I've got no bield for wedded folks;  
 Choose, wilt ta wed or stay?  
 I couldn't gi'e up t'lass I loved;  
 To t'town we had to flee:  
 From HULL, an' HALIFAX, an' hell,  
 Good Lord, deliver me!

I've wrought i'LEEDS an' HUDDERSFIELD,  
 An' addled honest brass;  
 I'BRADFORD, KEIGHLEY, ROTHERHAM,  
 I've kept my barns an' lass.  
 I've travelled all three Ridin's round,  
 And once I went to sea:  
 From forges, mills, an' coalin' boats,  
 Good Lord, deliver me!

I've walked at night through SHEFFIELD lanes,  
 'Twere same as bein' i' hell:  
 Furnaces thrust out tongues o' fire,  
 An' roared like t'wind on t'fell.  
 I've sammed up coals i'BARNLEY pits,  
 Wi' muck up to my knee:  
 From SHEFFIELD, BARNLEY, ROTHERHAM,  
 Good Lord, deliver me!

I've seen grey fog creep o'er LEEDS BRIDGE  
 As thick as bastile soup;  
 I've lived where folks were stowed away

---

them where necessary to enable more people to understand them.' The penultimate line of Moorman's original has been excised in order to fit the tune.



Like rabbits in a coop.  
 I've watched snow float down BRADFORD BECK  
 As black as ebony:  
 From HUNSLET, HOLBECK, WIBSEY SLACK,  
 Good Lord, deliver me!

But now, when all wer children's fledged,  
 To t'country we've come back.  
 There's 40 mile o' heathery moor  
 Twix' us an' t'coal-pit slack.  
 And when I sit o'er t'fire at night,  
 I laugh an' shout wi' glee:  
 From HULL, an' HALIFAX, an' hell,  
 T'good Lord's delivered me!

## XII.2.

Whenas in silks my *Julia* goes  
 Then, then (methinks) how sweetly flows  
 That liquefaction of her clothes.

Next, when I cast mine eyes & see  
 That brave vibration each way free;  
 O how that glittering taketh me!

**XII.3.** The proper union of gin and vermouth is a great and sudden glory; it is one of the happiest marriages on earth, and one of the shortest lived.

## XIII.

### XIII.1.

*Tune: We're All Jolly Fellows that Follow the Plough*

It was early one morning at the break of the day;  
 The farmer came to us, and this he did say:  
 'Come rise up, young fellows, with the best of good will.  
 Your horses need something, their bellies to fill.'

When four o'clock comes, my boys, it's up we do rise,  
 And off to the stable we merrily flies.  
 With a-rubbing and a-scrubbing, our horses will go,  
 For we're all jolly fellows that follows the plough.

---

Robert Herrick (1591 – 1674), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Bernard de Voto (1897 – 1955), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Anonymous, McKusker, *Hourglass*. This song seems to have originated from a broadside printed around 1820.

When six o'clock comes, at breakfast we'll meet,  
 And with cold beef and pork we'll heartily eat.  
 With a piece in our pocket, to the fields we do go,  
 For we're all jolly fellows that follows the plough.

Then up spoke the farmer, and this he did say:  
 'What have you been doing this long summer's day?  
 You've not ploughed your acre. I'll swear and I'll vow:  
 You are all lazy fellows that follows the plough.'

Then up spoke our carter, and this he did cry:  
 'We've all ploughed our acre. You tell us a lie.  
 We've all ploughed our acre. I'll swear and I'll vow:  
 We are all jolly fellows that follows the plough.'

Then up spoke the farmer, and laughed at the joke:  
 'O it's gone  $\frac{1}{2}$  past two boys. It's time to unyoke.  
 Unharness your horses, and rub them down well,  
 And I'll give you a jug of the very best ale.'

So all you young ploughboys, where'er you may be,  
 Come take this advice and be ruled by me:  
 Never fear any master, where'er you may go,  
 For we're all jolly fellows that follows the plough.

### XIII.2.

*Jenny* kissed me when we met,  
 Jumping from the chair she sat in;  
 Time, you thief, who love to get  
 Sweets into your list, put that in!  
 Say I'm weary, say I'm sad,  
 Say that health & wealth have missed me,  
 Say I'm growing old, but add  
*Jenny* kissed me.

### XIII.3. In every mess I find a friend, in every port a wife

---

'Rondeau', Leigh Hunt (1784 – 1859), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. The Jenny in question was Mrs Jane Carlyle, wife of the polymath Thomas Carlyle. She kissed the poet – she was married to Carlyle at the time – during an influenza epidemic, when the newly-recovered Hunt made an unexpected visit to the couple's home.

Charles Dibdin (1745 – 1814), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations* gives 'finds', but at least one broadsheet ballad gives 'find'.

## XIV.

## XIV.1.

*Tune: The Blaydon Races*

I went to BLAYDON races. 'Twas on the ninth o' june,  
 Eighteen hundred & 62 on a summer's afternoon.  
 I took the bus from BALMBRAS, an' she was heavy laden.  
 Away we went along COLLINGWOOD STREET that's on the road to BLAYDON.

*O lads! You should've seen us gannin'!*  
*Passin' the folks along the road, just as they were stan'in':*  
*Al' the lads & lasses there, an' al' wi' smilin' faces,*  
*Gannin' along the SCOTSWOOD ROAD to see the BLAYDON races.*

We flew past Armstrong's factory an' up to the ROBIN ADAIR.  
 Gannin' down the railway bridge, the bus wheel flew off there.  
 The lasses lost their crinolines & the veils that hide their faces.  
 I got two black eyes & a broken nose a-gannin to BLAYDON races.

An' when we got the wheel put on, away we went again.  
 Them that had their noses broke had to go back ower hyem.  
 Some went to the dispensary, an' some to Dr *Gibbs*,  
 An' some went to the infirmary to mend their broken ribs.

An' when we got to PARADISE, there was bonnie gam's begun.  
 There was four & 20 on the bus, man. How they danced & sung!  
 They called on me to sing a song, and I sang them "Paddy Fagan".  
 An' I danced a jig an' I swung me twig on the day we went to BLAYDON.

We flew across the chain bridge right into BLAYDON toon.  
 The bellman he was callin' there. They call him *Jacky Broon*.  
 I saw 'im talkin' to some chaps, an' he was them persuadin'  
 To gan an' see *Geordie Ridley's* show at the MECHANICS' HALL in BLAYDON.

The rain it poured al' the day an' made the ground quite muddy.  
*Coffee John* 'ad a white hat on, an' he yelled, We stole a cuddy!  
 There was spice stalls & monkey stalls an' old wives sellin' ciders.  
 An' a chap wi' a ha'penny round about shoutin, Now, me lads, for riders!

---

'The Blaydon Races', George Ridley (1835 – 1864), The Spinners, *The Spinners*. The words here are from The Spinners' version; they seem to have modified Ridley's lyrics to improve the meter.

*O lads! You should've seen us gannin!  
 Passin' the folks along the road, just as they were stan'in':  
 Al' the lads & lasses there, an' al' wi' smilin' faces,  
 Gannin along the SCOTSWOOD ROAD to see the BLAYDON races.*

#### XIV.2.

The fairy beam upon you,  
 The stars to glisten on you;  
     A moon of light  
     In the noon of night,  
 Till the fire-drake hath o'ergone you.

The wheel of fortune guide you  
 The boy with the bow beside you;  
     Run aye in the way  
     Till the bird of day,  
 And the luckier lot betide you.

To the old, long life and treasure,  
 To the young, all health and pleasure;  
     To the fair, their face  
     With eternal grace,  
 And the foul to be loved at leisure.

To the witty, all clear mirrors,  
 To the foolish, their dark errors;  
     To the loving sprite,  
     A secure delight;  
 To the jealous, his own false terrors.

**XIV.3.** We turn not older with years, but newer every day.

#### XV.

##### XV.1.

*Tune: Who's the Fool Now?*

---

Ben Jonson (1572 – 1637), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. This song is sung by Patrico in Jonson's masque *The Gipsies Metamorphosed*.

Miss Emily Dickinson (1830 – 1886), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Who's the Fool Now?', Anonymous, Hart, *Folk Songs of Old England*, Vol 1. This song is truly ancient; a version of it appears in Ravenscroft's *Deuteromelia* (1609). The narrative behind it is a rich man and his servant drinking together. The rich man is drinking considerably larger quantities, and is amusing his servant with improbable tales. ¶9. The 'man in the moon' is said to refer here to Henry VIII, and his troubles with Clement VII, although this seems more likely to be just nonsense verse, at least at first glance.

O *Martin* said to his man,  
*Fie, man! Fie!*  
*Martin* said to his man,  
*Who's the fool now?*  
*Martin* said to his man,  
 Fill thou the cup and I the can.  
*Thou hast well drunken, man.*  
*Who's the fool now?*

I saw the man in the moon  
 Clouting of St *Peter's* shoon.

I saw a hare chase a hound  
 Twenty miles above the ground.

I saw a mouse chase a cat,  
 Saw a cheese eat a rat.

O *Martin* said to his man,  
*Fie, man! Fie!*  
*Martin* said to his man,  
*Who's the fool now?*  
*Martin* said to his man,  
 Fill thou the cup and I the can.  
*Thou hast well drunken, man.*  
*Who's the fool now?*

## XV.2.

*Cloe's* the wonder of her sex;  
 'Tis well her heart is tender.  
 How might such killing eyes perplex  
 With virtue to defend her?

But nature, graciously inclined,  
 With liberal hand to please us,  
 Has to her boundless beauty joined  
 A boundless bent to ease us.

## XV.3. Everybody has won, and all must have prizes

---

'Cloe', George Granville, Baron Lansdowne (1666 – 1735), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

The Rev Charles Dodgson (1832 – 1898), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

## XVI.

## XVI.1.

*Tune: Lily Bulero*

O there was an old farmer in Sussex did dwell,  
And he had a wife who he didn't love well.

Well the devil he came to the farmer at plough,  
Saying one of your family I've got to have now.

Well you see, mister farmer, I've come for your wife.  
I hear she's the bane and torment of your life,  
So now I'll take her without more strife.

O take her, O take her, with all of my heart,  
And I'm hoping that you & she never will part.

So the devil he hoisted her up on his hump,  
And off down to hell he has gone with a jump.

And when they've travelled to purgatory's gate,  
The night it was dark and the hour it was late.  
Says he, Take in an old Sussex chap's mate.

There were two little devil a-dancing in chains;  
She took out a stick and clattered their brains.

There were two little devils a-playing at ball,  
Saying, Take her back, father; she'll murder us all.

So the devil he hoisted her up on his back,  
Like a bunch of potatoes bound up in a sack,  
And back to her house she's gone with a crack.

Well I've been a tormentor for most of my life,  
But I never knew torment till I met your wife.

This proves that the women is better than men;  
They go down to hell and get sent back again.

## XVI.2.

Tide be runnin' the great world over:

'Twas only last june month I mind that we

---

'The Devil and the Ploughman', Anonymous, Oates, *The Spyglass and the Herringbone*.

'Sea Love', Miss Charlotte Mew (1869 – 1928), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

Was thinking the toss & the call in the breast of the lover  
 So everlastin' as the sea.

Here's the same little fishes that sputter and swim,  
 Wi' the moon's old glim on the grey, wet sand;  
 An' him no more to me nor me to him  
 Than the wind goin' over my hand.

**XVI.3.** Mr Gladstone read Homer for fun, which I thought served him right.

## XVII.

### XVII.1.

*Tune: The Streams of Lovely Nancy*

O the streams of lovely *Nancy* divide in three parts,  
 Oh, the streams of lovely *Nancy* are divided in three parts  
 It's the drinking of good liquor that makes my heart sing,  
 And the noise in the valley makes the rocks for to ring.

At the top of this mountain, my love's castle stands,  
 It's all o'erbuilt with ivory on yonder black sands.  
 Fine arches, fine porches, and diamonds so bright:  
 It's a beacon for a sailor on a dark winter's night.

On yonder high mountain where the wild fowl do fly.  
 There is one in amongst them that flies very high.  
 If I had her in my arms, near the diamond's black land  
 How soon I would secure her by the sleight of my hand.

At the base of this mountain a river runs clear.  
 A ship from the Indies did once anchor there,  
 With her red flags a-flying, the beating of her drum,  
 Sweet instruments of music and the firing of her gun.

---

The Rt Hon Sir Winston Spencer-Churchill (1874 – 1965), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'The Streams of Lovely Nancy', Anonymous, McCusker, *Awkward Annie*. The origin and meaning of this beautiful song are as fascinating as they are obscure, but an educated guess seems to be that it was cobbled together in the West Country in the eighteenth century from a number of sailors' songs.

**XVII.2.**

There's much afoot in heaven & earth this year;  
 The winds hunt up the sun, hunt up the moon,  
 Trouble the dubious dawn, hasten the drear  
 Height of a threatening noon.

No breath of boughs, no breath of leaves, of fronds,  
 May linger or grow warm; the trees are loud;  
 The forest, rooted, tosses in her bonds,  
 And strains against the cloud.

No scents may pause within the garden-fold;  
 The rifled flowers are cold as ocean-shells;  
 Bees, humming in the storm, carry their cold  
 Wild honey to cold cells.

**XVII.3.** This is the sort of English up with which I will not put.

**XVIII.****XVIII.1.**

*Tune: Smith of Bristol*

*Smith* was a BRISTOL man and a rare old sort was he.

*With his cutlass & his pistol, heave your ho!*

With a noble crew of cutthroats, he used to scour the sea,  
 A-plundering and a-robbing high & low.

He swore 'twas no concernin',

He didn't give a herrin',

About right or wrong or any holy show.

He swore that grabbin' booty

Was Britain's foremost duty,

Wherever she could get it! Heave your ho!

*Heave your ho! Heave your ho! Heave your ho!*

*He swore that grabbin' booty*

*Was Britain's foremost duty,*

*Wherever she could get it! Heave your ho!*

---

'The Raining Summer', Mrs Alice Meynell (1847 – 1922), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

The Rt Hon Sir Winston Spencer-Churchill (1874 – 1965), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Smith of Bristol', Anonymous, The Dubliners, *Wild Rover*. The origins of this song are obscure, but it may have been written in Ireland, and perhaps was originally intended as a parody, similar to "The Auld Orange Flute".



*Smith* had a noble soul and lofty was his pride.  
 He'd watch his beaten foemen jump out into the tide,  
 All ye beggers who had nowhere else to go.  
 And hanging from his lanyards  
 Was portuguese and spaniards;  
 And beatmen frenchmen jumping to & fro,  
 Right along the blazin' story,  
 Shall illumine England's glory:  
 Pirate *Smith* of BRISTOL, heave your ho!

But accidents can happen even to heroes such as he.  
     *With his cutlass & his pistol, heave your ho!*  
 He was standing on his capstan as happy as could be,  
 Hoping soon to have another prize in tow,  
 When a whistling spanish bullet  
 Came and caught him in his gullet,  
 And very sad to say it laid him low.  
 He was only 97  
 When his soul had gone to heaven  
 To rest on *Nelson's* bosom. Heave your ho!

*Heave your ho! Heave your ho! Heave your ho!*  
*He swore that grabbin' booty*  
*Was Britain's foremost duty,*  
*Wherever she could get it! Heave your ho!*

## XVIII.2.

Gently dip, but not too deep,  
 For fear you make the golden beard to weep.  
 Fair maiden, white & red,  
 Comb me smooth, and stroke my head,  
 And thou shalt have some cockell bread.

Gently dip, but not too deep,  
 For fear thou make the golden beard to weep.  
 Fair maid, white & red,  
 Comb me smooth, and stroke my head,  
 And every hair a sheaf shall be,  
 And every sheaf a golden tree.

## XVIII.3. A poet can survive everything but a misprint.

---

'Celanta at the Well of Life', George Peele (1556 – 1596), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. These lines are from Peele's play *The Old Wives' Tale*.

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Wilde, *Aristotle at Afternoon Tea: The Rare Oscar Wilde*.

## XIX.

## XIX.1.

*Tune: The Goodman*

The goodman he came home one night.  
 The goodman home came he.  
 There he spied an old saddle horse  
 Where no horse should there be.  
 It's a cow! It's a cow! cried the goodman's wife,  
 A cow, just a cow, can't you see?  
 Far have I ridden, and much I've seen,  
 But a saddle on a cow has never been.

The goodman he came home one night.  
 The goodman home came he.  
 There he spied a powdered wig  
 Where no wig should there be.  
 It's a hen! It's a hen! cried the goodman's wife,  
 A hen, just a hen, can't you see?  
 Far have I ridden, and much I've seen,  
 But powder on a hen has never been.

The goodman he came home one night.  
 The goodman home came he.  
 There he spied a riding coat  
 Where no coat should there be.  
 It's sheets, just sheets! cried the goodman's wife,  
 Sheets, just sheets, can't you see?  
 Far have I ridden, and much I've seen,  
 But buttons on a sheet has never been.

The goodman he came home one night.  
 The good man home came he.  
 There he spied a handsome man  
 Where no man should there be.  
 It's the maid! It's the maid! cried the goodman's wife,  
 The milking maid, can't you see?  
 Far have I ridden, and much I've seen,  
 But a beard on a maid has never been.

---

Anonymous, McKusker, *Underneath the Stars*. This song seems to have its roots in an old Scottish song, Child Ballad 274, but from there it has grown into thousands of forms, in a number of European languages.

## XIX.2.

The turn of noontide has begun.  
 In the weak breeze the sunshine yields.  
 There is a bell upon the fields.  
 On the long hedgerow's tangled run  
 A low white cottage intervenes:  
 Against the wall a blind man leans,  
 And sways his face to have the sun.

Our horses' hoofs stir in the road,  
 Quiet & sharp. Light hath a song  
 Whose silence, being heard, seems long.  
 The point of noon maketh abode,  
 And will not be at once gone through.  
 The sky's deep colour saddens you,  
 And the heat weighs a dreamy load.

XIX.3. A thing is not necessarily true because a man dies for it.

## XX.

## XX.1.

*Tune: Sweet William's Ghost*

There came a ghost to *Margaret's* door  
 With many a grievous groan,  
 And, ay, he's turled long at the pin,  
 But answer she gave none.  
 'Is it my father *Philip*?  
 Or yet my brother *John*?  
 Or yet my own dear *William*  
 From Scotland now came home?'

'My faith & troth you'll never get,  
 Of me you'll never win,  
 Till you take me to yon churchyard  
 And wed me with a ring.'  
 'O I do dwell in a churchyard  
 But far beyond the sea,

---

'A Half-Way Pause', Gabriel Rossetti (1828 – 1882), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Anonymous, McKusker, *Underneath the Stars*. This song is essentially the same as the seventy-seventh Child Ballad 77.

And it is but my ghost, *Margaret*,  
That speaks now unto thee.'

So she's put on her robes of green,  
With a piece below the knee,  
And all the live long winter's night  
The sweet ghost followed she.  
'O is there room at your head, *Willie*,  
Or room here at your feet,  
Or room here at your side, *Willie*,  
Wherein that I may sleep?'

'There's no room at my head, *Margaret*.  
There's no room at my feet.  
There's no room at my side, *Margaret*.  
My coffin is so neat.'  
Then up and spoke the red robin,  
And up and spoke the grey.  
'Tis' time, tis' time, my dear *Margaret*  
That I were gone away.'

No more the ghost to *Margaret* came  
With many a grievous groan.  
He's vanished out into the mist  
And left her there alone  
'O stay my own true love, stay!  
My heart you do divide.'  
Pale grew her cheeks. She closed her eyes,  
Stretched out her limbs and cried.

## XX.2.

Your hands lie open in the long fresh grass –  
The finger-points look through like rosy blooms:  
Your eyes smile peace. The pasture gleams & glooms  
'Neath billowing skies that scatter & amass.  
All round our nest, far as the eye can pass,  
Are golden kingcup fields with silver edge  
Where the cow parsley skirts the hawthorn hedge.  
'Tis visible silence, still as the hour-glass.

---

'The Silent Noon', Gabriel Rossetti (1828 – 1882), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. This is *The House of Life* §19.

Deep in the sun-searched growths the dragon-fly  
 Hangs like a blue thread loosened from the sky:  
 So this winged hour is dropped to us from above.  
 O clasp we to our hearts, for deathless dower,  
 This close-companioned inarticulate hour  
 When twofold silence was the song of love.

**XX.3.** Hard work is simply the refuge of people who have nothing whatever to do.

## XXI.

### XXI.1.

*Tune: Y'Acre of Land*

My father he left me an acre of land –  
*Sing hey! Sing ho! Sing hivy!*  
 My father he left me an acre of land –  
*And a bunch of holly & ivy!*

And we ploughed it up with a ram's horn,  
 And scattered it over with one peppercorn.

And we reaped it with a sickle of leather,  
 And tied it all up with a tomtit's feather.

And we threshed it with a peddler's pack,  
*Sing hey! Sing ho! Sing hivy!*  
 And carried it home on a butterfly's back.  
*And a bunch of holly & ivy!*

### XXI.2.

Everyone suddenly burst out singing;  
 And I was filled with such delight  
 As prisoned birds must find in freedom,  
 Winging wildly across the white  
 Orchards and dark-green fields; on – on – and out of sight.

Everyone's voice was suddenly lifted;  
 And beauty came like the setting sun:  
 My heart was shaken with tears; and horror

---

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Wilde, *The Happy Prince and Other Tales*.

'An Acre of Land', Anonymous, Albion Band, *The Albion Band: Live at the Cambridge Folk Festival*. This song is closely related to Child Ballad 2.

'Everyone Sang', Siegfried Sassoon (1886 – 1967), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This short poem commemorates the 1918 armistice.

Drifted away... O but everyone  
Was a bird; and the song was wordless; the singing will never be  
done.

**XXI.3.** He has fought the good fight and has had to face every difficulty  
except popularity.

## XXII.

### XXII.1.

*Tune: John Blount*

There was an old couple lived under a hill,  
And *Blunt* it was their name O.  
And they had a good beer and ale for to sell  
And it bore a wonderful fame O.

*John Blunt* & his wife they drank of the drink  
Till they could drink no more O.  
They both got tired and went up to bed  
But forgot to bar the door O.

So they made a bargain; a bargain they made.  
They made it strong & sure O.  
The first of them to speak the first word  
Gets up to bar the door O.

So there came ramblers, ramblers three,  
Travelling in the night O.  
And so in need of lodgings were they,  
They crept in by candlelight O.

They went to his larder and ate up his food  
Till they could eat no more O;  
But never a word did the old couple speak  
For fear of who stood at the door O.

And down to his cellar they drank of his drink  
Till they could drink no more O;  
But never a word did the old couple speak  
For fear of who stood at the door O.

---

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. Wilde was describing Dr William Henley.

Anonymous, Oates, *The Spyglass and the Herringbone*.

They went upstairs; they went to his room;  
 They broke it down the door O;  
 But never a word did the old couple speak  
 For fear of who stood at the door O.

They hauled his wife all out of the bed,  
 Laid her out on the floor O.  
 Then up got *John*, said, It's time to be gone,  
 For he could stand no more O.

He said, You've eaten my food and drunk of my drink,  
 And my wife you hurt full sore O.  
 But you spoke the first word, *John Blunt*, she said,  
 So go down and bar the door O.

## XXII.2.

O never say that I was false of heart  
 Though absence seemed my flame to qualify;  
 As easy might I from myself depart  
 As from my soul, which in thy breast doth lie.

That is my home of love; if I have ranged,  
 Like him that travels, I return again,  
 Just to the time, not with the time exchanged,  
 So that myself bring water for my stain.

Never believe, though in my nature reigned  
 All frailties that besiege all kinds of blood,  
 That it could so preposterously be stained  
 To leave for nothing all thy sum of good;

For nothing this wide universe I call,  
 Save thou, my rose: in it thou art my all.

**XXII.3.** He is really not so ugly after all, provided, of course, that one shuts one's eyes.

## XXIII.

### XXIII.1.

*Tune: Paddy Stole the Rope*

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.  
 Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Wilde, *A House of Pomegranates*.  
 Anonymous, Hart, *Folk Songs of Old England*, Vol 2.

There were once two irish labouring men; to England they came over;  
 And they tramped about in search of work from LIVERPOOL to DOVER.  
 Says *Mike* to *Pat*, I'm tired of this. We're both left in the lurch,  
 And if I don't get work, bedad, I'll go and rob a church.  
 What, rob a church! says *Pat* to *Mike*; How could you be so vile?  
 For something sure would happen while we're going down the aisle.  
 But if you do, I'll go with you, and we'll get safe out, I hope.  
 So, listen and I'll tell you now how *Paddy* stole the rope.

Well off they went with theft intent to the place they wanted finding,  
 And they broke inside of a country church where nobody was minding.  
 And they scraped together all they could, they were prepared to slope,  
 When *Paddy* says, Now hold on, *Mike*. What have we got for rope?  
 For we have no bag to hold our swag, and before we get outside,  
 With something strong & stout, my lad, this bundle must be tied.  
 And just then he spied the church bell rope, and before you could turn  
 about,  
 He did ride up the belfry high to climb that rope so stout.

And holding on by one hand & leg, he pulled his clasp knife out,  
 And right above his hand & head he cut that rope so stout.  
 Well he quite forgot it held him up, and, by the holy Pope,  
 Down to the bottom of the church fell Paddy and the rope.  
 Come out of that, says *Mike* to *Pat*, and will you stop your moaning,  
 If that's the way you steal a rope, it's no wonder that you're groaning.  
 I'll show you how to steal the rope, if you lend to me your knife.  
 O *Mike*, go easy, says old *Pat*, or else you'll lose your life.

So *Mike* climbed up the other rope, just like an antelope,  
 But instead of cutting it off above, he cut it off below.  
 Down fell the other piece of rope, and *Mike* was left on high.  
 Come down, says *Pat*. I can't, says *Mick*, for if I drop, I'll die.  
 Well their noise it brought the beagles out, the sexton & police,  
 And though they got poor *Micky* down, they spared them no release.  
 And for their ingenuity they have now a wider scope  
 Than when they broke inside a church to go and steal the rope.

### XXIII.2.

You virgins, that did late despair  
 To keep your wealth from cruel men,

---

'Piping Peace', James Shirley (1596 – 1666), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. This song is sung in Act I of Shirley's *The Imposture*.



Tie up in silk your careless hair:  
Soft peace is come again.

Now lovers' eyes may gently shoot  
A flame that will not kill;  
The drum was angry, but the lute  
Shall whisper what you will.

Sing, Iö, Iö! for his sake  
That hath restored your drooping heads;  
With choice of sweetest flowers make  
A garden where he treads;

Whilst we whole groves of laurel bring,  
A petty triumph for his brow,  
Who is the master of our spring  
And all the bloom we owe.

**XXIII.3.** I have the simplest tastes; I am always satisfied with the best.

## **XXIV.**

### **XXIV.1.**

*Tune: The Postman's Knock*

What a wonderful man the postman is  
As he hastens from door to door!  
What medley of news his hands contain  
For high, low, rich, & poor!  
In many's the face the joy he can trace,  
In many's the grief he can see,  
When you open the door to his loud rat-tat  
And his quick delivery.

*Every morning as true as the clock  
Somebody hears the postman's knock!*

Number 1 he presents with news of a birth;  
With tidings of death, №4.  
At 13 a bill of terrible length  
He drops through the hole in the door.  
Now a cheque or an order for 15 he leaves  
In 16 his presence to prove,

---

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Saltus, *Oscar Wilde: An Idler's Impression*.

Anonymous, Albion Band, *The Albion Band: Live at the Cambridge Folk Festival*. The words to this song are said to have been written by one L M Thornton, flourishing in 1860.

While 17 doth an acknowledgement get,  
And 18 a letter of love.

And the mail must get through  
Whatever the hazards or odds.  
This low man of letters just peddles on through  
Pursued by a pack of wild dogs.  
But ease & complaining whatever the trial  
Or beating he never retreats,  
For you get a free bag & a hat with a badge  
And it's better than walking the streets.

*Every morning as true as the clock  
Somebody hears the postman's knock!*

#### XXIV.2.

Tall nettles cover up, as they have done  
These many springs, the rusty harrow, the plough  
Long worn out, and the roller made of stone:  
Only the elm butt tops the nettles now.

This corner of the farmyard I like most:  
As well as any bloom upon a flower  
I like the dust on the nettles, never lost  
Except to prove the sweetness of a shower.

**XXIV.3.** If nature had been comfortable, mankind would never have invented architecture.

#### XXV.

##### XXV.1.

*Tune: The Fox Hunt*

You gentlemen of high renown, come listen unto me  
That take delight in fox hunting by every degree.  
A story now I'll tell to you concerning of a fox,  
O'er ROYSTON hills & mountains high & over stony rocks.

*Old Reynold* being in his den and hearing of these hounds,  
Which made him for to prick his ears and tread upon the ground.  
'Methink me hear some jubal hounds pressing upon my life;  
Before that they do come to me I'll tread upon the ground.'

---

'Tall Nettles', Edward Thomas (1878 – 1917), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.  
Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Wilde, *The Decay of Lying*.  
Anonymous, Carthy, *Rigs of the Time: The Best of Martin Carthy*.

We hunted full four hours or more by parishes 16.  
 We hunted full four hours or more and came by BARKWORTH GREEN.  
 ‘O if you’ll only spare my life I’ll promise and fulfil:  
 I’ll touch no more your feathered fowl nor lambs in yonder fold.’

*Old Reynold* beat and out of breath and dreading of these hounds,  
 Thinking that he might lose his life before these jubal hounds:  
 ‘O here’s adieu to duck & geese, likewise young lamb also.’  
 They’ve got *Old Reynold* by the brush and will not let him go.

## XXV.2.

Yes, I remember ADLESTROP –  
 The name, because one afternoon  
 Of heat the express-train drew up there  
 Unwontedly. It was late june.

The steam hissed. Someone cleared his throat.  
 No one left & no one came  
 On the bare platform. What I saw  
 Was ADLESTROP – only the name

And willows, willow-herb, & grass,  
 And meadowsweet, & haycocks dry,  
 No whit less still & lonely fair  
 Than the high cloudlets in the sky.

And for that minute a blackbird sang  
 Close by, and round him, mistier,  
 Farther & farther, all the birds  
 Of Oxfordshire & Gloucestershire.

**XXV.3.** If the lower orders don’t set us a good example, what on earth is the use of them?

## XXVI.

### XXVI.1.

*Tune: The White Cockade*

---

‘Adlestrop’, Edward Thomas (1878 – 1917), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.  
 Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This a line  
 from *The Importance of Being Earnest*.

‘The White Cockade’, Anonymous, McKusker, *Underneath the Stars*. This love song is not  
 to be confused with the stirring Jacobite marching song of the same name. ¶13. A ‘flowing bowl’  
 seems to have been some sort of party involving a bowl of punch.

‘One day as I was walking all o’er yon fields of moss,  
 I had no thoughts of enlisting till some soldiers did me cross.  
 They kindly did invite me to a flowing bowl, and down  
 They advancèd me some money, a shilling from the crown.’

My true love he is handsome and he wears a white cockade.  
 He is a handsome young man, likewise a roving blade.  
 He is a handsome young man. He’s gone to serve the king.  
 O my very heart is aching all for the love of him.

My true love he is handsome & comely for to see,  
 And by a sad misfortune a soldier now is he.  
 I wish the man that’s listed him might prosper night nor day,  
 And I wish that the hollanders might sink him in the sea.

Then he took out his hankerchief to wipe my flowing eye.  
 ‘Leave off your lamentations, likewise your mournful sighs.  
 Leave off your grief & sorrow until I march o’er yon plain.  
 We’ll be married in the springtime when I return again.’

My true love he is listed, and it’s all for him I’ll rove.  
 I’ll write his name on every tree that grows in yonder grove.  
 My poor heart it does hallow; how my poor heart it does cry,  
 To remind me of my ploughboy, until the day I die.

## XXVI.2.

He has not wooed, but he has lost his heart.  
 That country dance is a sore test for him;  
 He thinks her cold; his hopes are faint & dim;  
 But though with seeming mirth she takes her part  
 In all the dances & the laughter there,  
 And though to many a youth, on brief demand,  
 She gives a kind assent & courteous hand,  
 She loves but him, for him is all her care.  
 With jealous heed her lessening voice he hears  
 Down that long vista, where she seems to move  
 Among fond faces & relays of love,  
 And sweet occasion, full of tender fears:  
 Down those long lines he watches from above,  
 Till with the refluent dance she reappears.s

---

‘A Country Dance’, The Rev Charles Turner (1808 – 1879), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

**XXVI.3.** It is so beautiful that I am sure it has a long Latin name.

## XXVII.

### XXVII.1.

*Tune: The Lancashire Witches*

In vain I attempt to describe  
 The charms of my favourite fair;  
 She's the sweetest of mother *Eve's* tribe;  
 With her there is none to compare.  
 She's a pride of beauty so bright,  
 Her image my fancy enriches;  
 My charmer's the village delight,  
 And the pride of the Lancashire witches.

*Then hurrah for the Lancashire witches,  
 Whose smile every bosom enriches;  
 O dearly I prize  
 The pretty blue eyes  
 Of the pride of the Lancashire witches.*

They may talk of the dark eyes of Spain:  
 'Tis useless to talk as they do:  
 They attempt to compare them in vain  
 With the Lancashire ladies' of blue.  
 Only view the dear heavenly belles,  
 You're soon seized with love's sudden twitches,  
 Which nought could create but the spells  
 From the eyes of the Lancashire witches.

The Lancashire witches, believe me,  
 Are beautiful every one;  
 But mine, or my fancy deceives me,  
 Is the prettiest under the sun.  
 If the wealth of the Indies, I swear,  
 Were mine, and I wallowed in riches,  
 How gladly my fortune I'd share  
 With the pride of the Lancashire witches.

---

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Wilde, *The Happy Prince and Other Tales*. 'It', in the context of the story, is a red rose.

℞ 'The Lancashire Witches', Anonymous, *Bodleian 17687*. There is an association between witchcraft and the County Palatine of Lancashire due to the infamous Pendle witch trials. The Almanacker is only familiar with the tune sung by the Oldham Tinkers in *For Old Time's Sake*.

*Then hurrah for the Lancashire witches,  
 Whose smile every bosom enriches;  
     O dearly I prize  
     The pretty blue eyes  
 Of the pride of the Lancashire witches.*

## XXVII.2.

When *Letty* had scarce passed her third glad year,  
 And her young artless words began to flow,  
 One day we gave the child a colored sphere  
 Of the wide earth, that she might mark & know,  
 By tint & outline, all its sea & land.  
 She patted all the world; old empires peeped  
 Between her baby fingers; her soft hand  
 Was welcome at all frontiers. How she leaped,  
 And laughed and prattled in her world-wide bliss!  
 But when we turned her sweet unlearnèd eye  
 On our own isle, she raised a joyous cry:  
 O yes! I see it, *Letty's* home is there!  
 And while she hid all England with a kiss,  
 Bright over Europe fell her golden hair.

**XXVII.3.** Life is much too important a thing ever to talk seriously about it.

## XXVIII.

### XXVIII.1.

*Tune: Sir Eglamore*

Sir *Eglamore* was a valiant knight –  
     *Fa la lanky down dilly!*  
 He took up his sword and he went to fight –  
     *Fa la lanky down dilly!*  
 As he rode o'er hill & dale,  
 All armoured in a coat of mail.  
     *Fa la la! Fa la la!*  
     *Fa la lanky down dilly!*

---

'Letty's Globe', The Rev Charles Turner (1808 – 1879), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Wilde, *Vera*.

℞ Anonymous, McKusker, *Hourglass*. Sir Eglamore is an ill-defined knight floating around late medieval literature: see the Middle English long poem *Sir Eglamour of Artois*.

Out came a dragon from her den,  
 That killed God knows how many men.  
 When she saw Sir *Eglamore*,  
 You should have heard that dragon roar.

Well then the trees began to shake.  
 Horse did tremble and man did quake.  
 The birds betook them all to peep.  
 it would have made a grown man weep.

But all in vain it was to fear,  
 For now they fall to fight like bears.  
 To it they go and soundly fight,  
 The livelong day from morn till night.

This dragon had a plaguey hide,  
 That could the sharpest steel abide.  
 No sword could enter through her skin,  
 Which vexed the knight and made her grin,

But as in choler she did burn;  
 He fetched the dragon a great good turn.  
 As a-yawning she did fall,  
 He thrust his sword up, hilt & all.

Like a coward she did fly –  
*Fa la lanky down dilly!*  
 To her den which was hard by.  
*Fa la lanky down dilly!*  
 There she lay all night and roared.  
 The knight was sorry for his sword.  
*Fa la la! Fa la la!*  
*Fa la lanky down dilly!*

## XXVIII.2.

With wine & words of love & every vow  
 He lulled me into bed and closed my eyes,  
 A sleepy, stupid innocent... So now  
 I dedicate the spoils of my surprise:  
 The silk that bound my breasts, my virgin zone,  
 The cherished purity I could not keep.

---

‘Seduced Girl’, Louis Untermeyer (1885 – 1977), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. This is a translation of a poem attributed to Hedylus, a Greek poet of the Alexandrian school. The original Greek text can be found in the *Greek Anthology* V.199.

Goddess, remember we were all alone,  
And he was strong, and I was  $\frac{1}{2}$  asleep.

**XXVIII.3.** Prayer must never be answered: if it is, it ceases to be prayer and becomes correspondence.

## XXIX.

### XXIX.1.

*Tune: Mary Blaize*

Good people all, with one accord,  
Lament for Madam *Blaize*,  
Who never wanted one good word –  
From those who spoke her praise.

The needy seldom passed her door,  
And always found her kind;  
She freely lent to all the poor –  
Who left a pledge behind.

She strove the neighbourhood to please  
With manners wondrous winnings  
And never followed wicked ways –  
Unless when she was sinning.

At church, in silks & satins new,  
With hoop of monstrous size,  
She never slumbered in her pew –  
But when she shut her eyes.

Her love was sought, I do aver,  
By twenty beaux & more;  
The king himself has followed her –  
When she has walked before.

But wealth & finery all fled  
And hangers-on all gone,  
The doctors found, when she was dead,  
The life within her none.

---

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Wilde, *The Epigrams of Oscar Wilde*.

℞ ‘An Elegy on the Glory of Her Sex, Mrs Mary Blaize’, Oliver Goldsmith (1728 – 1774), Goldsmith, *The Poems and Plays of Oliver Goldsmith*. ¶3. The Almanacker has amended this line to follow the version sung by Mrs McKusker, as a cherished example of the so-called folk process. ¶21. The Almanacker has amended this verse to follow the version sung by Mrs McKusker, as a cherished example of the so-called folk process.



Let us lament in sorrow sore,  
 For KENT STREET well may say  
 That had she lived a twelvemonth more  
 She had not died today.

**XXIX.2.**

That which her slender waist confined  
 Shall now my joyful temples bind;  
 No monarch but would give his crown  
 His arms might do what this has done.

It was my heaven's extremest sphere,  
 The pale which held that lovely deer  
 My joy, my grief, my hope, my love  
 Did all within this circle move.

A narrow compass! and yet there  
 Dwelt all that's good, & all that's fair:  
 Give me but what this ribband bound,  
 Take all the rest the sun goes round.

**XXIX.3.** Let nature be your teacher.

---

'On a Girdle', Edmund Waller (1606 – 1687), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Dr William Wordsworth, Poet Laureate (1770 – 1850), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is a line from Dr Wordsworth's "The Tables Turned".



## CHAPTER 5

# Quintilis

### I.

#### I.1.

*Tune: Whisky in the Jar*

As I was going over  
The far-famed Kerry mountains,  
I met with Captain *Farrell*  
And his money he was counting.  
I first produced my pistol  
And then produced my rapier  
Said, Stand and deliver  
For you are a bold deceiver!

*Musha-ring dumma-do dumma-da!*  
*Wack-fol the daddy-oh!*  
*Wack-fol the daddy-oh!*  
*There's whisky in the jar!*

I counted out his money  
And it made a pretty penny.  
I put it in my pocket  
And brought it home to *Jenny*.  
She sighed & she swore  
That she never would deceive me.  
But the devil take the women  
For they never can be easy.

I went up to my chamber  
All for to take a slumber.  
I dreamt of gold & jewels,  
And for sure it was no wonder.  
But *Jenny* drew my charges

---

Anonymous, The Dubliners, *Wild Rover*.

And she filled them up with water,  
 And sent for Captain *Farrell*  
 To ready for the slaughter.

'Twas early in the morning  
 Just before I rose to travel.  
 Up comes a band of footmen  
 And likewise Captain *Farrell*.  
 I first produced my pistol  
 For she'd stolen away my rapier.  
 I couldn't shoot the water,  
 So a prisoner I was taken.

If anyone can aid me,  
 'Tis my brother in the army.  
 If I could find his station  
 In Cork or in Killarney.  
 And if he'll come with me  
 We'll go roamin' in Kilkenny.  
 And I'm sure he'll treat me better  
 Than my own misportin' Jenny.

*Musha-ring dumma-do dumma-da!*  
*Wack-fol the daddy-oh!*  
*Wack-fol the daddy-oh!*  
*There's whisky in the jar!*

## I.2.

### *Tune: Outward Bound*

To the LIVERPOOL docks we bid adieu,  
 To *Suke & Sall & Kitty* too.  
 Our anchor's wieghed and our sails unfurled;  
 We're off to plough the watery world.

*Hurrah! We're outward bound!*  
*Hurrah! We're outward bound!*

When the wind it blows from the east-nor'-east,  
 Our ship will sail 10KTS at least.  
 The purser will our wants supply,  
 So while we've rum we'll never say die.

---

Anonymous, Whall, *Ships, Sea Songs and Shanties*. SSS is only the primary source: there are very many versions of this shanty: the Almanacker has done his best to extract the best of each of them.

And should we touch at MALABAR  
 Or any other port as far,  
 Our purser he will tip the chink  
 And just like fishes we will drink.

One day the man on the look-out  
 Proclaims a sail with a joyful shout:  
 ‘Can you make her out?’ ‘I think I can.  
 She’s a pilot standing out from the land.’

*Hurrah! We’re homeward bound!*  
*Hurrah! We’re homeward bound!*

Now when we get to the BLACKWALL docks,  
 The pretty young girls come down in flocks;  
 One to the other you’ll hear them say,  
 ‘O here comes *Jack* with his 10 months’ pay.

And when we get to the DOG AND BELL,  
 It’s there they’ve got good liquor to sell.  
 In comes old *Grouse* with a smile,  
 Saying, ‘Drink, my boys. It’s worth your while.’

But when the money’s all gone & spent,  
 And there’s none to be borrowed and none to be lent,  
 In comes old *Grouse* with a frown,  
 Saying, ‘Get up, *Jack*. Let *John* sit down.’

Then poor old *Jack* must understand  
 There’s ships in docks all wanting hands;  
 So he goes onboard as he did before,  
 And bids adieu to his native shore.

*Hurrah! We’re outward bound!*  
*Hurrah! We’re outward bound!*

**I.3.** Stolen waters are sweet.

## II.

### II.1.

*Tune: The Auld Orange Flute*

---

Proverbs 9.17, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.  
 Anonymous, The Dubliners, *At Their Best*.

In the County Tyrone, near the town of DUNGANNON,  
 There was many the ruction that myself had a han' in.  
*Bob Williamson* lived there, a weaver by trade,  
 And all of us thought him a stout orange blade.  
 On the 12th of july as it yearly did come,  
*Bob* played on his old flute to the sound of the drum.  
 You can talk of your harp, your piano or lute,  
 But nothing compared with the old orange flute.

*Toora-loo! Toora-loo!*

*Sure it's six miles from BANGOR to DONAGHADEE!*

Ah but *Bob* the deceiver, sure he took us all in,  
 And he married a papist called *Bridget McGinn*,  
 Turned papist himself, and forsook the old cause  
 That gave us our freedom, religion & laws.  
 Now the boys of the place made some comment upon it,  
 And *Bob* had to flee to the province of Connaught.  
 Well he fled with his wife & his fixings to boot;  
 And, along with the latter, his old orange flute.

At the chapel on sundays, to atone for past deeds,  
 He said paters & aves and he counted his beads;  
 Till after some time, at the priest's own desire,  
*Bob* went with his old flute to play in the choir.  
 Well he went with his old flute to play in the mass,  
 But the instrument shivered & sighed – O alas –  
 And blow as he would, though it made a great noise,  
 The flute would play only “The Protestant Boys”.

At the council of priests that was held the next day,  
 They decided to banish the old flute away.  
 They couldn't knock heresy out of its head,  
 So they bought *Bob* a new one to play in its stead.  
 Now the old flute it was doomed and its fate was pathetic.  
 'Twas fastened and burned at the stake as heretic.  
 As the flames roared around sure they heard a queer noise;  
 'Twas the old flute still playing “The Protestant Boys”.

*Toora-loo! Toora-loo!*

*Sure it's six miles from BANGOR to DONAGHADEE!*

**II.2.**

*Tune: Haul on the Bowline*

Haul on the bowline; the bully ship's a-rollin'.

*Haul on the bowline! The bowline haul!*

Haul on the bowline; *Kitty* is me darlin'.

Haul on the bowline; *Kitty* comes from LIVERPOOL.

Haul on the bowline; it's a far cry to pay day.

*Haul on the bowline! The bowline haul!*

**II.3.** Alliance, n: In international politics, the union of two thieves who have their hands so deeply inserted in each other's pocket that they cannot separately plunder a third.

**III.****III.1.**

*Tune: Home, Boys, Home*

O well who wouldn't be a sailor lad, sailing on the main?  
To gain the good will of his captain's good name  
He came ashore one evening for to see,  
And that was the beginning of my own true love & me.

*And it's home, boys, home!*  
*Home I'd like to be,*  
*Home for a while in my own count-ry,*  
*Where the oak & the ash & the bonny rowan tree*  
*Are all a-growing green in the north count-ry!*

'Well I asked her for a candle for to light my way to bed,  
Likewise for a handkerchief to tie around my head.  
She tended to my needs like a young maid ought to do,  
So then I says to her, "Now won't you jump in with me too?"

'Well she jumped into bed a-making no alarm,  
Thinking a young sailor lad could do to her no harm.  
I hugged her, I kissed her the whole night long,  
Till she wished the short night had been seven years long.'

---

Ambrose Bierce (1842 – 1914), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
Anonymous, The Dubliners, *Wild Rover*.

Well early next morning the sailor lad arose  
 And into *Mary's* apron threw a handful of gold,  
 Saying, 'Take this, my dear, for the damage that I've done,  
 For tonight I fear I've left you with a daughter or a son.

'And if it be a girl-child, send her out to nurse  
 With gold in her pocket & with silver in her purse;  
 If it be a boy-child, he'll wear the jacket blue  
 And go climbing up the rigging like his daddy used to do.'

And so come all of you fair maidens, a warning take by me;  
 Never let a sailor lad an inch above your knee.  
 I trusted one, and he beguiled me;  
 He left me with a pair of twins to dangle on my knee.

*And it's home, boys, home!*  
*Home I'd like to be,*  
*Home for a while in my own count-ry,*  
*Where the oak & the ash & the bonny rowan tree*  
*Are all a-growing green in the north count-ry!*

### III.2.

*Tune: Paddy Doyle's Boots*  
*To me, way-ay ay-ay-ay yah!*  
 We'll pay *Paddy Doyle* for 'is boots.  
*To me, way-ay ay-ay-ay yah!*  
 We'll all drink whisky & gin.  
*To me, way-ay ay-ay-ay yah!*  
 We'll all shave under the chin.

### III.3. Eureka!

## IV.

---

Anonymous, *Sailors' Songs and Sea Shanties*. Paddy Doyle seems to have been a Liverpoolian boarding master.

Prof Morris Morgan (1859 – 1910), Vitruvius Pollo, *The Ten Books on Architecture*. Prof Morgan is here translating a passage by the ancient Roman architect Vitruvius, who in turn was relating a famous (and seemingly apocryphal) anecdote about Archimedes.

Anonymous, *The Dubliners*, *At Their Best*.



## IV.1.

*Tune: Leaving of Liverpool*

Farewell, the PRINCES LANDING STAGE;  
 RIVER MERSEY, fare thee well.  
 I am bound for California,  
 A place I know right well.

*So fare thee well, my own true love.  
 When I return united we will be.  
 It's not the leaving of LIVERPOOL that grieves me,  
 But my darling when I think of thee.*

I've shipped on a yankee clipper ship;  
**Davy Crockett** is her name.  
*Dan Burgess* is the captain of her,  
 And they say that she's a floating hell.

I have sailed with *Burgess* once before;  
 I think I know him well.  
 If a man's a sailor he will get along;  
 If not then he's sure in hell.

Farewell to LOWER FREDERICK STREET,  
 ANSON TERRACE and PARK LANE.  
 I am bound away for to leave you,  
 And I'll never see you again.

I am bound for California  
 By way of stormy CAPE HORN,  
 And I will write to thee a letter, love,  
 When I am homeward bound.

*So fare thee well, my own true love.  
 When I return united we will be.  
 It's not the leaving of LIVERPOOL that grieves me,  
 But my darling when I think of thee.*

## IV.2.

*Tune: Way Me Susiana*

We'll heave him up and away we'll go!  
*Way, my Susiana!*

That is where the cocks do crow –  
*We're all bound over the mountain!*

And when the cocks begin to crow,  
 'Tis time for me to roll & go.

And if we drown while we are young,  
 It's better to drown than to wait to be hung.

O growl ye may but go ye must.  
 If ye growl too hard your head they'll bust.

Up socks, you cocks; hand her two blocks,  
 And go below to your old ditty box.

Oh rock & shake her one more drag.  
*Way, my Susiana!*  
 O bend your duds and pack your bag.  
*We're all bound over the mountain!*

IV.3. Good Americans, when they die, go to Paris.

## V.

### V.1.

*Tune: Turn Ye To Me*

The stars are burning  
 Cheerily, cheerily.

**Horo Mhairi dhu**, turn ye to me.

The sea mew is moaning  
 Drearily, drearily.

**Horo Mhairi dhu**, turn ye to me.

Cold is the stormwind that ruffles his breast,  
 But warm are the downy plumes lining his nest.

Cold blows the storm there;  
 Soft falls the snow there.

**Horo Mhairi dhu**, turn ye to me.

The waves are dancing  
 Merrily, merrily.

**Horo Mhairi dhu**, turn ye to me.

The seabirds are wailing

---

Thomas Appleton (1812 – 1884), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Prof John Wilson (1785 – 1854), The Corries, *The Compact Collection*. 'Horo Mhairi dhu' would seem to be a (slightly archaic) Gallic phrase, meaning 'O black Mary'.

Wearily, wearily.

**Horo Mhairi dhù,** turn ye to me.

Hushed be thy moaning, lone bird of the sea;

Thy home on the rocks is a shelter to thee;

Thy home is the angry wave,

Mine but the lonely grave.

**Horo Mhairi dhù,** turn ye to me.

## V.2.

*Tune: Hanging Johnny*

They call me *Hanging Johnny* –

*Away, boys! Away!*

But I never hanged nobody –

*So hang, boys! Hang!*

They says I hanged my graddy,

And then I hanged my family.

They says I hanged my mother.

It is they and my brother.

I hanged a rotten liar,

But I hanged a bloody friar.

They tells I hang for money,

But hanging's so bloody funny.

We all will hang together –

*Away, boys! Away!*

It's all for better weather –

*So hang, boys! Hang!*

**V.3.** He did not seem to care which way he travelled providing he was in the driver's seat.

## VI.

### VI.1.

*Tune: The Mother's Malison*

---

Anonymous, The Young Tradition, *The Young Tradition Sampler*.

William Beaverbrook, 1st Baron Beaverbrook (1879 – 1964), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ Anonymous, Child, *The English and Scottish Popular Ballads*. A handful of lines have been removed to make this song singable to the tune with which the Almanacker is familiar.

*Willie* stands in his stable door  
 And clapping at his steed,  
 And looking o'er his white fingers  
 His nose began to bleed.  
 'Gi'e corn to my horse, mother,  
 And meat to my young man,  
 And I'll awa' to *Maggie's* bower;  
 I'll win ere she lie down.'

'O 'bide this night wi' me, *Willie*,  
 O 'bide this night wi' me;  
 The best an cock o' a' the roost  
 At your supper shall be.'  
 'A' your cocks, and a' your roosts,  
 I value not a prin,  
 For I'll awa' to *Maggie's* bower;  
 I'll win ere she lie down.'

'Stay this night wi' me, *Willie*,  
 O stay this night wi' me;  
 The best an sheep in a' the flock  
 At your supper shall be.'  
 'A' your sheep, and a' your flocks,  
 I value not a prin,  
 For I'll awa' to *Maggie's* bower;  
 I'll win ere she lie down.'

'O on ye gang to *Maggie's* bower,  
 So sore against my will,  
 The deepest pot in *CLYDE's* water,  
 My malison ye's feel.'  
 'The good steed that I ride upon  
 Cost me thrice £30;  
 And I'll put trust in his swift feet  
 To ha'e me safe to land.'

As he rode o'er yon high, high hill,  
 And down yon dowie den,  
 The noise that was in *CLYDE's* water  
 Would feared 500 men.  
 'O roaring *CLYDE*, ye roar o'er loud,  
 Your streams seem wondrous strang;

Make me your wreck as I come back,  
But spare me as I gang!’

Then he is on to *Maggie’s* bower,  
And tirlèd at the pin.

‘O sleep ye, wake ye, *Maggie*,’ he said;  
‘Ye’ll open, let me come in.’

‘O who is this at my bower door,  
That calls me by my name?’

‘It is your first love, sweet *Willie*,  
This night newly come hame.’

‘I ha’e few lovers thereout, thereout,  
As few ha’e I therein;

The best an love that ever I had  
Was here jus’ late yestreen.’

‘The worst an bower in a’ your bowers,  
For me to lie therin!

My boots are fu’ o’ *CLYDE’s* water;  
I’m shivering at the chin.’

‘My barns are fu’ o’ corn, *Willie*;  
My stables are fu’ o’ hay.

My bowers are fu’ o’ gentlemen;  
They’ll not remove till day.’

‘O fare ye well, my false *Maggie*!  
O farewell, and adieu!

I’ve got my mother’s malison  
This night coming to you.’

As he rode o’er yon high, high hill  
And down yon dowie den,

The rushing that was in *CLYDE’s* water  
Took *Willie’s* hat from him.

He leaned him o’er his saddle-bow,  
To catch his hat through force;

The rushing that was in *CLYDE’s* water  
Took *Willie* from his horse.

His brither stood upo’ the bank,  
Says, ‘Fye, man, will ye drown?’

Ye’ll turn ye to your high horse head  
And learn how to sowm.’

‘How can I turn to my horse head

And learn how to sowm?  
 I've got my mother's malison,  
 It's here that I must drown.'

The very hour this young man sank  
 Into the pot so deep,  
 Up it waked his love *Maggie*  
 Out o' her drowsy sleep.  
 'Come here, come here, my mother dear,  
 And read this dreary dream;  
 I dreamed my love was at our gates,  
 And none would let him in.'

'Lie still, lie still now, my *Maggie*,  
 Lie still & tak' your rest;  
 Sin' your truelove was at your gates,  
 It's but two ¼s past.'  
 Nimble, nimble raise she up,  
 And nimble pat she on,  
 And the higher that the lady cried,  
 The louder blew the win'.

The first an step that she stepped in,  
 She stepped to the queet;  
 'Ohon! Alas!' said that lady,  
 'This water's wondrous deep.'  
 The next an step that she waded in,  
 She waded to the knee;  
 Says she, 'I could wade farther in,  
 If I my love could see.'

The next an step that she waded in,  
 She waded to the chin;  
 The deepest pot in CLYDE's water  
 She got sweet *Willie* in.  
 'You've had a cruel mother, *Willie*,  
 And I have had another;  
 But we shall sleep in CLYDE's water  
 Like sister an' like brother.'

---

Anonymous, Killen, *Assassin's Creed IV: Black Flag*. This shanty seems to have roots that are quite ancient, going back as far as the sixteenth century, but its most significant source of inspiration was surely the Barbary Wars of the early nineteenth century.

## VI.2.

*Tune: Coast of High Barbaree*

Look ahead; look astern; look the weather in the lee.

*Blow high! Blow low! And so sailèd we!*

I see a wreck to windward and a lofty ship to lee –

*A-sailing down all on the coasts of high Barbary!*

O are you a pirate or a man-o'-war? cried we.

O no! I'm not a pirate but a man-o'-war, cried he.

We'll back up our topsails and heave our vessel to;

For we have got some letters to be carried home by you.

For broadside, for broadside they fought all on the main;

Until at last the frigate shot the pirate's mast away.

With cutlass & gun, O we fought for hours three;

*Blow high! Blow low! And so sailèd we!*

The ship it was their coffin and their grave it was the sea.

*A-sailing down all on the coasts of high Barbary!*

**VI.3.** You should make a point of trying every experience once, except incest and folk-dancing.

## VII.

## VII.1.

*Tune: Caledonian Hunt's Delight*

Ye banks & braes o' bonnie DOON,

How can ye bloom sae fresh & fair?

How can ye chant, ye little birds,

And I sae weary fu' o' care?

Thou'lt break my heart, thou warbling bird,

That wantons through the flowering thorn:

Thou 'minds me o' departed joys,

Departed – never to return.

Aft hae I roved by bonnie DOON,

To see the rose & woodbine twine:

---

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ Robert Burns (1759 – 1796), Burns, *Complete Poems*. Although Palgrave includes this song, he prefers the first version; whereas the Almanacker prefers the second. Cunningham reports, 'An Ayrshire legend says the heroine of this affecting song was Miss Kennedy, of Dalgarrack, a young creature, beautiful and accomplished, who fell a victim to her love for her kinsman, McDoual, of Logan.'

And ilka bird sang o' its love,  
 And fondly sae did I o' mine;  
 Wi' lightsome heart I pu'd a rose,  
 Fu' sweet upon its thorny tree!  
 And my false lover sto' my rose,  
 But ah! he left the thorn wi' me.

## VII.2.

*Tune: Fish of the Sea*

Come all you young sailor-men, listen to me;  
 I'll sing you a song of the fish in the sea.

*And it's windy weather boys!*  
*Stormy weather, boys!*  
*When the wind blows,*  
*We're all together, boys!*  
*Blow ye winds westerly!*  
*Blow ye winds, blow!*  
*Jolly sou'wester, boys!*  
*Steady she goes!*

Up jumps the eel with his slippery tail,  
 Climbs up aloft and reefs the topsail.

Then up jumps the shark with his nine rows of teeth,  
 Saying, You eat the dough boys, and I'll eat the beef!

Up jumps the whale, the largest of all.  
 If you want any wind, well, I'll blow ye a squall!

*And it's windy weather boys!*  
*Stormy weather, boys!*  
*When the wind blows,*  
*We're all together, boys!*  
*Blow ye winds westerly!*  
*Blow ye winds, blow!*  
*Jolly sou'wester, boys!*  
*Steady she goes!*

---

Anonymous, Killen, *Assassin's Creed IV: Black Flag*. One commentator writes of this shanty: 'According to Hugill, this shanty probably originated as a Scottish fisherman's song. It was also popular with Gloucester fishermen in the American Northeast. Hugill also collected a version in Devonshire, and it was known in Canada... This was a capstan shanty, and sailors would take turns with verses, giving a new fish each time for as long as was necessary.'



VII.3. I am not over-fond of resisting temptation.

## VIII.

### VIII.1.

*Tune: McPherson's Rant*

Farewell, ye dungeons dark & strang,  
 The wretch's destiny.  
*Macpherson's* time will no' be lang  
 On yonder gallows-tree.

It was by a woman's treacherous hand  
 That I was condemned to dee.  
 She stood above a window ledge  
 And a blanket threw over me.

*Sae rantingly, sae wantonly,*  
*Sae dauntingly gaed he.*  
*He played a spring, and danced it round,*  
*Below the gallows-tree.*

O what is death but parting breath?  
 On many a bloody plain  
 I've dared his face, and in this place  
 I scorn him yet again.

Untie these bands from off my hands,  
 And bring to me my sword;  
 And there's no' a man in all Scotland,  
 But I'll brave him at a word.

I've lived a life of sturt & strife;  
 I die by treachery.  
 It burns my heart I must depart  
 And not avengèd be.

Now farewell light, thou sunshine bright  
 And all beneath the sky.  
 May coward shame distain his name,  
 The wretch that dares not die.

---

William Beckford (1759 – 1844), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ 'MacPherson's Farewell', Robert Burns (1759 – 1796), Burns, *Complete Poems*. A version of this song is said to have been composed by James MacPherson, on the eve of his execution, who (rightly or wrongly) was hanged in the autumn of 1700 for banditry. The second verse is from another version; there are many, although the best known one comes from Burns.

*Sae rantingly, sae wantonly,  
 Sae dauntingly gaed he.  
 He played a spring, and danced it round,  
 Below the gallows-tree.*

## VIII.2.

*Tune: A Hundred Years Ago*

A 100 years on the eastern shore,  
*O! Yes! O!*  
 A 100 years on the eastern shore.  
*A 100 years ago!*

When I sailed across the sea,  
 My gal said she'd be true to me.

I promised her a golden ring.  
 She promised me that little thing.

O pulley *John* was the boy for me:  
 A buck a-land, and a bully at sea.

It's up aloft this yard must go,  
 For Mr Mate has told me so.

I thought I heard the skipper say,  
*O! Yes! O!*  
 Just one more pull, and then belay.  
*A 100 years ago!*

**VIII.3.** Thou madest us for thyself, and our heart is restless, until it rest in thee.

## IX.

### IX.1.

*Tune: I'll Tell Me Ma*

---

Anonymous, *Sailors' Songs and Sea Shanties*.

The Rev Prof William Shedd (1820 – 1894), Augustine of Hippo, *The Confessions of St Augustine*. Rev Prof Shedd is here translating the opening of St Augustine's *Confessions*. The original translation gives 'repose' instead of 'rest', reflecting the fact that Augustine uses quite different words for 'restless' ('inquietum') and 'rest'/'repose' ('requiescat'); but 'rest' is better.

℞ Anonymous, The Dubliners, *At Their Best*. This nineteenth-century folk song was originally accompanied by a children's game. For largely political reasons, the Dubliners chose to change 'Belfast' to 'Dublin' in their rendition.

I'll tell my ma when I get home;  
 The boys won't leave the girls alone.  
 They pulled my hair; they stole my comb,  
 But that's all right till I go home.

She is handsome; she is pretty;  
 She is the belle of BELFAST city.  
 She is a-courting. One, two, three:  
 Pray, won't you tell me, who is she?

*Albert Mooney* says he loves her.  
 All the boys are fighting for her.  
 They knock at the door and they ring at the bell,  
 Saying, O my true love, are you well?

Out she comes, as white as snow,  
 Rings on her fingers, bells on her toes.  
 Old *Jenny Morrissey* says she'll die  
 If she doesn't get the feller with the roving eye.

Let the wind & the rain & the hail blow high.  
 Let the snow come travelling through the sky.  
 She's as sweet as apple pie,  
 And she'll get her own lad by & by.

When she gets a lad of her own,  
 She won't tell her ma when she gets home.  
 Let them all come as they will;  
 For it's *Albert Mooney* she loves still.

## IX.2.

*Tune: Stormer Longjohn*  
*Stormy's gone, that good ol' man.*  
*Way! Stormer Longjohn!*  
*Stormy's gone, that good ol' man.*  
*Way-hey! Mr Storm-Along!*

They dug 'is grave with a silver spade.  
 A shroud of finest silk was made.

An able sailor, bold & true,  
 A good ol' boatswain to 'is crew.

I wish I was ol' *Stormy's* son.  
I'd build a ship of a 1000 tonne.

I'd fill 'er with New England rope.  
My shell-backs they would all 'ave some.

Ol' *Stormy's* dead an' gone to rest.  
*Way! Stormer Longjohn!*  
Of all the sailors, 'e was best.  
*Way-hey! Mr Storm-Along!*

**IX.3.** The air of England has long been too pure for a slave, and free is any man who breathes it.

## X.

### X.1.

*Tune: Finnegan's Wake*

*Tim Finnegan* lived in WALKING STREET,  
A gentleman irish, mighty odd.  
He had a brogue both rich & sweet,  
And to rise in the world he carried a hod.  
Now *Tim* had a bit of a tipling way:  
With a love of the liquor poor *Tim* was born,  
And to help him on with his work each day,  
He'd a drop of the **creatur** every morn.

*Whack! Fol-the-da! Will you dance to your partner?*  
*Round the floor your trotters shake!*  
*Wasn't it the truth I told you?*  
*Lots of fun at Finnegan's wake!*

One morning *Tim* was feeling full:  
His head was heavy, and it made him shake.

---

William Murray, 1st Earl of Mansfield (1705 – 1793). Campbell, *The Lives of the Chief Justices of England, Vol II*. Scholars have debated whether or not Lord Mansfield actually uttered these words; but, whatever the truth of the matter, it's a handsome summary of the legal principle which he confirmed in Somersett's famous case.

Anonymous, The Dubliners, *Finnegan Wakes*. James Joyce named one of his infamous emperor's-new-clothes novels after this song. A few Irish words and phrases ought to be explained. The word 'créatúr' is pronounced like the English word 'crater', and means liquor. The phrase 'mo mhuirín' is pronounced 'mavourneen' as in the Irish folk song 'Kathleen Mavourneen', and it means 'my darling'; whereas 'sail éille' (sometimes semi-anglicised as 'shillelagh') is pronounced to rhyme with 'ukulele', and refers to a kind of blunt weapon typically made from blackthorn wood. 'D'anam don diabhal' is a curse, literally, 'Your soul to the devil', and is pronounced something like 'Denim done dowel'.

He fell off the ladder and broke his skull,  
 And they carried him home his corpse to wake.  
 They rolled him up in a nice clean sheet,  
 And they laid him out upon the bed,  
 With a bucket of whisky at his feet  
 And a barrel of porter at his head.

*Tim*'s friends assembled at the wake,  
 And the widow *Finnegan* called for lunch:  
 First she brought in tea & cake;  
 Then pipes, tobacco and whisky punch.  
*Biddy O'Brien* began to cry,  
 'Such a nice, clean corpse, did you ever see?  
 O *Tim*, ~~mo mhuirnin~~, why did you die?'  
 'Ara, hold your gob!' said *Paddy McGee*.

Then *Maggie O'Connor* took up the job:  
 'O *Biddy*,' says she, 'you're wrong, I'm sure!  
*Biddy* fetched her a belt in the gob,  
 And she left her sprawling on the floor.  
 Then war did soon engage:  
 'Twas woman to woman and man to man;  
~~Sail rille~~ law was all the rage,  
 And a row and a ruction soon began.

Then *Mickey Maloney* ducked his head  
 When a noggin of whisky flew at him;  
 It missed and landed on the bed,  
 And the liquor scattered over *Tim*!  
 By God, he revives! See how he rises!  
*Tim Finnegan* rising from the bed,  
 Saying, 'Whirl your whisky around like blazes!  
~~B'anam don diabhla!~~ Do you think I'm dead?!

*Whack! Fol-the-da! Will you dance to your partner?*  
*Round the floor your trotters shake!*  
*Wasn't it the truth I told you?*  
*Lots of fun at Finnegan's wake!*

## X.2.

*Tune: Boston Harbour*

From BOSTON harbour we set sail,  
 When it was blowin' a devil of a gale,  
 With a ring-tail set all abaft the mizzen peak  
 An' the Rule Britannia ploughin' up the deep.

*With a big boe-woe! Toe-roe-roe!  
 Fol-dee-rol dee-rye doe-day!*

Then up comes the skipper from down below.  
 It's look aloft, lads; look a-low.  
 Then it's look a-low, and it's look aloft,  
 And coil up your ropes, lads, fore & aft.

Then down to 'is cabin well he quickly crawls,  
 An' to 'is poor old steward balls,  
 Go an' mix me a glass that'll make me cough,  
 For it's better weather here than it is on top.

Now there's one thing that we 'ave to crave:  
 That the captain meets with a watery grave.  
 So we'll throw 'im down into some dark hole  
 Where the sharks'll 'ave 'is body an' the devil 'ave 'is soul.

*With a big boe-woe! Toe-roe-roe!  
 Fol-dee-rol dee-rye doe-day!*

**X.3.** Riches are for spending.

## **XI.**

### **XI.1.**

*Tune: Off to Dublin in the Green*

O I am a merry plough-boy,  
 And I plough the fields all day,  
 Till a sudden thought came to my head  
 That I should a-roam away.  
 For I'm sick & tired of slavery  
 Since the day that I was born,  
 And I'm off to join the IRA  
 And I'm off tomorrow morn.

*And we're all off to DUBLIN in the green, in the green,*

---

Francis Bacon, Viscount St Alban (1561 – 1626), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Anonymous, The Dubliners, *At Their Best*. IRA = Irish Republican Army.

*Where the helmets glisten in the sun,  
Where the bayonets flash and the rifles crash  
To the rattle of the thompson gun.*

I'll leave aside my pick & spade;  
I'll leave aside my plough.  
I'll leave aside my horse & yoke;  
I no longer need them now.  
I'll leave aside my *Mary* –  
She's the girl that I adore –  
And I wonder if she'll think of me  
When she hears the rifles roar.

And when the war is over,  
And dear old Ireland is free,  
I'll take her to the church to wed  
And a rebel's wife she'll be.  
Well, some men fight for silver,  
And some men fight for gold;  
But the IRA are fighting for  
The land that the saxons stole.

*And we're all off to DUBLIN in the green, in the green,  
Where the helmets glisten in the sun,  
Where the bayonets flash and the rifles crash  
To the rattle of the thompson gun.*

## XI.2.

*Tune: Ring Down Shanty*  
No beef in the market,  
*Ring down!*  
No mutton in the market,  
*Ring down!*  
*To me way-hey hey-hey hey O!*  
*We're the boys to ring down!*

Little *Sally Racket*,  
She shipped in a packet.

Little *Betty Baker*,  
She ran off with a Quaker.

---

Anonymous, Connolly, *The Man from Fiddlers' Green*. This shanty clearly shares a common ancestor with "Sally Racket".

Little *Kitty Carson*,  
She ran off with a parson.

No beef in the market,  
*Ring down!*  
No mutton in the market,  
*Ring down!*  
*To me way-hey hey-hey hey O!*  
*We're the boys to ring down!*

**XI.3.** One Englishman could beat three Frenchmen.

## **XII.**

### **XII.1.**

*Tune: Dark Lochnagar*

Away, ye gay landscapes, ye gardens of roses!  
In you let the minions of luxury rove;  
Restore me the rocks where the snow-flake reposes,  
Though still they are sacred to freedom & love.  
Yet, Caledonia, beloved are thy mountains,  
Round their white summits though elements war;  
Though cataracts form 'stead of smooth-flowing fountains,  
I sigh for the valley of dark LOCH NA GARR.

Ah there my young footsteps in infancy wandered;  
My cap was the bonnet; my cloak was the plaid.  
On chieftains long perished my memory pondered,  
As daily I strode through the pine-covered glade.  
I sought not my home till the day's dying glory  
Gave place to the rays of the bright polar star;  
For fancy was cheered by traditional story,  
Disclosed by the natives of dark LOCH NA GARR.

Shades of the dead! have I not heard your voices  
Rise on the night-rolling breath of the gale?  
Surely the soul of the hero rejoices,

---

The Rt Hon Joseph Addison (1672 – 1719), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
'Lachin y Gair', George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Byron, *The Poems and Dramas of Lord Byron*. Byron notes: 'Lachin y Gair, or, as it is pronounced in the Erse, Loch na Garr, towers proudly pre-eminent in the Northern Highlands, near Invercauld. One of our modern tourists mentions it as the highest mountain, perhaps, in Great Britain. Be this as it may, it is certainly one of the most sublime and picturesque amongst our "Caledonian Alps". Its appearance is of a dusky hue, but the summit is the seat of eternal snows. Near Lachin y Gair I spent some of the early part of my life, the recollection of which has given birth to these stanzas.'



And rides on the wind, o'er his own highland vale.  
 Round LOCH NA GARR while the stormy mist gathers,  
 Winter presides in his cold icy car:  
 Clouds there encircle the forms of my fathers;  
 They dwell in the tempests of dark LOCH NA GARR.

Ill-starred, though brave, did no visions foreboding  
 Tell you that fate had forsaken your cause?  
 Ah! were you destined to die at CULLODEN,  
 Victory crowned not your fall with applause:  
 Still were you happy in death's earthly slumber,  
 You rest with your clan in the caves of BRAEMAR;  
 The pibroch resounds to the piper's loud number,  
 Your deeds on the echoes of dark LOCH NA GARR.

Years have rolled on, LOCH NA GARR, since I left you;  
 Years must elapse ere I tread you again:  
 Nature of verdure & flowers has bereft you,  
 Yet still are you dearer than Albion's plain.  
 England! thy beauties are tame & domestic,  
 To one who has roved o'er the mountains afar;  
 Oh for the crags that are wild & majestic!  
 The steep frowning glories of dark LOCH NA GARR!

## XII.2.

*Tune: Sally Racket*

Little *Sally Racket*,  
*Haul 'im away!*  
 She pawned my best jacket,  
*Haul 'im away!*  
 An' she lost the ticket –  
*Haul 'im away!*  
 An' a haul-ee high-O!  
*Haul 'im away!*

Little *Kitty Carson*  
 Got off with a parson;  
 Now she's got a little barson –  
 An' a haul-ee high-O!

Little *Nancy Dawson*,  
 She got a notion

For a poor old boatswain –  
An' a haul-ee high-O!

Little *Susie Skinner*  
She said she's a beginner,  
And she prefers it to 'er dinner,  
So up, lads, an' win 'er –  
An' a haul-ee high-O!

Well, me fighting cocks now,  
*Haul 'im away!*  
Haul an' split 'er blocks now,  
*Haul 'im away!*  
An' we'll stretch a luff, boys,  
*Haul 'im away!*  
An' that'll be enough, boys.  
*Haul 'im away!*

**XII.3.** Man is distinguished from all other creatures by the faculty of laughter.

### XIII.

#### XIII.1.

*Tune: Whistle, and I'll Come to You*

*O whistle, and I'll come to you, my lad!*  
*O whistle, and I'll come to you, my lad!*  
*Tho' father and mother and a' should go mad,*  
*Whistle, and I'll come to you, my lad!*

But warily tent, when you come to court me.  
And come na unless the back-yett be ajee;  
Syne up the back-stile and let nobody see,

---

The Rt Hon Joseph Addison (1672 – 1719), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ Robert Burns (1759 – 1796), Burns, *Complete Poems*. Cunningham remarks: ‘In one of the variations of this song the name of the heroine is Jeanie: the song itself owes some of the sentiments as well as words to an old favourite Nithsdale chant of the same name. “Is ‘Whistle, and I’ll come to you, my lad’,” Burns inquires of Thomson, “one of your airs? I admire it much, and yesterday I set the following verses to it.” The poet, two years afterwards, altered the fourth line thus: “Thy Jeany will venture wi’ ye, my lad,” and assigned this reason: “In fact, a fair dame at whose shrine I, the priest of the Nine, offer up the incense of Parnassus; a dame whom the Graces have attired in witchcraft, and whom the Loves have armed with lightning; a fair one, herself the heroine of the song, insists on the amendment, and dispute her commands if you dare.”’

And come as you were na comin' to me,  
 And come as you were na comin' to me.

At kirk, or at market, whene'er you meet me,  
 Gang by me as tho' that ye cared na a flie;  
 But steal me a blink o' your bonnie black e'e;  
 Yet look as you were na lookin' at me,  
 Yet look as you were na lookin' at me.

Ay vow and protest that you care na for me,  
 And whiles you may lightly my beauty a wee;  
 But court na another, though jokin' you be,  
 For fear that she wile your fancy from me,  
 For fear that she wile your fancy from me.

*O whistle, and I'll come to you, my lad!*  
*O whistle, and I'll come to you, my lad!*  
*Tho' father and mother and a' should go mad,*  
*Whistle, and I'll come to you, my lad!*

### XIII.2.

*Tune: Sally Brown*

I shipped onboard of a LIVERPOOL liner.

*Way! Hey! Roll & go!*  
*And we rolled all night and we rolled till the day,*  
*To spend my money along with Sally Brown!*

*Sally Brown* is a nice young lady.

She's tall and she's dark but she's not too shady.

Her mother doesn't like no tarry sailor.

She wants her to marry a one-legged captain.

*Sally* wouldn't wed me, so I shipped across the water.

And now I am courting *Sally's* daughter.

*Way! Hey! Roll & go!*  
*And we rolled all night and we rolled till the day,*  
*To spend my money along with Sally Brown!*

**XIII.3.** Love, and do what thou wilt.**XIV.****XIV.1.**

*Tune: Lassie wi' the Lint-White Locks*

*Lassie, wi' the lint-white locks,*

*Bonnie lassie, artless lassie,*

*Wilt thou wi' me tend the flocks?*

*Wilt thou be my dearie, O?*

Now nature cleeds the flowery lea,

And a' is young & sweet like thee;

Wilt thou share its joy wi' me,

And say thou'lt be my dearie, O?

And when the welcome summer shower

Has cheered ilk drooping little flower.

We'll to the breathing woodbine lower

At sultry noon, my dearie, O.

When *Cynthia* lights wi' silver ray,

The weary shearers' hameward way;

Through yellow waving fields we'll stray,

And talk o' love, my dearie, O.

And when the howling wintry blast

Disturbs my lassie's midnight rest;

Enclaspèd to my faithfu' breast,

I'll comfort thee, my dearie, O.

*Lassie, wi' the lint-white locks,*

*Bonnie lassie, artless lassie,*

---

Anonymous, Augustine of Hippo, *Homilies on the Gospel According to St John, and His First Epistle*. It's unclear whether the translator wished to remain anonymous, or if his work was done by a committee; either way, he was translating a passage from St Augustine's Seventh Homily on the First Letter of John.

℞ Robert Burns (1759 – 1796), Burns, *Complete Poems*. Cunningham comments: “Conjugal love,” says the poet, “is a passion which I deeply feel and highly venerate: but somehow it does not make such a figure in poesie as that other species of the passion, where love is liberty and nature law. Musically speaking, the first is an instrument of which the gamut is scanty and confined, but the tones inexpressibly sweet, while the last has powers equal to all the intellectual modulations of the human soul.” It must be owned that the bard could render very pretty reasons for his rapture about Jean Lorimer.’ Cunningham states that this song ought to be sung to a tune called “Rothemurche’s Rant”, but this seems quite a different one from that which the Almanacker is used to singing.

*Wilt thou wi' me tend the flocks?  
Wilt thou be my dearie, O?*

#### XIV.2.

*Tune: Haul Away for Rosie*

Talk about your harbour girls around the corner, *Sally*,  
*Away! Haul away! Haul away, me Rosie!*  
*Away! Haul away! Haul away, me Johnny-O!*  
 But they wouldn't go to tea with the girls from Booble Alley.  
*Away! Haul away! Haul away, me Rosie!*  
*Away! Haul away! Haul away, me Johnny-O!*

King *Louis* was the king of France before the revolution,  
 But the people cut 'is 'ead off and it spoiled 'is constitution.

Well now we're leaving LIVERPOOL bound for the bay of Mexico,  
*Away! Haul away! Haul away, me Rosie!*  
*Away! Haul away! Haul away, me Johnny-O!*  
 I thought I heard the old man say, It's time for us to roll & go.  
*Away! Haul away! Haul away, me Rosie!*  
*Away! Haul away! Haul away, me Johnny-O!*

**XIV.3.** He asked for water and she gave him milk.

#### XV.

##### XV.1.

*Tune: Major Graham*

O my love's like a red red rose  
 That's newly sprung in june!  
 O my love's like the melody  
 That's sweetly played in tune!  
 As fair art thou, my bonnie lass,  
 So deep in love am I;  
 And I will love thee still, my dear,  
 Till a' the seas gang dry –

---

Anonymous, *Sailors' Songs and Sea Shanties*. 'Booble Alley' seems to have been a slang term for one of the roughest parts of town, the slang in question being possibly local to Liverpool (which tells you just how rough it must have been). The term 'old man' refers to the captain. There seem to be many more verses to this song, but these are the only ones that are printable.

'Judges 5.25', Judges 5.25, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

℞ Robert Burns (1759 – 1796), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. James Fenton, in his *Faber Book of Love Poems*, calls the tune "Major Graham", and this would seem to be the commonly-received name; but Cunningham calls it "Graham's Strathspey".

Till a' the seas gang dry, my dear,  
 And the rocks melt wi' the sun;  
 I will love thee still, my dear,  
 While the sands o' life shall run.  
 And fare thee well, my only love!  
 And fare thee well awhile!  
 And I will come again, my love,  
 Though it were 10,000 mile.

## XV.2.

*Tune: South Australia*

In South Australia I was born,  
*Heave away! Haul away!*  
 In South Australia round CAPE HORN.  
*We're bound for South Australia!*

*Haul away, you rolling king!*  
*Heave away! Haul away!*  
*Haul away! O hear me sing:*  
*We're bound for South Australia!*

As I walked out one morning fair,  
 There I met Miss *Nancy Blair*.

There ain't but one thing grieves my mind:  
 To leave Miss *Nancy Blair* behind.

I ran her all night; I ran her all day,  
 Ran her before we sailed away.

I shook her up; I shook her down;  
 I shook her round & round & round.

O when we lollop around CAPE HORN,  
*Heave away! Haul away!*  
 You'll wish to God you'd never been born.  
*We're bound for South Australia!*

*Haul away, you rolling king!*  
*Heave away! Haul away!*

---

Anonymous, Lloyd and MacColl, *Blow Boys Blow*. The Almanacker read a piece of folklore somewhere – far too poetical to be true – stating that dying sailors used to request this shanty be sung over their deathbeds, so as to pass into the next world feeling happy.

*Haul away! O hear me sing:  
We're bound for South Australia!*

**XV.3.** The darkness is past, and the true light now shineth.

## **XVI.**

### **XVI.1.**

*Tune: The Birks of Aberfeldy*

Now summer blinks on flowery braes,  
And o'er the crystal streamlet plays;  
Come let us spend the lightsome days  
In the birks of ABERFELDY.

*Bonnie lassie, will ye go?  
Will ye go? Will ye go?  
Bonnie lassie, will ye go  
To the birks of ABERFELDY?*

The little birdies blithely sing,  
While o'er their heads the hazels hing,  
Or lightly flit on wanton wing  
In the birks of ABERFELDY.

The braes ascend, like lofty wa's;  
The foamy stream deep-roaring fa's,  
O'erhung wi' fragrant spreading shaws,  
The birks of ABERFELDY.

The hoary cliffs are crowned wi' flowers,  
White o'er the linns the burnie pours,  
And rising, wets wi' misty showers  
The birks of ABERFELDY.

Let fortune's gifts at random flee;  
They ne'er shall draw a wish frae me,  
Supremely blest wi' love & thee,  
In the birks of ABERFELDY.

*Bonnie lassie, will ye go?*

---

<sup>1</sup> John 2.8, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

℞ Robert Burns (1759 – 1796), Burns, *Complete Poems*. Cunningham comments: 'An old strain, called "The Birks of Aberfeldie", was the forerunner of this sweet song: it was written, the poet says, standing under the Falls of Aberfeldy, near Moness, in Perthshire, during one of the tours which he made to the north, in the year 1757.'

*Will ye go? Will ye go?  
Bonnie lassie, will ye go  
To the birks of ABERFELDY?*

## XVI.2.

*Tune: Wild Goose Shanty*

Did you ever see a wild goose sailing on the ocean?

*Ranzo! Ranzo! Way-hey!*

They're just like them pretty girls when they gets the notion.

*Ranzo! Ranzo! Way-hey!*

The other morning I was walkin' by the river,

When I saw a young girl walkin' with her top-sails all aquiver.

I said, Pretty fair maid, then how are you this mornin'?

She said, None the better for the seein' of you.

Did you ever see a wild goose sailin' o'er the ocean?

*Ranzo! Ranzo! Way-hey!*

They're just like them pretty girls when they gets the notion.

*Ranzo! Ranzo! Way-hey!*

## XVI.3. Out of the strong came forth sweetness.

## XVII.

### XVII.1.

*Tune: Jessie the Flower of Dunblane*

The sun had gone down o'er the lofty BEN LOMOND,

And left the red clouds to preside o'er the scene,

While lonely I strayed in the calm summer gloamin'

To muse on sweet *Jessie*, the flower o' DUNBLANE.

How sweet is the brier, wi' its soft folding blossom,

And sweet is the birch, wi' its mantle o' green;

Yet sweeter & fairer, & dear to this bosom,

Is lovely young *Jessie*, the flower o' DUNBLANE:

---

Anonymous, Killen, *Assassin's Creed IV: Black Flag*. Albert Lloyd wrote in the sleeve notes to *Blow Boys Blow*: 'One of the great halyard shanties, seemingly better-known in English ships than American ones, though some versions of it have become crossed with the American song called "Huckleberry Hunting". From the graceful movement of its melody it is possible that this is an older shanty than most. Perhaps it evolved out of some long-lost lyrical song.'

'Judges 14.14', Judges 14.14, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

℞ 'Jessie, the Flower o' Dunblane', Robert Tannahill (1774 – 1810), Tannahill, *The Poems and Songs of Robert Tannahill*. The Almanacker has changed the tense in the first sentence from the present to the past.



*Is lovely young Jessie,  
 Lovely young Jessie,  
 Lovely young Jessie,  
 The flower o' DUNBLANE.*

She's modest as any, and blithe as she's bonny,  
 For guileless simplicity marks her its ain;  
 And far be the villain, divested o' feeling,  
 Who'd blight, in its bloom, the sweet flower o' DUNBLANE.  
 Sing on, thou sweet mavis, thy hymn to the evening;  
 Thou'rt dear to the echoes of CALDERWOOD GLEN;  
 So dear to this bosom, so artless & winning,  
 Is charming young *Jessie*, the flower o' DUNBLANE:

*Is charming young Jessie, &c.*

How lost were my days till I met wi' my *Jessie*,  
 The sports o' the city seemed foolish & vain;  
 I ne'er saw a nymph I would ca' my dear lassie,  
 Till charmed wi' sweet *Jessie*, the flower o' DUNBLANE.  
 Though mine were the station o' loftiest grandeur,  
 Amidst its profusion I'd languish in pain;  
 And reckon as nothing the height o' its splendour,  
 If wanting young *Jessie*, the flower o' DUNBLANE:

*If wanting young Jessie,  
 Lovely young Jessie,  
 Lovely young Jessie,  
 The flower o' DUNBLANE.*

## XVII.2.

*Tune: Whup Jamboree*

The pilot he looks out ahead,  
 With a hand on the chains a-heaving on the lead,  
 And the old man roars to wake the dead.  
 Come and get your oats, my son!

*Whip jamboree! Whip jamboree!  
 You long-tailed black man, come up behind!*

---

'Whip Jamboree', Anonymous, Lloyd and MacColl, *Blow Boys Blow*. Lizard Point and Start Point are lighthouses on the south coast of England, in Cornwall and Devon respectively; they remain important landmarks for a mariner making his way up the English Channel to this day. The Blackwall docks were an important London dockyard, now, sadly, out of use.

*Whip jamboree! Whip jamboree!*  
*Johnny, get your oats, my son!*

O now we're past the LIZARD light;  
 And the START, my boys, we'll heave in sight;  
 We'll soon be abreast of the Isle of Wight.  
 Come and get your oats, my son!

O when we get to the BLACKWALL docks,  
 Those pretty young girls come down in flocks  
 With short-legged drawers & long-tailed frocks.  
 Come and get your oats, my son!

*Whip jamboree! Whip jamboree!*  
*You long-tailed black man, come up behind!*  
*Whip jamboree! Whip jamboree!*  
*Johnny, get your oats, my son!*

**XVII.3.** Give me chastity and continency, only not yet.

## **XVIII.**

### **XVIII.1.**

*Tune: Westering Home*

*Westering home, and a song in the air,  
 Light in the eye & it's goodbye to care;  
 Laughter o' love, and a welcoming there,  
 Isle of my heart, my own one.*

Tell me o' lands o' the orient gay,  
 Speak o' the riches & joys o' Cathay;  
 Eh, but it's grand to be wakin' ilk day  
 To find yourself nearer to ISLAY.

Where are the folk like the folk o' the west,  
 Canty & couthy & kindly, the best?  
 There I would hie me and there I would rest  
 At home wi' my own folk in ISLAY.

---

The Rev Prof William Shedd (1820 – 1894), Augustine of Hippo, *The Confessions of St Augustine*. Rev Prof Shedd is here translating a passage from St Augustine's *Confessions*.

Sir Hugh Robertson (1874 – 1952), Saint-Clair, *Highland Songs*. The poet may have been inspired by the Irish folk song “Trasna na dTonnta”. ‘Cathay’ is an archaic name for China, while ‘Islay’ is pronounced to rhyme with ‘tiler’.

Now I'm at home and at home I do lay,  
 Dreaming of riches that come from Cathay,  
 I'll hop a good ship and be on my way,  
 And bring back my fortune to ISLAY.

*Westering home, and a song in the air,  
 Light in the eye & it's goodbye to care;  
 Laughter o' love, and a welcoming there,  
 Isle of my heart, my own one.*

## XVIII.2.

*Tune: New York Girls*

As I walked down through CHATHAM STREET a fair maid I did meet.  
 She asked me to see her home; she lived in BLEEKER STREET.

*And away, you Santy! My dear honey!  
 O you NEW YORK girls, can't you dance the polka?*

And when we got to BLEEKER STREET we stopped at 44.  
 Her mother & her sister were to meet her at the door.

And when I got inside the house the drinks were passed around.  
 The liquor was so awful strong my head went round & round.

And then we had another drink before we sat to eat.  
 The liquor was so awful strong I quickly fell asleep.

When I awoke next morning I had an aching head.  
 There was I, *Jack* all alone, stark naked in my bed.

My gold watch & my pocket book & lady friend were gone.  
 And there was I, *Jack* all alone, stark naked in my room.

On looking round this little room there's nothing I could see  
 But a woman's shift & apron that were no use to me.

With a flour barrel for a suit of clothes down CHERRY STREET forlorn,  
 Where *Martin Churchill* took me in and sent me round CAPE HORN.

*And away, you Santy! My dear honey!  
 O you NEW YORK girls, can't you dance the polka?*

---

Anonymous, Steeleye Span, *Commoners Crown*. It's unclear whether or not this song is a true sea shanty; although it's certainly old enough to be one, and, in any case, it displays a marked influence from more bona fide shanties in terms of structure and subject matter.

**XVIII.3.** Love is like the measles; we can't have it bad but once, and the later in life we have it the tougher it goes with us.

## XIX.

### XIX.1.

*Tune: The Ettrick Lady*

As I gaed down the ETTRICK valley  
 At the hour of 12 at night,  
 Who did I see but a handsome lassie  
 Combing her hair by candlelight?  
 'Lassie, I have come a-courting,  
 Your fine favours for to win;  
 And, if you'll but smile upon me,  
 Next sunday night I'll call again.'

*Falla talla-roo! Dumma-roo! Dumma-roo-dum!*  
*Falla talla-roo! Dumma-roo-dum-day!*

'So to me you've to come your courting,  
 My fine favours for to win,  
 But it would give me the greatest pleasure  
 If you never did call again.  
 What would I do when I go to walking,  
 Walking out for the ETTRICK view?  
 What would I do when I go to walking,  
 Walking out with a laddie like you?'

'Lassie, I have gold & silver.  
 Lassie, I have houses & land.  
 Lassie, I have ships in the ocean;  
 They'll be all at your command.'  
 'What do I care for your ships on the ocean?  
 What do I care for your houses & land?  
 What do I care for your gold & silver  
 When all I want is a handsome man?'

'Did you ever see the grass in the morning  
 All bedecked with jewels rare?  
 Did you ever see a handsome lassie,  
 Diamonds sparkling in her hair?  
 Did you ever see a copper kettle

---

Henry Shaw (1818 – 1885), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
 Anonymous, The Corries, *The Compact Collection*.

Mended with an old tin can?  
 Did you ever see a handsome lassie  
 Married off to an ugly man?’

*Falla talla-roo! Dumma-roo! Dumma-roo-dum!*  
*Falla talla-roo! Dumma-roo-dum-day!*

## XIX.2.

*Tune: Reuben Ranzo*

O poor old *Reuben Ranzo*,  
*Ranzo, me boys! Ranzo!*  
 O poor old *Reuben Ranzo*,  
*Ranzo, me boys! Ranzo!*

O *Ranzo* was no sailor,  
 So ’e shipped aboard a whaler.

O *Ranzo* was no beauty,  
 So ’e couldn’t do his duty.

O because ’e was so dirty,  
 We gave ’im five & 30.

O the skipper’s daughter *Susie*,  
 Well she begged ’er dad for mercy.

O she gave ’im wine & water,  
 And a bit more than she ought t’.

Well ’e got ’is first-mate papers.  
 ’E’s a terror to the whalers.

Now ’e’s known wherever them whale-fish blow  
*Ranzo, me boys! Ranzo!*  
 As the hardest bastard on the go.  
*Ranzo, me boys! Ranzo!*

## XIX.3. Nature makes nothing incomplete, and nothing in vain.

---

Anonymous, *Sailors’ Songs and Sea Shanties*.

Prof Benjamin Jowett (1817 – 1893), Aristotle, *The Politics of Aristotle*. Prof Jowett is here translating a passage from Aristotle’s *Politics*.

## XX.

## XX.1.

*Tune: Common Frae the Town*

Coming through the rye, poor body,  
 Coming through the rye,  
 She draiglet a' her petticoatie,  
 Coming through the rye.

*Jenny's a' wet, poor body;  
 Jenny's seldom dry.  
 She draiglet a' her petticoatie.  
 Coming through the rye.*

Gin a body meet a body  
 Coming through the rye,  
 Gin a body kiss a body,  
 Need a body cry?

Gin a body meet a body,  
 Coming through the glen,  
 Gin a body kiss a body  
 Need the world ken?

*Jenny's a' wet, poor body;  
 Jenny's seldom dry.  
 She draiglet a' her petticoatie.  
 Coming through the rye.*

## XX.2.

*Tune: Blow Boys Blow*

O was you ever on the CONGO river –  
*Blow, boys! Blow!*

---

℞ Robert Burns (1759 – 1796), Burns, *Complete Poems*. Cunningham remarks that Burns removed ‘some of the coarse chaff’ from the old chant in adapting it to this song, but enough remains for the listener to fill in the blanks. Holden Caulfield’s innocent misunderstanding of the true meaning of this song is the explanation behind the odd title of Salinger’s *Catcher in the Rye*.

Anonymous, Lloyd and MacColl, *Blow Boys Blow*. Lloyd comments in the sleeve-notes: ‘This topsail halyard shanty, “Blow Boys Blow”, originated on the West African run, during the days of the slave trade. Later, with the Congo River stanzas dropped, it passed into use aboard Atlantic packets. The skipper’s name is given variously as Bully Hayes, Bully Sims, and One-Eyed Kelly. The stanza about the packet-ship firing its gun may date from the Civil War, or may refer to an anti-slavery patrol.’

Where fever makes the white man shiver? –  
*Blow, my bully boys! Blow!*

A yankee ship come down the river.  
 Her mast & yards they shone like silver.

And who do you think was the skipper of her?  
 Why, *Bully Hayes*, the nigger lover.

Who do you think was first mate of her?  
 Why, *Shanghai Brown*, the sailor robber.

What do you think she's got for cargo?  
 Why, black sheep that have run the embargo.

What do you think they've got for dinner?  
 O monkey hearts and donkey's liver.

Yonder comes the **Arrow** packet.  
 She fires the gun. Can't you hear the racket?

O blow, my boys, and blow forever.  
*Blow, boys! Blow!*  
 O blow me down that CONGO river.  
*Blow, my bully boys! Blow!*

**XX.3.** Peace, n. In international affairs, a period of cheating between two periods of fighting.

## XXI.

### XXI.1.

*Tune: I'm O'er Young to Marry Yet*  
 I am my mammy's ae bairn;  
 Wi' uncou' folk I weary, sir;  
 And lying in a man's bed,  
 I'm fleyed it mak' me eerie, sir.

*I'm o'er young! I'm o'er young!*  
*I'm o'er young to marry yet!*  
*I'm o'er young! 'Twould be a sin*  
*To tak' me frae my mammy yet!*

---

Ambrose Bierce (1842 – 1914), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ Robert Burns (1759 – 1796), Burns, *Complete Poems*. 'Hallowmass' is an archaic word for All Saints' Day, i.e. the first day of November.

My mammy coft me a new gown;  
 The kirk maun ha'e the gracing o't;  
 Were I to lie wi' you, kind sir,  
 I'm feared ye'd spoil the lacing o't.

Hallowmass is come & gone;  
 The nights are long in winter, sir,  
 And you an' I in ae bed,  
 In truth, I dare na venture, sir.

Fu' loud an' sh'ill the frosty wind  
 Blows through the leafless tim'er, sir;  
 But if ye come this gate again  
 I'll older be gin simmer, sir.

*I'm o'er young! I'm o'er young!*  
*I'm o'er young to marry yet!*  
*I'm o'er young! 'Twould be a sin*  
*To tak' me frae my mammy yet!*

## XXI.2.

*Tune: Santy Anna*

O *Santy Anna* gained a day.  
*Hurray! Santy Ann-O!*  
 O *Santy Anna* gained a day.  
*All on the plains of Mexico!*

O Mexico! Mexico!  
 O Mexico, where I must go!

Them little girls I do adore,  
 Their shining eyes & long black hair.

Why do them yellow girls love me so?  
 Because I don't tell 'em all I know.

When I was a young man in my prime,  
 I knocked them little girls two at a time.

Them LIVERPOOL girls ain't got no coal.  
 They comb their hair with a kipper backbone.

---

Anonymous, *Sailors' Songs and Sea Shanties*. Santy Anna = Gen Antonio López de Santa Anna.



Times is hard and the wages low.

*Hurray! Santy Ann-O!*

It's time for us to roll & go.

*All on the plains of Mexico!*

**XXI.3.** We are always doing... something for posterity, but I would fain see posterity do something for us.

## XXII.

### XXII.1.

*Tune: O Where hae You been, Lord Ronald, My Son?*

'O where ha'e you been, Lord *Ronald*, my son?

O where ha'e you been, Lord *Ronald*, my son?"

'I ha'e been wi' my sweetheart. Mother, mak' my bed soon,  
For I'm weary wi' the hunting, and fain would lie doon.'

'What got ye frae your sweetheart, Lord *Ronald*, my son?

What got ye frae your sweetheart, Lord *Ronald*, my son?"

'I ha'e got deadly poison. Mother, mak' my bed soon,  
For life is a burden that soon I'll lay doon.'

### XXII.2.

*Tune: Whisky Johnny*

Whisky is the life of man.

*Whisky! Johnny!*

O whisky is the life of man.

*Whisky for my Johnny-O!*

O I drink whisky when I can.

I drink it out from an old tin can.

Whisky gave me a broken nose.

Whisky made me pawn my clothes.

Whisky drove me around CAPE HORN.

It was many a month when I was gone.

I thought I heard the old man say,

I'll treat my crew in a decent way.

---

The Rt Hon Joseph Addison (1672 – 1719), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ Robert Burns (1759 – 1796), Johnson and Burns, *Scots Musical Museum*, Vol IV. In making this short song, Burns has compressed (beautifully) a far longer and older ballad about a young nobleman who is poisoned and killed by his lover.

Anonymous, Killen, *Assassin's Creed IV: Black Flag*.

A glass of grog for every man –  
*Whisky! Johnny!*  
 And a bottle for the shantyman –  
*Whisky for my Johnny-O!*

**XXII.3.** The whole is more than the sum of the parts.

### XXIII.

#### XXIII.1.

*Tune: The Bonnie Hoose o' Airlie*

It fell on a day, and a bonny summer's day,  
 When the sun shone bright & clearly,  
 That there fell out a great dispute  
 Atween *Argyll* and *Airlie*.

*Argyll*, he has mustered a 1000 o' his men;  
 He has marched them out right early;  
 He has marched them in by the back o' DUNKELD,  
 To plunder the bonny house o' *Airlie*.

Lady *Ogilvie*, she looked from her window so high,  
 And O but she grat sairly  
 To see *Argyll* and a' his men  
 Come to plunder the bonny house o' *Airlie*.

'Come down, come down, Lady *Ogilvie*,' he cried.  
 'Come down and kiss me fairly,  
 Or I swear by the hilt o' my good broadsword  
 That I wi' na leave a stan'in' stone in *Airlie*.'

'I wi' na come down, ye cruel *Argyll*;  
 I wi' na kiss ye fairly;  
 I would na kiss ye, false *Argyll*,  
 Though ye should na leave a stan'in' stone in *Airlie*.'

'Come tell me where your dowry is hid;  
 Come down and tell me fairly.'

---

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is an ancient English paraphrase of a sumblime truth which Aristotle articulated more awkwardly.

Anonymous, Saint-Clair, *Highland Songs*. This song relates a raid made by 'Argyll' (i.e. the Covenanter Archibald Campbell, 8th Earl of Argyll and Chief of Clan Campbell) on Airlie Castle (seat of the Royalist James Ogilvie, 1st Earl of Airlie and Chief of Clan Ogilvie) in 1640 during the Wars of the Three Kingdoms. In spite of the unhappy ending, the listener may take some comfort in the fact that Lord Argyll died on the scaffold, whereas Lord Airlie died in his bed.

'I wi' na tell ye where my dowry is hid,  
 Though ye should na leave a stan'in' stone in *Airlie*.'

They sought it up & they sought it down;  
 I wat they sought it early;  
 And it was below yon bowling green  
 They found the dowry o' *Airlie*.

'Eleven bairns I ha'e born  
 And the 12th ne'er saw his daddy,  
 But though I had gotten as many again,  
 They should 'a' gang to fetch for *Charlie*.

'Gin my good lord had been at home,  
 As he's awa' for *Charlie*,  
 There dares na a *Campbell* o' a' *Argyll*  
 Set a foot on the bonny house o' *Airlie*.'

He's ta'en her by the milk-white hand,  
 But he did na lead her fairly;  
 He led her up to the top o' the hill,  
 Where she saw the burnin' o' *Airlie*.

The smoke & flame they rose so high;  
 The walls they were blackened fairly;  
 And the lady laid her down on the green to die  
 When she saw the burnin' o' *Airlie*.

## XXIII.2.

*Tune: Eliza Lee*

The smartest clipper you can find –  
*Ho-ay ho! Are you most done?!*  
 Is the **Margaret Evans** on the Blue Star Line –  
*Clear away the track and let the bulgine run!*

*To me aye! Rig a jig in a jolting car!*  
*Ho-ay ho! Are you most done?!*  
 With *Liza Lee* all on my knee,  
*Clear away the track and let the bulgine run!*

O the **Margaret Evans** on the Blue Star Line,  
 She's never a day behind the time.

O we're outward bound for NEW YORK town.  
We'll dance them BOWERY girls around.

Well we stowed our freight on the WEST CREEK pier.  
We'll head right back for some LIVERPOOL beer.

O I thought I heard the old man say,  
We'll leave that brig three points away.

And when we're back in LIVERPOOL town –  
*Ho-ay ho! Are you most done?!*  
I'll stand youse whiskys all around –  
*Clear away the track and let the bulgine run!*

*To me aye! Rig a jig in a jolting car!*  
*Ho-ay ho! Are you most done?!*  
*With Liza Lee all on my knee,*  
*Clear away the track and let the bulgine run!*

**XXIII.3.** Variety is the soul of pleasure.

## XXIV.

### XXIV.1.

*Tune: Cameronian Rant*

O cam' ye here the fight to shun,  
Or herd the sheep wi' me, man?  
Or were ye at the SHERRAMUIR,  
And did the battle see, man?'  
I saw the battle, sair & tough;  
And reekin' red ran many a sheugh;  
My heart, for fear, gaed sough for sough,  
To hear the thuds, and see the cluds,  
O' clans frae woods, in tartan duds,  
Who glaumed at kingdoms three, man.

The red-coat lads, wi' black cockades,  
To meet them were na slaw, man;  
They rushed and pushed, and blood out-gushed.

---

Mrs Aphra Behn (1640 – 1689), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. Mrs Behn, cunning linguist that she was, seems to have lived up to this maxim in her personal life.

℞ Robert Burns (1759 – 1796), Burns, *Complete Poems*. This song describes the Battle of Sheriffmuir (also called Sherramuir), at which a Government force of six thousand under Archibald Campbell, 2nd Duke of Argyll stood their ground against twelve thousand Jacobites under John Erskine, 23rd Earl of Mar.

And many a bouk did fa', man:  
 The great *Argyll* led on his files,  
 I wat they glanced for 20 miles:  
 They houghed the clans like nine-pin kyles,  
 They hacked and hashed, while broadsword clashed.  
 And through they dashed, and hewed, and smashed,  
 Till fey men died awa', man.

But had you seen the philibegs  
 And skyrin tartan trews, man;  
 When in the teeth they dared our Whigs  
 And covenant true blues, man;  
 In lines exten'ed lang & large,  
 When bayonets o'erpowered the targe,  
 And thousands hastened to the charge,  
 Wi' highland wrath, they frae the sheath  
 Drew blades o' death, till, out o' breath,  
 They fled like frighted doos, man.

They've lost some gallant gentlemen  
 Among the highland clans, man;  
 I fear my Lord *Panmure* is slain  
 Or fallen in Whiggish hands, man:  
 Now would ye sing this double fight;  
 Some fell for wrong, and some for right;  
 And many bade the world goodnight;  
 Then ye may tell, how pell & mell,  
 By red claymores, & muskets' knell,  
 Wi' dying yell, the Tories fell.  
 And Whigs to hell did flee, man.

## XXIV.2.

*Tune: Homeward Bound*

O don't youse hear the old man say –  
*Goodbye, fare ye well! Goodbye, fare ye well!*  
 O don't youse hear the old man say –  
*Hurrah, my boys! We're homeward bound!*

We're homeward bound to LIVERPOOL town,  
 Where all them *Judies*, they will come down.

And when we gets to the WALLASEY gates,  
*Sally & Oily* for their flash-men do wait.

And one to the other ye'll hear them say,  
 Here comes *Johnny* with his 14 months' pay!

We meet these fly gals and we'll ring the old bell.  
 With them *Judies*, we'll raise merry hell.

We're homeward bound to the gals of the town,  
 And stamp up my bullies and heave it around.

And when we gets home, boys, O won't we fly round?  
 We'll heave up the anchor to this bully sound.

We're all homeward bound for the old backyard.  
 Then heave, my bullies. We're all bound homeward.

O heave with a will boys. O heave long and strong.  
 And sing a good chorus for 'tis a good song.

We're homeward bound, we'll have youse to know –  
*Goodbye, fare ye well! Goodbye, fare ye well!*  
 And over the water to England must go –  
*Hurrah, my boys! We're homeward bound!*

**XXIV.3.** There is no excellent beauty that hath not some strangeness  
 in the proportion.

## XXV.

### XXV.1.

*Tune: O'er the Water to Charlie*

Come boat me o'er; come row me o'er;  
 Come boat me o'er to Charlie;  
 I'll gi'e *John Ross* another bawbee,  
 To boat me o'er to *Charlie*.

*We'll o'er the water and o'er the sea;*

---

Francis Bacon, Viscount St Alban (1561 – 1626), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ Robert Burns (1759 – 1796), Burns, *Complete Poems*. In Scots poetry the word 'o'er' is pronounced like the English word 'hour'. Old Nick is a euphemism for Satan, and is probably used here figuratively to refer to the Hanoverian kings of Great Britain and Ireland. A 'bawbee' was a kind of coin, peculiar to the Kingdom of Scotland, worth about the same as an English halfpenny; though who John Ross was remains a mystery.

*We'll o'er the water to Charlie;  
Come weal, come woe, we'll gather & go,  
And live or die wi' Charlie.*

I lo'e well my *Charlie's* name,  
Though some there be abhor him:  
But O, to see *Old Nick* gone hame,  
And *Charlie's* foes before him!

I swear & vow by moon & stars,  
And sun that shines so early,  
If I had 20,000 lives,  
I'd die as oft for *Charlie*.

*We'll o'er the water and o'er the sea;  
We'll o'er the water to Charlie;  
Come weal, come woe, we'll gather & go,  
And live or die wi' Charlie.*

## XXV.2.

*Tune: Blow the Man Down*

As I was out walking down PARADISE STREET –  
*To me! Way! Hey! Blow the man down!*  
A pretty young damsel I chanced for to meet –  
*Give me some time to blow the man down!*

She was round in the counter and bluff in the bow,  
So I took in all sail and cried, 'Way enough now!'

I hailed her in english; she answered me clear,  
I'm from the BLACK ARROW bound to the SHAKESPEARE.

So I tailed her my flipper and took her in tow,  
And yard-arm to yard-arm, away we did go.

But as we were a-going she said unto me,  
There's a spankin' full rigger just ready for sea.

That spankin' full rigger to NEW YORK was bound.  
She was very well mannered and very well found.

But as soon as that packet was clear of the bar,  
The mate knocked me down with the end of a spar.

---

Anonymous, Davidson and Santelli, *Hard Travelin': The Life and Legacy of Woody Guthrie*.  
Paradise Street is in Liverpool, where this sort of thing is not uncommon.

As soon as that packet was out on the sea,  
'Twas devilish hard treatment of every degree.

So I give you fair warning before we belay –  
*To me! Way! Hey! Blow the man down!*  
Don't never take heed of what pretty girls say –  
*Give me some time to blow the man down!*

**XXV.3.** Throughout the greater part of his life George III was a kind of consecrated obstacle.

## XXVI.

### XXVI.1.

*Tune: Come O'er the Stream, Charlie*

*Come o'er the stream, Charlie,  
Dear Charlie, brave Charlie;  
Come o'er the stream Charlie,  
And dine wi' Maclean.  
And, though ye be weary,  
We'll mak' your heart cheery,  
And welcome our Charlie  
And his loyal train.*

We'll bring down the red deer;  
We'll bring down the black steer,  
The lamb frae the bracken  
And the doe frae the glen.  
The salt sea we'll harry  
And bring to our *Charlie*  
The cream frae the bothy,  
The curd frae the pen.

And you shall drink freely  
The dews of GLENSHEERLY  
That stream in the starlight,  
Where kings di' na ken.  
And deep be your meed  
Of the wine that is red,  
To drink to your sire  
And his friend the *Maclean*.

---

Walter Bagehot (1826 – 1877), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
Anonymous, The Corries, *The Compact Collection*.



It ought to invite you,  
 Or more will delight you:  
 'Tis ready; a troop  
 Of our bold highland men  
 Shall range on the heather,  
 With bayonet & feather,  
 Strong arms & broad claymores,  
 Three hundred and 10.

*Come o'er the stream, Charlie,  
 Dear Charlie, brave Charlie;  
 Come o'er the stream Charlie,  
 And dine wi' Maclean.  
 And, though ye be weary,  
 We'll mak' your heart cheery,  
 And welcome our Charlie  
 And his loyal train.*

## XXVI.2.

*Tune: Lowlands Away*  
 I dreamed a dream the other night.  
*Lowlands, lowlands away, my John.*  
 I dreamed a dream the other night.  
*Lowlands away.*

I dreamed I saw my own true love.  
 I dreamed I saw my own true love.  
  
 I dreamed my love was drowned & dead.  
*Lowlands, lowlands away, my John.*  
 I dreamed my love was drowned & dead.  
*Lowlands away.*

**XXVI.3.** To me old age is always fifteen years older than I am.

## XXVII.

### XXVII.1.

*Tune: It was A' for Our Rightfu' King*

---

Anonymous, *Sailors' Songs and Sea Shanties*. As with all the best short lyrics, a larger narrative is hinted at in this song – a narrative which, sadly, is now lost.

Dr Bernard Baruch (1870 – 1965), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ Robert Burns (1759 – 1796), Burns, *Complete Poems*. This song seems to relate the story of a Scottish Jacobite soldier who fought in the Jacobite-Williamite War in Ireland. The final verse of Burns's original has been omitted.

It was a' for our rightfu' king  
 We left fair Scotland's strand;  
 It was a' for our rightfu' king  
 We e'er saw irish land, my dear;  
 We e'er saw irish land.

Now a' is done that men can do,  
 And a' is done in vain;  
 My love and native land farewell,  
 For I maun cross the main, my dear;  
 For I maun cross the main.

He turned him right, and round about  
 Upon the irish shore;  
 And ga'e his bridle-reins a shake,  
 With adieu for evermore, my dear;  
 With adieu for evermore.

The soldier from the wars returns,  
 The sailor frae the main;  
 But I ha'e parted frae my love.  
 Never to meet again, my dear;  
 Never to meet again.

## XXVII.2.

*Tune: Rollicking Randy Dandy*

Now we are ready to sail for the HORN –  
*Way hey! Roll & go!*  
 Our boots & our clothes, boys, are all in the pawn –  
*To me rollicking randy dandy O!*

*Heave a pawl! O heave away!*  
*Way hey, roll and go!*  
*The anchor's onboard and the cable's all stored!*  
*To me rollicking randy dandy O!*

Soon we'll be warping her out through the locks,  
 Where the pretty young girls all come down in their frocks.

Come breast the bars, bullies. Heave her away.  
*Way hey! Roll & go!*  
 Soon we'll be rolling her way down the bay.  
*To me rollicking randy dandy O!*

---

Anonymous, Killen, *Assassin's Creed IV: Black Flag*.

*Heave a pawl! O heave away!*  
*Way hey, roll and go!*  
*The anchor's onboard and the cable's all stored!*  
*To me rollicking randy dandy O!*

**XXVII.3.** Conservative, n. A statesman who is enamoured of existing evils, as distinguished from the liberal, who wishes to replace them with others.

## XXVIII.

### XXVIII.1.

*Tune: Will Ye No' Come Back?*  
 Bonny *Charlie's* now awa',  
     Safely o'er the friendly main;  
 Many a heart will break i' twa,  
     Should he no' come back again.

*Will ye no come back again?*  
*Will ye no come back again?*  
*Better lo'ed ye can na be.*  
*Will ye no come back again?*

Many a traitor 'mong the isles  
     Brak' the band o' nature's law;  
 Many a traitor wi' his wiles  
     Sought to wear his life awa'.

Many a gallant soldier fought;  
     Many a gallant chief did fa';  
 Death itself were dearly bought,  
     A' for Scotland's king and law.

Whene'er I hear the blackbird sing  
     Unto the evening sinking down,  
 Or meryl that makes the wood to ring,  
     To me they ha'e no other soun'.

Sweet the laverock's note & long,  
     Lilting wildly up the glen;

---

Ambrose Bierce (1842 – 1914), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Bonnie Charlie', Carolina Nairne, Lady Nairne (1766 – 1845), MacColl, *The Jacobite Rebellions*. Although this song was written several decades after the Jacobite risings, Lady Nairne herself was from a prominent Jacobite family, members of which did actually fight for the House of Stuart.

And aye the o'erworld o' the song:  
Will he no' come back again?

*Will ye no come back again?  
Will ye no come back again?  
Better lo'ed ye can na be.  
Will ye no come back again?*

## XXVIII.2.

*Tune: Roll the Old Chariot*

O a drop of Nelson's blood wouldn't do us any harm!  
*O a drop of Nelson's blood wouldn't do us any harm!*  
*O a drop of Nelson's blood wouldn't do us any harm!*  
*And we'll all hang on behind!*

*And we'll roll the old chariot along!*  
*We'll roll the old chariot along!*  
*We'll roll the old chariot along!*  
*And we'll all hang on behind!*

O a plate of irish stew wouldn't do us any harm! &c.

O a nice fat cook wouldn't do us any harm! &c.

O a nice watch below wouldn't do us any harm! &c.

O a good night ashore wouldn't do us any harm!  
*A good night ashore wouldn't do us any harm!*  
*A good night ashore wouldn't do us any harm!*  
*And we'll all hang on behind!*

*And we'll roll the old chariot along!*  
*We'll roll the old chariot along!*  
*We'll roll the old chariot along!*  
*And we'll all hang on behind!*

---

Anonymous, Hyde Street Chantey Singers, *Sea Songs and Chanteys*. There's a story, of dubious authority, that, following his death at Trafalgar, Lord Nelson's body was preserved in brandy (which, in itself is almost certainly true). The sailors onboard the *Victory*, not wanting to waste any intoxicating fluid, gradually siphoned off and drank most of said brandy on the journey back to England. Hence the term 'Nelson's blood' was and is used amongst seamen to refer to any kind of hard liquor.

Prof George Long (1800 – 1879), Caesar Marcus Aurelius Antoninus Augustus, *The Meditations of the Emperor Marcus Aurelius Antoninus*. Prof Long is here translating a passage from Book VI of Marcus Aurelius's *Meditations*.

**XXVIII.3.** He who has seen present things has seen all, both everything which has taken place from all eternity and everything which will be for time without end; for all things are of one kin and of one form.

## XXIX.

### XXIX.1.

*Tune: For Old Long Sine, My Jo*

Should old acquaintance be forgot  
And never brought to min'?  
Should old acquaintance be forgot,  
And auld lang syne?

*For auld lang syne, my jo,  
For auld lang syne,  
We'll tak' a cup o' kindness yet  
For auld lang syne.*

And surely ye'll be your pint stowp!  
And surely I'll be mine!  
And we'll tak' a cup o' kindness yet  
For auld lang syne.

We twa ha'e run about the braes,  
And pu'ed the gowans fine;  
But we've wandered many a weary foot  
Sin' auld lang syne.

We twa ha'e paidled i' the burn,  
Frae mornin' sun till dine;  
But seas between us braid ha'e roared  
Sin' auld lang syne.

And here's a hand, my trusty fiere,  
And gi'e 's a hand o' thine;  
And we'll tak' a right guid-willie-waught  
For auld lang syne.

---

℞ 'Auld Lang Syne', Robert Burns (1759 – 1796), Fenton, *The New Faber Book of Love Poems*.

Anonymous, Killen, *Assassin's Creed IV: Black Flag*. Stan Hugill, in his *Shanties from the Seven Seas*, comments: 'And now we come to the "Johnny" song that usually ended the voyage – "Leave Her, Johnny, Leave Her!" Collectors give pumps and halyards alike as the job it was used for. Terry and Whall call it a hauling song; Miss Colcord and Doerffinger give it for pumps. I think they are all right. It was probably sung at halyards with two solos and refrains, and when

**XXIX.2.**

*Tune: Leave Her, Johnny, Leave Her*

I thought I heard the old man say –

*Leave her, Johnny! Leave her!*

Tomorrow ye will get your pay –

*And it's time for us to leave her.*

*Leave her, Johnny! Leave her!*

*O leave her, Johnny! Leave her!*

*For the voyage is long and the winds don't blow,*

*And it's time for us to leave her!*

O the wind was foul and the sea ran high;

She shipped it green and none went by.

I hate to sail on this rotten tub,

No grog allowed and rotten grub.

We swear by rote for want of more,

*Leave her, Johnny! Leave her!*

But now we're through so we'll go on shore.

*And it's time for us to leave her.*

*Leave her, Johnny! Leave her!*

*O leave her, Johnny! Leave her!*

*For the voyage is long and the winds don't blow,*

*And it's time for us to leave her!*

**XXIX.3.** Here's to us. Who's like us? Gey few, and they're a' dead.**XXX.**


---

a full chorus was added then it was used at the pumps and even capstan. I learnt it partly from my mother's father, and he always sang the full chorus, and partly from an old Irish sailor, who also used the final chorus. It probably came to life about the time of the Irish potato famine, in the forties, and was originally sung in the Western Ocean Packets in this fashion... The later version "Leave Her, Johnnies" or as some sang it "Leave Her, Bullies" was sometimes sung during the voyage – at the pumps – but its better-known function was that of airing grievances just prior to the completion of the voyage either when warping the vessel in through the locks or at the final spell of the pumps (in wooden ships) after the vessel had docked. Many unprintable stanzas were sung, directed at the afterguard, the grub, and the owners. Bullen writes that "to sing it before the last day or so was almost tantamount to mutiny."

℞ Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Francis McPeake (1885 – 1971), *The Corries, The Corries: In Concert*. McPeake seems to have been inspired to compose this song by a poem of Robert Tannahill's. Some interpreters of this song (Kate Rusby et al.) have been known to render the first line as, 'O the summer time

## XXX.1.

*Tune: Wild Mountain Thyme*

O the summer time has come,  
 And the trees are sweetly blooming,  
 And wild mountain thyme  
 Grows around the purple heather.  
 Will you go, lassie, go?

*And we'll all go together  
 To pull wild mountain thyme  
 All around the purple heather.  
 Will you go, lassie, go?*

I will build my love a bower  
 By yon clear crystal fountain,  
 And on it I will pile  
 All the flowers of the mountain.  
 Will you go, lassie, go?

I will range through the wilds  
 And the deep land so dreary  
 And return with the spoils  
 To the bower o' my dearie.  
 Will ye go, lassie, go?

If my truelove she'll not come,  
 Then I'll surely find another  
 To pull wild mountain thyme  
 All around the purple heather.  
 Will you go, lassie, go?

*And we'll all go together  
 To pull wild mountain thyme  
 All around the purple heather.  
 Will you go, lassie, go?*

## XXX.2.

*Tune: Padstow Farwell*

It is time to go now.  
*Haul away your anchor!*

---

is coming', which, as a certain learned gentleman pointed out to the Almanacker, shows their ignorance of the natural world. Heather blooms in late summer, and not in the spring.

Anonymous, Killen, *Assassin's Creed IV: Black Flag*. Padstow is a fishing village on the north coast of Cornwall.

*Haul away your anchor!*  
*'Tis our sailing time!*

Get some sail upon her.  
*Haul away your halyards! Ec.*

Get her on her course now.  
*Haul away your foresheets! Ec.*

Waves are surging under.  
*Haul away down-channel!*  
*Haul away down-channel*  
*On the evening tide!*

When your sailing's over:  
*Haul away for heaven!*  
*Haul away for heaven!*  
*God be by your side!*

**XXX.3.** The sun himself cannot forget his fellow traveller.

---

Anonymous, Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. The 'fellow traveller' is Sir Francis Drake, who was one of the first men to circumnavigate the globe, thus, in a certain sense, under the geocentric view of things, made the same journey which the sun makes every day.



## CHAPTER 6

# Sextilis

### I.

#### I.1.

*Tune: Lafferty*

Seek ye first the kingdom of God  
And his righteousness  
And all these things shall be added unto you.  
*Allelu alleluia!*

*Alleluia! Alleluia!*  
*Allelui! Allelu alleluia!*

Man shall not live by bread alone,  
But by every word  
That proceeds from the mouth of God.

Ask, and it shall be given unto you;  
Seek, and ye shall find;  
Knock, and it shall be opened unto you:  
*Allelu alleluia!*

*Alleluia! Alleluia!*  
*Allelui! Allelu alleluia!*

#### I.2.

Hey diddle diddle,  
The cat & the fiddle.

---

Kevin Mayhew Ltd, *Anglican Hymns Old and New*. Although this song was written in the 1970s, the words are – it hardly needs pointing out – very much older, being drawn more or less as-is from the King James Version. ¶1. This first verse is drawn verbatim from the KJV Matthew 6.33. ¶7. This second verse is drawn from the KJV 4.4. ¶9. The only difference from the KJV in this verse is in this line, with the awkward ‘that proceedeth out of the mouth of God’ being massaged into the form given here. ¶10. This third verse is drawn from the KJV Matthew 7.7. The only difference is that an ‘unto’ has been inserted after ‘Ask, and it shall be given’.

Anonymous, Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

The cow jumped over the moon.  
 The little dog laughed  
 To see such sport  
 And the dish ran away with the spoon.

**I.3.** The nakedness of woman is the work of God.

## II.

### II.1.

*Tune: Leaning on the Everlasting Arms*  
 What a fellowship, what a joy divine –  
*Leaning on the everlasting arms.*  
 What a blessedness, what a peace is mine –  
*Leaning on the everlasting arms.*  
  
*Leaning, leaning, safe & secure from all alarms;*  
*Leaning, leaning, leaning on the everlasting arms.*  
  
 O how sweet to walk in this pilgrim way.  
 O how bright the path grows from day to day.  
  
 What have I to dread? What have I to fear?  
*Leaning on the everlasting arms.*  
 I have blessed peace with my Lord so near –  
*Leaning on the everlasting arms.*  
  
*Leaning, leaning, safe & secure from all alarms;*  
*Leaning, leaning, leaning on the everlasting arms.*

### II.2.

My love in her attire doth show her wit,  
 It doth so well become her:  
 For every season she hath dressings fit,  
 For winter, spring & summer.  
 No beauty she doth miss  
 When all her robes are on;  
 But beauty's self she is  
 When all her robes are gone.

---

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

Anthony Showalter (1858 – 1924), Burwell, *True Grit: Original Motion Picture Soundtrack*. The 'everlasting arms' in question are those referred to in Deuteronomy 33.27. This song features prominently in the 2010 version of the film *True Grit*.

Anonymous, Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

**II.3.** There is surely a piece of divinity in us, something that was before the elements, and owes no homage unto the sun.

### III.

#### III.1.

*Tune: New Britain*

Amazing grace (how sweet the sound)

That saved a wretch like me!

I once was lost, but now am found,

Was blind, but now I see.

'Twas grace that taught my heart to fear,

And grace my fears relieved;

How precious did that grace appear

The hour I first believed!

Through many dangers, toils & snares,

I have already come;

'Tis grace hath brought me safe thus far,

And grace will lead me home.

The Lord has promised good to me;

His word my hope secures;

He will my shield & portion be

As long as life endures.

Yes, when this flesh & heart shall fail,

And mortal life shall cease,

I shall possess, within the veil,

A life of joy & peace.

The earth shall soon dissolve like snow,

The sun forbear to shine;

---

Sir Thomas Browne (1605 – 1682), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Faith's Review and Expectation', The Rev Dr John Newton (1725 – 1807), Newton and Cowper, *Olney Hymns*. A great mass of hagiography surrounds this beautiful hymn, most of it worthless. The Rev Dr Newton's own note indicates that it was inspired chiefly by II Chronicles 17.16-17, which concerns God's promises to King David and his descendants. ¶25. This last verse was not written by The Rev Dr Newton, nor is it included in the original *Olney Hymns*. Its first appearance in print was probably in *A Collection of Sacred Ballads* (1790), as one of the verses to "Jerusalem, My Happy Home". It passed from there into the black American oral tradition, and its inclusion in *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, now transplanted into "Amazing Grace", cemented it in the popular imagination.

But God, who called me here below,  
Will be forever mine.

When we've been there 10,000 years,  
Bright shining as the sun,  
We've no less days to sing God's praise,  
Than when we first begun.

### III.2.

Stay, O sweet, and do not rise.  
The light that shines comes from thine eyes:  
The day breaks not: it is my heart,  
Because that you & I must part.  
Stay, or else my joys will die  
And perish in their infancy.

**III.3.** To enlarge or illustrate this power and effect of love is to set a candle to the sun.

## IV.

### IV.1.

*Tune: Jerusalem*

And did those feet in ancient time,  
Walk upon England's mountains green?  
And was the holy Lamb of God  
On England's pleasant pastures seen?  
And did the countenance divine  
Shine forth upon our clouded hills?  
And was JERUSALEM builded here,  
Among these dark satanic mills?

---

Anonymous, Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. This poem is often attributed to the Very Rev Dr Donne, with some other verses (sadly of inferior quality) affixed. However, Prof Stallworthy contests this, attributing the poem to 'Anon' instead. Prof Sir Herbert Grierson suggests the true author may have been a John Dowland.

The Rev Robert Burton (1577 – 1640), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *Milton: A Poem in Two Books*. Blake's original poem – actually a snippet from a larger work – is a sarcastic retelling of the (eccentric) theory that Jesus and Mary visited England with Joseph of Arimathea. The stirring, patriotic tune to which Parry set it is thus profoundly incongruous with Blake's intentions – though no less rousing for any English heart. ¶8. Oceans of ink and forests of paper have been expended trying to identify what exactly Blake meant by 'these dark satanic mills'. But it seems impossible that Blake could have been referring to anything other than the factories of the nascent industrial revolution, the coming of which he so dreaded.

Bring me my bow of burning gold:  
 Bring me my arrows of desire:  
 Bring me my spear: O clouds, unfold:  
 Bring me my chariot of fire!  
 I will not cease from mental fight,  
 Nor shall my sword sleep in my hand:  
 Till we have built JERUSALEM,  
 In England's green & pleasant Land.

#### IV.2.

Whistle, daughter, whistle, and you shall have a sheep.  
 Mother, I cannot whistle, neither can I sleep.  
 Whistle, daughter, whistle, and you shall have a cow.  
 Mother, I cannot whistle, neither now I how.  
 Whistle, daughter, whistle, and you shall have a man.  
 Mother, I cannot whistle, but I'll do the best I can.

**IV.3.** The exercise of singing is delightful to nature, and good to preserve the health of man.

#### V.

##### V.1.

##### *Tune: Monk's Gate*

Who would true valor see,  
 Let him come hither;  
 One here will constant be,  
 Come wind, come weather.  
 There's no discouragement  
 Shall make him once relent  
 His first avowed intent  
 To be a pilgrim.

Whoso beset him round  
 With dismal stories,  
 Do but themselves confound;  
 His strength the more is.  
 No lion can him fright,

---

Anonymous, Holloway, *The Oxford Book of Local Verses*. Prof Holloway labels this 'A Berkshire rhyme'.

William Byrd (1543 – 1623), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

John Bunyan (1628 – 1688), Bunyan, *Pilgrim's Progress*. These words can be found towards the end of the second part of Bunyan's magnum opus. A Mr Valiant-for-Truth sings this song to the party after they've left the Delectable Mountains.

He'll with a giant fight,  
But he will have a right  
To be a pilgrim.

Hobgoblin nor foul fiend  
Can daunt his spirit;  
He knows he at the end  
Shall life inherit.  
Then fancies fly away,  
He'll not fear what men say;  
He'll labour night & day  
To be a pilgrim.

### V.2.

How did the party go in PORTMAN SQUARE?  
I cannot tell you; *Juliet* was not there.  
And how did Lady *Gaster*'s party go?  
*Juliet* was next me and I do not know.

### V.3.

Let us have wine & women, mirth & laughter,  
Sermons & soda water the day after.

## VI.

### VI.1.

*Tune: The Minstrel Boy*

The Son of God goes forth to war,  
A kingly crown to gain;  
His blood-red banner streams afar:  
Who follows in his train?

A glorious band, the chosen few  
On whom the Spirit came;  
Twelve valiant saints, their hope they knew,  
And mocked the cross & flame.

---

'Juliet', Hilaire Belloc (1870 – 1953), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a couplet from the second canto of *Don Juan*.

Reginald Heber, Bishop of Calcutta (1783 – 1826), *The Man Who Would Be King*. Sean Connery and Michael Caine sing this song during the tragic climax of the 1975 adaptation of Kipling's *The Man Who Would Be King*. The original text also features the hymn, albeit with reworked lyrics and in a different context.

They met the tyrant's brandished steel,  
 The lion's gory mane;  
 They bowed their heads the death to feel:  
 Who follows in their train?

## VI.2.

How sweet is the shepherd's sweet lot;  
 From the morn to the evening he strays;  
 He shall follow his sheep all the day,  
 And his tongue shall be filled with praise.

For he hears the lamb's innocent call,  
 And he hears the ewe's tender reply;  
 He is watchful while they are in peace,  
 For they know when their shepherd is nigh.

VI.3. Love in this part of the world is no sinecure.

## VII.

### VII.1.

*Tune: Sebaste*

Hail, gladdening light, of his pure glory poured,  
 Who is the immortal Father, heavenly, blest,  
 Holiest of holies, *Jesus Christ* our Lord.

Now we are come to the sun's hour of rest,  
 The lights of evening round us shine.  
 We hymn the Father, Son and Holy Spirit divine.

---

'The Shepherd', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*.

George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. These words are from a letter to John Murray. The 'part of the world' Lord Byron had in mind seems to have been Venice.

The Rev Prof John Keble (1792 – 1866), Newman, Cardinal-Deacon of San Giorgio in Velabro, *Lyra Apostolica*. Known as Φῶς ἱλαρόν in the original Greek, this is probably the earliest surviving Christian hymn. Indeed, St Basil the Great (d 379) wrote in his Περὶ τοῦ Ἁγίου Πνεύματος 29.73: 'We cannot say to who was the father of those expressions in the thanksgiving at the lighting of the lamps; but it is an ancient formula which people repeat, and no one has ever yet been accused of impiety for saying, "We hymn the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit of God."' Anyone with a functioning pair of ears ought to sing these words to Sir John Stainer's tune 'Sebaste', and not to Charles Wood's polyphonic atrocity. ¶10. The 'they' in the last line – apparently this is much clearer in the original Greek – refers to all the individual component of God's creation.

Worthiest art thou at all times to be sung  
 With undefilèd tongue,  
 Son of our God, giver of life alone!  
 Therefore in all the world, thy glories, Lord, they own.

## VII.2.

I see you, *Juliet*, still, with your straw hat  
 Loaded with vines, and with your dear pale face,  
 On which those 30 years so lightly sat,  
 And the white outline of your muslin dress.  
 You wore a little ~~ficu~~ trimmed with lace  
 And crossed in the front, as was the fashion then,  
 Bound at your waist with a broad band or sash,  
 All white & fresh & virginally plain.  
 There was a sound of shouting far away  
 Down in the valley, as they called to us,  
 And you, with hands clasped seeming still to pray  
 Patience of fate, stood listening to me thus  
 With heaving bosom. There a rose lay curled.  
 It was the reddest rose in all the world.

## VII.3.

Think you, if *Laura* had been *Petrarch's* wife,  
 He would have written sonnets all his life?

## VIII.

### VIII.1.

*Tune: To Canaan's Land*  
 To Canaan's land I'm on my way.  
     *Where the soul of man never dies.*  
 My darkest night will turn to day.  
     *Where the soul of man never dies.*  
  
*Dear friends, there'll be no sad farewells;*  
*There'll be no tear-dimmed eyes,*  
*Where all is peace & joy & love,*  
*And the soul of man never dies.*

---

'Farewell to Juliet', Wilfrid Blunt (1840 – 1922), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. This is from Blunt's somewhat disappointing (in the light of the brilliance of this poem) series, *Love Sonnets of Proteus*.

George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a couplet from the third canto of *Don Juan*.

William Golden (1878 – 1934), McKusker, *Little Lights*.



A rose is blooming there for me.  
It blooms for all eternity.

A love light beams across the foam.  
It shines to light the shores of home.

My life will end in deathless sleep,  
And everlasting joys I'll reap.

I'm on my way to that fair land,  
    *Where the soul of man never dies.*  
Where there will be no parting hand.  
    *Where the soul of man never dies.*

*Dear friends, there'll be no sad farewells;  
There'll be no tear-dimmed eyes,  
Where all is peace & joy & love,  
And the soul of man never dies.*

### VIII.2.

If ever two were one, then surely we.  
If ever man were loved by wife, then thee.  
If ever wife was happy in a man,  
Compare with me, ye women, if you can.  
I prize thy love more than whole mines of gold,  
Or all the riches that the east doth hold.  
My love is such that rivers cannot quench,  
Nor ought but love from thee give recompense.  
Thy love is such I can no way repay;  
The heavens reward thee manifold, I pray.  
Then while we live, in love let's so persevere,  
That when we live no more, we may live ever.

### VIII.3.

What men call gallantry, and gods adultery,  
Is much more common when the climate's sultry.

## IX.

---

'To My Dear and Loving Husband', Mrs Anne Bradstreet (1612 – 1672), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a couplet from the first canto of *Don Juan*.

Wallace Willis (1820 – 1880), *Cabin Fever*. Willis's version has two further verses.

## IX.1.

*Tune: Swing Low*

*Swing low, sweet chariot,  
Coming for to carry me home!  
Swing low, sweet chariot,  
Coming for to carry me home!*

I looked over JORDAN, and what did I see?

*Coming for to carry me home!*  
A band of angels coming after me.  
*Coming for to carry me home!*

If you get there before I do,  
*Coming for to carry me home!*  
Tell all my friends I coming too.  
*Coming for to carry me home!*

*Swing low, sweet chariot,  
Coming for to carry me home!  
Swing low, sweet chariot,  
Coming for to carry me home!*

## IX.2.

The grey sea & the long black land;  
And the yellow  $\frac{1}{2}$  moon large & low;  
And the startled little waves that leap  
In fiery ringlets from their sleep,  
As I gain the cove with pushing prow,  
And quench its speed i' the slushy sand.

Then a mile of warm sea-scented beach;  
Three fields to cross till a farm appears;  
A tap at the pane, the quick sharp scratch  
And blue spurt of a lighted match,  
And a voice less loud, through its joys & fears,  
Than the two hearts beating each to each.

IX.3. No man ought to be compelled to live where a rose cannot grow.

---

'Meeting at Night', Robert Browning (1828 – 1889), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

George Cadbury (1839 – 1922), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

## X.

## X.1.

*Tune: The Unclouded Day*

O they tell me of a home far beyond the sky.  
 O they tell me of a home far away.  
 They tell me of a home where no storm clouds rise.  
 O they tell me of an uncloudy day.

*O the land of cloudless day!*  
*O the land of an uncloudy sky!*  
*O they tell me of a home where no storm clouds rise!*  
*O they tell me of an uncloudy day!*

O they tell me of a home where my friends have gone.  
 O they tell me of that land far away,  
 Where the tree of life in eternal bloom  
 Sheds its fragrance through the uncloudy day.

O they tell me that he smiles on his children there,  
 And his smile drives their sorrows away.  
 And they tell me that no tears will ever come again  
 In that lovely land of uncloudy day.

*O the land of cloudless day!*  
*O the land of an uncloudy sky!*  
*O they tell me of a home where no storm clouds rise!*  
*O they tell me of an uncloudy day!*

## X.2.

There be none of beauty's daughters  
 With a magic like thee;  
 And like music on the waters  
 Is thy sweet voice to me:

---

Josiah Alwood (1828 – 1909), Stanley, *My All and All*. Alwood wrote of the circumstances leading to his composition of this song: 'It was a balmy night in August 1879, when returning from a debate in Spring Hill, Ohio, to my home in Morenci, Michigan, about 1:00 a.m. I saw a beautiful rainbow north by northwest against a dense black nimbus cloud. The sky was all perfectly clear except this dark cloud which covered about forty degrees of the horizon and extended about halfway to the zenith. The phenomenon was entirely new to me and my nerves refreshed by the balmy air and the lovely sight. Old Morpheus was playing his sweetest lullaby. Another mile of travel, a few moments of time, a fellow of my size was ensconced in sweet home and wrapped in sweet sleep. A first class know-nothing till rosy-sweet morning was wide over the fields.'

George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

When, as if its sound were causing  
 The charmèd ocean's pausing,  
 The waves lie still & gleaming,  
 And the lulled winds seem dreaming:

And the midnight moon is weaving  
 Her bright chain o'er the deep,  
 Whose breast is gently heaving  
 As an infant's asleep:  
 So the spirit bows before thee  
 To listen & adore thee;  
 With a full but soft emotion,  
 Like the swell of summer's ocean.

**X.3.** Do not merely pull it out and strike it, merely to show that you have one.

## XI.

### XI.1.

*Tune: The Battle Cry of Freedom*

O we'll rally round the flag, boys, we'll rally once again –  
*Shouting the battle cry of freedom!*  
 And we'll rally from the hillside; we'll gather from the plain –  
*Shouting the battle cry of freedom!*

*The Union forever! Hurrah, boys! Hurrah!*  
*Down with the traitor, and up with the stars!*  
 And we'll rally round the flag, boys, we'll rally once again –  
*Shouting the battle cry of freedom!*

O we're springing to the ranks of our brothers gone before,  
 And we'll fill their vacant ranks with a 1,000,000 freemen more.

We will welcome to our numbers the loyal, true & brave;  
 And although he may be poor, he shall never be a slave.

We are springing to the call from the east & from the west –  
*Shouting the battle cry of freedom!*

---

Philip Stanhope, 4th Earl of Chesterfield (1694 – 1773), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. In the original text, 'it' is a pocket watch – used as an analogy for being modest about one's education – although Lord Chesterfield may have had something else in mind.

'The Battle Cry of Freedom', Dr George Root (1820 – 1895), 2nd South Carolina String Band, *Hard Road*.

And we'll hurl the rebel crew from the land we love the best –  
*Shouting the battle cry of freedom!*

*The Union forever! Hurrah, boys! Hurrah!*  
*Down with the traitor, and up with the stars!*  
 And we'll rally round the flag, boys, we'll rally once again –  
*Shouting the battle cry of freedom!*

### XI.2.

Sweet *Cupid*, ripen her desire  
 Thy joyful harvest may begin;  
 If age approach a little higher,  
 'Twill be too late to get it in.

Cold winter storms lay standing corn,  
 Which once too ripe will never rise,  
 And lovers wish themselves unborn,  
 When all their joys lie in their eyes.

Then, sweet, let us embrace and kisse.  
 Shall beauty shale upon the ground?  
 If age bereave us of this bliss,  
 Then will no more such sport be found.

**XI.3.** Ridicule is the best test of truth.

## XII.

### XII.1.

*Tune: Angeline the Baker*

Way down on the old plantation,  
 That's where I was born;  
 I used to beat the whole creation  
 Hoeing in the corn.  
 O then I work, and then I sing,  
 So happy all the day,  
 Till *Angelina Baker* come  
 And stole my heart away.

---

William Corkine (? – ?), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. This is number VII in the first of Corkine's books of *Ayres*.

Philip Stanhope, 4th Earl of Chesterfield (1694 – 1773), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Stephen Foster (1826 – 1864), The Oldtime Stringband, *Gotta Stop Kickin' My Dog Around*. The folk process is said to have had its way with Foster's original version.

*Angelina Baker! Angelina Baker's gone!*  
*She left me here*  
*To weep a tear*  
*And beat on the old jawbone.*

Early in the morning  
 Of a lovely summer's day,  
 I ax for *Angelina*  
 And they say she's gone away.  
 I don't know where to find her  
 'Cause I don't know where she's gone.  
 She left me here to weep a tear  
 And beat on the old jawbone.

I've seen her in the springtime,  
 And I've seen her in the fall.  
 I've seen her in the cornfield,  
 And I've seen her at the ball;  
 And every time I seen her  
 She was smiling like the sun,  
 But now I'm left to weep a tear  
 'Cause *Angelina's* gone.

*Angelina Baker! Angelina Baker's gone!*  
*She left me here*  
*To weep a tear*  
*And beat on the old jawbone.*

## XII.2.

Thou joy of my life,  
 First love of my youth,  
 Thou safest of pleasures  
 And fullest of truth,  
 Thou purest of nymphs  
 And never more fair,  
 Breathe this way and cool me,  
 Thou pitying air;  
 Come hither and hover  
 On every part,

---

<sup>ℝ</sup> Sidney Godolphin (1610 – 1643), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. These lines drawn from a longer poem, called “A Ballet”. These lines in particular are the shepherd’s speech to the nymph Amarillis.

Thou life of my sense  
And joy of my heart.

### XII.3.

He could not die when the trees were green,  
For he loved the time too well.

### XIII.

#### XIII.1.

*Tune: The House of the Rising Sun*

There is a house in NEW ORLEANS  
They call THE RISING SUN,  
And it's been the ruin of many a poor boy,  
And, God, I know I'm one.

My mother was a tailor.  
She sewed my new blue jeans.  
My father was a gambling man  
Down in NEW ORLEANS.

Now the only thing a gambler needs  
Is a suitcase & a trunk,  
And the only time that he is satisfied  
Is when he's on a drunk.

O mother, tell your children  
Not to do what I have done,  
Spend your lives in sin & misery  
In THE HOUSE OF THE RISING SUN.

I got one foot on the platform,  
The other foot on the train.  
I'm going back to NEW ORLEANS  
To wear that ball & chain.

There is a house in NEW ORLEANS  
They call THE RISING SUN,

---

John Clare (1793 – 1864), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. These are two lines from Clare's poem "The Dying Child".

Anonymous, Animals, *The Animals*. Although strongly associated with the Animals' rendition thereof, this song was probably composed in the late nineteenth century, and has roots going back to the seventeenth. The house in question was likely a bordello of some description, though no brothel of that name has been shown to have existed in nineteenth century New Orleans.

And it's been the ruin of many a poor boy,  
And, God, I know I'm one.

### XIII.2.

A sweet disorder in the dress  
Kindles in clothes a wantonness:—  
A lawn about the shoulders thrown  
Into a fine distraction;  
An erring lace, which here & there  
Enthrals the crimson stomacher;  
A cuff neglectful, and thereby  
Ribbands to flow confusedly;  
A winning wave, deserving note,  
In the tempestuous petticoat;  
A careless shoestring, in whose tie  
I see a wild civility —  
Do more bewitch me, than when art  
Is too precise in every part.

### XIII.3.

Had *Cain* been scot, God would have changed his doom:  
Nor forced him wander, but confined him home.

## XIV.

### XIV.1.

*Tune: Ring Ring de Banjo*  
O never count the bubbles  
When there's water in the spring.  
A darkie has no troubles  
When he's got a song to sing.  
The beauties of creation  
Will never lose their charm  
While a roam the old plantation  
With my truelove on my arm.

*Ring, ring the banjo!*  
*I like that good old song!*  
*Come again, my truelove!*  
*O where you been so long?!*

---

'The Poetry of Dress', Robert Herrick (1591 – 1674), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.  
John Cleveland (1613 – 1658), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
Stephen Foster (1826 – 1864), 2nd South Carolina String Band, *Lightning in a Jar*.



Well the time is never dreary  
    If a darkie never groans.  
The ladies never weary  
    With a rattle of the bones.  
Then come again, *Susannah*,  
    By the gaslight of the moon.  
I'll tum that old piano  
    When the banjo's out of tune.

O once I was so lucky  
    My mas'er set me free.  
So I went to old Kentucky  
    For to see what I could see.  
I could not go no farder,  
    And I turned to mas'er's door.  
I'll love him all the harder,  
    And I'll go away no more.

Well, early in the morning  
    Of a lovely summer's day,  
My mas'er gave me warning  
    That he'd like to hear me play.  
On the banjo I was tapping,  
    And I come with dulcet string;  
My mas'er falled a-napping  
    And he'll never wake again.

My love, I'll have to leave you  
    While the river's running high,  
But I never can deceive you,  
    So don't you wipe your eye.  
I'se gonna make some money,  
    But I'll come another day.  
I'll come again, my honey,  
    If I have to work my way.

*Ring, ring the banjo!*  
    *I like that good old song!*  
*Come again, my truelove!*  
    *O where you been so long?!*

## XIV.2.

I sing of brooks, of blossoms, birds, & bowers,  
 Of april, may, of june, & july flowers.  
 I sing of may-poles, hock-carts, wassails, wakes,  
 Of bridegrooms, brides, & of their bridal-cakes.  
 I write of youth, of love, and have access  
 By these to sing of cleanly wantonness.  
 I sing of dews, of rains, and piece by piece  
 Of balm, of oil, of spice, & ambergris.  
 I sing of time's trans-shifting; and I write  
 How roses first came red, & lilies white.  
 I write of groves, of twilights, and I sing  
 The court of *Mab*, & of the fairy king.  
 I write of hell; I sing (and ever shall)  
 Of heaven, and hope to have it after all.

XIV.3. I never saw an ugly thing in my life.

## XV.

## XV.1.

*Tune: Dixie*

I wish I was in the land of cotton –  
 Old times there are not forgotten –  
     *Look away! Look away! Look away, Dixie-land!*  
 In Dixie's land where I was born in,  
 Early on one frosty mornin'  
     *Look away! Look away! Look away, Dixie-land!*

*I wish I was in Dixie!*  
*Hooray! Hooray!*  
*In Dixie's land I'll take my stand*  
*To live and die in Dixie.*  
*Away! Away!*  
*Away down south in Dixie!*

---

'The Argument of His Book', Robert Herrick (1591 – 1674), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

John Constable (1776 – 1837), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Dixie', Dan Emmett (1815 – 1904), 2nd South Carolina String Band, *Southern Soldier*. This song served as one of several de facto national anthems for the Confederacy, which provoked one Union songwriter to compose a rather good parody: 'Away down South in the land of traitors./ Rattlesnakes and alligators./ Right away, come away, right away, come away./ Where cotton's king and men are chattels./ Union boys will win the battles./ Right away, come away, right away, come away.' ¶18. The Rifled Breech-Loading 40 pounder Armstrong gun was first made in 1860, the year this song was first performed.

*Away! Away!*  
*Away down south in Dixie!*

*Old Missus* marry *Will* the weaver.  
*William* was a gay deceiver,  
 And when he put his arm around her  
 He smiled as fierce as a 40 pounder.

His face was sharp as a butcher's cleaver,  
 But that did not seem to grieve her.  
*Old Missus* acted the foolish part.  
 She died for a man that broke her heart.

Now here's a health to the next *Old Missus*  
 And all the girls that want to kiss us!  
*Look away! Look away! Look away, Dixie-land!*  
 And if you want to drive away sorrow,  
 Come back hear our song tomorrow.  
*Look away! Look away! Look away, Dixie-land!*

*I wish I was in Dixie!*  
*Hooray! Hooray!*  
*In Dixie's land I'll take my stand*  
*To live and die in Dixie.*  
*Away! Away!*  
*Away down south in Dixie!*  
*Away! Away!*  
*Away down south in Dixie!*

## XV.2.

So good luck came, and on my roof did light,  
 Like noiseless snow, or as the dew of night:  
 Not all at once, but gently, as the trees  
 Are by the sunbeams tickled by degrees.

**XV.3.** It doesn't matter what you do in the bedroom as long as you don't do it in the street and frighten the horses.

## XVI.

---

℞ 'The comming of good luck', Robert Herrick (1591 – 1634), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

Mrs Beatrice Cornwallis-West (1865 – 1940), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Anonymous, *The Spinners*, *The Spinners*. ¶15. Ackee and salt fish (the former being a peculiar kind of fruit, and the latter being salted cod) is a classic Jamaican recipe.

## XVI.1.

*Tune: Jamaica Farewell*

Far away where the nights are gay  
 And the sun shines daily on the mountain top,  
 I took a trip on a sailing ship  
 And when I reached Jamaica I made a stop.

*But I'm sad to say, I'm on my way;  
 Won't be back for many a day.  
 My heart is down; my head is turning around.  
 I had to leave a little girl in KINGSTON town.*

Sounds of laughter everywhere,  
 And the dancing girls sway to & fro:  
 I must declare my heart is there,  
 Though I've been from Maine to Mexico.

Down the market you can hear it:  
 Ladies cry out while on their heads they bear:  
 Ackee, rice, salt fish is nice,  
 Though the rum is fine any time of year.

*But I'm sad to say, I'm on my way;  
 Won't be back for many a day.  
 My heart is down; my head is turning around.  
 I had to leave a little girl in KINGSTON town.*

## XVI.2.

Queen & huntress, chaste & fair,  
 Now the sun is laid to sleep,  
 Seated in thy silver chair  
 State in wonted manner keep:  
*Hesperus* entreats thy light,  
 Goddess excellently bright.

Earth, let not thy envious shade  
 Dare itself to interpose;  
*Cynthia's* shining orb was made  
 Heaven to clear when day did close:  
 Bless us then with wishèd sight,  
 Goddess excellently bright.

---

'Hymn to Diana', Ben Jonson (1572 – 1637), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Lay thy bow of pearl apart  
 And thy crystal-shining quiver;  
 Give unto the flying hart  
 Space to breathe, how short soever:  
 Thou that mak'st a day of night,  
 Goddess excellently bright!

**XVI.3.** Joy ruled the day, and love the night.

## XVII.

### XVII.1.

*Tune: The Bonnie Blue Flag*

We are a band of brothers and native to the soil,  
 Fighting for the property we gained by honest toil.  
 And when our rights were threatened, the cry rose near & far:  
 Hurrah for the bonnie blue flag that bears a single star!

*Hurrah! Hurrah! For southern rights, hurrah!  
 Hurrah for the bonnie blue flag that bears a single star!*

As long as the Union was faithful to her trust,  
 Like friends and like brethren, kind were we, and just.  
 But now, when northern treachery attempts our rights to mar,  
 We hoist on high the bonnie blue flag that bears a single star.

First gallant South Carolina nobly made the stand,  
 Then came Alabama and took her by the hand.  
 Next, quickly Mississippi, Georgia, Florida  
 All raised on high the bonnie blue flag that bears a single star.

Ye men of valour gather round the banner of the right.  
 Texas & fair Louisiana join us in the fight.  
*Davis*, our lovèd president, and *Stephens* statesmen rare  
 Now rally round the bonnie blue flag that bears a single star.

Now here's to brave Virginia, the Old Dominion State,  
 With the young Confederacy at last has sealed her fate;  
 And spurred by her example, now other states prepare  
 To hoist on high the bonnie blue flag that bears a single star.

---

John Dryden, Poet Laureate (1631 – 1700), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a line from *The Secular Masque*.

'The Bonnie Blue Flag', Harry McCarthy (1834 – 1888), 2nd South Carolina String Band, *In High Cotton*.

Then cheer, boys, cheer. Raise a joyous shout.  
 For Arkansas and North Carolina now have both gone out;  
 And let another rousing cheer for Tennessee be given,  
 The single star of the bonnie blue flag has grown to be 11.

Then here's to our Confederacy. Strong we are & brave.  
 Like patriots of old we'll fight, our heritage to save.  
 And rather than submit to shame, to die we would prefer.  
 So cheer for the bonnie blue flag that bears a single star.

*Hurrah! Hurrah! For southern rights, hurrah!*  
*Hurrah for the bonnie blue flag that bears a single star!*

## XVII.2.

Ye living lamps, by whose dear light  
 The nightingale does sit so late,  
 And studying all the summer night,  
 Her matchless songs does meditate;

Ye country comets, that portend  
 No war nor prince's funeral,  
 Shining unto no higher end  
 Than to presage the grass's fall;

Ye glow-worms, whose officious flame  
 To wand'ring mowers shows the way,  
 That in the night have lost their aim,  
 And after foolish fires do stray;

Your courteous lights in vain you waste,  
 Since *Juliana* here is come,  
 For she my mind hath so displaced  
 That I shall never find my home.

**XVII.3.** Remember, you're fighting for this woman's honour... which is probably more than she ever did.

## XVIII.

---

'The Mower to the Glowworms', Andrew Marvell (1621 – 1678), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Prof Philip Larkin wrote a poem called "The Mower", which perhaps is a response to these lines.

Julius Marx (1890 – 1977), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This a line from *The Importance of Being Earnest*.

Anonymous, *Inside Llewyn Davis Soundtrack*. John Lomax recorded in his *American Ballads and Folk Songs*: "Dink knows all the songs," said her companion. But I did not find her helpful

## XVIII.1.

*Tune: Dink's Song*

If I had wings  
 Like *Noah's* dove,  
 I'd fly the river  
 To the one I love.

*Fare thee well, my honey.*  
*Fare thee well.*

I had a man.  
 He was long & tall.  
 He moved his body  
 like a cannonball.

I remember one evening  
 In the pouring rain,  
 And in my heart  
 Was an aching pain.

Muddy river  
 Runs muddy & wild.  
 Can't give a bloody  
 For my unborn child.

Just as sure as a bird  
 Flying high above,  
 Life ain't worth living  
 Without the one you love.

*Fare thee well, my honey.*  
*Fare thee well.*

---

until I walked a mile to a farm commissary and bought her a pint of gin. As she drank the gin, the sounds from her scrubbing board increased in intensity and in volume. She worked as she talked: "That little boy there ain't got no daddy an' he ain't got no name. I comes from Mississippi and we never saw these levee niggers, till us got here. I brung along my little boy. My man drives a four-wheel scraper down there where you see the dust risin'. I keeps his tent, cooks his vittles and washes his clothes. Some day Ize goin' to wrap up his wet breeches and shirts, roll 'em up in a knot, put 'em in the middle of the bed, and tuck down the covers right nice. Then I'm going on up the river where I belong." She sipped her gin and sang and drank until the bottle was empty.'

## XVIII.2.

All my past life is mine no more;  
 The flying hours are gone  
 Like transitory dreams giv'n o'er,  
 Whose images are kept in store  
 By memory alone.

The time that is to come is not.  
 How can it then be mine?  
 The present moment's all my lot;  
 And that, as fast as it is got,  
*Phyllis*, is only thine.

Then talk not of inconstancy,  
 False hearts & broken vows;  
 If I, by miracle, can be  
 This live-long minute true to thee,  
 'Tis all that heav'n allows.

**XVIII.3.** Doubtless God could have made a better berry, but doubtless God never did.

## XIX.

## XIX.1.

*Tune: Ole Dan Tucker*

I came to town the other night.  
 I heard the noise. I saw the fight.  
 The watchman he was running around,  
 Crying old *Dan Tucker* had come to town.

*Get out the way!*  
*Get out the way!*  
*Get out the way, old Dan Tucker!*  
*You're too late to get your supper!*

---

'Love and Life', John Wilmot, 2nd Earl of Rochester (1647 – 1680), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

Dr William Butler (1535 – 1618), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Anonymous, 2nd South Carolina String Band, *Southern Soldier*. The origins of this song are unclear, although Dan Emmett claimed he wrote it as a boy. Certain sensitive persons have claimed these lines perpetuate stereotypes about the large appetites of black men for food, alcohol and women; but the Almanacker finds something genuinely noble in Dan Tucker's straightforward lust for life. ¶18. There is an English folk song – well known on the other side of the Atlantic even in George Washington's day – about a Derby ram which was 'ten yards high', amongst other improbably large proportions.



Old *Dan Tucker* was a mighty man.  
 He washed his face in a frying pan.  
 He combed his hair with a wagon wheel,  
 And he died with a toothache in his heel.

Old *Dan Tucker* is back in town,  
 Swinging the ladies round & round:  
 First to the right, then to the left,  
 Then to the girl he liked the best.

Old *Dan Tucker* was a nice old man.  
 He used to ride a Derby ram.  
 He sent him whizzing down the hill.  
 If he hadn't got up, he'd lay there still.

Old *Dan Tucker* & I got drunk,  
 Fell in the fire, kicked up a chunk.  
 The charcoal got inside his shoe.  
 Lord bless me, honey, how the ashes flew!

I went to town to buy some goods.  
 I lost myself in a piece of woods.  
 The night was dark. I had to suffer.  
 I froze to the heel of *Daniel Tucker*.

*Tucker* was a hardened sinner.  
 He never said his grace at dinner.  
 The old sow squealed; the pigs did squall.  
 He ate whole hog, tail & all.

*Get out the way!*  
*Get out the way!*  
*Get out the way, old Dan Tucker!*  
*You're too late to get your supper!*

## XIX.2.

Let me not to the marriage of true minds  
 Admit impediments. Love is not love  
 Which alters when it alteration finds,  
 Or bends with the remover to remove:—

O no! it is an ever-fixèd mark  
 That looks on tempests, and is never shaken;

It is the star to every wandering bark,  
Whose worth's unknown, although his height be taken.

Love's not time's fool, though rosy lips & cheeks  
Within his bending sickle's compass come;  
Love alters not with his brief hours & weeks,  
But bears it out ev'n to the edge of doom:—

If this be error, and upon me proved,  
I never writ, nor no man ever loved.

**XIX.3.** A little sincerity is a dangerous thing, and a great deal of it is absolutely fatal.

## XX.

### XX.1.

*Tune: Jesse James*

*Jesse James* was a lad that killed many a man.  
He robbed the GLENDALE train.  
He stole from the rich and he gave to the poor.  
He'd a hand & a heart & a brain.

Well, it was *Robert Ford*, that dirty little coward,  
I wonder how he feels,  
For he ate of *Jesse's* bread and he slept in *Jesse's* bed,  
And he laid poor *Jesse* in his grave.

*Well Jesse had a wife to mourn for his life,*  
*Three children – now they were brave.*  
*That dirty little coward that shot Mr Howard*  
*Has laid Jesse James in his grave.*

*Jesse* was a man, a friend to the poor.  
He'd never rob a mother or a child.  
There never was a man with the law in his hand,  
That could take *Jesse James* when alive.

---

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Anonymous, Springsteen, *We Shall Overcome: The Seeger Sessions*. Jesse James has gone down in folklore as a Confederate guerilla and American Robin Hood. In truth, like all the historical folk heroes – Richard the Lionheart, Joan of Arc, Stalin – James was little more than your common-or-garden murderer. But the truth should never get in the way of a good story.

¶11. 'Mr Howard' was one of the false names James used whilst on the run.

It was on a saturday night, and the moon was shining bright.  
 They robbed the GLENDALE train,  
 And people they did say, o'er many miles away,  
 It was those outlaws; they're *Frank* and *Jesse James*!

Now the people held their breath when they heard of *Jesse's* death,  
 And wondered how he ever came to fall.  
*Robert Ford* – it was a fact – he shot *Jesse* in the back  
 While *Jesse* hung a picture on the wall

Now *Jesse* went to rest with his hand on his breast,  
 The devil will be upon his knee.  
 He was born one day in the County Clay,  
 And he came from a solitary race.

*Well Jesse had a wife to mourn for his life,  
 Three children – now they were brave.  
 That dirty little coward that shot Mr Howard  
 Has laid Jesse James in his grave.*

## XX.2.

Shall I compare thee to a summer's day?  
 Thou art more lovely & more temperate:  
 Rough winds do shake the darling buds of may,  
 And summer's lease hath all too short a date;

Sometime too hot the eye of heaven shines,  
 And often is his gold complexion dimmed;  
 And every fair from fair sometime declines,  
 By chance, or nature's changing course, untrimmed.

But thy eternal summer shall not fade,  
 Nor lose possession of that fair thou owest;  
 Nor shall death brag thou wanderest in his shade,  
 When in eternal lines to time thou growest:–

So long as men can breathe, or eyes can see,  
 So long lives this, and this gives life to thee.

## XX.3. A man cannot be too careful in the choice of his enemies.

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

**XXI.****XXI.1.***Tune: Deep River*

Deep river,  
 My home is over JORDAN.  
 Deep river, Lord,  
 I want to cross over into campground.

O don't you want to go  
 To that gospel feast,  
 That promised land  
 Where all is peace?

Deep river,  
 My home is over JORDAN.  
 Deep river, Lord,  
 I want to cross over into campground.

**XXI.2.**

Where the bee sucks, there suck I:  
 In a cowslip's bell I lie;  
 There I couch when owls do cry.  
 On the bat's back I do fly  
 After summer merrily.  
 Merrily, merrily shall I live now  
 Under the blossom that hangs on the bough.

**XXI.3.** Consistency is the last refuge of the unimaginative.

**XXII.****XXII.1.***Tune: Long Summer Day*

Well, a long summer day make a white man lazy.

*Long summer day!*

Long summer day make a white man lazy.

*Long summer day!*

---

Anonymous, Terfel, *Simple Gifts*. In negro spirituals (and elsewhere), crossing the river Jordan is a metaphor for death.

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This song is sung by Ariel in *The Tempest* V.1.

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Wilde, *Aristotle at Afternoon Tea: The Rare Oscar Wilde*.

Anonymous, Donegan, *Puttin' on the Style*. ¶19. Comparing with Lomax's *Our Singing Country*, it seems that Donegan bowdlerised the word 'nigger' out of his version.

*Long summer! Long summer!*  
*Long summer day!*  
*Long summer! Long summer!*  
*Long summer day!*

Well, a long summer day make a nigger run away, sir.  
 Long summer day make a slave run away, sir.

Well, a-pickin' that cotton in the bottom field.  
 It's a gath'rin' up the cotton in the bottom field.

Well, the mas'er and the mis'ess is a-sittin' in the parlour,  
 Just a-fixin' and a-studyin' how to work a slave harder.

Run away to see his *Mary*.  
 He run away to see his baby.

The mas'er killed his jersey bull to give the bull his bellyful.  
*Long summer day!*  
 The mas'er killed his jersey bull to give the bull his bellyful.  
*Long summer day!*

*Long summer! Long summer!*  
*Long summer day!*  
*Long summer! Long summer!*  
*Long summer day!*

## XXII.2.

I fear thy kisses, gentle maiden;  
 Thou needest not fear mine;  
 My spirit is too deeply laden  
 Ever to burthen thine.

I fear thy mien, thy tones, thy motion;  
 Thou needest not fear mine;  
 Innocent is the heart's devotion  
 With which I worship thine.

**XXII.3.** I can resist everything except temptation.

## XXIII.

---

Percy Shelley (1792 – 1822), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Home! Sweet Home!', John Payne (1791 – 1852), *Far Cry: New Dawn*. Payne wrote the words to this song for his 1823 opera *Clari, or the Maid of Milan*.

**XXIII.1.***Tune: Home Sweet Home*

'Mid pleasures and palaces though we may roam,  
 Be it ever so humble, there's no place like home;  
 A charm from the sky seems to hallow us there,  
 Which, seek through the world, is ne'er met with elsewhere.

*Home! Home!**Sweet, sweet home!**There's no place like home!**There's no place like home!*

An exile from home, splendour dazzles in vain;  
 O give me my lowly thatched cottage again!  
 The birds singing gaily, that come at my call –  
 Give me them – and the peace of mind, dearer than all!

I gaze on the moon as I tread the drear wild,  
 And feel that my mother now thinks of her child,  
 As she looks on that moon from our own cottage door  
 Through the woodbine, whose fragrance shall cheer me no more.

How sweet 'tis to sit 'neath a fond father's smile,  
 And the caress of a mother to soothe and beguile!  
 Let others delight 'mid new pleasures to roam,  
 But give me, O give me, the pleasures of home.

To thee I'll return, overburdened with care;  
 The heart's dearest solace will smile on me there;  
 No more from that cottage again will I roam;  
 Be it ever so humble, there's no place like home.

*Home! Home!**Sweet, sweet home!**There's no place like home!**There's no place like home!***XXIII.2.**

My truelove hath my heart, and I have his,  
 By just exchange one to the other given:  
 I hold his dear, and mine he cannot miss,

---

'A Ditty', Sir Philip Sidney (1554 – 1586), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

There never was a better bargain driven:  
 My truelove hath my heart, and I have his.

His heart in me keeps him & me in one,  
 My heart in him his thoughts & senses guides:  
 He loves my heart, for once it was his own,  
 I cherish his because in me it bides:

My truelove hath my heart, and I have his.

**XXIII.3.** I hope you have not been leading a double life, pretending to be wicked and being really good all the time; that would be hypocrisy.

## XXIV.

### XXIV.1.

*Tune: The Boatmen's Dance*

The boatmen dance; the boatmen sing;  
 The boatmen up to ev'rything.  
 And when the boatman gets on shore  
 He spends his cash and works for more.

*High row! The boatmen row!  
 Floatin' down the river the OHIO!  
 Then dance! The boatmen dance!  
 O dance! The boatmen dance!  
 O dance all night till broad daylight!  
 Go home with the gals in the mornin'!*

I went on board the other day  
 To see what the boatmen had to say.  
 There I let my passion loose  
 An' they cram me in the calaboose.

The boatman is a thrifty man.  
 There's none can do as the boatman can.  
 I never see a pretty gal in my life  
 But that she was a boatman's wife.

*High row! The boatmen row!  
 Floatin' down the river the OHIO!  
 Then dance! The boatmen dance!  
 O dance! The boatmen dance!*

---

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This a line from *The Importance of Being Earnest*.

Anonymous, Copland, *Old American Songs, Set 1*.

*O dance all night till broad daylight!  
Go home with the gals in the mornin'!*

## XXIV.2.

Fair is my love, when her fair golden heares,  
With the loose wind ye waving chance to mark:  
Fair when the rose in her red cheeks appears,  
Or in her eyes the fire of love does spark.  
Fair when her breast like a rich-laden bark,  
With precious merchandise she forth doth lay:  
Fair when that cloud of pride which oft doth dark  
Her goodly light with smiles she drives away,  
But fairest she, when so she doth display  
The gate with pearls & rubies richly light:  
Through which her words so wise do make their way  
To bear the message of her gentle sprite.  
The rest be works of nature's wonderment,  
But this the work of heart's astonishment.

XXIV.3. If one tells the truth, one is sure, sooner or later, to be found out.

## XXV.

### XXV.1.

*Tune: Big Rock Candy Mountains*

One evening as the sun went down  
And the jungle fire was burning,  
Up the track came a hobo hiking,  
And he said, Boys, I'm not turning.  
I'm headed for a land that's far away,  
Besides the crystal fountains.  
So come with me. We'll go and see  
The Big Rock Candy Mountains.

In the Big Rock Candy Mountains,  
There's a land that's fair & bright,

---

<sup>℞</sup> Edmund Spenser (1552 – 1599), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is one of Spenser's *Amoretti*.

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Wilde, *Phrases and Philosophies for the Use of the Young*.

Harry McClintock (1882 – 1957), *O Brother, Where Art Thou? Soundtrack*. ¶2. In the “Hobo” slang of the worker-vagrants of the United States, a ‘jungle’ is an improvised camp, often located near the freight yard of a railway. ¶3. In the same slang as above, a ‘hobo’ is distinguished from other kinds of homeless man in that he often gains transitory employment. ¶36. In the same slang as above, ‘bulls’ are policemen.



Where the handouts grow on bushes,  
And you sleep out every night,  
Where the boxcars all are empty,  
And the sun shines every day  
On the birds & the bees  
And the cigarette trees.  
The lemonade springs  
Where the bluebird sings,  
In the Big Rock Candy Mountains.

In the Big Rock Candy Mountains,  
All the cops have wooden legs,  
And the bulldogs all have rubber teeth,  
And the hens lay soft-boiled eggs.  
The farmers' trees are full of fruit,  
And the barns are full of hay.  
O I'm bound to go  
Where there ain't no snow.  
The rain don't fall,  
The wind don't blow,  
In the Big Rock Candy Mountains.

In the Big Rock Candy Mountains,  
You never change your socks,  
And the little streams of alcohol  
Come trickling down the rocks.  
The brakemen have to tip their hats  
And the railroad bulls are blind.  
There's a lake of stew  
And of whiskey too.  
You can paddle all around 'em  
In a big canoe.  
In the Big Rock Candy Mountains.

In the Big Rock Candy Mountains,  
The jails are made of tin,  
And you can walk right out again  
As soon as you are in.  
There ain't no short-handled shovels,  
No axes, saws or picks.  
I'm a-going to stay  
Where you sleep all day,  
Where they hung the turk

That invented work,  
In the Big Rock Candy Mountains.

I'll see you all  
This coming fall,  
In the Big Rock Candy Mountains.

## XXV.2.

Happy ye leaves when as those lily hands,  
Which hold my life in their dead doing might  
Shall handle you and hold in love's soft bands,  
Like captives trembling at the victor's sight.  
And happy lines, on which with starry light,  
Those lamping eyes will deign sometimes to look  
And read the sorrows of my dying sprite,  
Written with tears in heart's close bleeding book.  
And happy rhymes bathed in the sacred brook  
Of HELICON whence she derivèd is,  
When ye behold that angel's blessèd look,  
My soul's long lackèd food, my heaven's bliss.  
Leaves, lines & rhymes, seek her to please alone,  
Whom if ye please, I care for other none.

**XXV.3.** Many a woman has a past, but I am told that she has at least a dozen.

## XXVI.

### XXVI.1.

*Tune: Turkey in the Straw*

Old *Zip Coon*, he's a learned scholar.  
Old *Zip Coon*, he's a learned scholar.  
Old *Zip Coon*, he's a learned scholar,  
Sings possum up the gum tree, coonie in the holler.

*Possum up the gum tree! Coonie on the stump!*  
*Possum up the gum tree! Coonie on the stump!*  
*Possum up the gum tree! Coonie on the stump!*  
*Then over double trouble Zip Coon will jump!*

---

℞ Edmund Spenser (1552 – 1599), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is the first of Spenser's *Amoretti*. ¶10. The Helicon is a river in Greece, part of which runs underground. The women who murdered Orpheus attempted to wash their hands therein after their crime, but the water sank into the earth so as not to be stained with the poet's blood.

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Anonymous, 2nd South Carolina String Band, *Southern Soldier*.

It's old *Sukie Blueskin*, she is in love with me.  
 I went the other afternoon to take a cup of tea.  
 Now what do you old *Sukie* had for supper?  
 Why chicken foot & possum foot without any butter.

I went down SANDY HOLLOW the other afternoon,  
 And the first man I chanced to meet was old *Zip Coon*.  
 Old *Zip Coon*, he's a natty scholar,  
 For he plays upon the banjo "Coonie in the holler".

Well you heard about the battle of old NEW 'LEANS,  
 Where old General *Jackson* gave the british beans.  
 The yankees did the redcoats up so slick,  
 For they caught old *Pakenham* and rowed him up the creek.

*Possum up the gum tree! Coonie on the stump!*  
*Possum up the gum tree! Coonie on the stump!*  
*Possum up the gum tree! Coonie on the stump!*  
*Then over double trouble Zip Coon will jump!*

## XXVI.2.

More than most fair, full of the living fire,  
 Kindled above unto the maker near:  
 No eyes but joys, in which all powers conspire,  
 That to the world naught else be counted dear.  
 Through your bright beams doth not the blinded guest  
 Shoot out his darts to base affection's wound?  
 But angels come to lead frail minds to rest  
 In chaste desires on heavenly beauty bound.  
 You frame my thoughts & fashion me within;  
 You stop my tongue, & teach my heart to speak,  
 You calm the storm that passion did begin,  
 Strong through your cause, but by your virtue weak.  
 Dark is the world, where your light shinèd never;  
 Well is he born, that may behold you ever.

**XXVI.3.** None of us are perfect; I myself am peculiarly susceptible to draughts.

---

Edmund Spenser (1552 – 1599), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is one of Spenser's *Amoretti*.

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This a line from *The Importance of Being Earnest*.

## XXVII.

## XXVII.1.

*Tune: O Lud Gals*

It's up the rope and down the cable.  
 Forty horses in the stable.  
 First an indian then a squaw,  
 Going away to the ARKANSAS.

*O lud, gals!*  
*Give me chaw tobacco!*  
*O lud, gals!*  
*Fetch along the whisky!*  
*Makes my head swim when I get a little tipsy!*

It's vinegar shoes & paper stockings,  
 Says to me Miss *Polly Hopkins*.  
 My wife's dead, and I'm a widder,  
 All the way from the rolling river.

If I had wife & a little baby,  
 I'd support her like a lady.  
 Gods of war & little fishes,  
 Earthen plates & pewter dishes.

Cow hide shoes & buck skin breeches:  
 Give the gal that sews the stitches,  
 Prettiest thing in all creation:  
 Yaller gal in the wild goose nation.

It's all the way from the indian nation:  
 A little corn crib on a big plantation.  
 My wife's dead; I'll get another,  
 Pretty little black gal just like the other.

Blow away, ye gentle breezes,  
 Down among them cinammon treeses.  
 There I sit long with the muses,  
 Mending my old boots & shoeses.

*O lud, gals!*  
*Give me chaw tobacco!*  
*O lud, gals!*

*Fetch along the whisky!*  
*Makes my head swim when I get a little tipsy!*

**XXVII.2.**

One day I wrote her name upon the strand,  
 But came the waves & washèd it away:  
 Again I wrote it with a second hand,  
 But came the tide, and made my pains his prey.  
 Vain man, said she, that dost in vain assay,  
 A mortal thing so to immortalise;  
 For I myself shall like to this decay,  
 And eke my name be wipèd out likewise.  
 Not so, quod I. Let baser things devise  
 To die in dust, but you shall live by fame:  
 My verse your virtues rare shall eternise,  
 And in the heavens write your glorious name:  
 Where whenas death shall all the world subdue,  
 Our love shall live, and later life renew.

**XXVII.3.** Only dull people are brilliant at breakfast.

**XXVIII.**

**XXVIII.1.**

*Tune: Michael Row de Boat Ashore*  
*Michael, row the boat ashore.*  
*Hallelujah!*  
*Michael row the boat ashore.*  
*Hallelujah!*

Sister help to trim the sail.  
*Hallelujah!*  
 Sister help to trim the sail.  
*Hallelujah!*

The RIVER JORDAN is chilly and cold,  
*Hallelujah!*

---

Edmund Spenser (1552 – 1599), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is one of Spenser's *Amoretti*.

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Wilde, *An Ideal Husband*.

Anonymous, Beach Boys, *Dumb Angel Rarities, Vol 3*. According to William Allen's *Slave Songs of the United States*, this song sprang up among newly-freed slaves who had been stranded on Saint Helena Island, South Carolina, due to the vicissitudes of the American Civil War. The river Jordan has long been a metaphor for death, and the Archangel Michael is often said to be the conductor of the souls of the departed into the afterlife.

Chills the body but not the soul.

*Hallelujah!*

The river is deep and the river is wide.

*Hallelujah!*

Milk and honey on the other side.

*Hallelujah!*

*Michael, row the boat ashore.*

*Hallelujah!*

*Michael row the boat ashore.*

*Hallelujah!*

## XXVIII.2.

Lying asleep between the strokes of night,  
 I saw my love lean over my sad bed,  
 Pale as the duskiest lily's leaf or head,  
 Smooth-skinned & dark, with bare throat made to bite,  
 Too wan for blushing & too warm for white,  
 But perfect-coloured without white or red.  
 And her lips opened amorously, and said  
 I wist not what, saving one word: delight.  
 And all her face was honey to my mouth,  
 And all her body pasture to mine eyes;  
 The long lithe arms & hotter hands than fire,  
 The quivering flanks, hair smelling of the south,  
 The bright light feet, the splendid supple thighs  
 And glittering eyelids of my soul's desire.

**XXVIII.3.** There is only one thing in the world worse than being talked about, and that is not being talked about.

## XXIX.

### XXIX.1.

*Tune: The Bastard King of England*

O the minstrels sing of english king,  
 Many long years ago,  
 Who ruled his land with an iron hand,

---

'Love and Sleep', Algernon Swinburne (1837 – 1909), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Anonymous, Father and Friends, *The Black Album*. While the origins of this folk song are elusive, its first appearance in print seems to have been in *Immortalia* (1927).

Though his morals were weak & low.  
He loved to hunt the royal stag  
That lived in the royal wood,  
But better than it he loved to sit  
And pound the royal pud.  
He was dirty & lousy & full of fleas!  
His terrible tool hung down to his knees!  
God bless the bastard King of England!

The Queen of Spain was an amorous jane;  
A lascivious wench was she.  
She loved to fool with the bastard's tool,  
So far across the sea;  
So she sent a special letter  
By a special messenger,  
To ask the king if he would spend  
A night or two with her.  
He was wild & woolly & full of fleas!  
He had his women by twos & three!  
God save the bastard King of England!

When *Philip* of France heard of this,  
He summoned the royal court –  
'Because she loves my rival more  
Because my tool is short.'  
He sent the Duke of Zippity-Zap  
To give the queen a dose of the clap,  
To give to the bastard King of England.

When the bastard king he heard of this,  
All in fair WINDSOR's walls,  
He took the oath: by his hairy growth,  
He'd have the frenchman's balls.  
So he offered  $\frac{1}{2}$  his kingdom  
And a piece of the Queen *Hortense*  
To any man with a cunning plan  
Who'd diddle the King of France.  
A volunteer he soon was found.  
His cries & spies were well renowned.  
Farwell, the bastard King of England!

Then the royal Duke of Buttock  
Betook himself to France.

For he was a faggot,  
 So he took off his pants.  
 But at the crucial moment –  
 Now here's the best of all –  
 As *Philip* left, the duke's right cleft  
 Had seized the frenchman's balls.  
 Around his dong he slipped a thong,  
 Upped on his horse and dragged him along  
 Back to the bastard King of England.

Well, when he reached fair England's shore,  
 He fainted on the shore,  
 For on the ride King *Philip*'s pride  
 Had stretched out six times more.  
 The maids of all the countryside  
 Who gathered in the town,  
 They took one look at the frenchman's crook  
 And denounced the royal crown.  
 They set King *Philip* upon the throne.  
 His sceptre was his royal bone.  
 Farewell, the bastard King of England!

He was dirty & lousy & full of fleas!  
 His terrible tool hung down to his knees!  
 God damn the bastard King of England.

## XXIX.2.

My heart leaps up when I behold  
 A rainbow in the sky:  
 So was it when my life began;  
 So is it now I am a man;  
 So be it when I shall grow old,  
 Or let me die!  
 The child is father of the man;  
 And I could wish my days to be  
 Bound each to each by natural piety.

**XXIX.3.** We are all in the gutter, but some of us are looking at the stars.

---

Dr William Wordsworth, Poet Laureate (1770 – 1850), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.



## CHAPTER 7

# September

### I.

#### I.1.

When lilacs last in the door-yard bloomed,  
And the great star early drooped in the western sky in the  
    night,  
I mourned, and yet shall mourn with ever-returning spring.

Ever-returning spring, trinity sure to me you bring,  
Lilac blooming perennial and drooping star in the west,  
And thought of him I love. ¶

O powerful western fallen star!  
O shades of night – O moody, tearful night!  
O great star disappeared – O the black murk that hides  
    the star!  
O cruel hands that hold me powerless – O helpless soul of  
    me!  
O harsh surrounding cloud that will not free my soul.

In the door-yard fronting an old farm-house near the white-  
    washed palings,  
Stands the lilac-bush tall-growing with heart-shaped leaves  
    of rich green,  
With many a pointed blossom rising delicate, with the per-  
    fume strong I love,  
With every leaf a miracle—and from this bush in the door-  
    yard,

---

‘When Lilacs Last in the Door-Yard Bloom’d’, Walt Whitman (1819 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This poem is an elegy for Abraham Lincoln, 16th President of the United States.

With delicate-coloured blossoms & heart-shaped leaves of  
 rich green,  
 A sprig with its flower I break. ❸

In the swamp in secluded recesses,  
 A shy & hidden bird is warbling a song.

Solitary the thrush,  
 The hermit withdrawn to himself, avoiding the settlements,  
 Sings by himself a song.

Song of the bleeding throat,  
 Death's outlet song of life, (for well, dear brother, I know,  
 If thou wast not granted to sing thou would'st surely die).  
 ❹

Over the breast of the spring, the land, amid cities,  
 Amid lanes & through old woods, where lately the violets  
 peeped from the ground, spotting the gray debris,  
 Amid the grass in the fields each side of the lanes, passing  
 the endless grass,  
 Passing the yellow-speared wheat, every grain from its shroud  
 in the dark-brown fields uprisen,  
 Passing the apple-tree blows of white & pink in the or-  
 chards,  
 Carrying a corpse to where it shall rest in the grave,  
 Night & day journeys a coffin. ❺

Coffin that passes through lanes & streets,  
 Through day & night with the great cloud darkening the  
 land,  
 With the pomp of the inlooped flags with the cities draped  
 in black,  
 With the show of the States themselves as of crape-veiled  
 women standing,  
 With processions long and winding and the flambeaus of  
 the night,  
 With the countless torches lit, with the silent sea of faces  
 and the unbared heads,  
 With the waiting depot, the arriving coffin, and the sombre  
 faces,  
 With dirges through the night, with the 1000 voices rising  
 strong & solemn,

With all the mournful voices of the dirges poured around  
     the coffin,  
 The dim-lit churches & the shuddering organs – where amid  
     these you journey,  
 With the tolling tolling bells' perpetual clang,  
 Here, coffin that slowly passes,  
 I give you my sprig of lilac. ❧

(Nor for you, for one alone,  
 Blossoms & branches green to coffins all I bring,  
 For fresh as the morning, thus would I chant a song for you,  
     O sane & sacred death.

All over bouquets of roses,  
 O death, I cover you over with roses & early lilies,  
 But mostly & now the lilac that blooms the first,  
 Copious I break, I break the sprigs from the bushes,  
 With loaded arms I come, pouring for you,  
 For you and the coffins all of you, O death.) ❧

O western orb sailing the heaven,  
 Now I know what you must have meant as a month since  
     I walked,  
 As I walked in silence the transparent shadowy night,  
 As I saw you had something to tell as you bent to me night  
     after night,  
 As you drooped from the sky low down as if to my side,  
     (while the other stars all looked on,)  
 As we wandered together the solemn night, (for something  
     I know not what kept me from sleep,)  
 As the night advanced, and I saw on the rim of the west  
     how full you were of woe,  
 As I stood on the rising ground in the breeze in the cool  
     transparent night,  
 As I watched where you passed and was lost in the nether-  
     ward black of the night,  
 As my soul in its trouble dissatisfied sank, as where you,  
     sad orb,  
 Concluded, dropped in the night, and was gone. ❧

Sing on there in the swamp,  
 O singer bashful & tender. I hear your notes; I hear your  
     call,

I hear, I come presently, I understand you,  
But a moment I linger, for the lustrous star has detained  
me,  
The star my departing comrade holds and detains me. §

O how shall I warble myself for the dead one there I loved?  
And how shall I deck my song for the large sweet soul that  
has gone?  
And what shall my perfume be for the grave of him I love?

Sea-winds blown from east & west,  
Blown from the eastern sea and blown from the western  
sea, till there on the prairies meeting,  
These & with these & the breath of my chant,  
I'll perfume the grave of him I love. §

O what shall I hang on the chamber walls?  
And what shall the pictures be that I hang on the walls,  
To adorn the burial-house of him I love?

Pictures of growing spring & farms & homes,  
With the fourth-month eve at sundown, & the grey smoke  
lucid & bright,  
With floods of the yellow gold of the gorgeous, indolent,  
sinking sun, burning, expanding the air,  
With the fresh sweet herbage under foot, & the pale green  
leaves of the trees prolific,  
In the distance the flowing glaze, the breast of the river,  
with a wind-dapple here & there,  
With ranging hills on the banks, with many a line against  
the sky, & shadows,  
And the city at hand with dwellings so dense, & stacks of  
chimneys,  
And all the scenes of life & the workshops, & the workmen  
homeward returning. §

Lo, body & soul – this land,  
My own MANHATTAN with spires, and the sparkling & hur-  
rying tides, and the ships,  
The varied & ample land, the south and the north in the  
light, OHIO's shores and flashing MISSOURI,  
And ever the far-spreading prairies covered with grass &  
corn.

Lo, the most excellent sun so calm & haughty,  
 The violet & purple morn with just-felt breezes,  
 The gentle soft-born measureless light,  
 The miracle spreading bathing all, the fulfilled noon,  
 The coming eve delicious, the welcome night & the stars,  
 Over my cities shining all, enveloping man and land. §

Sing on, sing on, you gray-brown bird.  
 Sing from the swamps, the recesses, pour your chant from  
     the bushes,  
 Limitless out of the dusk, out of the cedars and pines.

Sing on dearest brother, warble your reedy song,  
 Loud human song, with voice of uttermost woe.

O liquid & free & tender!  
 O wild & loose to my soul – O wondrous singer!  
 You only I hear – yet the star holds me, (but will soon  
     depart,)  
 Yet the lilac with mastering odor holds me. §

Now while I sat in the day and looked forth,  
 In the close of the day with its light and the fields of spring,  
     and the farmers preparing their crops,  
 In the large unconscious scenery of my land with its lakes  
     & forests,  
 In the heavenly aerial beauty (after the perturbed winds  
     and the storms)  
 Under the arching heavens of the afternoon swift passing,  
     and the voices of children & women,  
 The many-moving sea-tides, and I saw the ships how they  
     sailed,  
 And the summer approaching with richness, and the fields  
     all busy with labour,  
 And the infinite separate houses, how they all went on, each  
     with its meals & minutiae of daily usages,  
 And the streets how their throbbings throbbed, and the  
     cities pent – lo, then & there,  
 Falling upon them all & among them all, enveloping me  
     with the rest,  
 Appeared the cloud, appeared the long black trail,  
 And I knew death, its thought, and the sacred knowledge  
     of death.

Then with the knowledge of death as walking one side of  
me,  
And the thought of death close-walking the other side of  
me,  
And I in the middle as with companions, and as holding  
the hands of companions,  
I fled forth to the hiding receiving night that talks not,  
Down to the shores of the water, the path by the swamp  
in the dimness,  
To the solemn shadowy cedars and ghostly pines so still.

And the singer so shy to the rest received me,  
The grey-brown bird I know received us comrades three,  
And he sang the carol of death, and a verse for him I love.

From deep secluded recesses,  
From the fragrant cedars and the ghostly pines so still,  
Came the carol of the bird.

And the charm of the carol rapt me,  
As I held as if by their hands my comrades in the night,  
And the voice of my spirit tallied the song of the bird.

Come lovely & soothing death,  
Undulate round the world, serenely arriving, arriving,  
In the day, in the night, to all, to each,  
Sooner or later delicate death.

Praised be the fathomless universe,  
For life & joy, and for objects & knowledge curious,  
And for love, sweet love—but praise! praise! praise!  
For the sure-enwinding arms of cool-enfolding death.

Dark mother always gliding near with soft feet,  
Have none chanted for thee a chant of fullest welcome?  
Then I chant it for thee, I glorify thee above all,  
I bring thee a song that when thou must indeed come, come  
unfalteringly.

Approach strong deliveress,  
When it is so, when thou hast taken them I joyously sing  
the dead,  
Lost in the loving floating ocean of thee,  
Laved in the flood of thy bliss, O death.

From me to thee glad serenades,  
 Dances for thee I propose saluting thee, adornments &  
     feastings for thee,  
 And the sights of the open landscape & the high-spread  
     sky are fitting,  
 And life and the fields, and the huge and thoughtful night.

The night in silence under many a star,  
 The ocean shore and the husky whispering wave whose  
     voice I know,  
 And the soul turning to thee, O vast & well-veiled death,  
 And the body gratefully nestling close to thee.

Over the tree-tops I float thee a song,  
 Over the rising and sinking waves, over the myriad fields  
     and the prairies wide,  
 Over the dense-packed cities all and the teeming wharves  
     & ways,  
 I float this carol with joy, with joy to thee, O death. ॐ

To the tally of my soul,  
 Loud & strong kept up the grey-brown bird,  
 With pure deliberate notes spreading, filling the night.

Loud in the pines & cedars dim,  
 Clear in the freshness moist and the swamp-perfume,  
 And I with my comrades there in the night.

While my sight that was bound in my eyes unclosed,  
 As to long panoramas of visions.

And I saw askant the armies;  
 I saw as in noiseless dreams 100s of battle-flags,  
 Borne through the smoke of the battles and pierced with  
     missiles I saw them,  
 And carried hither & yon through the smoke, and torn &  
     bloody,  
 And at last but a few shreds left on the staffs, (and all in  
     silence,)  
 And the staffs all splintered and broken.

I saw battle-corpses, myriads of them,  
 And the white skeletons of young men, I saw them,

I saw the debris & debris of all the slain soldiers of the war,

But I saw they were not as was thought,  
 They themselves were fully at rest; they suffered not;  
 The living remained and suffered; the mother suffered;  
 And the wife & the child & the musing comrade suffered,  
 And the armies that remained suffered. §

Passing the visions, passing the night,  
 Passing, unloosing the hold of my comrades' hands,  
 Passing the song of the hermit bird and the tallying song  
     of my soul,  
 Victorious song, death's outlet song, yet varying ever-altering  
     song,  
 As low & wailing, yet clear the notes, rising & falling, flood-  
     ing the night,  
 Sadly sinking & fainting, as warning & warning, and yet  
     again bursting with joy,  
 Covering the earth & filling the spread of the heaven,  
 As that powerful psalm in the night I heard from recesses,  
 Passing, I leave thee lilac with heart-shaped leaves,  
 I leave thee there in the door-yard, blooming, returning  
     with spring.

I cease from my song for thee,  
 From my gaze on thee in the west, fronting the west, com-  
     muning with thee,  
 O comrade lustrous with silver face in the night.

Yet each to keep and all, retrievements out of the night,  
 The song, the wondrous chant of the grey-brown bird,  
 And the tallying chant, the echo aroused in my soul,  
 With the lustrous & drooping star with the countenance  
     full of woe,  
 With the holders holding my hand nearing the call of the  
     bird,  
 Comrades mine & I in the midst, and their memory ever  
     to keep, for the dead I loved so well,  
 For the sweetest, wisest soul of all my days & lands – and  
     this for his dear sake,  
 Lilac & star & bird twined with the chant of my soul,  
 There in the fragrant pines and the cedars dusk & dim.



## I.2.

Weep you no more, sad fountains;  
 What need you flow so fast?  
 Look how the snowy mountains  
 Heaven's sun doth gently waste.  
 But my sun's heav'nly eyes  
 View not your weeping,  
 That now lies sleeping,  
 Softly, softly, now softly lies  
 Sleeping.

Sleep is a reconciling,  
 A rest that peace begets.  
 Doth not the sun rise smiling  
 When fair at e'en he sets?  
 Rest you then, rest, sad eyes;  
 Melt not in weeping  
 While she lies sleeping,  
 Softly, softly, now softly lies  
 Sleeping.

I.3. Better is a dinner of herbs where love is, than a stalled ox and hatred therewith.

## II.

## II.1.

I wandered lonely as a cloud  
 That floats on high o'er vales & hills,  
 When all at once I saw a crowd,  
 A host, of golden daffodils;  
 Beside the lake, beneath the trees,  
 Fluttering and dancing in the breeze.

Continuous as the stars that shine  
 And twinkle on the milky way,  
 They stretched in never-ending line  
 Along the margin of a bay:  
 Ten thousand saw I at a glance,  
 Tossing their heads in sprightly dance.

---

Anonymous, Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Proverbs 15.17, Anonymous, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Dr William Wordsworth, Poet Laureate (1770 – 1850), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

The waves beside them danced; but they  
 Out-did the sparkling waves in glee:  
 A poet could not but be gay,  
 In such a jocund company:  
 I gazed & gazed, but little thought  
 What wealth the show to me had brought:

For oft, when on my couch I lie  
 In vacant or in pensive mood,  
 They flash upon that inward eye  
 Which is the bliss of solitude;  
 And then my heart with pleasure fills,  
 And dances with the daffodils.

## II.2.

It is a beauteous evening, calm & free,  
 The holy time is quiet as a nun  
 Breathless with adoration; the broad sun  
 Is sinking down in its tranquillity;  
 The gentleness of heaven broods o'er the sea;  
 Listen! The mighty Being is awake,  
 And doth with his eternal motion make  
 A sound like thunder – everlastingly.  
 Dear child, dear girl, that walkest with me here,  
 If thou appear untouched by solemn thought,  
 Thy nature is not therefore less divine:  
 Thou liest in *Abraham's* bosom all the year;  
 And worshipp'st at the Temple's inner shrine,  
 God being with thee when we know it not.

II.3. Youth would be an ideal state if it came a little later in life.

## III.

### III.1.

There was a roaring in the wind all night;  
 The rain came heavily and fell in floods;  
 But now the sun is rising calm & bright;  
 The birds are singing in the distant woods;

---

Dr William Wordsworth, Poet Laureate (1770 – 1850), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Herbert Asquith, 1st Earl of Oxford and Asquith (1852 – 1928), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Resolution and Independence', Dr William Wordsworth, Poet Laureate (1770 – 1850), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Over his own sweet voice the stock-dove broods;  
The jay makes answer as the magpie chatters;  
And all the air is filled with pleasant noise of waters.

All things that love the sun are out of doors;  
The sky rejoices in the morning's birth;  
The grass is bright with rain-drops; on the moors  
The hare is running races in her mirth;  
And with her feet she from the plashy earth  
Raises a mist, that, glittering in the sun,  
Runs with her all the way, wherever she doth run.

I was a traveller then upon the moor;  
I saw the hare that raced about with joy;  
I heard the woods and distant waters roar;  
Or heard them not, as happy as a boy:  
The pleasant season did my heart employ:  
My old remembrances went from me wholly;  
And all the ways of men, so vain and melancholy.

But, as it sometimes chanceth, from the might  
Of joys in minds that can no further go,  
As high as we have mounted in delight  
In our dejection do we sink as low;  
To me that morning did it happen so;  
And fears and fancies thick upon me came;  
Dim sadness – and blind thoughts, I knew not, nor could name.

I heard the sky-lark warbling in the sky;  
And I bethought me of the playful hare:  
Even such a happy child of earth am I;  
Even as these blissful creatures do I fare;  
Far from the world I walk, and from all care;  
But there may come another day to me –  
Solitude, pain of heart, distress, and poverty.

My whole life I have lived in pleasant thought,  
As if life's business were a summer mood;  
As if all needful things would come unsought  
To genial faith, still rich in genial good;  
But how can He expect that others should  
Build for him, sow for him, and at his call  
Love him, who for himself will take no heed at all?

I thought of *Chatterton*, the marvellous boy,  
The sleepless soul that perished in his pride;  
Of him who walked in glory and in joy  
Following his plough, along the mountain-side:  
By our own spirits are we deified:  
We Poets in our youth begin in gladness;  
But thereof come in the end despondency & madness.

Now, whether it were by peculiar grace,  
A leading from above, a something given,  
Yet it befell that, in this lonely place,  
When I with these untoward thoughts had striven,  
Beside a pool bare to the eye of heaven  
I saw a man before me unawares:  
The oldest man he seemed that ever wore grey hairs.

As a huge stone is sometimes seen to lie  
Couched on the bald top of an eminence;  
Wonder to all who do the same espy,  
By what means it could thither come, and whence;  
So that it seems a thing endued with sense:  
Like a sea-beast crawled forth, that on a shelf  
Of rock or sand reposeth, there to sun itself;

Such seemed this man, not all alive nor dead,  
Nor all asleep – in his extreme old age:  
His body was bent double, feet & head  
Coming together in life's pilgrimage;  
As if some dire constraint of pain, or rage  
Of sickness felt by him in times long past,  
A more than human weight upon his frame had cast.

Himself he propped, limbs, body, and pale face,  
Upon a long grey staff of shaven wood:  
And, still as I drew near with gentle pace,  
Upon the margin of that moorish flood  
Motionless as a cloud the old Man stood,  
That heareth not the loud winds when they call,  
And moveth all together, if it move at all.

At length, himself unsettling, he the pond  
Stirred with his staff, and fixedly did look  
Upon the muddy water, which he conned,  
As if he had been reading in a book:

And now a stranger's privilege I took;  
And, drawing to his side, to him did say,  
'This morning gives us promise of a glorious day.'

A gentle answer did the old man make,  
In courteous speech which forth he slowly drew:  
And him with further words I thus bespake,  
'What occupation do you there pursue?  
This is a lonesome place for one like you.'  
Ere he replied, a flash of mild surprise  
Broke from the sable orbs of his yet-vivid eyes.

His words came feebly, from a feeble chest,  
But each in solemn order followed each,  
With something of a lofty utterance drest –  
Choice word and measured phrase, above the reach  
Of ordinary men; a stately speech;  
Such as grave livers do in Scotland use,  
Religious men, who give to God and man their dues.

He told, that to these waters he had come  
To gather leeches, being old and poor:  
Employment hazardous and wearisome!  
And he had many hardships to endure:  
From pond to pond he roamed, from moor to moor;  
Housing, with God's good help, by choice or chance;  
And in this way he gained an honest maintenance.

The old man still stood talking by my side;  
But now his voice to me was like a stream  
Scarce heard; nor word from word could I divide;  
And the whole body of the Man did seem  
Like one whom I had met with in a dream;  
Or like a man from some far region sent,  
To give me human strength, by apt admonishment.

My former thoughts returned: the fear that kills;  
And hope that is unwilling to be fed;  
Cold, pain, and labour, and all fleshly ills;  
And mighty poets in their misery dead.  
Perplexed, and longing to be comforted,  
My question eagerly did I renew,  
'How is it that you live, and what is it you do?'

He with a smile did then his words repeat;  
 And said that, gathering leeches, far & wide  
 He travelled; stirring thus about his feet  
 The waters of the pools where they abide.  
 'Once I could meet with them on every side;  
 But they have dwindled long by slow decay;  
 Yet still I persevere, and find them where I may.'

While he was talking thus, the lonely place,  
 The old man's shape, and speech – all troubled me:  
 In my mind's eye I seemed to see him pace  
 About the weary moors continually,  
 Wandering about alone and silently.  
 While I these thoughts within myself pursued,  
 He, having made a pause, the same discourse renewed.

And soon with this he other matter blended,  
 Cheerfully uttered, with demeanour kind,  
 But stately in the main; and, when he ended,  
 I could have laughed myself to scorn to find  
 In that decrepit man so firm a mind.  
 'God,' said I, 'be my help and stay secure;  
 I'll think of the leech-gatherer on the lonely moor!'

### III.2.

Does the road wind up-hill all the way?  
 Yes, to the very end.  
 Will the day's journey take the whole long day?  
 From morn to night, my friend.

But is there for the night a resting-place?  
 A roof for when the slow dark hours begin.  
 May not the darkness hide it from my face?  
 You cannot miss that inn.

Shall I meet other wayfarers at night?  
 Those who have gone before.  
 Then must I knock, or call when just in sight?  
 They will not keep you standing at that door.

Shall I find comfort, travel-sore and weak?  
 Of labour you shall find the sum.

---

'Up-Hill', Miss Christina Rossetti (1830 – 1894), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Will there be beds for me and all who seek?  
 Yea, beds for all who come.

**III.3.** Fear God, and take your own part.

#### IV.

##### IV.1.

Five years have passed; five summers, with the length  
 Of five long winters, and again I hear  
 These waters, rolling from their mountain springs  
 With a soft inland murmur. Once again  
 Do I behold these steep & lofty cliffs,  
 That on a wild secluded scene impress  
 Thoughts of more deep seclusion; and connect  
 The landscape with the quiet of the sky.  
 The day is come when I again repose  
 Here, under this dark sycamore, and view  
 These plots of cottage-ground, these orchard-tufts,  
 Which at this season, with their unripe fruits,  
 Are clad in one green hue, and lose themselves  
 'Mid groves and copses. Once again I see  
 These hedge-rows, hardly hedgerows, little lines  
 Of sportive wood run wild: these pastoral farms,  
 Green to the very door; and wreaths of smoke  
 Sent up, in silence, from among the trees!  
 With some uncertain notice, as might seem  
 Of vagrant dwellers in the houseless woods,  
 Or of some hermit's cave, where by his fire  
 The hermit sits alone. These beauteous forms,  
 Through a long absence, have not been to me  
 As is a landscape to a blind man's eye:  
 But oft, in lonely rooms, and 'mid the din  
 Of towns and cities, I have owed to them,  
 In hours of weariness, sensations sweet,  
 Felt in the blood, and felt along the heart;  
 And passing even into my purer mind  
 With tranquil restoration: feelings too  
 Of unremembered pleasure: such, perhaps,  
 As have no slight or trivial influence

---

George Borrow (1803 – 1881), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Lines Composed a Few Miles above Tintern Abbey, On Revisiting the Banks of the Wye during a Tour, July 13, 1798', Dr William Wordsworth, Poet Laureate (1770 – 1850), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

On that best portion of a good man's life,  
His little, nameless, unremembered, acts  
Of kindness and of love. Nor less, I trust,  
To them I may have owed another gift,  
Of aspect more sublime; that blessed mood,  
In which the burthen of the mystery,  
In which the heavy and the weary weight  
Of all this unintelligible world,  
Is lightened: that serene and blessed mood,  
In which the affections gently lead us on,  
Until, the breath of this corporeal frame  
And even the motion of our human blood  
Almost suspended, we are laid asleep  
In body, and become a living soul:  
While with an eye made quiet by the power  
Of harmony, and the deep power of joy,  
We see into the life of things. If this  
Be but a vain belief, yet, O! how oft  
In darkness and amid the many shapes  
Of joyless daylight; when the fretful stir  
Unprofitable, and the fever of the world,  
Have hung upon the beatings of my heart  
How oft, in spirit, have I turned to thee,  
O sylvan WYE! thou wanderer through the woods,  
How often has my spirit turned to thee!

And now, with gleams of half-extinguished thought,  
With many recognitions dim and faint,  
And somewhat of a sad perplexity,  
The picture of the mind revives again:  
While here I stand, not only with the sense  
Of present pleasure, but with pleasing thoughts  
That in this moment there is life and food  
For future years. And so I dare to hope,  
Though changed, no doubt, from what I was when first  
I came among these hills; when like a roe  
I bounded o'er the mountains, by the sides  
Of the deep rivers, and the lonely streams,  
Wherever nature led: more like a man  
Flying from something that he dreads, than one  
Who sought the thing he loved. For nature then  
(The coarser pleasures of my boyish days  
And their glad animal movements all gone by)



To me was all in all. I cannot paint  
What then I was. The sounding cataract  
Haunted me like a passion: the tall rock,  
The mountain, and the deep and gloomy wood,  
Their colours and their forms, were then to me  
An appetite; a feeling and a love,  
That had no need of a remoter charm,  
By thought supplied, not any interest  
Unborrowed from the eye. That time is past,  
And all its aching joys are now no more,  
And all its dizzy raptures. Not for this  
Faint I, nor mourn nor murmur; other gifts  
Have followed; for such loss, I would believe,  
Abundant recompense. For I have learned  
To look on nature, not as in the hour  
Of thoughtless youth; but hearing oftentimes  
The still sad music of humanity,  
Nor harsh nor grating, though of ample power  
To chasten and subdue. And I have felt  
A presence that disturbs me with the joy  
Of elevated thoughts; a sense sublime  
Of something far more deeply interfused,  
Whose dwelling is the light of setting suns,  
And the round ocean and the living air,  
And the blue sky, and in the mind of man:  
A motion and a spirit, that impels  
All thinking things, all objects of all thought,  
And rolls through all things. Therefore am I still  
A lover of the meadows & the woods  
And mountains; and of all that we behold  
From this green earth; of all the mighty world  
Of eye, and ear, both what they half create,  
And what perceive; well pleased to recognise  
In nature and the language of the sense  
The anchor of my purest thoughts, the nurse,  
The guide, the guardian of my heart, and soul  
Of all my moral being. Nor perchance,  
If I were not thus taught, should I the more  
Suffer my genial spirits to decay:  
For thou art with me here upon the banks  
Of this fair river; thou my dearest friend,  
My dear, dear friend; and in thy voice I catch

The language of my former heart, and read  
My former pleasures in the shooting lights  
Of thy wild eyes. O! yet a little while  
May I behold in thee what I was once,  
My dear, dear sister! and this prayer I make,  
Knowing that nature never did betray  
The heart that loved her; 'tis her privilege,  
Through all the years of this our life, to lead  
From joy to joy: for she can so inform  
The mind that is within us, so impress  
With quietness and beauty, and so feed  
With lofty thoughts, that neither evil tongues,  
Rash judgments, nor the sneers of selfish men,  
Nor greetings where no kindness is, nor all  
The dreary intercourse of daily life,  
Shall e'er prevail against us, or disturb  
Our cheerful faith, that all which we behold  
Is full of blessings. Therefore let the moon  
Shine on thee in thy solitary walk;  
And let the misty mountain-winds be free  
To blow against thee: and, in after years,  
When these wild ecstasies shall be matured  
Into a sober pleasure; when thy mind  
Shall be a mansion for all lovely forms,  
Thy memory be as a dwelling-place  
For all sweet sounds and harmonies; O! then,  
If solitude, or fear, or pain, or grief,  
Should be thy portion, with what healing thoughts  
Of tender joy wilt thou remember me,  
And these my exhortations! Nor, perchance  
If I should be where I no more can hear  
Thy voice, nor catch from thy wild eyes these gleams  
Of past existence – wilt thou then forget  
That on the banks of this delightful stream  
We stood together; and that I, so long  
A worshipper of nature, hither came  
Unwearied in that service: rather say  
With warmer love – O! with far deeper zeal  
Of holier love. Nor wilt thou then forget,  
That after many wanderings, many years  
Of absence, these steep woods and lofty cliffs,

And this green pastoral landscape, were to me  
More dear, both for themselves and for thy sake!

#### IV.2.

When you are old & grey & full of sleep,  
And nodding by the fire, take down this book,  
And slowly read, and dream of the soft look  
Your eyes had once, and of their shadows deep;

How many loved your moments of glad grace,  
And loved your beauty with love false or true,  
But one man loved the pilgrim soul in you,  
And loved the sorrows of your changing face;

And bending down beside the glowing bars,  
Murmur, a little sadly, how love fled  
And paced upon the mountains overhead  
And hid his face amid a crowd of stars.

**IV.3.** You and I ought not to die before we have explained ourselves to each other.

#### V.

##### V.1.

Behold her, single in the field,  
Yon solitary highland lass,  
Reaping and singing by herself.  
Stop here, or gently pass!  
Alone she cuts & binds the grain,  
And sings a melancholy strain;  
O listen, for the vale profound  
Is overflowing with the sound.

No nightingale did ever chaunt  
More welcome notes to weary bands  
Of travellers in some shady haunt,

---

William Yeats (1865 – 1939), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This poem is a translation of a sonnet by the French poet Pierre de Ronsard; the Almanacker is not qualified to judge how faithful it is.

John Adams, 2nd President of the United States (1735 – 1826), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. Adams wrote these words in a letter to Thomas Jefferson, 3rd President of the United States.

Dr William Wordsworth, Poet Laureate (1770 – 1850), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The poet needs someone to interpret the song for him because the girl is singing in Gallic.

Among arabian sands:  
 A voice so thrilling ne'er was heard  
 In spring-time from the cuckoo-bird,  
 Breaking the silence of the seas  
 Among the farthest Hebrides.

Will no one tell me what she sings?  
 Perhaps the plaintive numbers flow  
 For old, unhappy, far-off things,  
 And battles long ago:  
 Or is it some more humble lay,  
 Familiar matter of today?  
 Some natural sorrow, loss, or pain,  
 That has been, and may be again?

Whate'er the theme, the maiden sang  
 As if her song could have no ending;  
 I saw her singing at her work,  
 And o'er the sickle bending;  
 I listened, motionless & still;  
 And, as I mounted up the hill,  
 The music in my heart I bore,  
 Long after it was heard no more.

## V.2.

Give him the darkest inch your shelf allows,  
 Hide him in lonely garrets, if you will,  
 But his hard, human pulse is throbbing still  
 With the sure strength that fearless truth endows.  
 In spite of all fine science disavows,  
 Of his plain excellence & stubborn skill  
 There yet remains what fashion cannot kill,  
 Though years have thinned the laurel from his brows.

Whether or not we read him, we can feel  
 From time to time the vigour of his name  
 Against us like a finger for the shame  
 And emptiness of what our souls reveal  
 In books that are as altars where we kneel  
 To consecrate the flicker, not the flame.

---

'George Crabbe', Edwin Robinson (1869 – 1935), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The Rev George Crabbe was an English poet (and also a surgeon and, later, vicar) of the early nineteenth century.

## V.3.

For hearts of truest mettle  
 Absence doth join, and time doth settle.

## VI.

## VI.1.

Here, where the world is quiet;  
     Here, where all trouble seems  
 Dead winds' & spent waves' riot  
     In doubtful dreams of dreams;  
 I watch the green field growing  
 For reaping folk & sowing,  
 For harvest-time & mowing,  
     A sleepy world of streams.

I am tired of tears and laughter,  
     And men that laugh and weep;  
 Of what may come hereafter  
     For men that sow to reap:  
 I am weary of days & hours,  
 Blown buds of barren flowers,  
 Desires & dreams & powers  
     And everything but sleep.

Here life has death for neighbour,  
     And far from eye or ear  
 Wan waves & wet winds labour,  
     Weak ships and spirits steer;  
 They drive adrift, and whither  
 They wot not who make thither;  
 But no such winds blow hither,  
     And no such things grow here.

No growth of moor or coppice,  
     No heather-flower or vine,  
 But bloomless buds of poppies,  
     Green grapes of *Proserpine*,  
 Pale beds of blowing rushes

---

Anonymous, Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. This couplet is taken from a longer poem, which Palgrave names "Present in Absence". The poem is sometimes attributed to the Rev Dr Donne; Prof Sir Herbert Grierson attributes it to John Hoskins.

'The Garden of Proserpine', Algernon Swinburne (1837 – 1909), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Proserpine was the consort of Pluto, lord of the underworld.

Where no leaf blooms or blushes  
Save this whereout she crushes  
For dead men deadly wine.

Pale, without name or number,  
In fruitless fields of corn,  
They bow themselves & slumber  
All night till light is born;  
And like a soul belated,  
In hell & heaven unmated,  
By cloud & mist abated  
Comes out of darkness morn.

Though one were strong as seven,  
He too with death shall dwell,  
Nor wake with wings in heaven,  
Nor weep for pains in hell;  
Though one were fair as roses,  
His beauty clouds & closes;  
And well though love reposes,  
In the end it is not well.

Pale, beyond porch & portal,  
Crowned with calm leaves, she stands  
Who gathers all things mortal  
With cold immortal hands;  
Her languid lips are sweeter  
Than love's who fears to greet her  
To men that mix and meet her  
From many times & lands.

She waits for each and other,  
She waits for all men born;  
Forgets the earth her mother,  
The life of fruits & corn;  
And spring & seed & swallow  
Take wing for her and follow  
Where summer song rings hollow  
And flowers are put to scorn.

There go the loves that wither,  
The old loves with wearier wings;  
And all dead years draw thither,  
And all disastrous things;

Dead dreams of days forsaken,  
 Blind buds that snows have shaken,  
 Wild leaves that winds have taken,  
     Red strays of ruined springs.

We are not sure of sorrow,  
     And joy was never sure;  
 To-day will die to-morrow;  
     Time stoops to no man's lure;  
 And love, grown faint and fretful,  
 With lips but half regretful  
 Sighs, and with eyes forgetful  
     Weeps that no loves endure.

From too much love of living,  
     From hope and fear set free,  
 We thank with brief thanksgiving  
     Whatever gods may be  
 That no life lives for ever;  
 That dead men rise up never;  
 That even the weariest river  
     Winds somewhere safe to sea.

Then star nor sun shall waken,  
     Nor any change of light:  
 Nor sound of waters shaken,  
     Nor any sound or sight:  
 Nor wintry leaves nor vernal,  
 Nor days nor things diurnal;  
 Only the sleep eternal  
     In an eternal night.

## VI.2.

Glory be to God for dappled things –  
     For skies of couple-colour as a brinded cow;  
     For rose-moles all in stipple upon trout that swim;  
 Fresh-firecoal chestnut-falls; finches' wings;  
 Landscape plotted & pieced – fold, fallow, and plough;  
     And áll trádes, their gear & tackle & trim.

---

'Pied Beauty', Fr Gerard Hopkins (1844 – 1889), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

All things counter, original, spare, strange;  
 Whatever is fickle, freckled (who knows how?)  
 With swift, slow; sweet, sour; adazzle, dim;  
 He fathers-forth whose beauty is past change:  
 Praise him.

**VI.3.** Where everything is bad it must be good to know the worst.

## VII.

### VII.1.

In a coign of the cliff between lowland & highland,  
 At the sea-down's edge between windward & lee,  
 Walled round with rocks as an inland island,  
 The ghost of a garden fronts the sea.  
 A girdle of brushwood & thorn encloses  
 The steep square slope of the blossomless bed  
 Where the weeds that grew green from the graves of its roses  
 Now lie dead.

The fields fall southward, abrupt & broken,  
 To the low last edge of the long lone land.  
 If a step should sound or a word be spoken,  
 Would a ghost not rise at the strange guest's hand?  
 So long have the grey bare walks lain guestless,  
 Through branches & briars if a man make way,  
 He shall find no life but the sea-wind's, restless  
 Night & day.

The dense hard passage is blind & stifled  
 That crawls by a track none turn to climb  
 To the strait waste place that the years have rifled  
 Of all but the thorns that are touched not of time.  
 The thorns he spares when the rose is taken;  
 The rocks are left when he wastes the plain.  
 The wind that wanders, the weeds wind-shaken,  
 These remain.

Not a flower to be pressed of the foot that falls not;  
 As the heart of a dead man the seed-plots are dry;  
 From the thicket of thorns whence the nightingale calls not,

---

Francis Bradley (1846 – 1924), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'A Forsaken Garden', Algernon Swinburne (1837 – 1909), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.



Could she call, there were never a rose to reply.  
Over the meadows that blossom & wither  
Rings but the note of a sea-bird's song;  
Only the sun & the rain come hither  
All year long.

The sun burns sere and the rain dishevels  
One gaunt bleak blossom of scentless breath.  
Only the wind here hovers & revels  
In a round where life seems barren as death.  
Here there was laughing of old, there was weeping,  
Haply, of lovers none ever will know,  
Whose eyes went seaward a hundred sleeping  
Years ago.

Heart handfast in heart as they stood, 'Look thither,'  
Did he whisper? 'Look forth from the flowers to the sea;  
For the foam-flowers endure when the rose-blossoms wither,  
And men that love lightly may die – but we?'  
And the same wind sang and the same waves whitened,  
And or ever the garden's last petals were shed,  
In the lips that had whispered, the eyes that had lightened,  
Love was dead.

Or they loved their life through, and then went whither?  
And were one to the end—but what end who knows?  
Love deep as the sea as a rose must wither,  
As the rose-red seaweed that mocks the rose.  
Shall the dead take thought for the dead to love them?  
What love was ever as deep as a grave?  
They are loveless now as the grass above them  
Or the wave.

All are at one now, roses & lovers,  
Not known of the cliffs & the fields & the sea.  
Not a breath of the time that has been hovers  
In the air now soft with a summer to be.  
Not a breath shall there sweeten the seasons hereafter  
Of the flowers or the lovers that laugh now or weep,  
When as they that are free now of weeping & laughter  
We shall sleep.

Here death may deal not again for ever;  
Here change may come not till all change end.

From the graves they have made they shall rise up never,  
 Who have left nought living to ravage & rend.  
 Earth, stones, & thorns of the wild ground growing,  
 While the sun & the rain live, these shall be;  
 Till a last wind's breath upon all these blowing  
 Roll the sea.

Till the slow sea rise and the sheer cliff crumble,  
 Till terrace & meadow the deep gulfs drink,  
 Till the strength of the waves of the high tides humble  
 The fields that lessen, the rocks that shrink,  
 Here now in his triumph where all things falter,  
 Stretched out on the spoils that his own hand spread,  
 As a god self-slain on his own strange altar,  
 Death lies dead.

## VII.2.

*Márgarét*, áre you gríeving  
 Over GOLDENGROVE unleaving?  
 Leáves like the things of man, you  
 With your fresh thoughts care for, can you?  
 Ah ás the heart grows older  
 It will come to such sights colder  
 By & by, nor spare a sigh  
 Though worlds of wan-wood leaf-meal lie;  
 And yet you will weep and know why.  
 Now no matter, child, the name:  
 Sórrow's spríngs áre the same.  
 Nor mouth had, no nor mind, expressed  
 What heart heard of, ghost guessed:  
 It is the blight man was born for,  
 It is *Margaret* you mourn for.

**VII.3.** I am reminded of a blind man in a dark room – looking for a black hat – which isn't there.

---

'Spring and Fall', Fr Gerard Hopkins (1844 – 1889), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. There are several places in England and Wales known as Golden Grove (or some variation thereupon), the most famous of which is the Golden Grove estate in Camarthenshire. It's unclear, at least to the Almanacker, which Golden Grove Fr Hopkins had in mind.

Charles Bowen, Baron Bowen (1835 – 1894), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

## VIII.

## VIII.1.

God moves in a mysterious way  
 His wonders to perform;  
 He plants his footsteps in the sea  
 And rides upon the storm.

Deep in unfathomable mines  
 Of never-failing skill,  
 He treasures up his bright designs  
 And works his sovereign will.

Ye fearful saints, fresh courage take;  
 The clouds ye so much dread  
 Are big with mercy and shall break  
 In blessings on your head.

Judge not the Lord by feeble sense,  
 But trust him for his grace;  
 Behind a frowning providence  
 He hides a smiling face.

His purposes will ripen fast,  
 Unfolding every hour;  
 The bud may have a bitter taste,  
 But sweet will be the flower.

Blind unbelief is sure to err  
 And scan his work in vain;  
 God is his own interpreter,  
 And he will make it plain.

## VIII.2.

They are not long, the weeping & the laughter,  
 Love & desire & hate:  
 I think they have no portion in us after  
 We pass the gate.

---

‘Light Shining out of Darkness’, William Cowper (1731 – 1800), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

‘Vita summa brevis spem nos vetat incohare longam’, Ernest Dowson (1867 – 1900), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The title is a quotation from Horace, *Odes* 1.4 – ‘The shortness of life forbids us any long-term hopes’ – the truth of which Dowson, with his short, occasionally brilliant, mostly miserable life, knew all too well.

They are not long, the days of wine & roses:  
 Out of a misty dream  
 Our path emerges for a while, then closes  
 Within a dream.

**VIII.3.** We toil that we may rest, and war that we may be at peace.

## IX.

### IX.1.

Thou first great cause, least understood:  
 Who all my sense confined,  
 To know but this – that thou art good,  
 And that myself am blind:

What blessings thy free bounty gives,  
 Let me not cast away;  
 For God is paid when man receives,  
 To enjoy is to obey.

Let not this weak, unknowing hand  
 Presume thy bolts to throw,  
 And deal damnation round the land,  
 On each I judge thy foe.

Teach me to feel another's woe,  
 To hide the fault I see;  
 That mercy I to others show,  
 That mercy show to me.

This day, be bread and peace my lot:  
 All else beneath the sun,  
 Thou know'st if best bestowed or not,  
 And let thy will be done.

To thee, whose temple is all space,  
 Whose altar, earth, sea, skies!  
 One chorus let all being raise!  
 All nature's incense rise!

---

The Rev Dr Drummond Chase (1820 – 1902), Aristotle, *Nicomachean Ethics*. The Rev Dr Chase is here translating a remark from Aristotle.

'The Universal Prayer', Alexander Pope (1688 – 1744), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The Almanacker has taken the liberty of removing some of the weaker verses.

## IX.2.

If I should die, think only this of me:  
 That there's some corner of a foreign field  
 That is forever England. There shall be  
 In that rich earth a richer dust concealed;  
 A dust whom England bore, shaped, made aware,  
 Gave, once, her flowers to love, her ways to roam,  
 A body of England's, breathing english air,  
 Washed by the rivers, blest by the suns of home.

And think, this heart, all evil shed away,  
 A pulse in the eternal mind, no less  
 Gives somewhere back the thoughts by England given;  
 Her sights & sounds; dreams happy as her day;  
 And laughter, learnt of friends; and gentleness,  
 In hearts at peace, under an english heaven.

IX.3. History repeats itself; historians repeat one another.

## X.

## X.1.

Our God, our help in ages past,  
 Our hope for years to come,  
 Our shelter from the stormy blast,  
 And our eternal home:

Under the shadow of thy throne  
 Thy saints have dwelt secure;  
 Sufficient is thine arm alone,  
 And our defense is sure.

Before the hills in order stood  
 Or earth received her frame,  
 From everlasting thou art God,  
 To endless years the same.

---

Rupert Brooke (1887 – 1915), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The Almanacker was encouraged to hate this poem at school as an example of the mindless jingoism that led to the Great War in the first place; and, of course, there is something idiotic about it. But there's something noble and beautiful in it too.

Rupert Brooke (1887 – 1915), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Isaac Watts (1674 – 1748), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This poem is a paraphrase of Psalm 90. It is often sung as 'O God, our help in ages past', and this may be a slight improvement.

A thousand ages in thy sight  
 Are like an evening gone,  
 Short as the watch that ends the night  
 Before the rising sun.

Thy word commands our flesh to dust;  
 Return, ye sons of men.  
 All nations rose from earth at first  
 And turn to earth again.

Time, like an ever-rolling stream,  
 Bears all its sons away;  
 They fly forgotten as a dream  
 Dies at the opening day.

Our God, our help in ages past,  
 Our hope for years to come,  
 Be thou our guard while troubles last,  
 And our eternal home.

## X.2.

This feast-day of the sun, his altar there  
 In the broad west has blazed for vesper-song;  
 And I have loitered in the vale too long  
 And gaze now a belated worshipper.  
 Yet may I not forget that I was 'ware,  
 So journeying, of his face at intervals  
 Transfigured where the fringed horizon falls  
 A fiery bush with coruscating hair.  
 And now that I have climbed & won this height,  
 I must tread downward through the sloping shade  
 And travel the bewildered tracks till night.  
 Yet for this hour I still may here be stayed  
 And see the gold air & the silver fade  
 And the last bird fly into the last light.

**X.3.** We all labour against our own cure, for death is the cure of all diseases.

---

'The Hill Summit', Gabriel Rossetti (1828 – 1882), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Sir Thomas Browne (1605 – 1682), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

# XI.

## XI.1.

Love lives beyond  
The tomb, the earth, which fades like dew –  
I love the fond,  
The faithful, and the true.

Love lives in sleep;  
'Tis happiness of healthy dreams;  
Eve's dews may weep,  
But love delightful seems.

'Tis seen in flowers,  
And in the even's pearly dew,  
On earth's green hours,  
And in the heaven's eternal blue.

'Tis heard in spring  
When light & sunbeams, warm & kind,  
On angels' wing  
Bring love and music to the wind.

And where is voice,  
So young, so beautiful & sweet  
As nature's choice,  
Where spring and lovers meet?

Love lives beyond  
The tomb, the earth, the flowers, & dew.  
I love the fond,  
The faithful, young & true.

## XI.2.

I long for scenes, where man hath never trod,  
A place where woman never smiled or wept,  
There to abide with my Creator, God,  
And sleep as I in childhood sweetly slept,  
Untroubling and untroubled where I lie:  
The grass below, above the vaulted sky.

---

'Song: Love Lives Beyond', John Clare (1793 – 1864), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

John Clare (1793 – 1864), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. These are the closing lines of Clare's "I Am".

**XI.3.** The long habit of living indisposeth us for dying.

## **XII.**

### **XII.1.**

I saw eternity the other night,  
 Like a great ring of pure and endless light,  
     All calm, as it was bright;  
 And round beneath it, time in hours, days, years,  
     Driven by the spheres  
 Like a vast shadow moved; in which the world  
     And all her train were hurled.  
 The doting lover in his quaintest strain  
     Did there complain;  
 Near him, his lute, his fancy, and his flights,  
     Wit's sour delights,  
 With gloves, and knots, the silly snares of pleasure,  
     Yet his dear treasure  
 All scattered lay, while he his eyes did pour  
     Upon a flower.

The darksome statesman hung with weights & woe,  
 Like a thick midnight-fog moved there so slow,  
     He did not stay, nor go;  
 Condemning thoughts (like sad eclipses) scowl  
     Upon his soul,  
 And clouds of crying witnesses without  
     Pursued him with one shout.  
 Yet digged the mole, and lest his ways be found,  
     Worked under ground,  
 Where he did clutch his prey; but one did see  
     That policy;  
 Churches & altars fed him; perjuries  
     Were gnats & flies;  
 It rained about him blood and tears, but he  
     Drank them as free.

The fearful miser on a heap of rust  
 Sate pining all his life there, did scarce trust  
     His own hands with the dust,

---

Sir Thomas Browne (1605 – 1682), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'The World', Dr Henry Vaughan (1621 – 1695), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Dr Vaughan affixed a quotation from John's Gospel (2.16-17) to the end of this poem.



Yet would not place one piece above, but lives  
 In fear of thieves;  
 Thousands there were as frantic as himself,  
 And hugged each one his pelf;  
 The downright epicure placed heaven in sense,  
 And scorned pretence,  
 While others, slipped into a wide excess,  
 Said little less;  
 The weaker sort slight, trivial wares enslave,  
 Who think them brave;  
 And poor despised truth sate counting by  
 Their victory.

Yet some, who all this while did weep and sing,  
 And sing, and weep, soar'd up into the ring;  
 But most would use no wing.  
 O fools (said I) thus to prefer dark night  
 Before true light,  
 To live in grotts & caves, and hate the day  
 Because it shows the way,  
 The way, which from this dead & dark abode  
 Leads up to God,  
 A way where you might tread the sun, and be  
 More bright than he.  
 But as I did their madness so discuss  
 One whispered thus,  
 This ring the Bridegroom did for none provide,  
 But for his bride.

## XII.2.

Let others sing of knights & paladins  
 In agèd accents & untimely words;  
 Paint shadows in imaginary lines  
 Which well the reach of their high wits records:  
 But I must sing of thee, and those fair eyes  
 Authentic shall my verse in time to come,  
 When yet th' unborn shall say, 'Lo where she lies  
 Whose beauty made him speak that else was dumb.'  
 These are the arks, the trophies I erect,  
 That fortify thy name against old age;  
 And these thy sacred virtues must protect  
 Against the dark, and time's consuming rage.

Though th' error of my youth they shall discover,  
Suffice they show I lived and was thy lover.

**XII.3.** Generations will pass while some trees stand, and old families  
last not three oaks.

### XIII.

#### XIII.1.

My long two-pointed ladder's sticking through a tree  
Toward heaven still,  
And there's a barrel that I didn't fill  
Beside it, and there may be two or three  
Apples I didn't pick upon some bough.  
But I am done with apple-picking now.  
Essence of winter sleep is on the night,  
The scent of apples: I am drowsing off.  
I cannot rub the strangeness from my sight  
I got from looking through a pane of glass  
I skimmed this morning from the drinking trough  
And held against the world of hoary grass.  
It melted, and I let it fall & break.  
But I was well  
Upon my way to sleep before it fell,  
And I could tell  
What form my dreaming was about to take.  
Magnified apples appear & disappear,  
Stem end & blossom end,  
And every fleck of russet showing clear.  
My instep arch not only keeps the ache,  
It keeps the pressure of a ladder-round.  
I feel the ladder sway as the boughs bend.  
And I keep hearing from the cellar bin  
The rumbling sound  
Of load on load of apples coming in.  
For I have had too much  
Of apple-picking: I am overtired  
Of the great harvest I myself desired.  
There were 10,000 thousand fruit to touch,  
Cherish in hand, lift down, and not let fall.

---

Sir Thomas Browne (1605 – 1682), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'After Apple Picking', Robert Frost, Poet Laureate of Vermont (1874 – 1963), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

For all  
 That struck the earth,  
 No matter if not bruised or spiked with stubble,  
 Went surely to the cider-apple heap  
 As of no worth.  
 One can see what will trouble  
 This sleep of mine, whatever sleep it is.  
 Were he not gone,  
 The woodchuck could say whether it's like his  
 Long sleep, as I describe its coming on,  
 Or just some human sleep.

### XIII.2.

The soul's dark cottage, battered & decayed,  
 Lets in new light through chinks that time has made;  
 Stronger by weakness, wiser men become  
 As they draw near to their eternal home:  
 Leaving the old, both worlds at once they view,  
 That stand upon the threshold of the new.

**XIII.3.** But how shall we expect charity towards others when we are so uncharitable to ourselves?

## XIV.

### XIV.1.

Two roads diverged in a yellow wood,  
 And sorry I could not travel both  
 And be one traveler, long I stood  
 And looked down one as far as I could  
 To where it bent in the undergrowth;

Then took the other, as just as fair,  
 And having perhaps the better claim,  
 Because it was grassy & wanted wear;  
 Though as for that the passing there  
 Had worn them really about the same,

---

Edmund Waller (1606 – 1687), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is the final verse of “Of the Last Verses in the Book”.

Sir Thomas Browne (1605 – 1682), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

‘The Road Not Taken’, Robert Frost, Poet Laureate of Vermont (1874 – 1963), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Frost wrote this poem as a kind of parody, based on an in-joke between himself and his friend Edward Thomas (or, at least, Frost used to claim as much, but poets often have mixed feelings towards their most famous works).

And both that morning equally lay  
 In leaves no step had trodden black.  
 O I kept the first for another day!  
 Yet knowing how way leads on to way,  
 I doubted if I should ever come back.

I shall be telling this with a sigh  
 Somewhere ages & ages hence:  
 Two roads diverged in a wood, and I –  
 I took the one less traveled by,  
 And that has made all the difference.

#### XIV.2.

Make me thy lyre, even as the forest is:  
 What if my leaves are falling like its own!  
 The tumult of thy mighty harmonies

Will take from both a deep, autumnal tone,  
 Sweet though in sadness. Be thou, spirit fierce,  
 My spirit! Be thou me, impetuous one!

Drive my dead thoughts over the universe  
 Like withered leaves to quicken a new birth!  
 And, by the incantation of this verse,

Scatter, as from an unextinguished hearth  
 Ashes and sparks, my words among mankind!  
 Be through my lips to unawakened earth

The trumpet of a prophecy! O wind,  
 If winter comes, can spring be far behind?

**XIV.3.** A man may be in as just possession of truth as of a city, and yet be forced to surrender.

#### XV.

##### XV.1.

Season of mists and mellow fruitfulness,  
 Close bosom-friend of the maturing sun;  
 Conspiring with him how to load & bless

---

Percy Shelley (1792 – 1822), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is “Ode to the West Wind” §5.

Sir Thomas Browne (1605 – 1682), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

‘To Autumn’, John Keats (1795 – 1821), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

With fruit the vines that round the thatch-eves run;  
 To bend with apples the mossed cottage-trees,  
 And fill all fruit with ripeness to the core;  
 To swell the gourd, and plump the hazel shells  
 With a sweet kernel; to set budding more,  
 And still more, later flowers for the bees,  
 Until they think warm days will never cease,  
 For summer has o'er-brimmed their clammy cells.

Who hath not seen thee oft amid thy store?  
 Sometimes whoever seeks abroad may find  
 Thee sitting careless on a granary floor,  
 Thy hair soft-lifted by the winnowing wind;  
 Or on a half-reaped furrow sound asleep,  
 Drowsed with the fume of poppies, while thy hook  
 Spares the next swath and all its twined flowers:  
 And sometimes like a gleaner thou dost keep  
 Steady thy laden head across a brook;  
 Or by a cyder-press, with patient look,  
 Thou watchest the last oozy hours by hours.

Where are the songs of spring? Ay, where are they?  
 Think not of them; thou hast thy music too,  
 While barrèd clouds bloom the soft-dying day,  
 And touch the stubble-plains with rosy hue;  
 Then in a wailful choir the small gnats mourn  
 Among the river sallows, borne aloft  
 Or sinking as the light wind lives or dies;  
 And full-grown lambs loud bleat from hilly bourn;  
 Hedge-cricket sing; and now with treble soft  
 The red-breast whistles from a garden-croft;  
 And gathering swallows twitter in the skies.

## XV.2.

Black beauty, which above that common light,  
 Whose power can no colours here renew  
 But those which darkness can again subdue,  
 Dost still remain unvaried to the sight;  
 And, like an object equal to the view,  
 Art neither changed with day, nor hid with night;  
 When all these colours which the world call bright,

---

'Sonnet of Black Beauty', Edward Herbert, 1st Baron Herbert of Cherbury (1582 – 1648), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

And which old poetry doth so pursue,  
 Are with the night so perishèd & gone,  
 That of their being there remains no mark,  
 Thou still abidest so entirely one,  
 That we may know thy blackness is a spark  
 Of light inaccessible, and alone  
 Our darkness which can make us think it dark.

**XV.3.** Age appears to be best in four things: old wood best to burn, old wine to drink, old friends to trust, and old authors to read.

## XVI.

### XVI.1.

O goddess, hear these tuneless numbers, wrung  
 By sweet enforcement and remembrance dear,  
 And pardon that thy secrets should be sung  
 Even into thine own soft-conchèd ear:  
 Surely I dreamt today, or did I see  
 The winged *Psyche* with awakened eyes?  
 I wandered in a forest thoughtlessly,  
 And, on the sudden, fainting with surprise,  
 Saw two fair creatures, couchèd side by side  
 In deepest grass, beneath the whisp'ring roof  
 Of leaves and trembled blossoms, where there ran  
 A brooklet, scarce espied:  
 Mid hushed, cool-rooted flowers, fragrant-eyed,  
 Blue, silver-white, and budded tyrian,  
 They lay calm-breathing, on the bedded grass;  
 Their arms embraced, and their pinions too;  
 Their lips touched not, but had not bade adieu,  
 As if disjoined by soft-handed slumber,  
 And ready still past kisses to outnumber  
 At tender eye-dawn of aurorean love:  
 The wingèd boy I knew;  
 But who wast thou, O happy, happy dove?  
 His *Psyche* true!

---

Francis Bacon, Viscount St Alban (1561 – 1626), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. Lord St Alban is here quoting an anecdote about Alfonso X & IV, King of León and Castile.

'Ode to Psyche', John Keats (1795 – 1821), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. *Psyche* was a minor goddess of the Greco-Roman mythological tradition, whose marriage to Cupid ('Love') and subsequent elevation to immortality were most famously related by Apuleius.

O latest born and loveliest vision far  
Of all OLYMPUS' faded hierarchy!  
Fairer than *Phoebe's* sapphire-regioned star,  
Or *Vesper*, amorous glow-worm of the sky;  
Fairer than these, though temple thou hast none,  
Nor altar heaped with flowers;  
Nor virgin-choir to make delicious moan  
Upon the midnight hours;  
No voice, no lute, no pipe, no incense sweet  
From chain-swung censer teeming;  
No shrine, no grove, no oracle, no heat  
Of pale-mouthed prophet dreaming.

O brightest! though too late for antique vows,  
Too, too late for the fond believing lyre,  
When holy were the haunted forest boughs,  
Holy the air, the water, and the fire;  
Yet even in these days so far retired  
From happy pieties, thy lucent fans,  
Fluttering among the faint olympians,  
I see, and sing, by my own eyes inspired.  
So let me be thy choir, and make a moan  
Upon the midnight hours;  
Thy voice, thy lute, thy pipe, thy incense sweet  
From swingèd censer teeming;  
Thy shrine, thy grove, thy oracle, thy heat  
Of pale-mouthed prophet dreaming.

Yes, I will be thy priest, and build a fane  
In some untrodden region of my mind,  
Where branchèd thoughts, new grown with pleasant pain,  
Instead of pines shall murmur in the wind:  
Far, far around shall those dark-clustered trees  
Fledge the wild-ridgèd mountains steep by steep;  
And there by zephyrs, streams, and birds, and bees,  
The moss-lain dryads shall be lulled to sleep;  
And in the midst of this wide quietness  
A rosy sanctuary will I dress  
With the wreathed trellis of a working brain,  
With buds, and bells, and stars without a name,  
With all the gardener fancy e'er could feign,  
Who breeding flowers, will never breed the same:  
And there shall be for thee all soft delight

That shadowy thought can win,  
 A bright torch, and a casement ope at night,  
 To let the warm *Love* in!

## XVI.2.

Her eyes the glow-worm lend thee;  
 The shooting stars attend thee;  
     And the elves also,  
     Whose little eyes glow  
 Like the sparks of fire, befriend thee.

No will-o'-the-wisp mis-light thee,  
 Nor snake or slow-worm bite thee;  
     But on, on thy way,  
     Not making a stay,  
 Since ghost there's none to affright thee.

Let not the dark thee cumber;  
 What though the moon does slumber?  
     The stars of the night  
     Will lend thee their light,  
 Like tapers clear without number.

Then *Julia* let me woo thee,  
 Thus, thus to come unto me;  
     And when I shall meet  
     Thy silv'ry feet,  
 My soul I'll pour into thee.

**XVI.3.** Houses are built to live in and not to look on.

## XVII.

### XVII.1.

Not every man has gentians in his house  
 In soft september, at slow, sad michaelmas.

---

'The Night Piece, to Julia', Robert Herrick (1591 – 1674), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. A 'will-o'-the-wisp' is a phenomenon, which appears as a pale patch of light, sometimes seen by travellers walking through the countryside at night. A 'slow-worm', meanwhile, is an archaic name for an adder, i.e. *Vipera berus*.

Francis Bacon, Viscount St Alban (1561 – 1626), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Bavarian Gentians', David Lawrence (1885 – 1930), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Lawrence wrote this poem only a few months before his own painfully-anticipated death from tuberculosis.



Bavarian gentians, big & dark, only dark  
 Darkening the daytime torch-like with the smoking blue-  
     ness of *Pluto's* gloom,  
 Ribbed & torch-like, with their blaze of darkness spread  
     blue  
 Down flattening into points, flattened under the sweep of  
     white day,  
 Torch-flower of the blue-smoking darkness, *Pluto's* dark-  
     blue daze,  
 Black lamps from the halls of *Dis*, burning dark-blue,  
 Giving off darkness, blue darkness, as *Demeter's* pale lamps  
 Give off light,  
 Lead me then; lead me the way.

Reach me a gentian; give me a torch!  
 Let me guide myself with the blue, forked torch of a flower  
 Down the darker & darker stairs, where blue is darkened  
     on blueness,  
 Even where *Persephone* goes, just now, from the frosted  
     september  
 To the sightless realm where darkness is awake upon the  
     dark  
 And *Persephone* herself is but a voice  
 Or a darkness invisible enfolded in the deeper dark  
 Of the arms plutonic, and pierced with the passion of dense  
     gloom,  
 Among the splendour of torches of darkness, shedding dark-  
     ness on the lost bride & her groom.

## XVII.2.

Be not afraid. I met her deity  
 Cutting the clouds towards PAPHOS, and her son  
 Dove-drawn with her. Here thought they to have done  
 Some wanton charm upon this man & maid,  
 Whose vows are that no bed-right shall be paid  
 Till *Hymen's* torch be lighted – but in vain.  
*Mars's* hot minion is returned again.  
 Her waspish-headed son has broke his arrows,  
 Swears he will shoot no more, but play with sparrows  
 And be a boy right out.

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. These lines are uttered by Iris (1-11) and Ceres (12-13) in *The Tempest* IV.1.

‘Highest queen of state,  
Great *Juno*, comes. I know her by her gait.’

**XVII.3.** I have breakfasted with you and shall sup with my Lord... this night.

## XVIII.

### XVIII.1.

While my hair was still cut straight across my forehead  
I played about the front gate, pulling flowers.  
You came by on bamboo stilts, playing horse;  
You walked about my seat, playing with blue plums.  
And we went on living in the village of CHOKAN:  
Two small people, without dislike or suspicion.  
At 14 I married my lord, you.  
I never laughed, being bashful.  
Lowering my head, I looked at the wall.  
Called to, a 1000 times, I never looked back.

At 15 I stopped scowling;  
I desired my dust to be mingled with yours  
Forever & forever & forever.  
Why should I climb the look out?

At 16 you departed  
You went into far KU-TO-YEN, by the river of swirling eddies,  
And you have been gone five months.  
The monkeys make sorrowful noise overhead.

You dragged your feet when you went out.  
By the gate now, the moss is grown, the different mosses,  
Too deep to clear them away!  
The leaves fall early this autumn, in wind.  
The paired butterflies are already yellow with august  
Over the grass in the west garden;  
They hurt me.  
I grow older.

---

Robert Bruce (1554 – 1631), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. Bruce’s original gives ‘Lord Jesus Christ’ instead of ‘Lord’ on its own.

‘The River-Merchant’s Wife: a Letter’, Ezra Pound (1885 – 1972), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This poem is a translation of what is sometimes called “The Song of Chang’an”, by the Chinese king of poets, Li Bai (also called Li Po, and known to Pound and various Japanese scholars as Rihaku). Many of the place-names, e.g. Chokan, Ku-to-yen, seem to be a melange of archaism, misunderstanding and poor transliteration.

If you are coming down through the narrows of the river KIANG,  
 Please let me know beforehand,  
 And I will come out to meet you  
 As far as CHO-FU-SA.

### XVIII.2.

Look in thy glass, and tell the face thou viewest  
 Now is the time that face should form another;  
 Whose fresh repair if now thou not renewest,  
 Thou dost beguile the world, unbless some mother,  
 For where is she so fair whose unear'd womb  
 Disdains the tillage of thy husbandry?  
 Or who is he so fond will be the tomb  
 Of his self-love, to stop posterity?  
 Thou art thy mother's glass, and she in thee  
 Calls back the lovely april of her prime:  
 So thou through windows of thine age shall see  
 Despite of wrinkles this thy golden time.  
 But if thou live, remembered not to be,  
 Die single, and thine image dies with thee.

XVIII.3. Most vices may be committed very genteelly.

### XIX.

#### XIX.1.

Ye elves of hills, brooks, standing lakes and groves,  
 And ye that on the sands with printless foot  
 Do chase the ebbing *Neptune* and do fly him  
 When he comes back; you demi-puppets that  
 By moonshine do the green sour ringlets make,  
 Whereof the ewe not bites, and you whose pastime  
 Is to make midnight mushrooms, that rejoice  
 To hear the solemn curfew; by whose aid,  
 Weak masters though ye be, I have bedimmed  
 The noontide sun, called forth the mutinous winds,  
 And 'twixt the green sea & the azured vault  
 Set roaring war: to the dread rattling thunder  
 Have I given fire and rifted *Jove's* stout oak  
 With his own bolt; the strong-based promontory

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Dr Samuel Johnson (1709 – 1784), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. These lines are uttered by Prospero in *The Tempest* V.1.

Have I made shake and by the spurs plucked up  
 The pine & cedar: graves at my command  
 Have waked their sleepers, oped, and let 'em forth  
 By my so potent art. But this rough magic  
 I here abjure, and, when I have required  
 Some heavenly music, which even now I do,  
 To work mine end upon their senses that  
 This airy charm is for, I'll break my staff,  
 Bury it certain fathoms in the earth,  
 And deeper than did ever plummet sound  
 I'll drown my book.

### XIX.2.

Be not afeard; the isle is full of noises,  
 Sounds & sweet airs, that give delight and hurt not.  
 Sometimes a 1000 twangling instruments  
 Will hum about mine ears, and sometime voices  
 That, if I then had waked after long sleep,  
 Will make me sleep again: and then, in dreaming,  
 The clouds methought would open and show riches  
 Ready to drop upon me that, when I waked,  
 I cried to dream again.

XIX.3. He that dies pays all debts.

## XX.

### XX.1.

Let us go then, you & I,  
 When the evening is spread out against the sky  
 Like a patient etherised upon a table;  
 Let us go, through certain ½-deserted streets,  
 The muttering retreats  
 Of restless nights in one-night cheap hotels  
 And sawdust restaurants with oyster-shells:  
 Streets that follow like a tedious argument  
 Of insidious intent

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. These famous lines are uttered by Caliban in *The Tempest* III.2.

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. This is uttered by Stephano in *The Tempest* III.2.

℞ 'The Love Song of J Alfred Prufrock', Prof Thomas Eliot (1888 – 1965), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Prof Eliot begins this poem with a lengthy quotation from Dante, which bears no obvious relation to the text itself – but that's Eliot.

To lead you to an overwhelming question...  
 O do not ask, What is it?  
 Let us go and make our visit.

In the room the women come & go  
 Talking of *Michelangelo*.

The yellow fog that rubs its back upon the window-panes,  
 The yellow smoke that rubs its muzzle on the window-  
     panes,  
 Licked its tongue into the corners of the evening,  
 Lingered upon the pools that stand in drains,  
 Let fall upon its back the soot that falls from chimneys,  
 Slipped by the terrace, made a sudden leap,  
 And seeing that it was a soft october night,  
 Curled once about the house, and fell asleep.

And indeed there will be time  
 For the yellow smoke that slides along the street,  
 Rubbing its back upon the window-panes;  
 There will be time, there will be time  
 To prepare a face to meet the faces that you meet;  
 There will be time to murder & create,  
 And time for all the works & days of hands  
 That lift & drop a question on your plate;  
 Time for you & time for me,  
 And time yet for a 100 indecisions,  
 And for a 100 visions & revisions,  
 Before the taking of a toast & tea.

In the room the women come & go  
 Talking of *Michelangelo*.

And indeed there will be time  
 To wonder, Do I dare? and, Do I dare?  
 Time to turn back and descend the stair,  
 With a bald spot in the middle of my hair –  
 (They will say, How his hair is growing thin!)  
 My morning coat, my collar mounting firmly to the chin,  
 My necktie rich & modest, but asserted by a simple pin  
 (They will say, But how his arms & legs are thin!)  
 Do I dare  
 Disturb the universe?

In a minute there is time  
For decisions & revisions which a minute will reverse.

For I have known them all already, known them all:  
Have known the evenings, mornings, afternoons,  
I have measured out my life with coffee spoons;  
I know the voices dying with a dying fall  
Beneath the music from a farther room.  
So how should I presume?

And I have known the eyes already, known them all –  
The eyes that fix you in a formulated phrase,  
And when I am formulated, sprawling on a pin,  
When I am pinned and wriggling on the wall,  
Then how should I begin  
To spit out all the butt-ends of my days & ways?  
And how should I presume?

And I have known the arms already, known them all –  
Arms that are braceleted & white & bare  
(But in the lamplight, downed with light brown hair!)  
Is it perfume from a dress  
That makes me so digress?  
Arms that lie along a table, or wrap about a shawl.  
And should I then presume?  
And how should I begin?

Shall I say, I have gone at dusk through narrow streets  
And watched the smoke that rises from the pipes  
Of lonely men in shirt-sleeves, leaning out of windows?...

I should have been a pair of ragged claws  
Scuttling across the floors of silent seas.

And the afternoon, the evening, sleeps so peacefully!  
Smoothed by long fingers,  
Asleep... tired... or it malingers,  
Stretched on the floor, here beside you & me.  
Should I, after tea & cakes & ices,  
Have the strength to force the moment to its crisis?  
But though I have wept & fasted, wept & prayed,  
Though I have seen my head (grown slightly bald) brought  
in upon a platter,  
I am no prophet – and here's no great matter;

I have seen the moment of my greatness flicker,  
And I have seen the eternal Footman hold my coat, and  
snicker,  
And in short, I was afraid.

And would it have been worth it, after all,  
After the cups, the marmalade, the tea,  
Among the porcelain, among some talk of you & me,  
Would it have been worth while,  
To have bitten off the matter with a smile,  
To have squeezed the universe into a ball  
To roll it towards some overwhelming question,  
To say, I am Lazarus, come from the dead,  
Come back to tell you all, I shall tell you all –  
If one, settling a pillow by her head  
Should say, That is not what I meant at all;  
That is not it, at all.

And would it have been worth it, after all,  
Would it have been worth while,  
After the sunsets & the dooryards & the sprinkled streets,  
After the novels, after the teacups, after the skirts that  
trail along the floor –  
And this, and so much more? –  
It is impossible to say just what I mean!  
But as if a magic lantern threw the nerves in patterns on  
a screen:  
Would it have been worth while  
If one, settling a pillow or throwing off a shawl,  
And turning toward the window, should say,  
That is not it at all,  
That is not what I meant, at all.

No! I am not Prince *Hamlet*, nor was meant to be;  
Am an attendant lord, one that will do  
To swell a progress, start a scene or two,  
Advise the prince; no doubt, an easy tool,  
Deferential, glad to be of use,  
Politic, cautious, and meticulous;  
Full of high sentence, but a bit obtuse;  
At times, indeed, almost ridiculous –  
Almost, at times, the fool.

I grow old... I grow old...  
 I shall wear the bottoms of my trousers rolled.

Shall I part my hair behind? Do I dare to eat a peach?  
 I shall wear white flannel trousers, and walk upon the beach.

I have heard the mermaids singing, each to each.

I do not think that they will sing to me.

I have seen them riding seaward on the waves  
 Combing the white hair of the waves blown back  
 When the wind blows the water white & black.  
 We have lingered in the chambers of the sea  
 By sea-girls wreathed with seaweed red & brown  
 Till human voices wake us, and we drown.

## XX.2.

Our revels now are ended. These our actors,  
 As I foretold you, were all spirits and  
 Are melted into air, into thin air:  
 And, like the baseless fabric of this vision,  
 The cloud-capped towers, the gorgeous palaces,  
 The solemn temples, the great globe itself,  
 Yea, all which it inherit, shall dissolve  
 And, like this insubstantial pageant faded,  
 Leave not a rack behind. We are such stuff  
 As dreams are made on, and our little life  
 Is rounded with a sleep. Sir, I am vexed...  
 If you be pleased, retire into my cell  
 And there repose: a turn or two I'll walk,  
 To still my beating mind.

## XX.3. There's no harm done.

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. These famous lines are uttered by Prospero in *The Tempest* IV.1. The Almanacker has excised two lines after 'Sir, I am vexed...'

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. This is uttered by Prospero in *The Tempest* I.2.



## XXI.

## XXI.1.

My head, my heart, mine eyes, my life, nay more,  
 My joy, my magazine of earthly store,  
 If two be one, as surely thou and I,  
 How stayest thou there, whilst I at IPSWICH lie?  
 So many steps, head from the heart to sever  
 If but a neck, soon should we be together:  
 I like the earth this season, mourn in black,  
 My sun is gone so far in 's zodiack,  
 Whom whilst I 'joyed, nor storms, nor frosts I felt,  
 His warmth such frigid colds did cause to melt.  
 My chillèd limbs now numbèd lie forlorn;  
 Return, return sweet **sol** from Capricorn;  
 In this dead time, alas, what can I more  
 Then view those fruits which through thy heat I bore,  
 Which sweet contentment yield me for a space,  
 True living pictures of their father's face?  
 O strange effect! now thou art southward gone,  
 I weary grow, the tedious day so long;  
 But when thou northward to me shalt return,  
 I wish my sun may never set, but burn  
 Within the Cancer of my glowing breast,  
 The welcome house of him my dearest guest.  
 Where ever, ever stay, and go not thence,  
 Till natures sad decree shall call thee hence;  
 Flesh of thy flesh, bone of thy bone,  
 I here, thou there, yet both but one.

## XXI.2.

Come unto these yellow sands,  
 And then take hands.  
 Curtsied when you have, and kissed  
 The wild waves whist.  
 Foot it featly here & there,  
 And, sweet sprites, the burden bear.

---

'A Letter to Her Husband, Absent upon Public Employment', Mrs Anne Bradstreet (1612 – 1672), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The Ipswich in question would seem to be the one in Massachusetts, and not the one in England. The word 'sol' is Latin for "sun".

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. This song is sung by Ariel in *The Tempest*, I.2. Chanticleer is a name given to a cockerel in several English folk-tales.

Hark; hark!  
 The watch-dogs bark:  
 Hark; hark! I hear  
 The strain of strutting *Chanticleer*.

**XXI.3.** Some kinds of baseness are nobly undergone.

## XXII.

### XXII.1.

By night we lingered on the lawn,  
 For underfoot the herb was dry;  
 And genial warmth; and o'er the sky  
 The silvery haze of summer drawn;

And calm that let the tapers burn  
 Unwavering: not a cricket chirred:  
 The brook alone far-off was heard,  
 And on the board the fluttering urn:

And bats went round in fragrant skies,  
 And wheeled or lit the filmy shapes  
 That haunt the dusk, with ermine capes  
 And woolly breasts and beaded eyes;

While now we sang old songs that pealed  
 From knoll to knoll, where, couched at ease,  
 The white kine glimmered, and the trees  
 Laid their dark arms about the field.

But when those others, one by one,  
 Withdrew themselves from me and night,  
 And in the house light after light  
 Went out, and I was all alone,

A hunger seized my heart; I read  
 Of that glad year which once had been,  
 In those fall'n leaves which kept their green,  
 The noble letters of the dead:

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. This is uttered by Ferdinand in *The Tempest* III.1.

Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is *In Memoriam A H H* §95.

And strangely on the silence broke  
The silent-speaking words, and strange  
Was love's dumb cry defying change  
To test his worth; and strangely spoke

The faith, the vigour, bold to dwell  
On doubts that drive the coward back,  
And keen through wordy snares to track  
Suggestion to her inmost cell.

So word by word, and line by line,  
The dead man touched me from the past,  
And all at once it seemed at last  
The living soul was flashed on mine,

And mine in this was wound, and whirled  
About empyreal heights of thought,  
And came on that which is, and caught  
The deep pulsations of the world,

Aeonian music measuring out  
The steps of time, the shocks of chance,  
The blows of death. At length my trance  
Was cancelled, stricken through with doubt.

Vague words! but ah, how hard to frame  
In matter-moulded forms of speech,  
Or ev'n for intellect to reach  
Through memory that which I became:

Till now the doubtful dusk revealed  
The knolls once more where, couched at ease,  
The white kine glimmered, and the trees  
Laid their dark arms about the field:

And sucked from out the distant gloom  
A breeze began to tremble o'er  
The large leaves of the sycamore,  
And fluctuate all the still perfume,

And gathering freshlier overhead,  
Rocked the full-foliaged elms, and swung  
The heavy-folded rose, and flung  
The lilies to & fro, and said,

The dawn, the dawn! and died away;  
 And east & west, without a breath,  
 Mixt their dim lights, like life and death,  
 To broaden into boundless day.

## XXII.2.

When on my bed the moonlight falls,  
     So quickly, not as one that weeps  
     I come once more; the city sleeps;  
 I smell the meadow in the street;  
  
 I hear a chirp of birds; I see  
     Betwixt the black fronts long-withdrawn  
     A light-blue lane of early dawn,  
 And think of early days & thee,  
  
 And bless thee, for thy lips are bland,  
     And bright the friendship of thine eye;  
     And in my thoughts with scarce a sigh  
 I take the pressure of thine hand.

XXII.3. We must not let in daylight upon magic.

## XXIII.

### XXIII.1.

Thy voice is on the rolling air;  
     I hear thee where the waters run;  
     Thou standest in the rising sun,  
 And in the setting thou art fair.  
  
 What art thou then? I cannot guess;  
     But though I seem in star & flower  
     To feel thee some diffusive power,  
 I do not therefore love thee less.  
  
 My love involves the love before;  
     My love is vaster passion now;  
     Though mixed with God & nature thou,  
 I seem to love thee more & more.

---

Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Walter Bagehot (1826 – 1877), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Far off thou art, but ever nigh;  
 I have thee still, and I rejoice;  
 I prosper, circled with thy voice;  
 I shall not lose thee though I die.

### XXIII.2.

Row us out from DESENZANO; to your SIRMIONE row!  
 So they rowed, and there we landed – **Q** *venusta* SIRMIO –  
 There to me through all the groves of olive in the summer glow,  
 There beneath the roman ruin where the purple flowers grow,  
 Came that **ave atque vale** of the poet's hopeless woe,  
 Tenderest of roman poets 19 hundred years ago, **Frater, ave atque vale** –  
 as we wandered to & fro  
 Gazing at the lydian laughter of the GARDA LAKE below  
 Sweet *Catullus*'s all-but-island, olive-silvery SIRMIO!

XXIII.3. The devil's most devilish when respectable.

### XXIV.

#### XXIV.1.

When on my bed the moonlight falls,  
 I know that in thy place of rest  
 By that broad water of the west,  
 There comes a glory on the walls;

Thy marble bright in dark appears,  
 As slowly steals a silver flame  
 Along the letters of thy name,  
 And o'er the number of thy years.

The mystic glory swims away;  
 From off my bed the moonlight dies;  
 And closing eaves of wearied eyes  
 I sleep till dusk is dipped in grey;

And then I know the mist is drawn  
 A lucid veil from coast to coast,

---

Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The title (which means, 'Greetings, brother, and farewell') is a quotation from Catullus 101. The same poet wrote of his affection for Sirmione (which he called Sirmio) in Catullus 31, 'venusta' meaning 'beautiful'.

Mrs Elizabeth Browning (1806 – 1861), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

And in the dark church like a ghost  
Thy tablet glimmers to the dawn.

#### XXIV.2.

Now sleeps the crimson petal, now the white;  
Nor waves the cypress in the palace walk;  
Nor winks the gold fin in the porphyry font.  
The firefly wakens; waken thou with me.

Now droops the milk-white peacock like a ghost,  
And like a ghost she glimmers on to me.

Now lies the earth all *Danaë* to the stars,  
And all thy heart lies open unto me.

Now slides the silent meteor on, and leaves  
A shining furrow, as thy thoughts in me.

Now folds the lily all her sweetness up,  
And slips into the bosom of the lake.  
So fold thyself, my dearest, thou, and slip  
Into my bosom and be lost in me.

**XXIV.3.** The same principles which at first view lead to scepticism, pursued to a certain point bring men back to common sense.

#### XXV.

##### XXV.1.

The woods decay, the woods decay and fall;  
The vapours weep their burthen to the ground;  
Man comes and tills the field and lies beneath,  
And after many a summer dies the swan.  
Me only cruel immortality  
Consumes: I wither slowly in thine arms,  
Here at the quiet limit of the world,

---

Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This sonnet is taken from a larger work, *The Princess*. It has been set to music by a number of famous composers.

George Berkeley, Bishop of Cloyne (1685 – 1753), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

‘Tithonus’, Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. A figure from Greek mythology, Tithonus was abducted by the goddess of the dawn to be a kind of fancy-man. He was granted everlasting life – but forgot to ask for everlasting youth – cursing him with an eternity of senility. The ancients used to say that the goddess’ consequent sexual frustration explained why she rose so early in the morning.

A white-haired shadow roaming like a dream  
The ever-silent spaces of the east,  
Far-folded mists, and gleaming halls of morn.

Alas! for this grey shadow, once a man  
So glorious in his beauty and thy choice,  
Who madest him thy chosen, that he seemed  
To his great heart none other than a god!  
I asked thee, 'Give me immortality.'  
Then didst thou grant mine asking with a smile,  
Like wealthy men, who care not how they give.  
But thy strong hours indignant worked their wills,  
And beat me down & marred & wasted me,  
And though they could not end me, left me maimed  
To dwell in presence of immortal youth,  
Immortal age beside immortal youth,  
And all I was, in ashes. Can thy love,  
Thy beauty, make amends, though even now,  
Close over us, the silver star, thy guide,  
Shines in those tremulous eyes that fill with tears  
To hear me? Let me go: take back thy gift:  
Why should a man desire in any way  
To vary from the kindly race of men  
Or pass beyond the goal of ordinance  
Where all should pause, as is most meet for all?

A soft air fans the cloud apart; there comes  
A glimpse of that dark world where I was born.  
Once more the old mysterious glimmer steals  
From thy pure brows, and from thy shoulders pure,  
And bosom beating with a heart renewed.  
Thy cheek begins to redden through the gloom,  
Thy sweet eyes brighten slowly close to mine,  
Ere yet they blind the stars, and the wild team  
Which love thee, yearning for thy yoke, arise,  
And shake the darkness from their loosened manes,  
And beat the twilight into flakes of fire.

Lo! ever thus thou growest beautiful  
In silence, then before thine answer given  
Departest, and thy tears are on my cheek.

Why wilt thou ever scare me with thy tears,  
 And make me tremble lest a saying learned,  
 In days far-off, on that dark earth, be true?  
 'The Gods themselves cannot recall their gifts.'

Ay me! ay me! with what another heart  
 In days far-off, and with what other eyes  
 I used to watch – if I be he that watched –  
 The lucid outline forming round thee; saw  
 The dim curls kindle into sunny rings;  
 Changed with thy mystic change, and felt my blood  
 Glow with the glow that slowly crimsoned all  
 Thy presence & thy portals, while I lay,  
 Mouth, forehead, eyelids, growing dewy-warm  
 With kisses balmier than half-opening buds  
 Of april, and could hear the lips that kissed  
 Whispering I knew not what of wild and sweet,  
 Like that strange song I heard *Apollo* sing,  
 While ILION like a mist rose into towers.

Yet hold me not for ever in thine east:  
 How can my nature longer mix with thine?  
 Coldly thy rosy shadows bathe me, cold  
 Are all thy lights, and cold my wrinkled feet  
 Upon thy glimmering thresholds, when the steam  
 Floats up from those dim fields about the homes  
 Of happy men that have the power to die,  
 And grassy barrows of the happier dead.  
 Release me, and restore me to the ground;  
 Thou seest all things: thou wilt see my grave:  
 Thou wilt renew thy beauty morn by morn;  
 I earth in earth forget these empty courts,  
 And thee returning on thy silver wheels.

## XXV.2.

Sunset & evening star,  
 And one clear call for me!

---

'Crossing the Bar', Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The 'bar' in question refers to the sandbars which often lurk in the waters near to the breakwaters of ports. Lord Tennyson is said to have written this poem while on a ferry to the Isle of Wight. Shortly before his death, he decreed that all editions of his works should close with these verses. ¶13. Lord Tennyson explained, 'The pilot has been on board all the while, but in the dark I have not seen him.'



And may there be no moaning of the bar  
 When I put out to sea,

But such a tide as moving seems asleep,  
 Too full for sound & foam,  
 When that which drew from out the boundless deep  
 Turns again home.

Twilight & evening bell,  
 And after that the dark!  
 And may there be no sadness of farewell,  
 When I embark;

For though from out our bourne of time & place  
 The flood may bear me far,  
 I hope to see my pilot face to face  
 When I have crossed the bar.

**XXV.3.** We do not look in great cities for our best morality.

## XXVI.

### XXVI.1.

Whither, 'midst falling dew,  
 While glow the heavens with the last steps of day,  
 Far, through their rosy depths, dost thou pursue  
 Thy solitary way?

Vainly the fowler's eye  
 Might mark thy distant flight, to do thee wrong,  
 As, darkly seen against the crimson sky,  
 Thy figure floats along.

Seek'st thou the plashy brink  
 Of weedy lake, or marge of river wide,  
 Or where the rocking billows rise & sink  
 On the chafèd ocean side?

There is a Power, whose care  
 Teaches thy way along that pathless coast,  
 The desert and illimitable air  
 Lone wandering, but not lost.

---

Miss Jane Austen (1775 – 1817), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'To a Waterfowl', William Bryant (1794 – 1878), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

All day thy wings have fanned,  
 At that far height, the cold thin atmosphere;  
 Yet stoop not, weary, to the welcome land,  
 Though the dark night is near.

And soon that toil shall end,  
 Soon shalt thou find a summer home, and rest,  
 And scream among thy fellows; reeds shall bend,  
 Soon, o'er thy sheltered nest.

Thou'rt gone, the abyss of heaven  
 Hath swallowed up thy form, yet, on my heart  
 Deeply hath sunk the lesson thou hast given,  
 And shall not soon depart.

He, who, from zone to zone,  
 Guides through the boundless sky thy certain flight,  
 In the long way that I must trace alone  
 Will lead my steps aright.

## XXVI.2.

Only a man harrowing clods  
 In a slow silent walk  
 With an old horse that stumbles & nods  
 Half asleep as they stalk.

Only thin smoke without flame  
 From the heaps of couch-grass;  
 Yet this will go onward the same  
 Though dynasties pass.

Yonder a maid & her wight  
 Come whispering by:  
 War's annals will cloud into night  
 Ere their story die.

## XXVI.3. Leave *now* for dogs and apes! Man has forever.

---

'In Time of "The Breaking of Nations"', Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This poem might well hold the record in the English canon for the longest gestation; for Hardy began working on it in 1870 following the Battle of Sedan, and only finished it in 1915 during the First World War. The title is an allusion to Jeremiah 51.20.

Robert Browning (1828 – 1889), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

## XXVII.

## XXVII.1.

Here is the place; right over the hill  
 Runs the path I took;  
 You can see the gap in the old wall still,  
 And the stepping-stones in the shallow brook.

There is the house, with the gate red-barred,  
 And the poplars tall;  
 And the barn's brown length, and the cattle-yard,  
 And the white horns tossing above the wall.

There are the beehives ranged in the sun;  
 And down by the brink  
 Of the brook are her poor flowers, weed-o'errun,  
 Pansy and daffodil, rose and pink.

A year has gone, as the tortoise goes,  
 Heavy & slow;  
 And the same rose blows, and the same sun glows,  
 And the same brook sings of a year ago.

There's the same sweet clover-smell in the breeze;  
 And the june sun warm  
 Tangles his wings of fire in the trees,  
 Setting, as then, over FERNSIDE farm.

I mind me how with a lover's care  
 From my sunday coat  
 I brushed off the burrs, and smoothed my hair,  
 And cooled at the brookside my brow and throat.

Since we parted, a month had passed –  
 To love, a year;  
 Down through the beeches I looked at last  
 On the little red gate and the well-sweep near.

I can see it all now: the slantwise rain  
 Of light through the leaves,

---

'Telling the Bees', John Whittier (1807 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.  
 It is ancient custom for a beekeeper to tell his bees of significant events in his life, for fear that they might otherwise migrate.

The sundown's blaze on her window-pane,  
 The bloom of her roses under the eaves.

Just the same as a month before,  
 The house and the trees,  
 The barn's brown gable, the vine by the door,  
 Nothing changed but the hives of bees.

Before them, under the garden wall,  
 Forward & back,  
 Went drearily singing the chore-girl small,  
 Draping each hive with a shred of black.

Trembling, I listened: the summer sun  
 Had the chill of snow;  
 For I knew she was telling the bees of one  
 Gone on the journey we all must go!

Then I said to myself, My *Mary* weeps  
 For the dead today:  
 Haply her blind old grandsire sleeps  
 The fret and the pain of his age away.

But her dog whined low; on the doorway sill,  
 With his cane to his chin,  
 The old man sat; and the chore-girl still  
 Sung to the bees stealing out and in.

And the song she was singing ever since  
 In my ear sounds on:  
 Stay at home, pretty bees; fly not hence!  
 Mistress *Mary* is dead & gone!

## XXVII.2.

She has finished & sealed the letter  
 At last, which he so richly has deserved,  
 With characters venomous & hatefully curved,  
 And nothing could be better.

But even as she gave it  
 Saying to the blue-capped functioner of doom,

---

'Parting, without a Sequel', John Ransom (1888 – 1974), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

'Into his hands,' she hoped the leering groom  
Might somewhere lose & leave it.

Then all the blood  
Forsook the face. She was too pale for tears,  
Observing the ruin of her younger years.  
She went and stood

Under her father's vaunting oak  
Who kept his peace in wind & sun and glistened  
Stoical in the rain; to whom she listened  
If he spoke.

And now the agitation of the rain  
Rasped his sere leaves, and he talked low & gentle  
Reproaching the wan daughter by the lintel;  
Ceasing & beginning again.

Away went the messenger's bicycle;  
His serpent's track went up the hill forever,  
And all the time she stood there hot as fever  
And cold as any icicle.

### XXVII.3.

Open my heart and you will see  
Graved inside of it: Italy.

### XXVIII.

#### XXVIII.1.

But do not let us quarrel any more,  
No, my *Lucrezia*; bear with me for once:  
Sit down and all shall happen as you wish.  
You turn your face, but does it bring your heart?  
I'll work then for your friend's friend, never fear,  
Treat his own subject after his own way,  
Fix his own time, accept too his own price,  
And shut the money into this small hand  
When next it takes mine. Will it? tenderly?

---

Robert Browning (1828 – 1889), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Andrea del Sarto', Robert Browning (1828 – 1889), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Subtitle: 'Called "The Faultless Painter"'. Andrea del Sarto was an artist of the Italian Renaissance. He was thought to be one of the best painters in the world in his own time, but his reputation has fared less well than those of his contemporaries Michelangelo, da Vinci and Raphael. ¶12. Fiesole is a small town overlooking Florence.

O I'll content him, but tomorrow, love!  
I often am much wearier than you think,  
This evening more than usual, and it seems  
As if – forgive now – should you let me sit  
Here by the window with your hand in mine  
And look a ½ hour forth on FIESOLE,  
Both of one mind, as married people use,  
Quietly, quietly the evening through,  
I might get up to-morrow to my work  
Cheerful & fresh as ever. Let us try.  
Tomorrow, how you shall be glad for this!  
Your soft hand is a woman of itself,  
And mine the man's bared breast she curls inside.  
Don't count the time lost, neither; you must serve  
For each of the five pictures we require:  
It saves a model. So! keep looking so –  
My serpentine beauty, rounds on rounds!  
How could you ever prick those perfect ears  
Even to put the pearl there?! O so sweet –  
My face, my moon, my everybody's moon,  
Which everybody looks on and calls his,  
And, I suppose, is looked on by in turn,  
While she looks – no one's: very dear, no less.  
You smile? Why, there's my picture ready made,  
There's what we painters call our harmony!  
A common greyness silvers everything,  
All in a twilight, you & I alike  
You, at the point of your first pride in me  
(That's gone you know), but I, at every point;  
My youth, my hope, my art, being all toned down  
To yonder sober pleasant FIESOLE.  
There's the bell clinking from the chapel-top;  
That length of convent-wall across the way  
Holds the trees safer, huddled more inside;  
The last monk leaves the garden; days decrease,  
And autumn grows, autumn in everything.  
Eh? the whole seems to fall into a shape  
As if I saw alike my work and self  
And all that I was born to be & do,  
A twilight-piece. Love, we are in God's hand.  
How strange now, looks the life he makes us lead;  
So free we seem, so fettered fast we are!

I feel he laid the fetter: let it lie!  
 This chamber for example – turn your head –  
 All that's behind us! You don't understand  
 Nor care to understand about my art,  
 But you can hear at least when people speak:  
 And that cartoon, the second from the door  
 – It is the thing, love! so such things should be –  
 Behold Madonna! I am bold to say.  
 I can do with my pencil what I know,  
 What I see, what at bottom of my heart  
 I wish for, if I ever wish so deep –  
 Do easily, too – when I say, perfectly,  
 I do not boast, perhaps: yourself are judge,  
 Who listened to the legate's talk last week,  
 And just as much they used to say in France.  
 At any rate 'tis easy, all of it!  
 No sketches first, no studies, that's long past:  
 I do what many dream of, all their lives,  
 Dream? strive to do, and agonize to do,  
 And fail in doing. I could count twenty such  
 On twice your fingers, and not leave this town,  
 Who strive – you don't know how the others strive  
 To paint a little thing like that you smeared  
 Carelessly passing with your robes afloat –  
 Yet do much less, so much less, someone says,  
 (I know his name, no matter) – so much less!  
 Well, less is more, *Lucrezia*: I am judged.  
 There burns a truer light of God in them,  
 In their vexed beating stuffed & stopped-up brain,  
 Heart, or whate'er else, than goes on to prompt  
 This low-pulsed forthright craftsman's hand of mine.  
 Their works drop groundward, but themselves, I know,  
 Reach many a time a heaven that's shut to me,  
 Enter and take their place there sure enough,  
 Though they come back and cannot tell the world.  
 My works are nearer heaven, but I sit here.  
 The sudden blood of these men! at a word –  
 Praise them, it boils, or blame them, it boils too.  
 I, painting from myself and to myself,  
 Know what I do, am unmoved by men's blame  
 Or their praise either. Somebody remarks  
*Morello's* outline there is wrongly traced,

His hue mistaken; what of that? or else,  
 Rightly traced and well ordered; what of that?  
 Speak as they please, what does the mountain care?  
 Ah, but a man's reach should exceed his grasp,  
 Or what's a heaven for? All is silver-grey,  
 Placid & perfect with my art: the worse!  
 I know both what I want and what might gain,  
 And yet how profitless to know, to sigh,  
 'Had I been two, another and myself,  
 Our head would have o'erlooked the world!' No doubt.  
 Yonder's a work now, of that famous youth  
 The urbinat who died five years ago.  
 ('Tis copied, *George Vasari* sent it me.)  
 Well, I can fancy how he did it all,  
 Pouring his soul, with kings & popes to see,  
 Reaching, that heaven might so replenish him,  
 Above and through his art – for it gives way;  
 That arm is wrongly put – and there again –  
 A fault to pardon in the drawing's lines,  
 Its body, so to speak: its soul is right,  
 He means right – that, a child may understand.  
 Still, what an arm! and I could alter it:  
 But all the play, the insight and the stretch –  
 (Out of me, out of me! And wherefore out?  
 Had you enjoined them on me, given me soul,  
 We might have risen to *Rafael*, I & you!  
 Nay, love, you did give all I asked, I think –  
 More than I merit, yes, by many times.  
 But had you – O with the same perfect brow,  
 And perfect eyes, and more than perfect mouth,  
 And the low voice my soul hears, as a bird  
 The fowler's pipe, and follows to the snare –  
 Had you, with these the same, but brought a mind!  
 Some women do so. Had the mouth there urged,  
 'God and the glory! never care for gain.  
 The present by the future, what is that?  
 Live for fame, side by side with *Agnolo*!  
*Rafael* is waiting: up to God, all three!'

I might have done it for you. So it seems:  
 Perhaps not. All is as God over-rules.  
 Beside, incentives come from the soul's self;  
 The rest avail not. Why do I need you?



What wife had *Rafael*, or has *Agnolo*?  
 In this world, who can do a thing, will not;  
 And who would do it, cannot, I perceive:  
 Yet the will's somewhat – somewhat, too, the power –  
 And thus we  $\frac{1}{2}$  men struggle. At the end,  
 God, I conclude, compensates, punishes.  
 'Tis safer for me, if the award be strict,  
 That I am something underrated here,  
 Poor this long while, despised, to speak the truth.  
 I dared not, do you know, leave home all day,  
 For fear of chancing on the PARIS lords.  
 The best is when they pass & look aside;  
 But they speak sometimes; I must bear it all.  
 Well may they speak! That *Francis*, that first time,  
 And that long festal year at FONTAINEBLEAU!  
 I surely then could sometimes leave the ground,  
 Put on the glory, *Rafael*'s daily wear,  
 In that humane great monarch's golden look –  
 One finger in his beard or twisted curl  
 Over his mouth's good mark that made the smile,  
 One arm about my shoulder, round my neck,  
 The jingle of his gold chain in my ear,  
 I painting proudly with his breath on me,  
 All his court round him, seeing with his eyes,  
 Such frank french eyes, and such a fire of souls  
 Profuse, my hand kept plying by those hearts –  
 And, best of all, this, this, this face beyond,  
 This in the background, waiting on my work,  
 To crown the issue with a last reward!  
 A good time, was it not, my kingly days?  
 And had you not grown restless... but I know –  
 'Tis done & past: 'twas right, my instinct said:  
 Too live the life grew, golden and not grey,  
 And I'm the weak-eyed bat no sun should tempt  
 Out of the grange whose four walls make his world.  
 How could it end in any other way?  
 You called me, and I came home to your heart.  
 The triumph was – to reach and stay there; since  
 I reached it ere the triumph, what is lost?  
 Let my hands frame your face in your hair's gold,  
 You beautiful *Lucrezia* that are mine!  
 '*Rafael* did this, *Andrea* painted that;

The roman's is the better when you pray,  
 But still the other's Virgin was his wife' –  
 Men will excuse me. I am glad to judge  
 Both pictures in your presence; clearer grows  
 My better fortune, I resolve to think.  
 For, do you know, *Lucrezia*, as God lives,  
 Said one day *Agnolo*, his very self,  
 To *Rafael*... I have known it all these years...  
 (When the young man was flaming out his thoughts  
 Upon a palace-wall for ROME to see,  
 Too lifted up in heart because of it.)  
 'Friend, there's a certain sorry little scrub  
 Goes up & down our FLORENCE, none cares how,  
 Who, were he set to plan & execute  
 As you are, pricked on by your popes & kings,  
 Would bring the sweat into that brow of yours!'  
 To *Rafael*'s! And indeed the arm is wrong.  
 I hardly dare... Yet, only you to see,  
 Give the chalk here – quick, thus, the line should go!  
 Aye, but the soul! he's *Rafael*! Rub it out!  
 Still, all I care for, if he spoke the truth,  
 (What he? why, who but *Michel Agnolo*?  
 Do you forget already words like those?)  
 If really there was such a chance, so lost –  
 Is, whether you're – not grateful – but more pleased.  
 Well, let me think so. And you smile indeed!  
 This hour has been an hour! Another smile?  
 If you would sit thus by me every night  
 I should work better, do you comprehend?  
 I mean that I should earn more, give you more.  
 See, it is settled dusk now; there's a star;  
*Morello*'s gone, the watch-lights show the wall,  
 The cue-owls speak the name we call them by.  
 Come from the window, love; come in, at last,  
 Inside the melancholy little house  
 We built to be so gay with. God is just.  
 King *Francis* may forgive me: oft at nights  
 When I look up from painting, eyes tired out,  
 The walls become illumined, brick from brick  
 Distinct, instead of mortar, fierce bright gold,  
 That gold of his I did cement them with!  
 Let us but love each other. Must you go?

That cousin here again? He waits outside?  
 Must see you? You, and not with me? Those loans?  
 More gaming debts to pay? You smiled for that?  
 Well, let smiles buy me! Have you more to spend?  
 While hand & eye & something of a heart  
 Are left me, work's my ware, and what's it worth?  
 I'll pay my fancy. Only let me sit  
 The grey remainder of the evening out,  
 Idle, you call it, and muse perfectly  
 How I could paint, were I but back in France,  
 One picture, just one more – the Virgin's face,  
 Not yours this time! I want you at my side  
 To hear them – that is, *Michel Agnolo* –  
 Judge all I do and tell you of its worth.  
 Will you? Tomorrow, satisfy your friend.  
 I take the subjects for his corridor,  
 Finish the portrait out of hand – there, there,  
 And throw him in another thing or two  
 If he demurs; the whole should prove enough  
 To pay for this same cousin's freak. Beside,  
 What's better and what's all I care about,  
 Get you the 13 *scudi* for the ruff!  
 Love, does that please you? Ah, but what does he,  
 The cousin? What does he to please you more?

I am grown peaceful as old age tonight.  
 I regret little; I would change still less.  
 Since there my past life lies, why alter it?  
 The very wrong to *Francis*! It is true  
 I took his coin, was tempted and complied,  
 And built this house and sinned, and all is said.  
 My father & my mother died of want.  
 Well, had I riches of my own? You see  
 How one gets rich! Let each one bear his lot.  
 They were born poor, lived poor, and poor they died:  
 And I have laboured somewhat in my time  
 And not been paid profusely. Some good son  
 Paint my 200 pictures – let him try!  
 No doubt, there's something strikes a balance. Yes,  
 You loved me quite enough. it seems to-night.  
 This must suffice me here. What would one have?  
 In heaven, perhaps, new chances, one more chance –  
 Four great walls in the NEW JERUSALEM,

Meted on each side by the angel's reed,  
 For *Leonard, Rafael, Agnolo* and me  
 To cover – the three first without a wife,  
 While I have mine! So – still they overcome  
 Because there's still *Lucrezia*, as I choose.

Again the cousin's whistle! Go, my love.

## XXVIII.2.

My walk home was lengthened by a diversion in the direction of the kirk. When beneath its walls, I perceived decay had made progress, even in seven months: many a window showed black gaps deprived of glass; and slates jutted off here & there, beyond the right line of the roof, to be gradually worked off in coming autumn storms.

I sought, and soon discovered, the three headstones on the slope next the moor: the middle one grey, and  $\frac{1}{2}$  buried in the heath; *Edgar Linton's* only harmonized by the turf and moss creeping up its foot; *Heath-cliff's* still bare.

I lingered round them, under that benign sky: watched the moths fluttering among the heath & harebells, listened to the soft wind breathing through the grass, and wondered how any one could ever imagine unquiet slumbers for the sleepers in that quiet earth.

## XXVIII.3. Who knows but the world may end tonight?

## XXIX.

### XXIX.1.

'Is my team ploughing,  
 That I was used to drive  
 And hear the harness jingle  
 When I was man alive?'

Ay, the horses trample,  
 The harness jingles now;

---

Miss Emily Brontë (1818 – 1848), Brontë, *Wuthering Heights*.

Robert Browning (1828 – 1889), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. These words are taken from Browning's "Last Ride Together".

℞ Prof Alfred Housman (1859 – 1936), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

No change though you lie under  
The land you used to plough.

'Is football playing  
Along the river shore,  
With lads to chase the leather,  
Now I stand up no more?'

Ay, the ball is flying;  
The lads play heart & soul;  
The goal stands up, the keeper  
Stands up to keep the goal.

'Is my girl happy,  
That I thought hard to leave,  
And has she tired of weeping  
As she lies down at eve?'

Ay, she lies down lightly;  
She lies not down to weep.  
Your girl is well contented.  
Be still, my lad, and sleep.

'Is my friend hearty,  
Now I am thin & pine,  
And has he found to sleep in  
A better bed than mine?'

Yes, lad, I lie easy;  
I lie as lads would choose;  
I cheer a dead man's sweetheart;  
Never ask me whose.

## XXIX.2.

When I watch the living meet,  
And the moving pageant file  
Warm & breathing through the street  
Where I lodge a little while,

If the heats of hate & lust  
In the house of flesh are strong,  
Let me mind the house of dust  
Where my sojourn shall be long.

In the nation that is not  
 Nothing stands that stood before;  
 There revenges are forgot,  
 And the hater hates no more;

Lovers lying two & two  
 Ask not whom they sleep beside,  
 And the bridegroom all night through  
 Never turns him to the bride.

### XXIX.3.

Our interest's on the dangerous edge of things:  
 The honest thief, the tender murderer,  
 The superstitious atheist.

### XXX.

#### XXX.1.

As the team's head-brass flashed out on the turn  
 The lovers disappeared into the wood.  
 I sat among the boughs of the fallen elm  
 That strewed an angle of the fallow, and  
 Watched the plough narrowing a yellow square  
 Of charlock. Every time the horses turned  
 Instead of treading me down, the ploughman leaned  
 Upon the handles to say or ask a word,  
 About the weather, next about the war.  
 Scraping the share he faced towards the wood,  
 And screwed along the furrow till the brass flashed  
 Once more. The blizzard felled the elm whose crest  
 I sat in, by a woodpecker's round hole,  
 The ploughman said. 'When will they take it away?'  
 'When the war's over.' So the talk began –  
 One minute & an interval of 10,  
 A minute more & the same interval.  
 'Have you been out?' 'No.' 'And don't want to, perhaps?'  
 'If I could only come back again, I should.  
 I could spare an arm. I shouldn't want to lose  
 A leg. If I should lose my head, why, so,  
 I should want nothing more... Have many gone  
 From here?' 'Yes.' 'Many lost?' 'Yes, a good few.

---

Robert Browning (1828 – 1889), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. These words are from Browning's "Bishop Blougram's Apology".

Edward Thomas (1878 – 1917), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Only two teams work on the farm this year.  
 One of my mates is dead. The second day  
 In France they killed him. It was back in march,  
 The very night of the blizzard, too. Now if  
 He had stayed here we should have moved the tree.'  
 'And I should not have sat here. Everything  
 Would have been different. For it would have been  
 Another world.' 'Ay, & a better, though,  
 If we could see all, all might seem good.' Then  
 The lovers came out of the wood again:  
 The horses started and for the last time  
 I watched the clods crumble & topple over  
 After the ploughshare and the stumbling team.

**XXX.2.**

Thin little leaves of wood fern, ribbed & toothed,  
 Long curved sail needles of the green pitch pine,  
 With common sandgrass, skirt the horizon line,  
 And over these the incorruptible blue!  
 Here let me gently lie and softly view  
 All world asperities, lightly touched & smoothed  
 As by his gracious hand, the great Bestower.  
 What though the year be late? some colors run  
 Yet through the dry, some links of melody.  
 Still let me be, by such, assuaged & soothed  
 And happier made, as when, our schoolday done,  
 We hunted on from flower to frosty flower,  
 Tattered and dim, the last red butterfly,  
 Or the old grasshopper molasses-mouthed.

**XXX.3.** Nothing matters very much and very few things matter at all.

---

Frederick Tuckerman (1821 – 1873), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Arthur Balfour, 1st Earl of Balfour (1848 – 1930), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.





## CHAPTER 8

# October

### I.

**I.1.** In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

The same was in the beginning with God.

All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.

In him was life; and the life was the light of men.

And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.

That was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.

He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

He came unto his own, and his own received him not.

But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:

Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

**I.2.** The ~~LORE~~ bless thee, and keep thee:

The ~~LORE~~ make his face shine upon thee, and be gracious unto thee:

The ~~LORE~~ lift up his countenance upon thee, and give thee peace.

**I.3.** Whoso sheddeth man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed: for in the image of God made he man.

### II.

---

John 1.1-5.9-13, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*. A tradition is floating around that this translation of John 1.1 was first suggested by Sir Thomas More – ironically enough, since More was so fanatically opposed to Tyndale, the chief architect of the King James Version – although the Almanacker has been unable to pin down a precise source.

Numbers 6.24-26, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Genesis 9.6, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Psalm 3, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*.

**II.1.** Lord, how are they increased that trouble me; ☉ many are they that rise against me.

Many one there is to say of my soul, ☉ there is no help for him in his God.

But thou, O Lord art my defender; ☉ thou art my worship, and the lifter up of my head.

I did call upon the Lord with my voice, ☉ and he heard me out of his holy hill.

I laid me down and slept, and rose up again, ☉ for the Lord sustained me.

I will not be afraid for ten thousands of the people ☉ that have set themselves against me round about.

Up, Lord, and help me, O my God, for thou smitest all mine enemies upon the cheekbone; ☉ thou hast broken the teeth of the ungodly.

Salvation belongeth unto the Lord, ☉ and thy blessing is upon thy people.

**II.2.** Lighten our darkness, we beseech thee, O Lord; and by thy great mercy defend us from all perils and dangers of this night. Amen.

**II.3.** What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put assunder.

### III.

**III.1.** O Lord, rebuke me not in thine indignation, ☉ neither chasten me in thy displeasure.

Have mercy on me, O Lord, for I am weak; ☉ O Lord, heal me, for my bones are vexed.

My soul also is sore troubled; ☉ but, Lord, how long wilt thou punish me?

Turn thee, O Lord, and deliver my soul; ☉ O save me for thy mercy's sake.

For in death no man remembereth thee, ☉ and who will give thee thanks in the pit?

I am weary of my groaning; every night I wash my bed, ☉ and water my couch with my tears.

My beauty is gone for very trouble, ☉ and worn away because of all my enemies.

Away from me, all ye that work vanity, ☉ for the Lord hath heard the voice of my weeping.

The Lord hath heard my petition; ☉ the Lord will receive my prayer.

---

‘For Aid Against All Perils’, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*. The original prayer concludes, ‘for the love of thy only Son, our Saviour Jesus Christ. Amen.’

Matthew 19.6, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Psalm 6, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*.

All my enemies shall be confounded, and sore vexed; & they shall be turned back, and put to shame suddenly.

**III.2.** God, from whom all holy desires, all good counsels, and all just works do proceed: give unto thy servants that peace which the world cannot give; that our hearts may be set to obey thy commandments, and also that by thee we being defended from the fear of our enemies may pass our time in rest & quietness. Amen.

**III.3.** I am going the way of all the earth.

## IV.

**IV.1.** I called my servant, and he gave me no answer; I entreated him with my mouth.

My breath is strange to my wife, though I entreated for the children's sake of mine own body.

Yea, young children despised me; I arose, & they spake against me.

All my inward friends abhorred me: and they whom I loved are turned against me.

My bone cleaveth to my skin and to my flesh, and I am escaped with the skin of my teeth.

Have pity upon me, have pity upon me, O ye my friends; for the hand of God hath touched me.

Why do ye persecute me as God, and are not satisfied with my flesh?

O that my words were now written! O that they were printed in a book!

That they were graven with an iron pen & lead in the rock for ever!

For I know that my redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth:

And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God:

Whom I shall see for myself, and mine eyes shall behold, and not another; though my reins be consumed within me.

But ye should say, Why persecute we him, seeing the root of the matter is found in me?

Be ye afraid of the sword: for wrath bringeth the punishments of the sword, that ye may know there is a judgment.

---

'For Peace', Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*. The original prayer concludes, 'through the merits of Jesus Christ our Saviour. Amen.'

'Joshua 23.14', Joshua 23.14, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Job 19.2-29, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

**IV.2.** God created man to be immortal, and made him to be an image of his own eternity.

Nevertheless, through envy of the devil came death into the world: and they that do hold of his side do find it.

But the souls of the righteous are in the hand of God, and there shall no torment touch them.

In the sight of the unwise they seemed to die: and their departure is taken for misery,

And their going from us to be utter destruction: but they are in peace.

For though they be punished in the sight of men, yet is their hope full of immortality.

In the time of their visitation they shall shine, and run to & fro like sparks among the stubble.

They shall judge the nations, and have dominion over the peoples, and their Lord shall reign for ever.

**IV.3.** I have set before thee this day life and good, and death and evil.

## V.

**V.1.** Then the ~~Lord~~ answered *Job* out of the whirlwind, and said,  
Who is this that darkeneth counsel by words without knowledge? Gird up now thy loins like a man;

For I will demand of thee, and answer thou me.

Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? Declare, if thou hast understanding.

Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest? Or who hath stretched the line upon it?

Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? Or who laid the corner stone thereof;

When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?

Or who shut up the sea with doors, when it brake forth, as if it had issued out of the womb?

When I made the cloud the garment thereof, and thick darkness a swaddlingband for it,

And brake up for it my decreed place, and set bars and doors,

And said, Hitherto shalt thou come, but no further: and here shall thy proud waves be stayed?

---

Solomon 2.23-24, 3.1-4,7-8, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Deuteronomy 30.15, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Job 38-41, 42.1-6, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.* ¶198. Where the Almanacker has put 'ox', the KJV reads 'unicorn'.

Hast thou commanded the morning since thy days; and caused the dayspring to know his place;

That it might take hold of the ends of the earth, that the wicked might be shaken out of it?

It is turned as clay to the seal; and they stand as a garment.

And from the wicked their light is withholden, and the high arm shall be broken.

Hast thou entered into the springs of the sea? Or hast thou walked in the search of the depth?

Have the gates of death been opened unto thee? Or hast thou seen the doors of the shadow of death?

Hast thou perceived the breadth of the earth? Declare if thou knowest it all.

Where is the way where light dwelleth? And as for darkness, where is the place thereof,

That thou shouldest take it to the bound thereof, and that thou shouldest know the paths to the house thereof?

Knowest thou it, because thou wast then born? Or because the number of thy days is great?

Hast thou entered into the treasures of the snow? Or hast thou seen the treasures of the hail,

Which I have reserved against the time of trouble, against the day of battle & war?

By what way is the light parted, which scattereth the east wind upon the earth?

Who hath divided a watercourse for the overflowing of waters, or a way for the lightning of thunder;

To cause it to rain on the earth, where no man is; on the wilderness, wherein there is no man;

To satisfy the desolate and waste ground; and to cause the bud of the tender herb to spring forth?

Hath the rain a father? Or who hath begotten the drops of dew?

Out of whose womb came the ice? And the hoary frost of heaven, who hath gendered it?

The waters are hid as with a stone, and the face of the deep is frozen.

Canst thou bind the sweet influences of *Pleiades*, or loose the bands of *Orion*?

Canst thou bring forth *Mazzaroth* in his season? Or canst thou guide *Arcturus* with his sons?

Knowest thou the ordinances of heaven? Canst thou set the dominion thereof in the earth?

Canst thou lift up thy voice to the clouds, that abundance of waters may cover thee?

Canst thou send lightnings, that they may go, and say unto thee, Here we are?

Who hath put wisdom in the inward parts? Or who hath given understanding to the heart?

Who can number the clouds in wisdom? Or who can stay the bottles of heaven,

When the dust groweth into hardness, and the clods cleave fast together?

Wilt thou hunt the prey for the lion? Or fill the appetite of the young lions,

When they couch in their dens, and abide in the covert to lie in wait?

Who provideth for the raven his food? When his young ones cry unto God, they wander for lack of meat.

Knowest thou the time when the wild goats of the rock bring forth? Or canst thou mark when the hinds do calve?

Canst thou number the months that they fulfil? Or knowest thou the time when they bring forth?

They bow themselves, they bring forth their young ones, they cast out their sorrows.

Their young ones are in good liking, they grow up with corn; they go forth, and return not unto them.

Who hath sent out the wild ass free? Or who hath loosed the bands of the wild ass?

Whose house I have made the wilderness, and the barren land his dwellings.

He scorneth the multitude of the city, neither regardeth he the crying of the driver.

The range of the mountains is his pasture, and he searcheth after every green thing.

Will the ox be willing to serve thee, or abide by thy crib?

Canst thou bind the ox with his band in the furrow? Or will he harrow the valleys after thee?

Wilt thou trust him, because his strength is great? Or wilt thou leave thy labour to him?

Wilt thou believe him, that he will bring home thy seed, and gather it into thy barn?

Gavest thou the goodly wings unto the peacocks? Or wings and feathers unto the ostrich,

Which leaveth her eggs in the earth, and warmeth them in dust, and forgetteth that the foot may crush them, or that the wild beast may break them?

She is hardened against her young ones, as though they were not hers:  
her labour is in vain without fear;

Because God hath deprived her of wisdom, neither hath he imparted to  
her understanding.

What time she lifteth up herself on high, she scorneth the horse and his  
rider.

Hast thou given the horse strength? Hast thou clothed his neck with  
thunder?

Canst thou make him afraid as a grasshopper? The glory of his nostrils  
is terrible.

He paweth in the valley, and rejoiceth in his strength: he goeth on to  
meet the armed men.

He mocketh at fear, and is not affrighted; neither turneth he back from  
the sword.

The quiver rattleth against him, the glittering spear and the shield.

He swalloweth the ground with fierceness and rage: neither believeth he  
that it is the sound of the trumpet.

He saith among the trumpets, Ha, ha; and he smelleth the battle afar off,  
The thunder of the captains, and the shouting.

Doth the hawk fly by thy wisdom, and stretch her wings toward the south?

Doth the eagle mount up at thy command, and make her nest on high?

She dwelleth and abideth on the rock, upon the crag of the rock, and the  
strong place.

From thence she seeketh the prey, and her eyes behold afar off.

Her young ones also suck up blood: and where the slain are, there is she.

Moreover, the **LORD** answered *Job*, and said,

Shall he that contendeth with the Almighty instruct him? He that re-  
proveth God, let him answer it.

Then *Job* answered the **LORD**, and said,

Behold, I am vile; what shall I answer thee? I will lay mine hand upon  
my mouth.

Once have I spoken; but I will not answer: yea, twice; but I will proceed  
no further.

Then answered the **LORD** unto *Job* out of the whirlwind, and said,

Gird up thy loins now like a man:

I will demand of thee, and declare thou unto me.

Wilt thou also disannul my judgment? Wilt thou condemn me, that thou  
mayest be righteous?

Hast thou an arm like God? Or canst thou thunder with a voice like him?

Deck thyself now with majesty and excellency; and array thyself with  
glory & beauty.

Cast abroad the rage of thy wrath: and behold every one that is proud, and abase him.

Look on every one that is proud, and bring him low; and tread down the wicked in their place.

Hide them in the dust together; and bind their faces in secret.

Then will I also confess unto thee yhat thine own right hand can save thee.

Behold now *Behemoth*, which I made with thee; he eateth grass as an ox.

Lo now, his strength is in his loins, and his force is in the navel of his belly.

He moveth his tail like a cedar: the sinews of his stones are wrapped together.

His bones are as strong pieces of brass; his bones are like bars of iron.

He is the chief of the ways of God: he that made him can make his sword to approach unto him.

Surely the mountains bring him forth food, where all the beasts of the field play.

He lieth under the shady trees, in the covert of the reed, and fens.

The shady trees cover him with their shadow; the willows of the brook compass him about.

Behold, he drinketh up a river, and hasteth not: he trusteth that he can draw up JORDAN into his mouth.

He taketh it with his eyes: his nose pierceth through snares.

Canst thou draw out leviathan with an hook, or his tongue with a cord which thou lettest down?

Canst thou put an hook into his nose, or bore his jaw through with a thorn?

Will he make many supplications unto thee? Will he speak soft words unto thee?

Will he make a covenant with thee? Wilt thou take him for a servant for ever?

Wilt thou play with him as with a bird? Or wilt thou bind him for thy maidens?

Shall the companions make a banquet of him? Shall they part him among the merchants?

Canst thou fill his skin with barbed irons, or his head with fish spears?

Lay thine hand upon him; remember the battle, do no more.

Behold, the hope of him is in vain: shall not one be cast down even at the sight of him?

None is so fierce that dare stir him up: who then is able to stand before me?



Who hath prevented me, that I should repay him? Whatsoever is under the whole heaven is mine.

I will not conceal his parts, nor his power, nor his comely proportion.

Who can discover the face of his garment? Or who can come to him with his double bridle?

Who can open the doors of his face? His teeth are terrible round about.

His scales are his pride, Shut up together as with a close seal.

One is so near to another, that no air can come between them.

They are joined one to another, they stick together, that they cannot be sundered.

By his neesings a light doth shine, and his eyes are like the eyelids of the morning.

Out of his mouth go burning lamps, and sparks of fire leap out.

Out of his nostrils goeth smoke, as out of a seething pot or caldron.

His breath kindleth coals, and a flame goeth out of his mouth.

In his neck remaineth strength, and sorrow is turned into joy before him.

The flakes of his flesh are joined together: they are firm in themselves; they cannot be moved.

His heart is as firm as a stone; yea, as hard as a piece of the nether millstone.

When he raiseth up himself, the mighty are afraid: by reason of breakings they purify themselves.

The sword of him that layeth at him cannot hold: the spear, the dart, nor the habergeon.

He esteemeth iron as straw, and brass as rotten wood.

The arrow cannot make him flee: slingstones are turned with him into stubble.

Darts are counted as stubble: he laugheth at the shaking of a spear.

Sharp stones are under him: he spreadeth sharp pointed things upon the mire.

He maketh the deep to boil like a pot: he maketh the sea like a pot of ointment.

He maketh a path to shine after him; one would think the deep to be hoary.

Upon earth there is not his like, who is made without fear.

He beholdeth all high things: he is a king over all the children of pride.

Then *Job* answered the ~~LORE~~, and said,

I know that thou canst do every thing, and that no thought can be withholden from thee.

Who is he that hideth counsel without knowledge? Therefore have I uttered that I understood not;

Things too wonderful for me, which I knew not.

Hear, I beseech thee, and I will speak: I will demand of thee, and declare thou unto me.

I have heard of thee by the hearing of the ear: but now mine eye seeth thee.

Wherefore I abhor myself, and repent in dust and ashes.

**V.2.** Almighty God, unto whom all hearts be open, all desires known, and from whom no secrets are hid: cleanse the thoughts of our hearts by the inspiration of thy Holy Spirit, that we may perfectly love thee, and worthily magnify thy holy name. Amen.

**V.3.** The ~~LORD~~ gave, and the ~~LORD~~ hath taken away; blessed be the name of the ~~LORD~~.

## VI.

**VI.1.** The heavens declare the glory of God, ☿ and the firmament sheweth his handywork.

One day telleth another, ☿ and one night certieth another.

There is neither speech nor language, ☿ but their voices are heard among them.

Their sound is gone out into all lands, ☿ and their words into the ends of the world.

In them hath he set a tabernacle for the sun, ☿ which cometh forth as a bridegroom out of his chamber, and rejoiceth as a giant to run his course.

It goeth forth from the uttermost part of the heaven, and runneth about unto the end of it again, ☿ and there is nothing hid from the heat thereof.

The law of the Lord is an undefiled law, converting the soul; ☿ the testimony of the Lord is sure, and giveth wisdom unto the simple.

The statutes of the Lord are right, and rejoice the heart; ☿ the commandment of the Lord is pure, and giveth light unto the eyes.

The fear of the Lord is clean, and endureth for ever; ☿ the judgements of the Lord are true, and righteous altogether.

More to be desired are they than gold, yea, than much fine gold, ☿ sweeter also than honey, and the honey-comb.

**VI.2.** God is a righteous judge, strong & patient; ☿ and God is provoked every day.

If a man will not turn, he will whet his sword; ☿ he hath bent his bow, and made it ready.

---

'For Purity', Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*.

Job 1.21, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Psalm 19, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*.

Psalm 7.12-17, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*.

He hath prepared for him the instruments of death; ∅ he ordaineth his arrows against the persecutors.

Behold, the ungodly travaileth with iniquity; ∅ he hath conceived mischief, and brought forth falsehood.

He hath graven & digged up a pit, ∅ and is fallen himself into the destruction that he made for other.

For his travail shall come upon his own head, ∅ and his wickedness shall fall on his own pate.

**VI.3.** Great men are not always wise.

## VII.

**VII.1.** The earth is the **LORE**'s, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein.

For he hath founded it upon the seas, and established it upon the floods.

Who shall ascend into the hill of the **LORE**? Or who shall stand in his holy place?

He that hath clean hands, and a pure heart; who hath not lifted up his soul unto vanity, nor sworn deceitfully.

He shall receive the blessing from the **LORE**, and righteousness from the God of his salvation.

This is the generation of them that seek him, that seek thy face, O Jacob.  
**Selah.**

Lift up your heads, O ye gates; and be ye lift up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in.

Who is this King of glory? The **LORE** strong and mighty, the **LORE** mighty in battle.

Lift up your heads, O ye gates; even lift them up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in.

Who is this King of glory? The **LORE** of hosts, he is the King of glory.  
**Selah.**

**VII.2.** Why standest thou so far off, O Lord, ∅ and hidest thy face in the needful time of trouble?

The ungodly, for his own lust, doth persecute the poor; ∅ let them be taken in the crafty wiliness that they have imagined.

For he hath said in his heart, Tush, I shall never be cast down; ∅ there shall no harm happen unto me.

---

Job 32.9, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

℞ Psalm 24, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Psalm 10.1-2,6,8-9,13,17, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer.*

He sitteth lurking in the thievish corners of the streets, ☿ and privily in his lurking dens doth he murder the innocent; his eyes are set against the poor.

For he lieth waiting secretly; even as a lion lurketh he in his den, ☿ that he may ravish the poor.

Arise, O Lord God, and lift up thine hand; ☿ forget not the poor.

Break thou the power of the ungodly & malicious; ☿ search out his ungodliness, until thou find none.

**VII.3.** The ~~LORD~~ is loving unto every man, and his mercy is over all his works.

## VIII.

**VIII.1.** Rejoice in the Lord, O ye righteous, ☿ for it becometh well the just to be thankful.

Praise the Lord with harp; ☿ sing praises unto him with the lute, and instrument of ten strings.

Sing unto the Lord a new song; ☿ sing praises lustily unto him with a good courage.

For the word of the Lord is true, ☿ and all his works are faithful.

He loveth righteousness and judgement; ☿ the earth is full of the goodness of the Lord.

By the word of the Lord were the heavens made, ☿ and all the hosts of them by the breath of his mouth.

He gathereth the waters of the sea together, as it were upon an heap, ☿ and layeth up the deep, as in a treasure-house.

Let all the earth fear the Lord; ☿ stand in awe of him, all ye that dwell in the world.

For he spake, and it was done; ☿ he commanded, and it stood fast.

The Lord bringeth the counsel of the heathen to nought, ☿ and maketh the devices of the people to be of none effect, and casteth out the counsels of princes.

The counsel of the Lord shall endure for ever, ☿ and the thoughts of his heart from generation to generation.

Blessed are the people, whose God is the Lord, ☿ and blessed are the folk, that he hath chosen to him to be his inheritance.

**VIII.2.** There be many that say, Who will show us any good? ~~LORD~~, lift thou up the light of thy countenance upon us.

---

Psalm 145.9, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Psalm 33.1-11, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer.*

Psalm 4.6-8, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Thou hast put gladness in my heart, more than in the time that their corn & their wine increased.

I will both lay me down in peace, & sleep: for thou, ~~LORD~~, only makest me dwell in safety.

**VIII.3.** The lot is cast into the lap; but the whole disposing thereof is of the ~~LORD~~.

## IX.

**IX.1.** Like as the hart desireth the water-brooks,  $\phi$  so longeth my soul after thee, O God.

My soul is athirst for God, yea, even for the living God;  $\phi$  when shall I come to appear before the presence of God?

My tears have been my meat day & night,  $\phi$  while they daily say unto me, Where is now thy God?

Now when I think thereupon, I pour out my heart by myself,  $\phi$  for I went with the multitude, and brought them forth into the house of God;

In the voice of praise & thanksgiving,  $\phi$  among such as keep holy-day.

Why art thou so full of heaviness, O my soul  $\phi$  and why art thou so disquieted within me?

Put thy trust in God,  $\phi$  for I will yet give him thanks for the help of his countenance.

My God, my soul is vexed within me,  $\phi$  therefore will I remember thee concerning the land of JORDAN, and the little hill of HERMON.

One deep calleth another, because of the noise of the water-pipes,  $\phi$  all thy waves & storms are gone over me.

The Lord hath granted his loving-kindness in the day-time,  $\phi$  and in the night-season did I sing of him, and made my prayer unto the God of my life.

I will say unto the God of my strength, Why hast thou forgotten me?  $\phi$  Why go I thus heavily, while the enemy oppresseth me?

My bones are smitten asunder as with a sword,  $\phi$  while mine enemies that trouble me cast me in the teeth;

Namely, while they say daily unto me,  $\phi$  Where is now thy God?

Why art thou so vexed, O my soul,  $\phi$  and why art thou so disquieted within me?

O put thy trust in God,  $\phi$  for I will yet thank him, which is the help of my countenance, and my God.

**IX.2.** In the Lord put I my trust;  $\phi$  how say ye then to my soul, that she should flee as a bird unto the hill?

---

Proverbs 16.33, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Psalm 42, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer.*

Psalm 11.1-5, 7-8, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer.*

For lo, the ungodly bend their bow, and make ready their arrows within the quiver,  $\wp$  that they may privily shoot at them which are true of heart.

If the foundations be destroyed,  $\wp$  what hath the righteous done?

The Lord is in his holy temple;  $\wp$  the Lord's seat is in heaven.

His eyes consider the poor,  $\wp$  and his eyelids try the children of men.

Upon the ungodly he shall rain snares, fire & brimstone, storm and tempest:  $\wp$  this shall be their portion to drink.

For the righteous Lord loveth righteousness;  $\wp$  his countenance will behold the thing that is just.

**IX.3.** Let my prayer be set forth before thee as incense; and the lifting up of my hands as the evening sacrifice.

## X.

**X.1.** God is our refuge & strength,  $\wp$  a very present help in trouble.

Therefore will not we fear, though the earth be removed,  $\wp$  and though the mountains be carried into the midst of the sea;

Though the waters thereof roar & be troubled,  $\wp$  though the mountains shake with the swelling thereof. **Selah.**

There is a river, the streams whereof shall make glad the city of God,  $\wp$  the holy place of the tabernacles of the Most High.

God is in the midst of her; she shall not be moved:  $\wp$  God shall help her, and that right early.

The heathen raged; the kingdoms were moved;  $\wp$  he uttered his voice; the earth melted.

The Lord of hosts is with us;  $\wp$  the God of Jacob is our refuge. **Selah.**

Come, behold the works of the Lord,  $\wp$  what desolations he hath made in the earth.

He maketh wars to cease unto the end of the earth;  $\wp$  he breaketh the bow, and cutteth the spear in sunder; he burneth the chariot in the fire.

Be still, and know that I am God:  $\wp$  I will be exalted among the heathen; I will be exalted in the earth.

The Lord of hosts is with us;  $\wp$  the God of Jacob is our refuge. **Selah.**

**X.2.** The ~~LORD~~ is my shepherd; I shall not want.

He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters.

He restoreth my soul: he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake.

---

Psalm 141.2, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Psalm 46, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer.*

Psalm 23, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod & thy staff they comfort me.

Thou preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies: thou anointest my head with oil; my cup runneth over.

Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the ~~Lord~~ for ever.

**X.3.** Keep me as the apple of an eye; hide me under the shadow of thy wings.

## XI.

**XI.1.** Have mercy upon me, O God, after thy great goodness;  $\wp$  according to the multitude of thy mercies do away mine offences.

Wash me thoroughly from my wickedness,  $\wp$  and cleanse me from my sin.

For I acknowledge my faults,  $\wp$  and my sin is ever before me.

Against thee only have I sinned, and done this evil in thy sight,  $\wp$  that thou mightest be justified in thy saying, and clear when thou art judged.

Behold, I was shapen in wickedness,  $\wp$  and in sin hath my mother conceived me.

But lo, thou requirest truth in the inward parts,  $\wp$  and shalt make me to understand wisdom secretly.

Thou shalt purge me with hyssop, and I shall be clean;  $\wp$  thou shalt wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow.

Thou shalt make me hear of joy & gladness,  $\wp$  that the bones which thou hast broken may rejoice.

Turn thy face from my sins,  $\wp$  and put out all my misdeeds.

Make me a clean heart, O God,  $\wp$  and renew a right spirit within me.

Cast me not away from thy presence,  $\wp$  and take not thy Holy Spirit from me.

O give me the comfort of thy help again,  $\wp$  and stablish me with thy free Spirit.

Then shall I teach thy ways unto the wicked,  $\wp$  and sinners shall be converted unto thee.

Deliver me from blood-guiltiness, O God, thou that art the God of my health,  $\wp$  and my tongue shall sing of thy righteousness.

Thou shalt open my lips, O Lord,  $\wp$  and my mouth shall shew thy praise.

For thou desirest no sacrifice, else would I give it thee,  $\wp$  but thou delightest not in burnt offerings.

The sacrifice of God is a troubled spirit;  $\wp$  a broken and contrite heart, O God, shalt thou not despise.

---

Psalm 18.8, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*.

Psalm 51, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*.

**XI.2.** The Lord is king for ever & ever, ☩ and the heathen are perished out of the land.

Lord, thou hast heard the desire of the poor; ☩ thou preparest their heart, and thine ear hearkeneth;

To help the fatherless & poor unto their right, ☩ that the man of the earth be no more exalted against them.

**XI.3.** Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

## XII.

**XII.1.** Bless the ~~LORE~~, O my soul. O ~~LORE~~ my God, thou art very great; thou art clothed with honour and majesty.

Who coverest thyself with light as with a garment: who stretchest out the heavens like a curtain:

Who layeth the beams of his chambers in the waters: who maketh the clouds his chariot: who walketh upon the wings of the wind:

Who maketh his angels spirits; his ministers a flaming fire:

Who laid the foundations of the earth, that it should not be removed for ever.

Thou coveredst it with the deep as with a garment: the waters stood above the mountains.

At thy rebuke they fled; at the voice of thy thunder they hasted away.

They go up by the mountains; they go down by the valleys unto the place which thou hast founded for them.

Thou hast set a bound that they may not pass over; that they turn not again to cover the earth.

He sendeth the springs into the valleys, which run among the hills.

They give drink to every beast of the field: the wild asses quench their thirst.

By them shall the fowls of the heaven have their habitation, which sing among the branches.

He watereth the hills from his chambers: the earth is satisfied with the fruit of thy works.

He causeth the grass to grow for the cattle, and herb for the service of man: that he may bring forth food out of the earth;

And wine that maketh glad the heart of man, and oil to make his face to shine, and bread which strengtheneth man's heart.

The trees of the ~~LORE~~ are full of sap; the cedars of Lebanon, which he hath planted;

---

Psalms 103-104, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*.

Matthew 6.34, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Psalms 104, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.



Where the birds make their nests: as for the stork, the fir trees are her house.

The high hills are a refuge for the wild goats; and the rocks for the conies. He appointed the moon for seasons: the sun knoweth his going down.

Thou makest darkness, and it is night: wherein all the beasts of the forest do creep forth.

The young lions roar after their prey, and seek their meat from God.

The sun ariseth, they gather themselves together, and lay them down in their dens.

Man goeth forth unto his work and to his labour until the evening.

O **LORD**, how manifold are thy works! in wisdom hast thou made them all: the earth is full of thy riches.

So is this great & wide sea, wherein are things creeping innumerable, both small and great beasts.

There go the ships: there is that leviathan, whom thou hast made to play therein.

These wait all upon thee; that thou mayest give them their meat in due season.

That thou givest them they gather: thou openest thine hand, they are filled with good.

Thou hidest thy face, they are troubled: thou takest away their breath, they die, and return to their dust.

Thou sendest forth thy spirit, they are created: and thou renewest the face of the earth.

The glory of the **LORD** shall endure for ever: the **LORD** shall rejoice in his works.

He looketh on the earth, and it trembleth: he toucheth the hills, and they smoke.

I will sing unto the **LORD** as long as I live: I will sing praise to my God while I have my being.

My meditation of him shall be sweet: I will be glad in the **LORD**.

Let the sinners be consumed out of the earth, and let the wicked be no more.

Bless thou the **LORD**, O my soul. Praise ye the **LORD**.

**XII.2.** Intreat me not to leave thee, or to return from following after thee:

For whither thou goest, I will go; and where thou lodgest, I will lodge:

Thy people shall be my people, and thy God my God:

Where thou diest, will I die, and there will I be buried:

---

Ruth 1.16-17, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*. This passage from Ruth often forms part of the Jewish marriage ceremony.

The ~~LORE~~ do so to me, and more also, if ought but death part thee & me.

**XII.3.** Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

### XIII.

**XIII.1.** O Lord, thou hast searched me out & known me; ☉ thou knowest my down-sitting & mine up-rising, thou understandest my thoughts long before.

Thou art about my path, & about my bed, ☉ and spiest out all my ways.

For lo, there is not a word in my tongue, ☉ but thou, O Lord, knowest it altogether.

Thou hast fashioned me behind & before, ☉ and laid thine hand upon me.

Such knowledge is too wonderful & excellent for me; ☉ I cannot attain unto it.

Whither shall I go then from thy Spirit, ☉ or whither shall I go then from thy presence?

If I climb up into heaven, thou art there; ☉ If I go down to hell, thou art there also.

If I take the wings of the morning, ☉ and remain in the uttermost parts of the sea;

Even there also shall thy hand lead me, ☉ and thy right hand shall hold me.

If I say, Peradventure the darkness shall cover me, ☉ then shall my night be turned to day.

Yea, the darkness is no darkness with thee, but the night is as clear as the day; ☉ the darkness & light to thee are both alike.

For my reins are thine; ☉ thou hast covered me in my mother's womb.

I will give thanks unto thee, for I am fearfully and wonderfully made; ☉ marvellous are thy works, and that my soul knoweth right well.

My bones are not hid from thee, ☉ though I be made secretly, and fashioned beneath in the earth.

Thine eyes did see my substance, yet being unperfect, ☉ and in thy book were all my members written.

---

Matthew 4.4, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*. Christ here is quoting Deuteronomy 8.3.

Psalm 139, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*. ¶19. This seems to be a mistranslation. The full couplet ought to read something like, 'If I say, "Let only darkness cover me,/ And the light about me be night..."' (as the RSV renders it). ¶30. The Almanacker has deleted the couplet immediately following 'And in thy book were all my members written.'

How dear are thy counsels unto me, O God! ϕ O how great is the sum of them!

If I tell them, they are more in number than the sand; when I wake up I am present with thee.

Wilt thou not slay the wicked, O God? ϕ Depart from me, ye blood-thirsty men.

For they speak unrighteously against thee, ϕ and thine enemies take thy name in vain.

Do not I hate them, O Lord, that hate thee, ϕ and am not I grieved with those that rise up against thee?

Yea, I hate them right sore, ϕ even as though they were mine enemies.

Try me, O God, and seek the ground of my heart; ϕ prove me, and examine my thoughts.

Look well if there be any way of wickedness in me, ϕ and lead me in the way everlasting.

**XIII.2.** O ~~LORD~~ our governor, how excellent is thy name in all the earth, who hast set thy glory above the heavens.

Out of the mouth of babes & sucklings hast thou ordained strength because of thine enemies that thou mightest still the enemy & the avenger.

When I consider thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon & the stars, which thou hast ordained;

What is man, that thou art mindful of him, and the son of man, that thou visitest him?

For thou hast made him a little lower than the angels, and hast crowned him with glory & honour.

Thou madest him to have dominion over the works of thy hands; thou hast put all things under his feet:

All sheep & oxen, yea, and the beasts of the field;

The fowl of the air, & the fish of the sea, and whatsoever passeth through the paths of the seas.

O ~~LORD~~ our governor, how excellent is thy name in all the earth.

**XIII.3.** The truth shall make you free.

## XIV.

**XIV.1.** Praise ye the ~~LORD~~: for it is good to sing praises unto our God; for it is pleasant; and praise is comely.

---

Psalm 8, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*. The Almanacker has replaced the KJV's 'our Lord' with the BCP's 'our Governor' in the first and last verses of this psalm.

John 8.32, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Psalm 147.1-11, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

The ~~LORD~~ doth build up JERUSALEM: he gathereth together the outcasts of Israel.

He healeth the broken in heart, and bindeth up their wounds.

He telleth the number of the stars; he calleth them all by their names.

Great is our ~~LORD~~, and of great power: his understanding is infinite.

The ~~LORD~~ lifteth up the meek: he casteth the wicked down to the ground.

Sing unto the ~~LORD~~ with thanksgiving; sing praise upon the harp unto our God:

Who covereth the heaven with clouds, who prepareth rain for the earth, who maketh grass to grow upon the mountains.

He giveth to the beast his food, and to the young ravens which cry.

He delighteth not in the strength of the horse: he taketh not pleasure in the legs of a man.

The ~~LORD~~ taketh pleasure in them that fear him, in those that hope in his mercy.

**XIV.2.** Lord, who shall dwell in thy tabernacle, ☉ or who shall rest upon thy holy hill?

Even he that leadeth an uncorrupt life, ☉ and doeth the thing which is right, and speaketh the truth from his heart.

He that hath used no deceit in his tongue, nor done evil to his neighbour, ☉ and hath not slandered his neighbour.

He that setteth not by himself, but is lowly in his own eyes, ☉ and maketh much of them that fear the Lord.

He that sweareth unto his neighbour, and disappointeth him not, ☉ though it were to his own hindrance.

He that hath not given his money upon usury, ☉ nor taken reward against the innocent.

Whoso doeth these things ☉ shall never fall.

**XIV.3.** The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath.

## XV.

**XV.1.** O praise the Lord of heaven; ☉ praise him in the height.

Praise him, all ye angels of his; ☉ praise him, all his host.

Praise him, sun & moon; ☉ praise him, all ye stars & light.

Praise him, all ye heavens, ☉ and ye waters that are above the heavens.

Let them praise the name of the Lord; ☉ for he spake the word, and they were made; he commanded, and they were created.

---

Psalms 15, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*. For self-evident reasons, some call this ‘the gentleman’s psalm’.

Mark 2.27, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Psalms 148.1-13, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*.

He hath made them fast for ever & ever; ∅ he hath given them a law which shall not be broken.

Praise the Lord upon earth, ∅ ye dragons, and all deeps;

Fire & hail, snow & vapours, ∅ wind & storm, fulfilling his word;

Mountains & all hills, ∅ fruitful trees & all cedars;

Beasts & all cattle; ∅ worms & feathered fowls;

Kings of the earth & all people, ∅ princes & all judges of the world;

Young men & maidens, old men & children, praise the name of the Lord, ∅ for his name only is excellent, and his praise above heaven & earth.

**XV.2.** Praise ye the ~~LORD~~. Praise God in his sanctuary: praise him in the firmament of his power.

Praise him for his mighty acts: praise him according to his excellent greatness.

Praise him with the sound of the trumpet: praise him with the psaltery & harp.

Praise him with the timbrel & dance: praise him with stringed instruments & organs.

Praise him upon the loud cymbals: praise him upon the high sounding cymbals.

Let every thing that hath breath praise the ~~LORD~~. praise ye the ~~LORD~~.

**XV.3.** Why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?

## XVI.

**XVI.1.** My soul doth magnify the Lord, ∅ and my spirit hath rejoiced in God my saviour.

For he hath regarded: ∅ the lowliness of his hand-maiden.

For, behold, from henceforth ∅ all generations shall call me blessed.

For he that is mighty hath magnified me, ∅ and holy is his name.

And his mercy is on them that fear him ∅ throughout all generations.

He hath showed strength with his arm; ∅ he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.

He hath put down the mighty from their seat, ∅ and hath exalted the humble & meek.

He hath filled the hungry with good things: ∅ and the rich he hath sent empty away.

---

Psalm 150, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Matthew 7.3, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

'The Magnificat', Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*. This song is a translation of Luke 1.46-55.

He remembering of his mercy hath holpen his servant Israel: ☩ as he promised to our forefathers, *Abraham* & his seed, for ever.

**XVI.2.** Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, ☩ according to thy word.

For mine eyes have seen ☩ thy salvation,

Which thou hast prepared ☩ before the face of all peoples;

To be a light to lighten the gentiles, ☩ and the glory of thy people Israel.

**XVI.3.** No man can serve two masters.

## XVII.

**XVII.1.** Blessèd be the Lord God of Israel: ☩ for he hath visited and redeemed his people;

And he hath raised up a mighty salvation for us ☩ in the house of his servant *David*;

As he spoke by the mouth of his holy prophets ☩ which have been since the world began;

That we should be saved from our enemies ☩ and from the hand of all that hate us;

To perform the mercy promised to our forefathers, ☩ and to remember his holy covenant;

To perform the oath which he sware to our forefather *Abraham* ☩ that he would give us;

That we being delivered out of the hands of our enemies: ☩ might serve him without fear;

In holiness & righteousness before him ☩ all the days of our life.

And thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: ☩ for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways;

To give knowledge of salvation unto his people ☩ for the remission of their sins,

Through the tender mercy of our God, ☩ whereby the day spring from on high hath visited us;

To give light to them that sit in darkness, and in the shadow of death: ☩ to guide our feet into the way of peace.

---

‘The Nunc Dimittis’, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*. These lines are a translation of Luke 2:29-32.

Matthew 6:24, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

‘Benedictus’, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*. This song is a translation of Luke 1:68-79.

**XVII.2.** Our Father, which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name; thy kingdom come; thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven: give us this day our daily bread; and forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us; and lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil. For thine is the kingdom, the power, and the glory, for ever & ever. Amen.

**XVII.3.** Let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth.

## XVIII.

**XVIII.1.** Blessèd are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessèd are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

Blessèd are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

Blessèd are they which do hunger & thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.

Blessèd are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

Blessèd are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

Blessèd are the peacemakers: for they shall be called children of God.

Blessèd are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

**XVIII.2.** Come, ye blessed of my Father; inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:

For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink:

I was a stranger, and ye took me in: naked, and ye clothed me:

I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me.

Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.

**XVIII.3.** Judge not, that ye be not judged.

---

‘The Lord’s Prayer’, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*. The first four lines are a translation of Matthew 6.9-13. The doxology is of uncertain origin; a version of it appears in the *Διδοχῆ*, and in certain Byzantine manuscripts of Matthew.

Matthew 6.3, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Matthew 5.2-10, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*. These verses are sometimes called the Beatitudes, a term derived from the Latin word *beatitudo*, meaning *blessedness*, which was sometimes printed in the marginalia of the Vulgate at this point in Matthew’s Gospel.

Matthew 25.34-36,40, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

Matthew 7.1, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

## XIX.

**XIX.1.** Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not love, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.

And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not love, I am nothing.

And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not love, it profiteth me nothing.

Love suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; love vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up,

Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil;

Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth;

Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

Love never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.

For we know in part, and we prophesy in part.

But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.

And now abideth faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love.

## XIX.2.

Come, Holy Ghost, our souls inspire,  
And lighten with celestial fire.  
Thou the anointing spirit art,  
Who dost thy sevenfold gifts impart.

Thy blessed unction from above  
Is comfort, life, and fire of love.

---

℞ 1 Corinthians 13, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*. The original reads ‘charity’ where the *Almanack* has put ‘love’.

‘Veni Creator Spiritus’, John Cosin, Bishop of Durham (1594 – 1672), Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*. The hymn is ancient, being composed by a Frankish monk, Rabanus Maurus, in the ninth century, and translated into English by the Bishop of Durham. The original hymn concludes with a further verse and a half.



Enable with perpetual light  
The dullness of our blinded sight.

Anoint & cheer our soiled face  
With the abundance of thy grace.  
Keep far from foes, give peace at home:  
Where thou art guide, no ill can come.

**XIX.3.** A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country.

## XX.

**XX.1.** Be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.

For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.

Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.

Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness;

And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace;

Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:

Praying always with all prayer & supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints;

And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel,

For which I am an ambassador in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

**XX.2.** Do not err, my beloved brethren.

Every good gift & every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of first fruits of his creatures.

Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath:

---

Matthew 13:57, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Ephesians 6:10-20, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

James 1:16-21, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God.

Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls.

**XX.3.** Render therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's; and unto God the things that are God's.

## XXI.

**XXI.1.** In the year that King *Uzziah* died I saw also the Lord sitting upon a throne, high & lifted up, and his train filled the temple.

Above it stood the seraphims: each one had six wings; with twain he covered his face, and with twain he covered his feet, and with twain he did fly.

And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the **LORD** of hosts: the whole earth is full of his glory.

And the posts of the door moved at the voice of him that cried, and the house was filled with smoke.

Then said I, Woe is me! For I am undone; because I am a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips: for mine eyes have seen the King, the **LORD** of hosts.

Then flew one of the seraphims unto me, having a live coal in his hand, which he had taken with the tongs from off the altar:

And he laid it upon my mouth, and said, Lo, this hath touched thy lips; and thine iniquity is taken away, and thy sin purged.

Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying, 'Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, Here am I; send me.

**XXI.2.** The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined.

Thou hast multiplied the nation, and not increased the joy: they joy before thee according to the joy in harvest, and as men rejoice when they divide the spoil.

For thou hast broken the yoke of his burden, and the staff of his shoulder, the rod of his oppressor, as in the day of Midian.

For every battle of the warrior is with confused noise, and garments rolled in blood; but this shall be with burning and fuel of fire.

For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, the mighty God, the everlasting Father, the Prince of Peace.

---

Matthew 20.21, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Isaiah 6.1-8, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Isaiah 9.2-7, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of *David*, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the ~~LORD~~ of hosts will perform this.

**XXI.3.** It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

## XXII.

**XXII.1.** Strengthen ye the weak hands, and confirm the feeble knees.

Say to them that are of a fearful heart, Be strong, fear not: behold, your God will come with vengeance, even God with a recompence; he will come and save you.

Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped.

Then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing: for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert.

And the parched ground shall become a pool, and the thirsty land springs of water: in the habitation of dragons, where each lay, shall be grass with reeds & rushes.

And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it shall be for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein.

No lion shall be there, nor any ravenous beast shall go up thereon, it shall not be found there; but the redeemed shall walk there:

And the ransomed of the ~~LORD~~ shall return, and come to ZION with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy & gladness, and sorrow & sighing shall flee away.

**XXII.2.** But in the last days it shall come to pass, that the mountain of the house of the ~~LORD~~ shall be established in the top of the mountains, and it shall be exalted above the hills; and people shall flow unto it.

And many nations shall come, and say, Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the ~~LORD~~, and to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for the law shall go forth of ZION, and the word of the ~~LORD~~ from JERUSALEM.

And he shall judge among many people, and rebuke strong nations afar off; and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning-hooks: nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more.

---

Matthew 19.24, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*  
 Isaiah 35.3-10, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*  
 Micah 3.1-4, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

But they shall sit every man under his vine and under his fig tree; and none shall make them afraid: for the mouth of the **LORD** of hosts hath spoken it.

**XXII.3.** Whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also.

### XXIII.

**XXIII.1.** Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, saith your God.

Speak ye comfortably to JERUSALEM, and cry unto her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned: for she hath received of the **LORD**'s hand double for all her sins.

The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the **LORD**, make straight in the desert a highway for our God.

Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low: and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain:

And the glory of the **LORD** shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together: for the mouth of the **LORD** hath spoken it.

The voice said, Cry. And he said, What shall I cry? All flesh is grass, and all the goodliness thereof is as the flower of the field:

The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: because the spirit of the **LORD** bloweth upon it: surely the people is grass.

The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: but the word of our God shall stand for ever.

O ZION, that bringest good tidings, get thee up into the high mountain; O JERUSALEM, that bringest good tidings, lift up thy voice with strength; lift it up, be not afraid; say unto the cities of Judah, Behold your God!

Behold, the Lord **GOD** will come with strong hand, and his arm shall rule for him: behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him.

He shall feed his flock like a shepherd: he shall gather the lambs with his arm, and carry them in his bosom, and shall gently lead those that are with young.

Who hath measured the waters in the hollow of his hand, and meted out heaven with the span, and comprehended the dust of the earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance?

Who hath directed the Spirit of the **LORD**, or being his counsellor hath taught him?

With whom took he counsel, and who instructed him, and taught him in the path of judgment, and taught him knowledge, and shewed to him the way of understanding?

---

Matthew 5.39, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Isaiah 40, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Behold, the nations are as a drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance: behold, he taketh up the isles as a very little thing.

And Lebanon is not sufficient to burn, nor the beasts thereof sufficient for a burnt offering.

All nations before him are as nothing; and they are counted to him less than nothing, and vanity.

To whom then will ye liken God? or what likeness will ye compare unto him?

The workman melteth a graven image, and the goldsmith spreadeth it over with gold, and casteth silver chains.

He that is so impoverished that he hath no oblation chooseth a tree that will not rot; he seeketh unto him a cunning workman to prepare a graven image, that shall not be moved.

Have ye not known? have ye not heard? hath it not been told you from the beginning? have ye not understood from the foundations of the earth?

It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in:

That bringeth the princes to nothing; he maketh the judges of the earth as vanity.

Yea, they shall not be planted; yea, they shall not be sown: yea, their stock shall not take root in the earth: and he shall also blow upon them, and they shall wither, and the whirlwind shall take them away as stubble.

To whom then will ye liken me, or shall I be equal? saith the Holy One.

Lift up your eyes on high, and behold who hath created these things, that bringeth out their host by number: he calleth them all by names by the greatness of his might, for that he is strong in power; not one faileth.

Why sayest thou, O Jacob, and speakest, O Israel, My way is hid from the **LORD**, and my judgment is passed over from my God?

Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, that the everlasting God, the **LORD**, the Creator of the ends of the earth, fainteth not, neither is weary? there is no searching of his understanding.

He giveth power to the faint; and to them that have no might he increaseth strength.

Even the youths shall faint and be weary, and the young men shall utterly fall:

But they that wait upon the **LORD** shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.

**XXIII.2.** Thus saith God the **LORD**, he that created the heavens, and stretched them out; he that spread forth the earth, and that which cometh out of it; he that giveth breath unto the people upon it, and spirit to them that walk therein:

I the **LORD** have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the gentiles;

To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house.

I am the **LORD**: that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images.

**XXIII.3.** If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar.

## XXIV.

**XXIV.1.** Who hath believed our report? And to whom is the arm of the **LORD** revealed?

For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him.

He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not.

Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted.

But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.

All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the **LORD** hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.

He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth.

He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken.

And he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death; because he had done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth.

---

<sup>1</sup> John 4.20, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Isaiah 53, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Yet it pleased the **LORD** to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the **LORD** shall prosper in his hand.

He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities.

Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.

**XXIV.2.** But now thus saith the **LORD** that created thee, O Jacob, and he that formed thee, O Israel, Fear not: for I have redeemed thee, I have called thee by thy name; thou art mine.

When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee.

For I am the **LORD** thy God, the Holy One of Israel, thy Saviour: I gave Egypt for thy ransom, Ethiopia and Seba for thee.

Since thou wast precious in my sight, thou hast been honourable, and I have loved thee: therefore will I give men for thee, and people for thy life.

Fear not: for I am with thee: I will bring thy seed from the east, and gather thee from the west;

I will say to the north, Give up; and to the south, Keep not back: bring my sons from far, and my daughters from the ends of the earth;

Even every one that is called by my name: for I have created him for my glory, I have formed him; yea, I have made him.

**XXIV.3.** God is no respecter of persons.

## XXV.

**XXV.1.** Seek ye the **LORD** while he may be found, call ye upon him while he is near:

Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the **LORD**, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon.

For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the **LORD**.

For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts.

---

Isaiah 43.1-7, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Acts 10.34, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Isaiah 55.6-13, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

For as the rain cometh down, and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater:

So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it.

For ye shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace: the mountains and the hills shall break forth before you into singing, and all the trees of the field shall clap their hands.

Instead of the thorn shall come up the fir tree, and instead of the brier shall come up the myrtle tree: and it shall be to the ~~LORD~~ for a name, for an everlasting sign that shall not be cut off.

**XXV.2.** How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace; that bringeth good tidings of good, that publisheth salvation; that saith unto ZION, Thy God reigneth!

Thy watchmen shall lift up the voice; with the voice together shall they sing: for they shall see eye to eye, when the ~~LORD~~ shall bring again ZION.

Break forth into joy, sing together, ye waste places of JERUSALEM: for the ~~LORD~~ hath comforted his people, he hath redeemed JERUSALEM.

The ~~LORD~~ hath made bare his holy arm in the eyes of all the nations; and all the ends of the earth shall see the salvation of our God.

**XXV.3.** God is love.

## XXVI.

**XXVI.1.** For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind.

But be ye glad and rejoice for ever in that which I create: for, behold, I create JERUSALEM a rejoicing, and her people a joy.

And I will rejoice in JERUSALEM, and joy in my people: and the voice of weeping shall be no more heard in her, nor the voice of crying.

There shall be no more thence an infant of days, nor an old man that hath not filled his days: for the child shall die an 100 years old; but the sinner being an 100 years old shall be accursed.

And they shall build houses, and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards, and eat the fruit of them.

They shall not build, and another inhabit; they shall not plant, and another eat: for as the days of a tree are the days of my people, and mine elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands.

---

Isaiah 52.7-10, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

1 John 4.8, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Isaiah 65.17-25, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*



They shall not labour in vain, nor bring forth for trouble; for they are the seed of the blessed of the **LORD**, and their offspring with them.

And it shall come to pass, that before they call, I will answer; and while they are yet speaking, I will hear.

The wolf and the lamb shall feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like the bullock: and dust shall be the serpent's meat. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain, saith the **LORD**.

**XXVI.2.** Arise, shine; for thy light is come, and the glory of the **LORD** is risen upon thee.

For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the **LORD** shall arise upon thee, and his glory shall be seen upon thee.

And the gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising.

Lift up thine eyes round about, and see: all they gather themselves together, they come to thee: thy sons shall come from far, and thy daughters shall be nursed at thy side.

Then thou shalt see, and flow together, and thine heart shall fear, and be enlarged; because the abundance of the sea shall be converted unto thee, the forces of the gentiles shall come unto thee.

**XXVI.3.** Some have entertained angels unawares.

## XXVII.

**XXVII.1.** Behold, I will make JERUSALEM a cup of trembling unto all the people round about, when they shall be in the siege both against Judah and against JERUSALEM.

And in that day will I make JERUSALEM a burdensome stone for all people: all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces, though all the people of the earth be gathered together against it.

In that day, saith the **LORD**, I will smite every horse with astonishment, and his rider with madness: and I will open mine eyes upon the house of Judah, and will smite every horse of the people with blindness.

And the governors of Judah shall say in their heart, The inhabitants of JERUSALEM shall be my strength in the **LORD** of hosts their God.

In that day will I make the governors of Judah like an hearth of fire among the wood, and like a torch of fire in a sheaf; and they shall devour all the people round about, on the right hand & on the left: and JERUSALEM shall be inhabited again in her own place, even in JERUSALEM.

---

Isaiah 60.1-5, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Hebrew 13.2, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Zecheriah 12, 13.1, 14.1-12, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

The **LORD** also shall save the tents of Judah first, that the glory of the house of *David* and the glory of the inhabitants of JERUSALEM do not magnify themselves against Judah.

In that day shall the **LORD** defend the inhabitants of JERUSALEM; and he that is feeble among them at that day shall be as *David*; and the house of *David* shall be as God, as the angel of the **LORD** before them.

And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will seek to destroy all the nations that come against JERUSALEM.

And I will pour upon the house of *David*, and upon the inhabitants of JERUSALEM, the spirit of grace & of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn.

In that day shall there be a great mourning in JERUSALEM, as the mourning of HADADRIMMON in the valley of MEGIDDON.

And the land shall mourn, every family apart; the family of the house of *David* apart, and their wives apart; the family of the house of *Nathan* apart, and their wives apart; The family of the house of *Levi* apart, and their wives apart; the family of *Shimei* apart, and their wives apart;

All the families that remain, every family apart, and their wives apart.

Behold, the day of the **LORD** cometh, and thy spoil shall be divided in the midst of thee.

For I will gather all nations against JERUSALEM to battle; and the city shall be taken, and the houses rifled, and the women ravished; and half of the city shall go forth into captivity, and the residue of the people shall not be cut off from the city.

Then shall the **LORD** go forth, and fight against those nations, as when he fought in the day of battle.

And his feet shall stand in that day upon the MOUNT OF OLIVES, which is before JERUSALEM on the east, and the MOUNT OF OLIVES shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and there shall be a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south.

And ye shall flee to the valley of the mountains; for the valley of the mountains shall reach unto AZAL: yea, ye shall flee, like as ye fled from before the earthquake in the days of *Uzziah*, King of Judah: and the **LORD** my God shall come, and all the saints with thee.

And it shall come to pass in that day, that the light shall not be clear, nor dark:

But it shall be one day which shall be known to the **LORD**, not day, nor night: but it shall come to pass, that at evening time it shall be light.

And it shall be in that day, that living waters shall go out from JERUSALEM; half of them toward the former sea, and half of them toward the hinder sea: in summer and in winter shall it be.

And the **LORD** shall be king over all the earth: in that day shall there be one **LORD**, and his name one.

All the land shall be turned as a plain from GEBA to RIMMON south of JERUSALEM: and it shall be lifted up, and inhabited in her place, from BENJAMIN'S GATE unto the place of the first gate, unto the corner gate, and from the TOWER OF HANANEEL unto the king's winepresses.

And men shall dwell in it, and there shall be no more utter destruction; but JERUSALEM shall be safely inhabited.

And this shall be the plague wherewith the **LORD** will smite all the people that have fought against JERUSALEM; their flesh shall consume away while they stand upon their feet, and their eyes shall consume away in their holes, and their tongue shall consume away in their mouth.

**XXVII.2.** The Spirit of the Lord **GOB** is upon me; because the **LORD** hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the broken-hearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound;

To proclaim the acceptable year of the **LORD**, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn;

To appoint unto them that mourn in ZION, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the **LORD**, that he might be glorified.

And they shall build the old wastes, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the waste cities, the desolations of many generations.

**XXVII.3.** The love of money is the root of all evil.

## XXVIII.

**XXVIII.1.** Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the **LORD** of hosts.

But who may abide the day of his coming? and who shall stand when he appeareth? for he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap:

---

Isaiah 61.1-4, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

<sup>1</sup> Timothy 6.10, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Malachi 3-4, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

And he shall sit as a refiner & purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of *Levi*, and purge them as gold & silver, that they may offer unto the **LORD** an offering in righteousness.

Then shall the offering of Judah & JERUSALEM be pleasant unto the **LORD**, as in the days of old, and as in former years.

And I will come near to you to judgement; and I will be a swift witness against the sorcerers, and against the adulterers, and against false swearers, and against those that oppress the hireling in his wages, the widow, and the fatherless, and that turn aside the stranger from his right, and fear not me, saith the **LORD** of hosts.

For I am the **LORD**, I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed.

Even from the days of your fathers ye are gone away from mine ordinances, and have not kept them. Return unto me, and I will return unto you, saith the **LORD** of hosts. But ye said, Wherein shall we return?

Will a man rob God? Yet ye have robbed me. But ye say, Wherein have we robbed thee? In tithes & offerings.

Ye are cursed with a curse: for ye have robbed me, even this whole nation.

Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in mine house, and prove me now herewith, saith the **LORD** of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it.

And I will rebuke the devourer for your sakes, and he shall not destroy the fruits of your ground; neither shall your vine cast her fruit before the time in the field, saith the **LORD** of hosts.

And all nations shall call you blessed: for ye shall be a delightsome land, saith the **LORD** of hosts.

Your words have been stout against me, saith the **LORD**. Yet ye say, What have we spoken so much against thee?

Ye have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance, and that we have walked mournfully before the **LORD** of hosts?

And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered.

Then they that feared the **LORD** spake often one to another: and the **LORD** hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the **LORD**, and that thought upon his name.

And they shall be mine, saith the **LORD** of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him.

Then shall ye return, and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth him not.

For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the **LORD** of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch.

But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall.

And ye shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do this, saith the **LORD** of hosts.

Remember ye the law of *Moses* my servant, which I commanded unto him in HOREB for all Israel, with the statutes & judgments.

Behold, I will send you *Elijah* the prophet before the coming of the great & dreadful day of the **LORD**:

And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.

**XXVIII.2.** Thus saith the **LORD**: the heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool: where is the house that ye build unto me? and where is the place of my rest?

For all those things hath mine hand made, and all those things have been, saith the **LORD**: but to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at my word.

**XXVIII.3.** How great a matter a little fire kindleth.

## XXIX.

**XXIX.1.** And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea.

And I *John* saw the holy city, NEW JERUSALEM, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God.

And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.

And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful.

And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.

---

Isaiah 66.1-2, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

James 3.5, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

Revelation 21,22.1-5, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

And there came unto me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the bride, the Lamb's wife.

And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy JERUSALEM, descending out of heaven from God,

Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal;

And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel:

On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates.

And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

And the city lieth foursquare, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal.

And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel.

And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass.

And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald;

The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyst.

And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.

And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it.

And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.

And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there.

And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.

And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb.

In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him:

And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads.

And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever.

**XXIX.2.** These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God;

I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot.

So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth.

Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked:

I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see.

As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

---

Revelation 3.14-22, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

1 Timothy 6.7, *The Holy Bible, King James Version.*

**XXIX.3.** We brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out.



## CHAPTER 9

# November

### I.

#### I.1.

Now that I've nearly done my days,  
And grown too stiff to sweep or sew,  
I sit & think, till I'm amaze,  
About what lots of things I know:  
Things as I've found out one by one –  
And when I'm fast down in the clay,  
My knowing things and how they're done  
Will all be lost & thrown away.

There's things, I know, as won't be lost,  
Things as folks write & talk about:  
The way to keep your roots from frost,  
And how to get your ink spots out.  
What medicine's good for sores & sprains,  
What way to salt your butter down,  
What charms will cure your different pains,  
And what will bright your faded gown.

But more important things than these,  
They can't be written in a book:  
How fast to boil your greens & peas,  
And how good bacon ought to look;  
The feel of real good wearing stuff,  
The kind of apple as will keep,  
The look of bread that's rose enough,  
And how to get a child asleep.

---

'The Things that Matter', Mrs Edith Bland (1858 – 1924), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. Mrs Bland lived for another nineteen years after this poem was first published.

Whether the jam is fit to pot,  
 Whether the milk is going to turn,  
 Whether a hen will lay or not,  
 Is things as some folks never learn.  
 I know the weather by the sky;  
 I know what herbs grow in what lane;  
 And if sick men are going to die,  
 Or if they'll get about again.

Young wives come in, a-smiling, grave,  
 With secrets that they itch to tell:  
 I know what sort of times they'll have,  
 And if they'll have a boy or gell.  
 And if a lad is ill to bind,  
 Or some young maid is hard to lead,  
 I know when you should speak 'em kind,  
 And when it's scolding as they need.

I used to know where birds'd set,  
 And likely spots for trout or hare,  
 And God may want me to forget  
 The way to set a line or snare;  
 But not the way to truss a chick,  
 To fry a fish, or baste a roast,  
 Nor how to tell, when folks are sick,  
 What kind of herb will ease them most.

Forgetting seems such silly waste.  
 I know so many little things,  
 And now the angels will make haste  
 To dust it all away with wings.  
 O God, you made me like to know,  
 You kept the things straight in my head,  
 Please God, if you can make it so,  
 Let me know something when I'm dead.

## I.2.

Here quench your thirst, and mark in me  
 An emblem of true charity,  
 Who while my bounty I bestow

---

Anonymous, Holloway, *The Oxford Book of Local Verses*. 'Inscribed on a well, Derry Hill, near Chippenham, Wiltshire'. The middle couplet alludes to Matthew 6.3, and the final couplet to Matthew 10.42/Mark 9.41.

Am neither seen nor heard to flow;  
 Repaid by fresh supplies from heaven  
 For every cup of water given.

**I.3.** A little philosophy inclineth man's mind to atheism, but depth in philosophy bringeth men's minds about to religion.

## II.

### II.1.

As withereth the primose by the river,  
 As fadeth summer's sun from gliding fountains,  
 As vanisheth the light-blown bubble ever,  
 As melteth snow upon the mossy mountains:  
 So melts, so vanisheth, so fades, so withers,  
 The rose, the shine, the bubble, and the snow,  
 Of praise, pomp, glory, joy, which short life gathers,  
 Fair praise, vain pomp, sweet glory, brittle joy.  
 The withered primrose by the mourning river,  
 The faded summer's sun from weeping fountains,  
 The light-blown bubble vanishèd for ever,  
 The molten snow upon the naked mountains,  
     Are emblems that the treasures we up-lay  
     Soon wither, vanish, fade, and melt away.

For as the snow, whose lawn did overspread  
 Th' ambitious hills, which giant-like did threat  
 To pierce the heavens with their aspiring head,  
 Naked & bare doth leave their craggy seat;  
 Whenas the bubble, which did empty fly,  
 The dalliance of the undiscernèd wind,  
 On whose calm rolling waves it did rely,  
 Hath shipwrack made, where it did dalliance find;  
 And when the sunshine which dissolved the snow,  
 Coloured the bubble with a pleasant vary,  
 And made the rathe and timely primrose grow,  
 Swarth clouds withdrawn, which longer time do tarry:

---

Francis Bacon, Viscount St Alban (1561 – 1626), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'A Palinode', Edmund Bolton (1575 – 1633), Braithwaite, *The Book of Elizabethan Verse*. The title is delightfully obscure. Dr Johnson defines a *palinode* in two words: 'A recantation.' The term seems to have originated with the (very) ancient Greek poet Stesichorus, who wrote a poem called the Πάλινωδιον, wherein he retracted the charge – which he had made in an earlier poem – that Helen was responsible for the horrors of the Trojan War.

O what is praise, pomp, glory, joy, but so  
As shine by fountains, bubbles, flowers, or snow?

## II.2.

When as a child I laughed and wept,  
Time crept.  
When as a youth I dreamed and talked,  
Time walked.  
When I became a full grown man  
Time ran.  
And later as I older grew,  
Time flew.  
Soon I shall find when travelling on  
Time gone.  
Will *Christ* have saved my soul by then?  
Amen.

II.3. All colours will agree in the dark.

## III.

### III.1.

Before the roman came to RYE or out to SEVERN strode,  
The rolling english drunkard made the rolling english road.  
A reeling road, a rolling road, that rambles round the shire,  
And after him the parson ran, the sexton & the squire;  
A merry road, a mazy road, and such as we did tread  
The night we went to BIRMINGHAM by way of BEACHY HEAD.

I knew no harm of *Bonaparte* and plenty of the squire,  
And for to fight the frenchman I did not much desire;  
But I did bash their bayonets because they came arrayed  
To straighten out the crooked road an english drunkard made,  
Where you & I went down the lane with ale-mugs in our hands,  
The night we went to GLASTONBURY by way of GOODWIN SANDS.

---

Anonymous, Holloway, *The Oxford Book of Local Verses*. 'An inscription on the pendulum of the tower clock, St Lawrence's Church, Bidborough, Kent'.

Francis Bacon, Viscount St Alban (1561 – 1626), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'The Rolling English Road', Gilbert Chesterton, Knight (1874 – 1936), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. Anyone with a rudimentary grasp of British geography could tell you that the routes suggested in the last line of each verse are unlikely to be the most direct.

His sins they were forgiven him; or why do flowers run  
 Behind him; and the hedges all strengthening in the sun?  
 The wild thing went from left to right and knew not which was which,  
 But the wild rose was above him when they found him in the ditch.  
 God pardon us, nor harden us; we did not see so clear  
 The night we went to BANNOCKBURN by way of BRIGHTON PIER.

My friends, we will not go again or ape an ancient rage,  
 Or stretch the folly of our youth to be the shame of age,  
 But walk with clearer eyes and ears this path that wandereth,  
 And see undrugged in evening light the decent inn of death;  
 For there is good news yet to hear and fine things to be seen,  
 Before we go to paradise by way of KENSAL GREEN.

### III.2.

The world's a stage. The trifling entrance fee  
 Is paid (by proxy) to the registrar.  
 The orchestra is very loud & free  
 But plays no music in particular.  
 They do not print a programme, that I know.  
 The cast is large. There isn't any plot.  
 The acting of the piece is far below  
 The very worst of modernistic rot.  
 The only part about it I enjoy  
 Is what was called in english the 'foyay'.  
 There will I stand apart awhile and toy  
 With thought, and set my cigarette alight;  
 And then – without returning to the play –  
 On with my coat and out into the night.

### III.3. Never complain and never explain.

## IV.

### IV.1.

Smile at us; pay us; pass us; but do not quite forget;  
 For we are the people of England, that never have spoken yet.

---

Hilaire Belloc (1870 – 1953), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

Benjamin Disraeli, Earl of Beaconsfield (1804 – 1881), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. Many individuals have been claimed as the origin of this maxim, but, as far as the Almanacker has been able to ascertain, Lord Beaconsfield's utterance was the earliest. Elbert Hubbard provides an amusing gloss: 'Never explain – your friends do not need it and your enemies will not believe you anyway.'

℞ 'The Secret People', Gilbert Chesterton, Knight (1874 – 1936), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

There is many a fat farmer that drinks less cheerfully;  
There is many a free french peasant who is richer & sadder than we.  
There are no folk in the whole world so helpless or so wise.  
There is hunger in our bellies; there is laughter in our eyes;  
You laugh at us and love us; both mugs & eyes are wet:  
Only you do not know us. For we have not spoken yet.

The fine french kings came over in a flutter of flags & dames.  
We liked their smiles & battles, but we never could say their names.  
The blood ran red to BOSWORTH and the high french lords went down;  
There was naught but a naked people under a naked crown.  
And the eyes of the king's servants turned terribly every way,  
And the gold of the king's servants rose higher every day.  
They burned the homes of the shaven men, that had been quaint & kind,  
Till there was no bed in a monk's house, nor food that man could find.  
The inns of God where no man paid, that were the wall of the weak,  
The king's servants ate them all. And still we did not speak.

And the face of the king's servants grew greater than the king:  
He tricked them, and they trapped him, and stood round him in a ring.  
The new grave lords closed round him, that had eaten the abbey's fruits,  
And the men of the new religion, with their bibles in their boots,  
We saw their shoulders moving, to menace or discuss,  
And some were pure and some were vile; but none took heed of us.  
We saw the king as they killed him, and his face was proud & pale;  
And a few men talked of freedom, while England talked of ale.

A war that we understood not came over the world and woke  
Americans, frenchmen, irish; but we knew not the things they spoke.  
They talked about rights & nature & peace & the people's reign:  
And the squires, our masters, bade us fight; and scorned us never again.  
Weak if we be for ever, could none condemn us then;  
Men called us serfs & drudges; men knew that we were men.  
In foam & flame at TRAFALGAR, on ALBUERA plains,  
We did & died like lions, to keep ourselves in chains;  
We lay in living ruins; firing & fearing not  
The strange fierce face of the frenchmen who knew for what they fought,  
And the man who seemed to be more than a man we strained against &  
broke;  
And we broke our own rights with him. And still we never spoke.

Our patch of glory ended; we never heard guns again.  
But the squire seemed struck in the saddle; he was foolish, as if in pain;

He leaned on a staggering lawyer; he clutched a cringing jew;  
 He was stricken; it may be, after all, he was stricken at WATERLOO.  
 Or perhaps the shades of the shaven men, whose spoil is in his house,  
 Come back in shining shapes at last to spoil his last carouse:  
 We only know the last sad squires rode slowly towards the sea,  
 And a new people takes the land: and still it is not we.

They have given us into the hand of new unhappy lords,  
 Lords without anger or honour, who dare not carry their swords.  
 They fight by shuffling papers; they have bright dead alien eyes;  
 They look at our labour & laughter as a tired man looks at flies.  
 And the load of their loveless pity is worse than the ancient wrongs,  
 Their doors are shut in the evening; and they know no songs.

We hear men speaking for us of new laws strong & sweet,  
 Yet is there no man speaketh as we speak in the street.  
 It may be we shall rise the last as frenchmen rose the first,  
 Our wrath come after Russia's wrath and our wrath be the worst.  
 It may be we are meant to mark with our riot & our rest  
 God's scorn for all men governing. It may be beer is best.  
 But we are the people of England; and we have not spoken yet.  
 Smile at us; pay us; pass us. But do not quite forget.

#### IV.2.

Lonely, save for a few faint stars, the sky  
 Dreams; and lonely, below, the little street  
 Into its gloom retires, secluded and shy.  
 Scarcely the dumb roar enters this soft retreat;  
 And all is dark, save where come flooding rays  
 From a tavern-window; there, to the brisk measure  
 Of an organ that down in an alley merrily plays,  
 Two children, all alone and no one by,  
 Holding their tattered frocks, through an airy maze  
 Of motion lightly threaded with nimble feet  
 Dance sedately; face to face they gaze,  
 Their eyes shining, grave with a perfect pleasure.

#### IV.3. The palace is not safe when the cottage is not happy.

---

'The Little Dancers', Prof Laurence Binyon (1869 – 1943), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

Benjamin Disraeli, Earl of Beaconsfield (1804 – 1881), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

## V.

## V.1.

My pensive *Sara*, thy soft cheek reclined  
 Thus on mine arm, most soothing sweet it is  
 To sit beside our cot, our cot o'ergrown  
 With white-flowered jasmine, and the broad-leaved myrtle,  
 (Meet emblems they of innocence and love!)  
 And watch the clouds, that late were rich with light,  
 Slow saddening round, and mark the star of eve  
 Serenely brilliant (such would wisdom be)  
 Shine opposite! How exquisite the scents  
 Snatched from yon bean-field! And the world só hushed!  
 The stilly murmur of the distant sea  
 Tells us of silence. And that simplest lute,  
 Placed length-ways in the clasping casement, hark!  
 How by the desultory breeze caressed,  
 Like some coy maid  $\frac{1}{2}$  yielding to her lover,  
 It pours such sweet upbraiding, as must needs  
 Tempt to repeat the wrong! And now, its strings  
 Boldlier swept, the long sequacious notes  
 Over delicious surges sink & rise,  
 Such a soft floating witchery of sound  
 As twilight elfins make, when they at eve  
 Voyage on gentle gales from fairy land,  
 Where melodies round honey-dropping flowers,  
 Footless and wild, like birds of paradise,  
 Nor pause, nor perch, hovering on untamed wing!  
 O the one life within us and abroad,  
 Which meets all motion and becomes its soul,  
 A light in sound, a sound-like power in light,  
 Rhythm in all thought, and joyance everywhere –  
 Methinks, it should have been impossible  
 Not to love all things in a world so filled;  
 Where the breeze warbles, and the mute still air  
 Is music slumbering on her instrument.

---

℞ 'The Eolian Harp', Samuel Coleridge (1772 – 1834), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. An Aeolian harp is a kind of stringed instrument, designed so that it can be played entirely by the wind. Coleridge's own note indicates that this poem was written at Clevedon in Somerset. ¶1. The Sara in question is generally accepted as being the poet's (future) wife. Confusingly, he also had a crush (Sara Hutchnison) and a daughter of that name.



And thus, my love! as on the midway slope  
 Of yonder hill I stretch my limbs at noon,  
 Whilst through my half-closed eyelids I behold  
 The sunbeams dance, like diamonds, on the main,  
 And tranquil muse upon tranquility:  
 Full many a thought uncalled and undetained,  
 And many idle flitting phantasies,  
 Traverse my indolent & passive brain,  
 As wild and various as the random gales  
 That swell & flutter on this subject lute!

And what if all of animated nature  
 Be but organic harps diversely framed,  
 That tremble into thought, as o'er them sweeps  
 Plastic and vast, one intellectual breeze,  
 At once the soul of each, and God of all?

But thy more serious eye a mild reproof  
 Darts, O belovèd woman! nor such thoughts  
 Dim & unhallowed dost thou not reject,  
 And biddest me walk humbly with my God.  
 Meek daughter in the family of *Christ*!  
 Well hast thou said and holily dispraised  
 These shapings of the unregenerate mind;  
 Bubbles that glitter as they rise and break  
 On vain philosophy's aye-babbling spring.  
 For never guiltless may I speak of him,  
 The incomprehensible! save when with awe  
 I praise him, and with faith that inly feels;  
 Who with his saving mercies healèd me,  
 A sinful & most miserable man,  
 Wildered & dark, and gave me to possess  
 Peace, and this cot, and thee, heart-honored maid!

## V.2.

Ah sunflower, weary of time,  
 Who countest the steps of the sun:  
 Seeking after that sweet golden clime  
 Where the traveller's journey is done.

---

'Ah! Sun-Flower', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*.

Where the youth pined away with desire,  
 And the pale virgin shrouded in snow:  
 Arise from their graves and aspire,  
 Where my sunflower wishes to go.

**V.3.** Eternity is in love with the productions of time.

## VI.

### VI.1.

My eye, descending from the hill, surveys  
 Where THAMES among the wanton valleys strays.  
 THAMES, the most loved of all the ocean's sons,  
 By his old sire, to his embraces runs,  
 Hasting to pay his tribute to the sea,  
 Like mortal life to meet eternity;  
 Though with those streams he no resemblance hold,  
 Whose foam is amber, and their gravel gold:  
 His genuine & less guilty wealth t'explore,  
 Search not his bottom, but survey his shore,  
 O'er which he kindly spreads his spacious wing,  
 And hatches plenty for th'ensuing spring;  
 Nor then destroys it with too fond a stay,  
 Like mothers which their infants overlay;  
 Nor with a sudden & impetuous wave,  
 Like profuse kings, resumes the wealth he gave.  
 No unexpected inundations spoil  
 The mower's hopes, nor mock the ploughman's toil;  
 But godlike his unwearied bounty flows;  
 First loves to do, then loves the good he does.  
 Nor are his blessings to his banks confined,  
 But free & common as the sea or wind;  
 When he, to boast or to disperse his stores,  
 Full of the tributes of his grateful shores,  
 Visits the world, and in his flying tow'rs  
 Brings home to us, and makes both Indies ours;  
 Finds wealth where 'tis, bestows it where it wants,  
 Cities in deserts, woods in cities, plants.  
 So that to us no thing, no place, is strange,  
 While his fair bosom is the world's exchange.

---

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

℞ Sir John Denham (1615 – 1669), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This is from Sir John's long poem, *Cooper's Hill*.

O could I flow like thee, and make thy stream  
 My great example, as it is my theme,  
 Though deep yet clear, though gentle yet not dull,  
 Strong without rage, without o'erflowing full!

## VI.2.

Sweet dreams form a shade  
 O'er my lovely infant's head.  
 Sweet dreams of pleasant streams  
 By happy, silent, moony beams.

Sweet sleep, with soft down  
 Weave thy brows an infant crown.  
 Sweet sleep, angel mild,  
 Hover o'er my happy child.

Sweet smiles, in the night  
 Hover over my delight.  
 Sweet smiles, mother's smile,  
 All the livelong night beguile.

Sweet moans, dovelike sighs,  
 Chase not slumber from thine eyes.  
 Sweet moan, sweeter smiles:  
 All the dovelike moans beguile.

Sleep, sleep, happy child.  
 (All creation slept & smiled.)  
 Sleep, sleep, happy sleep,  
 While o'er thee doth mother weep.

VI.3. If others had not been foolish, we should be so.

## VII.

### VII.1.

As virtuous men pass mildly away,  
 And whisper to their souls to go,

---

'Cradle Song', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. The Almanacker has omitted the last three verses, being of inferior quality than the rest.

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

'A Valediction: Forbidding Mourning', The Very Rev Dr John Donne (1572 – 1631), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

Whilst some of their sad friends do say  
The breath goes now, and some say, No:

So let us melt, and make no noise,  
No tear-floods, nor sigh-tempests move;  
'Twere profanation of our joys  
To tell the laity our love.

Moving of th'earth brings harms & fears,  
Men reckon what it did, and meant;  
But trepidation of the spheres,  
Though greater far, is innocent.

Dull sublunary lovers' love  
(Whose soul is sense) cannot admit  
Absence, because it doth remove  
Those things which elemented it.

But we by a love so much refined,  
That our selves know not what it is,  
Inter-assurèd of the mind,  
Care less, eyes, lips, & hands to miss.

Our two souls therefore, which are one,  
Though I must go, endure not yet  
A breach, but an expansion,  
Like gold to airy thinness beat.

If they be two, they are two so  
As stiff twin compasses are two;  
Thy soul, the fixed foot, makes no show  
To move, but doth, if the other do.

And though it in the center sit,  
Yet when the other far doth roam,  
It leans & hearkens after it,  
And grows erect, as that comes home.

Such wilt thou be to me, who must,  
Like th'other foot, obliquely run;  
Thy firmness makes my circle just,  
And makes me end where I begun.

## VII.2.

My son, these maxims make a rule,  
 An' lump them ay thegither:  
 The rigid righteous is a fool,  
 The rigid wise anither;  
 The cleanest corn that e'er was dight  
 May ha'e some piles o' caff in;  
 So ne'er a fellow-creature slight  
 For random fits o' daffin.

VII.3. In seed-time learn; in harvest teach; in winter enjoy.

## VIII.

## VIII.1.

Sweetest love, I do not go,  
 For weariness of thee,  
 Nor in hope the world can show  
 A fitter love for me;  
 But since that I  
 Must die at last, 'tis best  
 To use myself in jest  
 Thus by feigned deaths to die.

Yesternight the sun went hence,  
 And yet is here today;  
 He hath no desire nor sense,  
 Nor  $\frac{1}{2}$  so short a way:  
 Then fear not me,  
 But believe that I shall make  
 Speedier journeys, since I take  
 More wings & spurs than he.

O how feeble is man's power,  
 That if good fortune fall,  
 Cannot add another hour,  
 Nor a lost hour recall.

---

℞ Robert Burns (1759 – 1796), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. These lines appear to be Burns's own translation of Ecclesiastes 7.1-6. He includes them as the epitaph to his "Address to the Unco Guid".

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

℞ 'The Good Morrow', The Very Rev Dr John Donne (1572 – 1631), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

But come bad chance,  
 And we join to't our strength,  
 And we teach it art & length,  
 Itself o'er us to'advance.

When thou sigh'st, thou sigh'st not wind,  
 But sigh'st my soul away;  
 When thou weep'st, unkindly kind,  
 My life's blood doth decay.  
 It cannot be  
 That thou lov'st me, as thou say'st,  
 If in thine my life thou waste,  
 That art the best of me.

Let not thy divining heart  
 Forethink me any ill;  
 Destiny may take thy part,  
 And may thy fears fulfil;  
 But think that we  
 Are but turned aside to sleep;  
 They who one another keep  
 Alive, ne'er parted be.

## VIII.2.

The wild duck startles like a sudden thought,  
 And heron slow as if it might be caught.  
 The flopping crows on weary wings go by  
 And grey-beard jackdaws noising as they fly.  
 The crowds of starnels whizz and hurry by,  
 And darken like a clod the evening sky.  
 The larks like thunder rise and suthy round,  
 Then drop and nestle in the stubble ground.  
 The wild swan hurries high and noises loud  
 With white neck peering to the evening cloud.  
 The weary rooks to distant woods are gone.  
 With lengths of tail the magpie winnows on  
 To neighbouring tree, and leaves the distant crow  
 While small birds nestle in the edge below.

## VIII.3.

The sun's light when he unfolds it  
Depends on the organ that beholds it.

## IX.

## IX.1.

The curfew tolls the knell of parting day,  
The lowing herd wind slowly o'er the lea,  
The plowman homeward plods his weary way,  
And leaves the world to darkness and to me.

Now fades the glimm'ring landscape on the sight,  
And all the air a solemn stillness holds,  
Save where the beetle wheels his droning flight,  
And drowsy tinklings lull the distant folds;

Save that from yonder ivy-mantled tow'r  
The moping owl does to the moon complain  
Of such, as wand'ring near her secret bow'r,  
Molest her ancient solitary reign.

Beneath those rugged elms, that yew-tree's shade,  
Where heaves the turf in many a mould'ring heap,  
Each in his narrow cell for ever laid,  
The rude forefathers of the hamlet sleep.

The breezy call of incense-breathing morn,  
The swallow twitt'ring from the straw-built shed,  
The cock's shrill clarion, or the echoing horn,  
No more shall rouse them from their lowly bed.

For them no more the blazing hearth shall burn,  
Or busy housewife ply her evening care:  
No children run to lisp their sire's return,  
Or climb his knees the envied kiss to share.

Oft did the harvest to their sickle yield,  
Their furrow oft the stubborn glebe has broke;

---

'What is Man!', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*.

'Elegy Written in a Country Churchyard', Prof Thomas Gray (1716 – 1771), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

How jocund did they drive their team afield!  
How bowed the woods beneath their sturdy stroke!

Let not ambition mock their useful toil,  
Their homely joys, and destiny obscure;  
Nor grandeur hear with a disdainful smile  
The short & simple annals of the poor.

The boast of heraldry, the pomp of pow'r,  
And all that beauty, all that wealth e'er gave,  
Awaits alike th'inevitable hour.  
The paths of glory lead but to the grave.

Nor you, ye proud, impute to these the fault,  
If mem'ry o'er their tomb no trophies raise,  
Where thro' the long-drawn aisle & fretted vault  
The pealing anthem swells the note of praise.

Can storied urn or animated bust  
Back to its mansion call the fleeting breath?  
Can honour's voice provoke the silent dust,  
Or flatt'ry soothe the dull cold ear of death?

Perhaps in this neglected spot is laid  
Some heart once pregnant with celestial fire;  
Hands, that the rod of empire might have swayed,  
Or waked to ecstasy the living lyre.

But knowledge to their eyes her ample page  
Rich with the spoils of time did ne'er unroll;  
Chill penury repressed their noble rage,  
And froze the genial current of the soul.

Full many a gem of purest ray serene,  
The dark unfathomed caves of ocean bear:  
Full many a flow'r is born to blush unseen,  
And waste its sweetness on the desert air.

Some village-*Hampden*, that with dauntless breast  
The little tyrant of his fields withstood;  
Some mute inglorious *Milton* here may rest,  
Some *Cromwell* guiltless of his country's blood.

Th'appause of list'ning senates to command,  
The threats of pain & ruin to despise,



To scatter plenty o'er a smiling land,  
And read their hist'ry in a nation's eyes,  
Their lot forbade: nor circumscribed alone  
Their growing virtues, but their crimes confined;  
Forbade to wade through slaughter to a throne,  
And shut the gates of mercy on mankind,  
The struggling pangs of conscious truth to hide,  
To quench the blushes of ingenuous shame,  
Or heap the shrine of luxury & pride  
With incense kindled at the muse's flame.  
Far from the madding crowd's ignoble strife,  
Their sober wishes never learned to stray;  
Along the cool sequestered vale of life  
They kept the noiseless tenor of their way.  
Yet ev'n these bones from insult to protect,  
Some frail memorial still erected nigh,  
With uncouth rhymes & shapeless sculpture decked,  
Implores the passing tribute of a sigh.  
Their name, their years, spelt by th'unlettered muse,  
The place of fame and elegy supply:  
And many a holy text around she strews,  
That teach the rustic moralist to die.  
For who to dumb forgetfulness a prey,  
This pleasing anxious being e'er resigned,  
Left the warm precincts of the cheerful day,  
Nor cast one longing, ling'ring look behind?  
On some fond breast the parting soul relies,  
Some pious drops the closing eye requires;  
Ev'n from the tomb the voice of nature cries,  
Ev'n in our ashes live their wonted fires.  
For thee, who mindful of th'unhonoured dead  
Dost in these lines their artless tale relate;  
If chance, by lonely contemplation led,  
Some kindred spirit shall inquire thy fate,  
Haply some hoary-headed swain may say,  
'Oft have we seen him at the peep of dawn

Brushing with hasty steps the dews away  
 To meet the sun upon the upland lawn.

‘There at the foot of yonder nodding beech  
 That wreathes its old fantastic roots so high,  
 His listless length at noontide would he stretch,  
 And pore upon the brook that babbles by.

‘Hard by yon wood, now smiling as in scorn,  
 Mutt’ring his wayward fancies he would rove,  
 Now drooping, woeful wan, like one forlorn,  
 Or crazed with care, or crossed in hopeless love.

‘One morn I missed him on the customed hill,  
 Along the heath & near his fav’rite tree;  
 Another came; nor yet beside the rill,  
 Nor up the lawn, nor at the wood was he;

‘The next with dirges due in sad array  
 Slow thro’ the church-way path we saw him borne.  
 Approach & read (for thou canst read) the lay,  
 Graved on the stone beneath yon aged thorn.’

*The Epitaph*

*Here rests his head upon the lap of earth,  
 A youth to fortune & to fame unknown.  
 Fair science frowned not on his humble birth,  
 And melancholy marked him for her own.*

*Large was his bounty, and his soul sincere,  
 Heav’n did a recompense as largely send:  
 He gave to mis’ry all he had, a tear,  
 He gained from heav’n (’twas all he wished) a friend.*

*No farther seek his merits to disclose,  
 Or draw his frailties from their dread abode,  
 (There they alike in trembling hope repose)  
 The bosom of his Father & his God.*

## IX.2.

The ring so worn, as you behold,  
 So thin, so pale, is yet of gold:  
 The passion such it was to prove;  
 Worn with life’s care, love yet was love.

**IX.3.** Truth is always strange; stranger than fiction.

**X.**

**X.1.**

When I survey the bright  
 Celestial sphere;  
 So rich with jewels hung, that night  
 Doth like an ethiop bride appear:

My soul her wings doth spread  
 And heavenward flies,  
 Th'Almighty's mysteries to read  
 In the large volumes of the skies.

For the bright firmament  
 Shoots forth no flame  
 So silent, but is eloquent  
 In speaking the Creator's name.

No unregarded star  
 Contracts its light  
 Into so small a character,  
 Removed far from our human sight,

But if we steadfast look  
 We shall discern  
 In it, as in some holy book,  
 How man may heavenly knowledge learn.

It tells the conqueror  
 That far-stretched power,  
 Which his proud dangers traffic for,  
 Is but the triumph of an hour:

That from the farthest north,  
 Some nation may,  
 Yet undiscovered, issue forth,  
 And o'er his new-got conquest sway:

---

George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. These words are taken from the fourteenth canto of *Don Juan*.

℞ William Habington (1605 – 1654), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. The title is a quotation from the Vulgate, Psalm 19.2 (or 18.2, using the Vulgate numbering of the Psalms), which means, 'Night to night shows knowledge.'

Some nation yet shut in  
 With hills of ice  
 May be let out to scourge his sin,  
 Till they shall equal him in vice.

And then they likewise shall  
 Their ruin have;  
 For as yourselves your empires fall,  
 And every kingdom hath a grave.

Thus those celestial fires,  
 Though seeming mute,  
 The fallacy of our desires  
 And all the pride of life confute:

For they have watched since first  
 The world had birth:  
 And found sin in itself accursed,  
 And nothing permanent on earth.

## X.2.

While joy gave clouds the light of stars,  
 That beamed wher'er they looked;  
 And calves & lambs had tottering knees,  
 Excited, while they sucked;  
 While every bird enjoyed his song,  
 Without one thought of harm or wrong –  
 I turned my head and saw the wind,  
 Not far from where I stood,  
 Dragging the corn by her golden hair,  
 Into a dark & lonely wood.

## X.3. I go from a corruptible to an incorruptible crown.

---

'The Villain', William Davies (1871 – 1940), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

Charles, by the Grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith (1600 – 1649), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

## XI.

## XI.1.

I wish I had the voice of *Homer*  
 To sing of rectal carcinoma,  
 Which kills a lot more chaps, in fact,  
 Than were bumped off when TROY was sacked.

I noticed I was passing blood  
 (Only a few drops, not a flood).  
 So pausing on my homeward way  
 From TALLAHASSEE to BOMBAY  
 I asked a doctor, now my friend,  
 To peer into my hinder end,  
 To prove or to disprove the rumour  
 That I had a malignant tumour.  
 They pumped in BaSO<sub>4</sub>  
 Till I could really stand no more,  
 And, when sufficient had been pressed in,  
 They photographed my large intestine.  
 In order to decide the issue  
 They next scraped out some bits of tissue.  
 (Before they did so, some good pal  
 Had knocked me out with pentothal,  
 Whose action is extremely quick,  
 And does not leave me feeling sick.)  
 The microscope returned the answer  
 That I had certainly got cancer,  
 So I was wheeled into the theatre  
 Where holes were made to make me better.  
 One set is in my perineum  
 Where I can feel, but can't yet see 'em.  
 Another made me like a kipper  
 Or female prey of *Jack the Ripper*.  
 Through this incision, I don't doubt,  
 The neoplasm was taken out,  
 Along with colon, & lymph nodes  
 Where cancer cells might find abodes.  
 A third much smaller hole is meant  
 To function as a ventral vent:

---

'Cancer's a Funny Thing', Prof John Haldane (1892 – 1964), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. ¶137. The poem here includes a footnote, also in verse, discussing the deities of India which also have more than one face.

So now I am like two-faced *Janus*  
 The only god who sees his anus.  
 I'll swear, without the risk of perjury,  
 It was a snappy bit of surgery.  
 My rectum is a serious loss to me,  
 But I've a very neat colostomy,  
 And hope, as soon as I am able,  
 To make it keep a fixed time-table.

So do not wait for aches & pains  
 To have a surgeon mend your drains;  
 If he says cancer, you're a dunce  
 Unless you have it out at once,  
 For if you wait it's sure to swell,  
 And may have progeny as well.  
 My final word, before I'm done,  
 Is: cancer can be rather fun.  
 Thanks to the nurses & *Nye Bevan*  
 The NHS is quite like heaven  
 Provided one confronts the tumour  
 With a sufficient sense of humour.  
 I know that cancer often kills,  
 But so do cars & sleeping pills;  
 And it can hurt one till one sweats,  
 So can bad teeth & unpaid debts.  
 A spot of laughter, I am sure,  
 Often accelerates one's cure;  
 So let us patients do our bit  
 To help the surgeons make us fit.

## XI.2.

The feathers of the willow  
 Are ½ of them grown yellow  
     Above the swelling stream;  
 And ragged are the bushes,  
 And rusty now the rushes,  
     And wild the clouded gleam.

The thistle now is older;  
 His stalk begins to moulder;  
     His head is white as snow;

---

'Song', The Rev Canon Dr Richard Dixon (1833 – 1900), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*.

The branches all are barer;  
 The linnet's song is rarer;  
 The robin pipeth now.

**XI.3.** Speak of the moderns without contempt, and of the ancients without idolatry.

## XII.

### XII.1.

Come again to the place  
 Where your presence was as a leaf that skims  
 Down a drouthy way whose ascent bedims  
 The bloom on the farer's face.

Come again, with the feet  
 That were light on the green as a thistledown ball,  
 And those mute ministrations to one & to all  
 Beyond a man's saying sweet.

Until then the faint scent  
 Of the bordering flowers swam unheeded away,  
 And I marked not the charm in the changes of day  
 As the cloud colours came and went.

Through the dark corridors  
 Your walk was so soundless I did not know  
 Your form from a phantom's of long ago  
 Said to pass on the ancient floors,

Till you drew from the shade  
 And I saw the large luminous living eyes  
 Regard me in fixed inquiring-wise  
 As those of a soul that weighed,

Scarce consciously,  
 The eternal question of what life was,  
 And why we were there, and by whose strange laws  
 That which mattered most could not be.

---

Philip Stanhope, 4th Earl of Chesterfield (1694 – 1773), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'After the Visit', Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

**XII.2.**

Death, be not proud, though some have called thee  
 Mighty & dreadful, for thou art not so;  
 For those whom thou think'st thou dost overthrow  
 Die not, poor death, nor yet canst thou kill me.  
 From rest & sleep, which but thy pictures be,  
 Much pleasure; then from thee much more must flow,  
 And soonest our best men with thee do go,  
 Rest of their bones, & soul's delivery.  
 Thou art slave to fate, chance, kings, & desperate men,  
 And dost with poison, war, & sickness dwell,  
 And poppy or charms can make us sleep as well  
 And better than thy stroke; why swell'st thou then?  
 One short sleep past, we wake eternally  
 And death shall be no more; death, thou shalt die.

**XII.3.** Bigotry may be roughly defined as the anger of men who have no opinions.

**XIII.****XIII.1.**

She stood breast-high amid the corn,  
 Clasped by the golden light of morn,  
 Like the sweetheart of the sun,  
 Who many a glowing kiss had won.

On her cheek an autumn flush,  
 Deeply ripened; such a blush  
 In the midst of brown was born,  
 Like red poppies grown with corn.

Round her eyes her tresses fell;  
 Which were blackest none could tell,  
 But long lashes veiled a light,  
 That had else been all too bright.

And her hat, with shady brim,  
 Made her tressy forehead dim;

---

Holy Sonnet 10, The Very Rev Dr John Donne (1572 – 1631), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

Gilbert Chesterton, Knight (1874 – 1936), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
 'Ruth', Thomas Hood (1799 – 1845), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.



Thus she stood amid the stooks,  
Praising God with sweetest looks:

Sure, I said, heaven did not mean,  
Where I reap thou shouldst but glean;  
Lay thy sheaf adown and come,  
Share my harvest & my home.

### XIII.2.

Were but that sigh a penitential breath  
That thou art mine: it would blow with it death,  
T'inclose me in my marble: where I'd be  
Slave to the tyrant worms to set thee free.  
What should we envy? Though with larger sail  
Some dance upon the ocean; yet more frail  
And faithlese is that wave, than where we glide,  
Blest in the safety of a private tide.  
We still have land in ken; and 'cause our boat  
Dares not affront the weather, we'll ne'er float  
Far from the shore. To daring them each cloud  
Is big with thunder; every wind speaks loud;  
And rough wild rocks about the shore appeare;  
Yet virtue will find room to anchor there.

**XIII.3.** Democrats object to men being disqualified by the accident of birth; tradition objects to their being disqualified by the accident of death.

### XIV.

#### XIV.1.

Tell me not here; it needs not saying,  
What tune the enchantress plays  
In aftermaths of soft september  
Or under blanching mays,  
For she & I were long acquainted  
And I knew all her ways.

On russet floors, by waters idle,  
The pine lets fall its cone;  
The cuckoo shouts all day at nothing

---

'Melancholy', William Habington (1605 – 1654), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*.

Gilbert Chesterton, Knight (1874 – 1936), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Prof Alfred Housman (1859 – 1936), Holden and Holden, *Poems that Make Grown Men Cry*.

In leafy dells alone;  
 And traveller's joy beguiles in autumn  
 Hearts that have lost their own.

On acres of the seeded grasses  
 The changing burnish heaves;  
 Or marshalled under moons of harvest  
 Stand still all night the sheaves;  
 Or beeches strip in storms for winter  
 And stain the wind with leaves.

Possess, as I possessed a season,  
 The countries I resign,  
 Where over elmy plains the highway  
 Would mount the hills and shine,  
 And full of shade the pillared forest  
 Would murmur and be mine.

For nature, heartless, witless nature,  
 Will neither care nor know  
 What stranger's feet may find the meadow  
 And trespass there and go,  
 Nor ask amid the dews of morning  
 If they are mine or no.

#### **XIV.2.**

Wintertime nighs;  
 But my bereavement pain  
 It cannot bring again:  
 Twice no one dies.

Flower petals flee;  
 But, since it once hath been,  
 No more that severing scene  
 Can harrow me.

Birds faint in dread:  
 I shall not lose old strength  
 In the lone frost's black length:  
 Strength long since fled.

Leaves freeze to dun;  
 But friends cannot turn cold

---

'In Tenebris', Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

This season as of old  
For him with none.

Tempests may scath;  
But love cannot make smart  
Again this year his heart  
Who no heart hath.

Black is night's cope;  
But death will not appal  
One who, past doubtings all,  
Waits in unhope.

**XIV.3.** To be clever enough to get all that money, one has to be stupid enough to want it.

## XV.

### XV.1.

The lads in their hundreds to LUDLOW come in for the fair;  
There's men from the barn & the forge & the mill & the fold;  
The lads for the girls & the lads for the liquor are there,  
And there with the rest are the lads that will never be old.

There's chaps from the town & the field & the till & the cart,  
And many to count are the stalwart, and many the brave,  
And many the handsome of face & the handsome of heart,  
And few that will carry their looks or their truth to the grave.

I wish one could know them; I wish there were tokens to tell  
The fortunate fellows that now you can never discern;  
And then one could talk with them friendly and wish them farewell  
And watch them depart on the way that they will not return.

But now you may stare as you like and there's nothing to scan;  
And brushing your elbow unguessed-at and not to be told  
They carry back bright to the coiner the mintage of man,  
The lads that will die in their glory & never be old.

---

Gilbert Chesterton, Knight (1874 – 1936), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
Prof Alfred Housman (1859 – 1936), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. This is *A Shropshire Lad* §XXIII.

**XV.2.**

Here is the ancient floor,  
 Footworn & hollowed & thin,  
 Here was the former door  
 Where the dead feet walked in.

She sat here in her chair,  
 Smiling into the fire;  
 He who played stood there,  
 Bowing it higher & higher.

Childlike, I danced in a dream;  
 Blessings emblazoned that day;  
 Everything glowed with a gleam;  
 Yet we were looking away.

**XV.3.** We make our friends; we make our enemies; but God makes our next-door neighbour.

**XVI.****XVI.1.**

Deep in the shady sadness of a vale  
 Far sunken from the healthy breath of morn,  
 Far from the fiery noon, and eve's one star,  
 Sat grey-haired *Saturn*, quiet as a stone,  
 Still as the silence round about his lair;  
 Forest on forest hung about his head  
 Like cloud on cloud. No stir of air was there,  
 Not so much life as on a summer's day  
 Robs not one light seed from the feathered grass,  
 But where the dead leaf fell, there did it rest.  
 A stream went voiceless by, still deadened more  
 By reason of his fallen divinity  
 Spreading a shade: the naiad 'mid her reeds  
 Pressed her cold finger closer to her lips.

Along the margin and large foot-marks went,  
 No further than to where his feet had strayed,

---

'The Self-Unseeing', Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

Gilbert Chesterton, Knight (1874 – 1936), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
 John Keats (1795 – 1821), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. These are the opening lines of Keats's *Hyperion: A Fragment*.

And slept there since. Upon the sodden ground  
 His old right hand lay nerveless, listless, dead,  
 Unsceptred; and his realmless eyes were closed;  
 While his bowed head seemed listening to the earth,  
 His ancient mother, for some comfort yet.

### XVI.2.

Can I not come to thee, my God, for these  
 So very-many-meeting hindrances,  
 That slack my pace, but yet not make me stay?  
 Who slowly goes, rids, in the end, his way.  
 Clear thou my paths, or shorten thou my miles;  
 Remove the bars, or lift me o'er the stiles;  
 Since rough the way is, help me when I call,  
 And take me up; or else prevent the fall.  
 I ken my home, and it affords some ease  
 To see far off the smoking villages.  
 Fain would I rest, yet covet not to die  
 For fear of future biting penury:  
 No, no, my God – thou know'st my wishes be  
 To leave this life not loving it, but thee.

**XVI.3.** A good storyteller is a person who has a good memory and hopes other people haven't.

## XVII.

### XVII.1.

They shut the road through the woods  
 Seventy years ago.  
 Weather & rain have undone it again,  
 And now you would never know  
 There was once a road through the woods  
 Before they planted the trees.  
 It is underneath the coppice & heath,  
 And the thin anemones.  
 Only the keeper sees  
 That, where the ring-dove broods,

---

℞ 'To his ever-loving God', Robert Herrick (1591 – 1674), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

Irvin Cobb (1876 – 1944), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'The Way through the Woods', Rudyard Kipling (1865 – 1936), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. The Almanacker was forced to compose a pastiche of this poem as a small child.

And the badgers roll at ease,  
There was once a road through the woods.

Yet, if you enter the woods  
Of a summer evening late,  
When the night-air cools on the trout-ringed pools  
Where the otter whistles his mate  
(They fear not men in the woods,  
Because they see so few),  
You will hear the beat of a horse's feet,  
And the swish of a skirt in the dew,  
Steadily cantering through  
The misty solitudes,  
As though they perfectly knew  
The old lost road through the woods...  
But there is no road through the woods.

## XVII.2.

I have desired to go  
Where springs not fail,  
To fields where flies no sharp & sided hail  
And a few lilies blow.

And I have asked to be  
Where no storms come,  
Where the green swell is in the havens dumb,  
And out of the swing of the sea.

**XVII.3.** The greatest fool may ask more than the wisest man can answer.

## XVIII.

### XVIII.1.

Yet once more, O ye laurels, and once more  
Ye myrtles brown, with ivy never sere,  
I come to pluck your berries harsh & crude,  
And with forced fingers rude

---

'Heaven-Haven', Fr Gerard Hopkins (1844 – 1889), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. Fr Hopkins's own subtitle reads: 'A nun takes the veil'.

The Rev Charles Colton (1777 – 1832), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Lycidas', John Milton (1608 – 1674), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. In his *Poems* of 1645, Milton gave this preface: 'In this monody the author bewails a learned friend [Edward King], unfortunately drowned in his passage from Chester on the Irish seas, 1637. And by occasion foretells the ruin of our corrupted clergy, then in their height.'

Shatter your leaves before the mellowing year.  
Bitter constraint & sad occasion dear  
Compels me to disturb your season due;  
For *Lycidas* is dead, dead ere his prime,  
Young *Lycidas*, and hath not left his peer.  
Who would not sing for *Lycidas*? he knew  
Himself to sing, and build the lofty rhyme.  
He must not float upon his watery bier  
Unwept, and welter to the parching wind,  
Without the meed of some melodious tear.

Begin then, sisters of the sacred well  
That from beneath the seat of *Jove* doth spring;  
Begin, and somewhat loudly sweep the string.  
Hence with denial vain & coy excuse!  
So may some gentle muse  
With lucky words favour my destined urn,  
And as he passes turn  
And bid fair peace be to my sable shroud.

For we were nursed upon the selfsame hill,  
Fed the same flock, by fountain, shade, & rill;  
Together both, ere the high lawns appeared  
Under the opening eyelids of the morn,  
We drove afield, and both together heard  
What time the gray-fly winds her sultry horn,  
Battening our flocks with the fresh dews of night,  
Oft till the star that rose at evening bright  
Toward heav'n's descent had sloped his westering wheel.  
Meanwhile the rural ditties were not mute,  
Tempered to th'oaten flute;  
Rough satyrs danced, & fauns with cloven heel,  
From the glad sound would not be absent long;  
And old *Damoetas* loved to hear our song.

But O the heavy change now thou art gone,  
Now thou art gone, and never must return.  
Thee, shepherd, thee the woods & desert caves,  
With wild thyme & the gadding vine o'ergrown,  
And all their echoes mourn.  
The willows & the hazel copses green  
Shall now no more be seen  
Fanning their joyous leaves to thy soft lays.

As killing as the canker to the rose,  
 Or taint-worm to the weanling herds that graze,  
 Or frost to flowers that their gay wardrobe wear  
 When first the white thorn blows:  
 Such, *Lycidas*, thy loss to shepherd's ear.

Where were ye, nymphs, when the remorseless deep  
 Closed o'er the head of your loved *Lycidas*?  
 For neither were ye playing on the steep  
 Where your old bards, the famous druids, lie,  
 Nor on the shaggy top of MONA high,  
 Nor yet where DEVA spreads her wizard stream.  
 Aye me! I fondly dream  
 Had ye been there – for what could that have done?  
 What could the muse herself that *Orpheus* bore,  
 The muse herself, for her enchanting son,  
 Whom universal nature did lament,  
 When by the rout that made the hideous roar  
 His gory visage down the stream was sent,  
 Down the swift HEBRUS to the lesbian shore?

Alas! what boots it with incessant care  
 To tend the homely, slighted shepherd's trade,  
 And strictly meditate the thankless muse?  
 Were it not better done, as others use,  
 To sport with *Amaryllis* in the shade,  
 Or with the tangles of *Neaera*'s hair?  
 Fame is the spur that the clear spirit doth raise  
 (That last infirmity of noble mind)  
 To scorn delights & live laborious days;  
 But the fair guerdon when we hope to find,  
 And think to burst out into sudden blaze,  
 Comes the blind fury with th'abhorred shears,  
 And slits the thin-spun life. 'But not the praise,'  
*Phoebus* replied, and touched my trembling ears;  
 'Fame is no plant that grows on mortal soil,  
 Nor in the glistening foil  
 Set off to th'world, nor in broad rumour lies,  
 But lives & spreads aloft by those pure eyes  
 And perfect witness of all-judging *Jove*;  
 As he pronounces lastly on each deed,  
 Of so much fame in heav'n expect thy meed.'



O fountain ARETHUSE, and thou honoured flood,  
 Smooth-sliding MINCIUS, crowned with vocal reeds,  
 That strain I heard was of a higher mood.  
 But now my oat proceeds,  
 And listens to the herald of the sea,  
 That came in *Neptune's* plea.  
 He asked the waves, and asked the felon winds,  
 'What hard mishap hath doomed this gentle swain?'  
 And questioned every gust of rugged wings  
 That blows from off each beaked promontory.  
 They knew not of his story;  
 And sage *Hippotades* their answer brings,  
 That not a blast was from his dungeon strayed;  
 The air was calm, and on the level brine  
 Sleek *Panope* with all her sisters played.  
 It was that fatal & perfidious bark,  
 Built in th'eclipse, and rigged with curses dark,  
 That sunk so low that sacred head of thine.

Next *Camus*, reverend sire, went footing slow,  
 His mantle hairy, & his bonnet sedge,  
 Inwrought with figures dim, and on the edge  
 Like to that sanguine flower inscribed with woe.  
 'Ah! who hath reft,' quoth he, 'my dearest pledge?'  
 Last came, and last did go,  
 The pilot of the galilean lake;  
 Two massy keys he bore of metals twain  
 (The golden opes, the iron shuts amain).  
 He shook his mitred locks, and stern bespake:  
 'How well could I have spared for thee, young swain,  
 Enow of such as for their bellies' sake  
 Creep & intrude, and climb into the fold?  
 Of other care they little reckoning make  
 Than how to scramble at the shearers' feast  
 And shove away the worthy bidden guest.  
 Blind mouths! that scarce themselves know how to hold  
 A sheep-hook, or have learned aught else the least  
 That to the faithful herdman's art belongs!  
 What recks it them? What need they? They are sped;  
 And when they list their lean & flashy songs  
 Grate on their scrannel pipes of wretched straw,  
 The hungry sheep look up, and are not fed,  
 But, swoll'n with wind & the rank mist they draw,

Rot inwardly, and foul contagion spread;  
 Besides what the grim wolf with privy paw  
 Daily devours apace, and nothing said,  
 But that two-handed engine at the door  
 Stands ready to smite once, and smite no more.'

Return, *Alpheus*: the dread voice is past  
 That shrunk thy streams; return, sicilian muse,  
 And call the vales & bid them hither cast  
 Their bells & flowerets of 1000 hues.  
 Ye valleys low, where the mild whispers use  
 Of shades & wanton winds, & gushing brooks,  
 On whose fresh lap the swart star sparsely looks,  
 Throw hither all your quaint enamelled eyes,  
 That on the green turf suck the honeyed showers  
 And purple all the ground with vernal flowers.  
 Bring the rathe primrose that forsaken dies,  
 The tufted crow-toe, & pale jessamine,  
 The white pink, & the pansy freaked with jet,  
 The glowing violet,  
 The musk-rose, & the well attired woodbine,  
 With cowslips wan that hang the pensive head,  
 And every flower that sad embroidery wears;  
 Bid amaranthus all his beauty shed,  
 And daffadillies fill their cups with tears,  
 To strew the laureate hearse where *Lycid* lies.  
 For so to interpose a little ease,  
 Let our frail thoughts dally with false surmise.  
 Aye me! Whilst thee the shores & sounding seas  
 Wash far away, where'er thy bones are hurled;  
 Whether beyond the stormy Hebrides,  
 Where thou perhaps under the whelming tide  
 Visit'st the bottom of the monstrous world,  
 Or whether thou, to our moist vows denied,  
 Sleep'st by the fable of *Bellerus* old,  
 Where the great vision of the guarded mount  
 Looks toward NAMANCOS & BAYONA's hold:  
 Look homeward angel now, and melt with ruth;  
 And, O ye dolphins, waft the hapless youth.

Weep no more, woeful shepherds, weep no more,  
 For *Lycidas*, your sorrow, is not dead,  
 Sunk though he be beneath the watery floor;

So sinks the day-star in the ocean bed,  
 And yet anon repairs his drooping head,  
 And tricks his beams, and with new-spangled ore  
 Flames in the forehead of the morning sky:  
 So *Lycidas* sunk low, but mounted high  
 Through the dear might of him that walked the waves;  
 Where, other groves & other streams along,  
 With nectar pure his oozy locks he laves,  
 And hears the unexpressive nuptial song,  
 In the blest kingdoms meek of joy & love.  
 There entertain him all the saints above,  
 In solemn troops, & sweet societies,  
 That sing, and singing in their glory move,  
 And wipe the tears for ever from his eyes.  
 Now, *Lycidas*, the shepherds weep no more:  
 Henceforth thou art the genius of the shore,  
 In thy large recompense, and shalt be good  
 To all that wander in that perilous flood.

Thus sang the uncouth swain to th'oaks & rills,  
 While the still morn went out with sandals gray;  
 He touched the tender stops of various quills,  
 With eager thought warbling his doric lay;  
 And now the sun had stretched out all the hills,  
 And now was dropped into the western bay;  
 At last he rose, and twitched his mantle blue:  
 Tomorrow to fresh woods, & pastures new.

## XVIII.2.

The night is freezing fast;  
 Tomorrow comes december;  
 And winterfalls of old  
 Are with me from the past;  
 And chiefly I remember  
 How *Dick* would hate the cold.

Fall, winter, fall; for he,  
 Prompt hand & headpiece clever,  
 Has woven a winter robe,  
 And made of earth & sea  
 His overcoat for ever,  
 And wears the turning globe.

## XVIII.3.

For virtue now is neither more or less,  
And vice is only varied in the dress.

## XIX.

## XIX.1.

So we must part, my body, you & I  
Who've spent so many pleasant years together.  
'Tis sorry work to lose your company  
Who clove to me so close, whate'er the weather,  
From winter unto winter, wet or dry;  
But you have reached the limit of your tether,  
And I must journey on my way alone,  
And leave you quietly beneath a stone.

They say that you are altogether bad  
(Forgive me; 'tis not my experience),  
And think me very wicked to be sad  
At leaving you, a clod, a prison, whence  
To get quite free I should be very glad.  
Perhaps I may be so, some few days hence,  
But now, methinks, 'twere graceless not to spend  
A tear or two on my departing friend.

Now our long partnership is near completed,  
And I look back upon its history;  
I greatly fear I have not always treated  
You with the honesty you showed to me.  
And I must own that you have oft defeated  
Unworthy schemes by your sincerity,  
And by a blush or stammering tongue have tried  
To make me think again before I lied.

'Tis true you're not so handsome as you were,  
But that's not your fault and is partly mine.  
You might have lasted longer with more care,  
And still looked something like your first design;  
And even now, with all your wear & tear,  
'Tis pitiful to think I must resign

---

William Congreve (1670 – 1729), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*.  
This couplet is taken from a verse epistle to Richard Temple, 1st Viscount Cobham.

'Any Soul to Any Body', Cosmo Monkhouse (1840 – 1901), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

You to the friendless grave, the patient prey  
Of all the hungry legions of decay.

But you must stay, dear body, and I go.

And I was once so very proud of you:

You made my mother's eyes to overflow

When first she saw you, wonderful & new.

And now, with all your faults, 'twere hard to find

A slave more willing or a friend more true.

Ay – even they who say the worst about you

Can scarcely tell what I shall do without you.

### **XIX.2.**

Tell me no more how fair she is.

I have no mind to hear

The story of that distant bliss

I never shall come near:

By sad experience I have found

That her perfection is my wound.

And tell me not how fond I am

To tempt a daring fate,

From whence no triumph ever came,

But to repent too late:

There is some hope ere long I may

In silence dote my self away.

I ask no pity, love, from thee,

Nor will thy justice blame,

So that thou wilt not envy me

The glory of my flame:

Which crowns my heart when ere it dies,

In that it falls her sacrifice.

### **XIX.3.** I am always of the opinion with the learned, if they speak first.

---

℞ Henry King, Bishop of Chichester (1592 – 1669), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.  
William Congreve (1670 – 1729), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

## XX.

## XX.1.

His golden locks time hath to silver turned;  
 O time too swift, O swiftness never ceasing!  
 His youth 'gainst time & age hath ever spurned,  
 But spurned in vain; youth waneth by increasing:  
 Beauty, strength, youth, are flowers but fading seen;  
 Duty, faith, love are roots, and ever green.

His helmet now shall make a hive for bees;  
 And lovers' sonnets turned to holy psalms;  
 A man-at-arms must now serve on his knees,  
 And feed on prayers, which are age his alms:  
 But though from court to cottage he depart,  
 His saint is sure of his unspotted heart.

And when he saddest sits in homely cell,  
 He'll teach his swains this carol for a song:  
 Blest be the hearts that wish my sovereign well;  
 Cursed be the souls that think her any wrong.  
 Goddess, allow this aged man his right  
 To be your beadsman now that was your knight.

## XX.2.

After the ranks of stubble have laid bare,  
 And field mice & finches' beaks have found  
 The last spilled seed corn left upon the ground;  
 And no more swallows miracle in air;

When the green tuft no longer hides the hare,  
 And dropping starling flights at evening come;  
 When birds, except the robin, have gone dumb,  
 And leaves are rustling downwards everywhere;

Then out, with the great horses, come the ploughs,  
 And all day long the slow procession goes,  
 Darkening the stubble fields with broadening strips.  
 Grey sea-gulls settle after to carouse:

---

George Peele (1556 – 1596), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. This poem is frequently anthologised under the title "A Farewell to Arms", which is the ultimate source of the title of Hemingway's novel. These lines conclude *Polyhymnia*.

'Autumn Ploughing', Dr John Masefield, Poet Laureate (1878 – 1967), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

Harvest prepares upon the harvest's close,  
 Before the blackbird pecks the scarlet hips.

**XX.3.** God made the country, and man made the town.

## XXI.

### XXI.1.

As some fond virgin, whom her mother's care  
 Drags from the town to wholesome country air,  
 Just when she learns to roll a melting eye,  
 And hear a spark, yet think no danger nigh;  
 From the dear man unwillingly she must sever,  
 Yet takes one kiss before she parts for ever:  
 Thus from the world fair *Zephalinda* flew,  
 Saw others happy, and with sighs withdrew;  
 Not that their pleasures caused her discontent:  
 She sighed not that thizzy stayed, but that shzz went.  
 She went, to plain-work, and to purling brooks,  
 Old-fashioned halls, dull aunts, & croaking rooks;  
 She went from opera, park, assembly, play,  
 To morning walks, & prayers three hours a day;  
 To pass her time 'twixt reading & bohea,  
 To muse, and spill her solitary tea,  
 Or o'er cold coffee trifle with the spoon,  
 Count the slow clock, and dine exact at noon;  
 Divert her eyes with pictures in the fire,  
 Hum ½ a tune, tell stories to the squire;  
 Up to her godly garret after seven;  
 There starve & pray, for that's the way to heaven.  
 Some squire, perhaps, you take a delight to rack;  
 Whose game is whisk, whose treat a toast in sack,  
 Who visits with a gun, presents you birds,  
 Then gives a smacking buss, & cries, No words!  
 Or with his hound comes hollowing from the stable,  
 Makes love with nods, & knees beneath a table;

---

William Cowper (1731 – 1800), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. This is a line from Book I of Cowper's *The Task*.

'Epistle to Miss Blount, On Her Leaving the Town, After the Coronation', Alexander Pope (1688 – 1744), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. The Miss Blount in question must have been one of the two Blount sisters, Teresa and Martha, with whom Pope was friendly. Martha Blount is more likely, since, as Robert Carruthers argued in his *Life* of 1857, Pope and she were particularly close, perhaps even lovers, and indeed Pope made her his principal heir. ¶24. The word 'whisk' as used here is an archaic name for the card-game whist.

Whose laughs are hearty, though his jests are coarse,  
 And loves you best of all things – but his horse.  
 In some fair evening, on your elbow laid,  
 Your dream of triumphs in the rural shade;  
 In pensive thought recall the fancied scene,  
 See coronations rise on every green;  
 Before you pass th'imaginary sights  
 Of lords & earls & dukes & gartered knights;  
 While the spread fan o'ershades your closing eyes;  
 Then give one flirt, and all the vision flies.  
 Thus vanish scepters, coronets & balls,  
 And leave you in lone woods, or empty walls.  
 So when your slave, at some dear, idle time,  
 (Not plagued with headaches, or the want of rhyme)  
 Stands in the streets, abstracted from the crew,  
 And while he seems to study, thinks of you:  
 Just when his fancy points your sprightly eyes,  
 Or sees the blush of soft *Parthenia* rise,  
 Gay pats my shoulder, and you vanish quite;  
 Streets, chairs, and coxcombs rush upon my sight;  
 Vexed to be still in town, I knit my brow,  
 Look sour and hum a tune – as you may now.

### XXI.2.

Going by *Daly's* shanty I heard the boys within  
 Dancing the spanish hornpipe to *Driscoll's* violin;  
 I heard the sea-boots shaking the rough planks of the floor,  
 But I was going westward, I hadn't heart for more.

All down the windy village the noise rang in my ears;  
 Old sea-boots stamping, shuffling, it brought the bitter tears;  
 The old tune piped & quavered; the lilts came clear and strong;  
 But I was going westward, I couldn't join the song.

There were the grey stone houses, the night wind blowing keen,  
 The hill-sides pale with moonlight, the young corn springing green,  
 The hearth nooks lit & kindly, with dear friends good to see,  
 But I was going westward, and the ship waited me.

### XXI.3. The good of subjects is the end of kings.

---

'The Emigrant', Dr John Masefield, Poet Laureate (1878 – 1967), Masefield, *The Poems and Plays of John Masefield: Poems*.

Daniel Defoe (1660 – 1731), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.



## XXII.

## XXII.1.

In these deep solitudes & awful cells,  
 Where heav'nly-pensive contemplation dwells,  
 And ever-musing melancholy reigns;  
 What means this tumult in a vestal's veins?  
 Why rove my thoughts beyond this last retreat?  
 Why feels my heart its long-forgotten heat?  
 Yet, yet I love! From *Abelard* it came,  
 And *Eloisa* yet must kiss the name.

Dear fatal name, rest ever unrevealed,  
 Nor pass these lips in holy silence sealed.  
 Hide it, my heart, within that close disguise,  
 Where mixed with God's, his loved idea lies:  
 O write it not, my hand – the name appears  
 Already written – wash it out, my tears!  
 In vain lost *Eloisa* weeps and prays,  
 Her heart still dictates, and her hand obeys.

Relentless walls, whose darksome round contains  
 Repentant sighs, & voluntary pains:  
 Ye rugged rocks, which holy knees have worn;  
 Ye grotts & caverns shagged with horrid thorn!  
 Shrines, where their vigils pale-eyed virgins keep,  
 And pitying saints, whose statues learn to weep!  
 Though cold like you, unmoved, and silent grown,  
 I have not yet forgot myself to stone.  
 All is not heav'n's while *Abelard* has part,  
 Still rebel nature holds out  $\frac{1}{2}$  my heart;  
 Nor pray'rs nor fasts its stubborn pulse restrain,  
 Nor tears, for ages, taught to flow in vain.

Soon as thy letters trembling I unclose,  
 That well-known name awakens all my woes.  
 O name for ever sad, for ever dear,  
 Still breathed in sighs, still ushered with a tear.  
 I tremble too, where'er my own I find,  
 Some dire misfortune follows close behind.  
 Line after line my gushing eyes o'erflow,

---

'Eloisa to Abelard', Alexander Pope (1688 – 1744), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. This poem plays a significant part in the plot of *Sharpe's Enemy*.

Led through a sad variety of woe:  
 Now warm in love, now with'ring in thy bloom,  
 Lost in a convent's solitary gloom!  
 There stern religion quenched th'unwilling flame;  
 There died the best of passions, love & fame.

Yet write, O write me all, that I may join  
 Griefs to thy griefs, and echo sighs to thine.  
 Nor foes nor fortune take this pow'r away;  
 And is my *Abelard* less kind than they?  
 Tears still are mine, and those I need not spare,  
 Love but demands what else were shed in prayer;  
 No happier task these faded eyes pursue;  
 To read and weep is all they now can do.

Then share thy pain, allow that sad relief;  
 Ah, more than share it; give me all thy grief.  
 Heav'n first taught letters for some wretch's aid,  
 Some banished lover, or some captive maid;  
 They live; they speak; they breathe what love inspires,  
 Warm from the soul, and faithful to its fires;  
 The virgin's wish without her fears impart;  
 Excuse the blush, and pour out all the heart;  
 Speed the soft intercourse from soul to soul,  
 And waft a sigh from INDUS to the POLE.

Thou know'st how guiltless first I met thy flame,  
 When love approached me under friendship's name;  
 My fancy formed thee of angelic kind,  
 Some emanation of th'all-beauteous mind.  
 Those smiling eyes, attemp'ring every day,  
 Shone sweetly lambent with celestial day.  
 Guiltless I gazed; heav'n listened while you sung;  
 And truths divine came mended from that tongue.  
 From lips like those what precept failed to move?  
 Too soon they taught me 'twas no sin to love.  
 Back through the paths of pleasing sense I ran,  
 Nor wished an angel whom I loved a man.  
 Dim & remote the joys of saints I see;  
 Nor envy them, that heav'n I lose for thee.

How oft, when pressed to marriage, have I said,  
 'Curse on all laws but those which love has made!'

Love, free as air, at sight of human ties,  
 Spreads his light wings, and in a moment flies;  
 Let wealth, let honour, wait the wedded dame,  
 Åugust her deed, and sacred be her fame;  
 Before true passion all those views remove.  
 Fame, wealth & honour, what are you to love?  
 The jealous God, when we profane his fires,  
 Those restless passions in revenge inspires;  
 And bids them make mistaken mortals groan,  
 Who seek in love for aught but love alone.  
 Should at my feet the world's great master fall,  
 Himself, his throne, his world, I'd scorn 'em all:  
 Not Caesar's empress would I deign to prove;  
 No, make me mistress to the man I love;  
 If there be yet another name more free,  
 More fond than mistress, make me that to thee!  
 Oh happy state, when souls each other draw,  
 When love is liberty, and nature, law:  
 All then is full, possessing, & possessed,  
 No craving void left aching in the breast:  
 Ev'n thought meets thought, ere from the lips it part,  
 And each warm wish springs mutual from the heart.  
 This sure is bliss (if bliss on earth there be)  
 And once the lot of *Abelard* & me.

Alas, how changed! What sudden horrors rise!  
 A naked lover bound & bleeding lies!  
 Where, where was Eloise? Her voice, her hand,  
 Her poniard, had opposed the dire command.  
 Barbarian, stay! That bloody stroke restrain;  
 The crime was common; common be the pain.  
 I can no more; by shame, by rage suppressed;  
 Let tears, & burning blushes speak the rest.

Canst thou forget that sad, that solemn day,  
 When victims at yon altar's foot we lay?  
 Canst thou forget what tears that moment fell,  
 When, warm in youth, I bade the world farewell?  
 As with cold lips I kissed the sacred veil,  
 The shrines all trembled, and the lamps grew pale:  
 Heav'n scarce believed the conquest it surveyed,  
 And saints with wonder heard the vows I made.  
 Yet then, to those dread altars as I drew,

Not on the cross my eyes were fixed, but you:  
 Not grace, or zeal, love only was my call,  
 And if I lose thy love, I lose my all.  
 Come, with thy looks, thy words, relieve my woe;  
 Those still at least are left thee to bestow.  
 Still on that breast enamoured let me lie;  
 Still drink delicious poison from thy eye,  
 Pant on thy lip, and to thy heart be pressed;  
 Give all thou canst – and let me dream the rest.  
 Ah no! Instruct me other joys to prize;  
 With other beauties charm my partial eyes;  
 Full in my view set all the bright abode,  
 And make my soul quit *Abelard* for God.

Ah, think at least thy flock deserves thy care,  
 Plants of thy hand, & children of thy prayer.  
 From the false world in early youth they fled,  
 By thee to mountains, wilds, & deserts led.  
 You raised these hallowed walls; the desert smiled,  
 And paradise was opened in the wild.  
 No weeping orphan saw his father's stores  
 Our shrines irradiate, or emblaze the floors;  
 No silver saints, by dying misers giv'n,  
 Here bribed the rage of ill-requited heav'n:  
 But such plain roofs as piety could raise,  
 And only vocal with the maker's praise.  
 In these lone walls (their days eternal bound)  
 These moss-grown domes with spiry turrets crowned,  
 Where awful arches make a noonday night,  
 And the dim windows shed a solemn light;  
 Thy eyes diffused a reconciling ray,  
 And gleams of glory brightened all the day.  
 But now no face divine contentment wears,  
 'Tis all blank sadness, or continual tears.  
 See how the force of others' prayers I try,  
 (O pious fraud of am'rous charity!)  
 But why should I on others' prayers depend?  
 Come thou, my father, brother, husband, friend!  
 Ah let thy handmaid, sister, daughter move,  
 And all those tender names in one, thy love!  
 The darksome pines that o'er yon rocks reclined  
 Wave high, and murmur to the hollow wind,  
 The wand'ring streams that shine between the hills,

The grots that echo to the tinkling rills,  
 The dying gales that pant upon the trees,  
 The lakes that quiver to the curling breeze;  
 No more these scenes my meditation aid,  
 Or lull to rest the visionary maid.  
 But o'er the twilight groves & dusky caves,  
 Long-sounding aisles, & intermingled graves,  
 Black melancholy sits, and round her throws  
 A death-like silence, & a dread repose:  
 Her gloomy presence saddens all the scene,  
 Shades ev'ry flower, and darkens ev'ry green,  
 Deepens the murmur of the falling floods,  
 And breathes a browner horror on the woods.

Yet here for ever, ever must I stay;  
 Sad proof how well a lover can obey!  
 Death, only death, can break the lasting chain;  
 And here, ev'n then, shall my cold dust remain,  
 Here all its frailties, all its flames resign,  
 And wait till 'tis no sin to mix with thine.

Ah wretch, believed the spouse of God in vain,  
 Confessed within the slave of love & man.  
 Assist me, heav'n! But whence arose that prayer?  
 Sprung it from piety, or from despair?  
 Ev'n here, where frozen chastity retires,  
 Love finds an altar for forbidden fires.  
 I ought to grieve, but cannot what I ought;  
 I mourn the lover, not lament the fault;  
 I view my crime, but kindle at the view,  
 Repent old pleasures, and solicit new;  
 Now turned to heav'n, I weep my past offence,  
 Now think of thee, and curse my innocence.  
 Of all affliction taught a lover yet,  
 'Tis sure the hardest science to forget!  
 How shall I lose the sin, yet keep the sense,  
 And love th'offender, yet detest th'offence?  
 How the dear object from the crime remove,  
 Or how distinguish penitence from love?  
 Unequal task, a passion to resign,  
 For hearts so touched, so pierced, so lost as mine.  
 Ere such a soul regains its peaceful state,  
 How often must it love, how often hate!

How often hope, despair, resent, regret,  
Conceal, disdain – do all things but forget.  
But let heav'n seize it, all at once 'tis fired;  
Not touched, but rapt; not wakened, but inspired!  
O come, O teach me nature to subdue,  
Renounce my love, my life, myself – & you.  
Fill my fond heart with God alone, for he  
Alone can rival, can succeed to thee.

How happy is the blameless vestal's lot!  
The world forgetting, by the world forgot.  
Eternal sunshine of the spotless mind!  
Each prayer accepted, and each wish resigned;  
Labour & rest, that equal periods keep;  
'Obedient slumbers that can wake and weep;'  
Desires composed, affections ever ev'n,  
Tears that delight, and sighs that waft to heav'n.  
Grace shines around her with serenest beams,  
And whisp'ring angels prompt her golden dreams.  
For her th'unfading rose of EDEN blooms,  
And wings of seraphs shed divine perfumes,  
For her the spouse prepares the bridal ring;  
For her white virgins hymeneals sing;  
To sounds of heav'nly harps she dies away,  
And melts in visions of eternal day.

Far other dreams my erring soul employ,  
Far other raptures, of unholy joy:  
When at the close of each sad, sorrowing day,  
Fancy restores what vengeance snatched away,  
Then conscience sleeps, and leaving nature free,  
All my loose soul unbounded springs to thee.  
O cursed, dear horrors of all-conscious night!  
How glowing guilt exalts the keen delight!  
Provoking demons all restraint remove,  
And stir within me ev'ry source of love.  
I hear thee, view thee, gaze o'er all thy charms,  
And round thy phantom glue my clasping arms.  
I wake – no more I hear; no more I view;  
The phantom flies me, as unkind as you.  
I call aloud; it hears not what I say;  
I stretch my empty arms; it glides away.  
To dream once more I close my willing eyes;

Ye soft illusions, dear deceits, arise!  
 Alas, no more – methinks we wand’ring go  
 Through dreary wastes, and weep each other’s woe,  
 Where round some mould’ring tower pale ivy creeps,  
 And low-browed rocks hang nodding o’er the deeps.  
 Sudden you mount; you beckon from the skies;  
 Clouds interpose, waves roar and winds arise.  
 I shriek, start up, the same sad prospect find,  
 And wake to all the griefs I left behind.

For thee the fates, severely kind, ordain  
 A cool suspense from pleasure & from pain;  
 Thy life a long, dead calm of fixed repose;  
 No pulse that riots, and no blood that glows.  
 Still as the sea, ere winds were taught to blow,  
 Or moving spirit bade the waters flow;  
 Soft as the slumbers of a saint forgiv’n,  
 And mild as opening gleams of promised heav’n.

Come, *Abelard*, for what hast thou to dread?  
 The torch of *Venus* burns not for the dead.  
 Nature stands checked; religion disapproves;  
 Ev’n thou art cold – yet *Eloisa* loves.  
 Ah hopeless, lasting flames, like those that burn  
 To light the dead, and warm th’unfruitful urn!

What scenes appear where’er I turn my view?  
 The dear ideas, where I fly, pursue,  
 Rise in the grove, before the altar rise,  
 Stain all my soul, and wanton in my eyes.  
 I waste the matin lamp in sighs for thee,  
 Thy image steals between my God & me,  
 Thy voice I seem in ev’ry hymn to hear,  
 With ev’ry bead I drop too soft a tear.  
 When from the censer clouds of fragrance roll,  
 And swelling organs lift the rising soul,  
 One thought of thee puts all the pomp to flight,  
 Priests, tapers, temples, swim before my sight:  
 In seas of flame my plunging soul is drowned,  
 While altars blaze, and angels tremble round.

While prostrate here in humble grief I lie,  
 Kind, virtuous drops just gath’ring in my eye,

While praying, trembling, in the dust I roll,  
 And dawning grace is op'ning on my soul:  
 Come, if thou dar'st, all charming as thou art!  
 Oppose thyself to heav'n; dispute my heart;  
 Come, with one glance of those deluding eyes  
 Blot out each bright idea of the skies;  
 Take back that grace, those sorrows, & those tears;  
 Take back my fruitless penitence & prayers;  
 Snatch me, just mounting, from the blest abode;  
 Assist the fiends, and tear me from my God!

No, fly me, fly me, far as pole from pole;  
 Rise alps between us, and whole oceans roll!  
 Ah, come not, write not, think not once of me,  
 Nor share one pang of all I felt for thee.  
 Thy oaths I quit, thy memory resign;  
 Forget, renounce me, hate whate'er was mine.  
 Fair eyes, & tempting looks (which yet I view!)  
 Long loved, adored ideas, all adieu!  
 O grace serene! O virtue heav'nly fair!  
 Divine oblivion of low-thoughted care!  
 Fresh blooming hope, gay daughter of the sky!  
 And faith, our early immortality!  
 Enter, each mild, each amicable guest;  
 Receive, and wrap me in eternal rest!

See in her cell sad *Eloisa* spread,  
 Propped on some tomb, a neighbour of the dead.  
 In each low wind methinks a spirit calls,  
 And more than echoes talk along the walls.  
 Here, as I watched the dying lamps around,  
 From yonder shrine I heard a hollow sound.  
 'Come, sister, come!' it said, or seem'd to say.  
 'Thy place is here, sad sister; come away!  
 Once like thyself, I trembled, wept, and prayed,  
 Love's victim then, though now a sainted maid:  
 But all is calm in this eternal sleep;  
 Here grief forgets to groan, and love to weep,  
 Ev'n superstition loses ev'ry fear:  
 For God, not man, absolves our frailties here.'

I come; I come! Prepare your roseate bow'rs,  
 Celestial palms, and ever-blooming flow'rs.



Thither, where sinners may have rest, I go,  
 Where flames refined in breasts seraphic glow:  
 Thou, *Abelard*, the last sad office pay,  
 And smooth my passage to the realms of day;  
 See my lips tremble, and my eyeballs roll;  
 Suck my last breath, and catch my flying soul!  
 Ah no – in sacred vestments may'st thou stand,  
 The hallowed taper trembling in thy hand;  
 Present the cross before my lifted eye;  
 Teach me at once, and learn of me to die.  
 Ah then, thy once-loved *Eloisa* see!  
 It will be then no crime to gaze on me.  
 See from my cheek the transient roses fly!  
 See the last sparkle languish in my eye!  
 Till ev'ry motion, pulse, & breath be o'er;  
 And ev'n my *Abelard* be loved no more.  
 O death all-eloquent, you only prove  
 What dust we dote on, when 'tis man we love.

Then too, when fate shall thy fair frame destroy,  
 (That cause of all my guilt, & all my joy)  
 In trance ecstatic may thy pangs be drowned,  
 Bright clouds descend, and angels watch thee round;  
 From op'ning skies may streaming glories shine,  
 And saints embrace thee with a love like mine.

May one kind grave unite each hapless name,  
 And graft my love immortal on thy fame!  
 Then, ages hence, when all my woes are o'er,  
 When this rebellious heart shall beat no more;  
 If ever chance two wand'ring lovers brings  
 To Paraclete's white walls & silver springs,  
 O'er the pale marble shall they join their heads,  
 And drink the falling tears each other sheds;  
 Then sadly say, with mutual pity moved,  
 'Oh may we never love as these have loved!'

From the full choir when loud hosannas rise,  
 And swell the pomp of dreadful sacrifice,  
 Amid that scene if some relenting eye  
 Glance on the stone where our cold relics lie,  
 Devotion's self shall steal a thought from heav'n;  
 One human tear shall drop and be forgiv'n.

And sure, if fate some future bard shall join  
 In sad similitude of griefs to mine,  
 Condemned whole years in absence to deplore,  
 And image charms he must behold no more;  
 Such if there be, who loves so long, so well;  
 Let him our sad, our tender story tell;  
 The well-sung woes will soothe my pensive ghost;  
 He best can paint 'em, who shall feel 'em most.

## XXII.2.

I have seen flowers come in stony places  
 And kind things done by men with ugly faces,  
 And the gold cup won by the worst horse at the races,  
 So I trust, too.

## XXII.3. To find a friend one must close one eye.

## XXIII.

### XXIII.1.

Like as the damask rose you see,  
 Or like the blossom on the tree,  
 Or like the dainty flower of may,  
 Or like the morning to the day,  
 Or like the sun or like the shade,  
 Or like the gourd which *Jonas* had:

Even such is man, whose thread is spun,  
 Drawn out, and cut, and so is done.  
 The rose withers; the blossom blasteth;  
 The flower fades; the morning hasteth;  
 The sun sets; the shadow flies;  
 The gourd consumes; and man he dies.

Like to the grass that's newly sprung,  
 Or like the tale that's new begun,  
 Or like the bird that's here today,  
 Or like the pearlèd dew of may,

---

'An Epilogue', Dr John Masefield, Poet Laureate (1878 – 1967), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

George Douglas (1868 – 1952), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. The quotation continues: 'To keep him, two.'

'Like as the Damask Rose', Francis Quarles (1592 – 1644), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. The attribution to Quarles has been questioned. This poem is was set to music by Sir Edward Elgar as "Like to the Damask Rose", who made minor changes to the text.

Or like an hour, or like a span,  
Or like the singing of a swan:

Even such is man, who lives by breath,  
Is here, now there, in life, in death.  
The grass withers; the tale is ended;  
The bird is flown; the dew's descended;  
The hour is short, the span not long;  
The swan's near death; man's life is done.

Like to the bubble in the brook,  
Or, in a glass, much like a look,  
Or like a shuttle in weaver's hand,  
Or like the writing on the sand,  
Or like a thought, or like a dream,  
Or like the gliding of the stream:

Even such is man, who lives by breath,  
Is here, now there, in life & death.  
The bubble's cut; the look's forgot;  
The shuttle's flung; the writing's blot;  
The thought is past; the dream is gone;  
The water glides; man's life is done.

Like to an arrow from the bow,  
Or like swift course of wat'ry flow,  
Or like the time 'twixt flood & ebb,  
Or like the spider's tender web,  
Or like a race, or like a goal,  
Or like the dealing of a dole:

Even such is man, whose brittle state  
Is always subject unto fate.  
The arrow's shot; the flood soon spent,  
The time no time, the web soon rent,  
The race soon run, the goal soon won,  
The dole soon dealt, man's life first done.

Like to the lightning from the sky,  
Or like a post that quick doth die,ust  
Or like a quaver in short song,  
Or like a journey three days long,  
Or like the snow when summer's come,  
Or like the pear, or like the plum:

Even such is man, who heaps up sorrow,  
 Lives but this day, and dies tomorrow.  
 The lightning's past; the post must go;  
 The song is short; the journey's so;  
 The pear doth rot; the plum doth fall;  
 The snow dissolves, and so must all.

Like to the seed put in earth's womb,  
 Or like dead *Lazarus* in his tomb,  
 Or like *Tabitha*, being asleep,  
 Or *Jonas*-like within the deep,  
 Or like the night, or stars by day,  
 Which seem to vanish clean away:

Even so this death, man's life bereaves,  
 But, being dead, man death deceives.  
 The seed it springeth; *Lazarus* standeth;  
*Tabitha* walks, and *Jonas* landeth;  
 The night is passed; the stars remain:  
 So man that dies shall live again.

## XXIII.2.

Up to the bed by the window, where I be lyin',  
 Comes bells & bleat of the flock wi' they two children's  
 clack.

Over, from under the eaves there's the starlings flyin',  
 And down in yard, fit to burst his chain, yapping out  
 at *Sue* I do hear young *Mac*.

Turning around like a falled-over sack  
 I can see team ploughin' in WHITHY-BUSH field & meal  
 carts startin' up road to CHURCH-TOWN;  
 Saturday afternoon the men goin' back  
 And the women from market, trapin' home over the  
 down.

Heavenly Master, I would like to wake to they same green  
 places  
 Where I be knowed for breakin' dogs & follerin' sheep.

---

'Old Shepherd's Prayer', Miss Charlotte Mew (1869 – 1928), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. There is a Withybush in Haverfordwest (or Hwlffordd) in Pembrokeshire, and perhaps Church-Town could be St David's? But this is pure speculation. There is nothing especially Welsh – other than the profession of sheep-farming itself – about the shepherd and his dialect, and the place-names are probably just invented.

And if I may not walk in th'old ways and look on th'old  
 faces  
 I would sooner sleep.

**XXIII.3.** A thing well said will be wit in all languages.

**XXIV.**

**XXIV.1.**

Ancient person, for whom I  
 All the flattering youth defy,  
 Long be it ere thou grow old,  
 Aching, shaking, crazy, cold;  
     But still continue as thou art,  
 Ancient person of my heart.

On thy withered lips & dry,  
 Which like barren furrows lie,  
 Brooding kisses I will pour  
 Shall thy youthful heat restore  
 (Such kind showers in autumn fall,  
 And a second spring recall);  
     Nor from thee will ever part,  
 Ancient person of my heart.

Thy nobler part, which but to name  
 In our sex would be counted shame,  
 By age's frozen grasp possessed,  
 From his ice shall be released,  
 And soothed by my reviving hand,  
 In former warmth & vigour stand.  
 All a lover's wish can reach  
 For thy joy my love shall teach,  
 And for thy pleasure shall improve  
 All that art can add to love.  
     Yet still I love thee without art,  
 Ancient person of my heart.

---

John Dryden, Poet Laureate (1631 – 1700), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'A Song of a Young Lady to Her Ancient Lover', John Wilmot, 2nd Earl of Rochester (1647 – 1680), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. ¶10. Other sources give 'heart' instead of 'heat'. ¶18. Other sources give 'their' instead 'his'.

**XXIV.2.**

Praise him that aye  
 Remains the same:  
 All tongues display  
*Iehova's* fame.  
 Sing all that share  
 This earthly ball:  
 His mercies are  
 Exposed to all.  
 Like as the word  
 Once he doth give,  
 Rolled in recórd,  
 Doth time outlive.

**XXIV.3.** The cost of liberty is less than the price of repression.

**XXV.****XXV.1.**

You earthly souls that court a wanton flame,  
     Whose pale weak influence  
 Can rise no higher then the humble name  
     And narrow laws of sense,  
 Learn by our friendship to create  
     An immaterial fire,  
 Whose brightness angels may admire,  
     But cannot emulate.

Sickness may fright the roses from her cheek,  
     Or make the lilies fade,  
 But all the subtle ways that death doth seek  
     Cannot my love invade:  
 Flames that are kindled by the eye,  
     Through time & age expire;  
 But ours that boast a reach far higher  
     Can nor decay nor die.

---

℞ Mary Herbert, Countess of Pembroke (1561 – 1621), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This is a translation of Psalm 117. In Lady Pembroke's time, the letter E was sometimes omitted when spelling the word *praise*.

Dr William du Bois (1868 – 1963), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ 'La Belle Confidente', Sir Thomas Stanley (1625 – 1678), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

For when we must resign our vital breath,  
     Our loves by fate benighted,  
 We by this friendship shall survive in death,  
     Even in divorce united.  
 Weak love through fortune or distrust  
     In time forgets to burn,  
 But this pursues us to the urn,  
     And marries either's dust.

## XXV.2.

They leave their love-lorn haunts,  
     Their sigh-warm floating EDEN;  
 And they are mute at once,  
     Mortals by God unheeden,  
     By their past kisses chidden.

But they have kissed and known  
     Clear things we dim by guesses –  
 Spirit to spirit grown:  
     Heaven, born in hand-caresses.  
     Love, fall from sheltering tresses.

And they are dumb & strange:  
     Bared trees bowed from each other.  
 Their last green interchange  
     What lost dreams shall discover?  
     Dead, strayed, to love-strange lover.

**XXV.3.** By hating vices too much, they come to love men too little.

## XXVI.

### XXVI.1.

O love, turn from the changing sea and gaze,  
     Down these grey slopes, upon the year grown old,  
 A-dying 'mid the autumn-scented haze  
     That hangeth o'er the hollow in the wold,  
     Where the wind-bitten ancient elms infold  
 Grey church, long barn, orchard, and red-roofed stead,  
 Wrought in dead days for men a long while dead.

---

℞ 'Wedded', Isaac Rosenberg (1890 – 1918), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

The Rt Hon Edmund Burke (1729 – 1797), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey (1517 – 1547), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

These are the opening lines of Morris' poem "October".

Come down, O love; may not our hands still meet,  
 Since still we live today, forgetting june,  
 Forgetting may, deeming october sweet?  
 O hearken, hearken: through the afternoon  
 The grey tower sings a strange old tinkling tune.  
 Sweet, sweet, & sad, the toiling year's last breath,  
 To satiate of life, to strive with death.

And we too – will it not be soft & kind,  
 That rest from life, from patience, & from pain,  
 That rest from bliss we know not when we find,  
 That rest from love which ne'er the end can gain?  
 Hark: how the tune swells, that erewhile did wane.  
 Look up, love. Ah cling close, and never move.  
 How can I have enough of life & love?

## XXVI.2.

I met a traveller from an antique land  
 Who said: Two vast & trunkless legs of stone  
 Stand in the desert. Near them on the sand,  
 Half sunk, a shattered visage lies, whose frown  
 And wrinkled lip & sneer of cold command  
 Tell that its sculptor well those passions read  
 Which yet survive, stamped on these lifeless things,  
 The hand that mocked them and the heart that fed.  
 And on the pedestal these words appear:  
*My name is Ozymandias, king of kings:*  
*Look on my works, ye mighty, and despair!*  
 Nothing beside remains: round the decay  
 Of that colossal wreck, boundless & bare,  
 The lone & level sands stretch far away.

## XXVI.3. Man is by his constitution a religious animal.

---

‘Ozymandias of Egypt’, Percy Shelley (1792 – 1822), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. Shelley seems to have written this sonnet as one half of a sonnet-writing competition with his friend Horace Smith, who published a very similar, if clearly inferior, poem in the same journal a month later. ¶11. Professor Holloway, in his introduction to the *Oxford Book of Local Verses*, highlights the double meaning in this line: ‘Time, the poet intimates, invites the proud of a later age, as they gaze upon the forgotten ruins of that spurious grandeur, to despair in a deeper sense.’

The Rt Hon Edmund Burke (1729 – 1797), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.



## XXVII.

## XXVII.1.

And slowly answered *Arthur* from the barge:  
 The old order changeth, yielding place to new,  
 And God fulfils himself in many ways,  
 Lest one good custom should corrupt the world.  
 Comfort thyself: what comfort is in me?  
 I have lived my life, and that which I have done  
 May he within himself make pure, but thou,  
 If thou shouldst never see my face again,  
 Pray for my soul. More things are wrought by prayer  
 Than this world dreams of. Wherefore, let thy voice  
 Rise like a fountain for me night & day.  
 For what are men better than sheep or goats  
 That nourish a blind life within the brain,  
 If, knowing God, they lift not hands of prayer  
 Both for themselves & those who call them friend?  
 For so the whole round earth is every way  
 Bound by gold chains about the feet of God.  
 But now farewell. I am going a long way  
 With these thou seest – if indeed I go  
 (For all my mind is clouded with a doubt) –  
 To the island-valley of AVILION;  
 Where falls not hail, or rain, or any snow,  
 Nor ever wind blows loudly; but it lies  
 Deep-meadowed, happy, fair with orchard lawns  
 And bowery hollows crowned with summer sea,  
 Where I will heal me of my grievous wound.

So said he, and the barge with oar & sail  
 Moved from the brink, like some full-breasted swan  
 That, fluting a wild carol ere her death,  
 Ruffles her pure cold plume, and takes the flood  
 With swarthy webs. Long stood Sir *Bedivere*  
 Revolving many memories, till the hull  
 Looked one black dot against the verge of dawn,  
 And on the mere the wailing died away.

---

R Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. These are lines 407-440 of “The Passing of Arthur”.

**XXVII.2.**

Chide, chide no more away  
 The fleeting daughters of the day,  
 Nor with impatient thoughts outrun  
     The lazy sun,  
 Or think the hours do move too slow;  
     Delay is kind,  
 And we too soon shall find  
 That which we seek, yet fear to know.

The mystic dark decrees  
 Unfold not of the destinies,  
 Nor boldly seek to antedate  
     The laws of fate;  
 Thy anxious search awhile forbear,  
     Suppress thy haste  
 And know that time at last  
 Will crown thy hope, or fix thy fear.

**XXVII.3.** What we lose in flowers we more than gain in fruits.

**XXVIII.****XXVIII.1.**

Old man, or lad's love – in the name there's nothing  
 To one that knows not lad's love, or old man,  
 The hoar-green feathery herb, almost a tree,  
 Growing with rosemary & lavender.  
 Even to one that knows it well, the names  
 Half decorate, ½ perplex, the thing it is:  
 At least, what that is clings not to the names  
 In spite of time. And yet I like the names.

The herb itself I like not, but for certain  
 I love it, as some day the child will love it  
 Who plucks a feather from the door-side bush  
 Whenever she goes in or out of the house.  
 Often she waits there, snipping the tips and shrivelling

---

'Destiny', Sir Thomas Stanley (1625 – 1678), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*.

Samuel Butler (1835 – 1902), Butler, *The Way of All Flesh*. The full quotation is, 'Autumn is the mellow season, and what we lose in flowers we more than gain in fruits.'

'Old Man', Edward Thomas (1878 – 1917), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. The scientific name of the plant described is *Artemisia abrotanum*.

The shreds at last on to the path, perhaps  
 Thinking, perhaps of nothing, till she sniffs  
 Her fingers and runs off. The bush is still  
 But  $\frac{1}{2}$  as tall as she, though it is as old;  
 So well she clips it. Not a word she says;  
 And I can only wonder how much hereafter  
 She will remember, with that bitter scent,  
 Of garden rows, & ancient damson trees  
 Topping a hedge, a bent path to a door,  
 A low thick bush beside the door, and me  
 Forbidding her to pick.

As for myself,  
 Where first I met the bitter scent is lost.  
 I, too, often shrivel the grey shreds,  
 Sniff them and think and sniff again and try  
 Once more to think what it is I am remembering,  
 Always in vain. I cannot like the scent,  
 Yet I would rather give up others more sweet,  
 With no meaning, than this bitter one.

I have mislaid the key. I sniff the spray  
 And think of nothing; I see and I hear nothing;  
 Yet seem, too, to be listening, lying in wait  
 For what I should, yet never can, remember:  
 No garden appears, no path, no hoar-green bush  
 Of lad's love, or old man, no child beside,  
 Neither father nor mother, nor any playmate;  
 Only an avenue, dark, nameless, without end.

## XXVIII.2.

Under the wide & starry sky,  
 Dig the grave and let me lie.  
 Glad did I live and gladly die,  
 And I laid me down with a will.

---

'Requiem', Robert Stevenson (1850 – 1894), Holden and Holden, *Poems that Make Grown Men Cry*. These verses are inscribed, according to Stevenson's wishes, on his tomb on Upolu, an island now part of the Independent State of Samoa. Philip Larkin's infamous "This Be the Verse" is presumably a response to this poem. ¶8. What has come to be regarded as the standard version of this poem gives the penultimate line as, 'Home is the sailor, home from sea', i.e. without the second "the". However, the Almanacker prefers the version with said "the", and, indeed, this is the version found on the aforementioned tomb.

This be the verse you 'grave for me:  
*Here he lies where he longed to be;*  
*Home is the sailor, home from the sea,*  
*And the hunter home from the hill.*

**XXVIII.3.** You can do very little with faith, but you can do nothing without it.

## XXIX.

### XXIX.1.

Of the terrible doubt of appearances,  
 Of the uncertainty after all, that we may be deluded,  
 That maybe reliance & hope are but speculations after all,  
 That maybe identity beyond the grave is a beautiful fable  
     only,  
 Maybe the things I perceive, the animals, plants, men, hills,  
     shining & flowing waters,  
 The skies of day & night, colours, densities, forms, maybe  
     these are (as doubtless they are) only apparitions,  
     and the real something has yet to be known,  
 (How often they dart out of themselves as if to confound  
     me & mock me!  
 How often I think neither I know, nor any man knows,  
     aught of them)  
 Maybe seeming to me what they are (as doubtless they  
     indeed but seem) as from my present point of view,  
     and might prove (as of course they would) nought of  
     what they appear, or nought anyhow, from entirely  
     changed points of view;  
 To me these & the like of these are curiously answered by  
     my lovers, my dear friends,  
 When he whom I love travels with me or sits a long while  
     holding me by the hand,  
 When the subtle air, the impalpable, the sense that words  
     & reason hold not, surround us & pervade us,  
 Then I am charged with untold & untellable wisdom, I am  
     silent; I require nothing further;  
 I cannot answer the question of appearances or that of  
     identity beyond the grave,

---

Samuel Butler (1835 – 1902), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Walt Whitman (1819 – 1892), Holden and Holden, *Poems that Make Grown Men Cry*.

But I walk or sit indifferent; I am satisfied;  
 He ahold of my hand has completely satisfied me.

**XXIX.2.**

Today I think  
 Only with scents- scents dead leaves yield,  
 And bracken, and wild carrot's seed,  
 And the square mustard field;

Odours that rise  
 When the spade wounds the roots of tree,  
 Rose, currant, raspberry, or goutweed,  
 Rhubarb or celery;

The smoke's smell, too,  
 Flowing from where a bonfire burns  
 The dead, the waste, the dangerous,  
 And all to sweetness turns.

It is enough  
 To smell, to crumble the dark earth,  
 While the robin sings over again  
 Sad songs of autumn mirth.

**XXIX.3.** He hath awakened from the dream of life.

---

Edward Thomas (1878 – 1917), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

Percy Shelley (1792 – 1822), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. This is a line from Shelley's *Adonais*, his elegy for John Keats.



## CHAPTER 10

# December

### I.

#### I.1.

Can I see another's woe,  
And not be in sorrow too?  
Can I see another's grief,  
And not seek for kind relief?

Can I see a falling tear,  
And not feel my sorrow's share?  
Can a father see his child  
Weep, nor be with sorrow filled?

Can a mother sit and hear  
An infant groan, an infant fear?  
No, no. Never can it be.  
Never, never can it be.

And can he who smiles on all  
Hear the wren with sorrows small,  
Hear the small bird's grief & care,  
Hear the woes that infants bear

And not sit beside the nest,  
Pouring pity in their breast?  
And not sit the cradle near,  
Weeping tear on infant's tear?

And not sit both night & day,  
Wiping all our tears away?  
O no. Never can it be.  
Never, never can it be.

---

'On Anothers Sorrow', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*.

He doth give his joy to all:  
 He becomes an infant small:  
 He becomes a man of woe:  
 He doth feel the sorrow too.

Think not thou canst sigh a sigh,  
 And thy Maker is not by:  
 Think not thou canst weep a tear,  
 And thy Maker is not near.

O he gives to us his joy  
 That our grief he may destroy:  
 Till our grief is fled & gone  
 He doth sit by us and moan.

## I.2.

A flower was offered to me,  
 Such a flower as may never bore.  
 But I said I've a pretty rose tree,  
 And I passed the sweet flower o'er.

Then I went to my pretty rose tree,  
 To tend her by day and by night.  
 But my rose turned away with jealousy,  
 And her thorns were my only delight.

I.3. If it could weep, it could arise and go.

## II.

### II.1.

I wonder whether the girls are mad,  
 And I wonder whether they mean to kill,  
 And I wonder if *William Bond* will die,  
 For assuredly he is very ill.

He went to church in a may morning,  
 Attended by fairies, one, two & three;

---

'My Pretty Rose Tree', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*.

Mrs Elizabeth Browning (1806 – 1861), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. This is the final line of Mrs Browning's sonnet "Grief"; 'it' is a statue.

'William Bond', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*.



But the angels of providence drove them away,  
And he returned home in misery.

He went not out to the field nor fold,  
He went not out to the village nor town,  
But he came home in a black, black cloud,  
And took to his bed & there lay down.

And an angel of providence at his feet,  
And an angel of providence at his head,  
And in the midst a black, black cloud,  
And in the midst the sick man on his bed.

And on his right hand was *Mary Green*,  
And on his left hand was his sister *Jane*,  
And their tears fell through the black, black cloud  
To drive away the sick man's pain.

'O *William*, if thou dost another love,  
Dost another love better than poor *Mary*,  
Go & take that other to be thy wife,  
And *Mary Green* shall her servant be.'

'Yes, *Mary*, I do another love,  
Another I love far better than thee,  
And another I will have for my wife;  
Then what have I to do with thee?

'For thou art melancholy pale,  
And on thy head is the cold moon's shine,  
But she is ruddy & bright as day,  
And the sunbeams dazzle from her eyne.'

*Mary* trembled & *Mary* chilled,  
And *Mary* fell down on the right-hand floor,  
That *William Bond* & his sister *Jane*  
Scarce could recover *Mary* more.

When *Mary* woke & found her laid  
On the right hand of her *William* dear,  
On the right hand of his loved bed,  
And saw her *William Bond* so near,

The fairies that fled from *William Bond*  
Dancèd around her shining head;

They dancèd over the pillow white,  
And the angels of providence left the bed.

I thought love lived in the hot sunshine,  
But O he lives in the moony light!  
I thought to find love in the heat of day,  
But sweet love is the comforter of night.

Seek love in the pity of others' woe,  
In the gentle relief of another's care,  
In the darkness of night and the winter's snow;  
In the naked & outcast, seek love there!

## II.2.

Because I was happy upon the heath,  
And smiled among the winter's snow,  
They clothed me in the clothes of death,  
And taught me to sing the notes of woe.

And because I am happy & dance & sing,  
They think they have done me no injury,  
And are gone to praise God & his Priest & King,  
Who make up a heaven of our misery.

II.3. Excess of sorrow laughs. Excess of joy weeps.

## III.

### III.1.

When men were all asleep the snow came flying,  
In large white flakes falling on the city brown,  
Stealthily & perpetually settling & loosely lying,  
Hushing the latest traffic of the drowsy town;  
Deadening, muffling, stifling its murmurs failing;  
Lazily & incessantly floating down & down:  
Silently sifting & veiling road, roof & railing;  
Hiding difference, making unevenness even,  
Into angles & crevices softly drifting & sailing.  
All night it fell, and when full inches seven

---

'The Chimney Sweeper', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. The Almanacker has omitted the first verse.

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

'London Snow', Dr Robert Bridges, Poet Laureate (1844 – 1930), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

It lay in the depth of its uncompacted lightness,  
 The clouds blew off from a high & frosty heaven;  
 And all woke earlier for the unaccustomed brightness  
 Of the winter dawning, the strange unheavenly glare:  
 The eye marvelled – marvelled at the dazzling whiteness;  
 The ear hearkened to the stillness of the solemn air;  
 No sound of wheel rumbling nor of foot falling,  
 And the busy morning cries came thin & spare.  
 Then boys I heard, as they went to school, calling,  
 They gathered up the crystal manna to freeze  
 Their tongues with tasting, their hands with snowballing;  
 Or rioted in a drift, plunging up to the knees;  
 Or peering up from under the white-mossed wonder,  
 O look at the trees! they cried, O look at the trees!  
 With lessened load a few carts creak and blunder,  
 Following along the white deserted way,  
 A country company long dispersed asunder:  
 When now already the sun, in pale display  
 Standing by PAUL'S high dome, spread forth below  
 His sparkling beams, and awoke the stir of the day.  
 For now doors open, and war is waged with the snow;  
 And trains of sombre men, past tale of number,  
 Tread long brown paths, as toward their toil they go:  
 But even for them awhile no cares encumber  
 Their minds diverted; the daily word is unspoken,  
 The daily thoughts of labour & sorrow slumber  
 At the sight of the beauty that greets them, for the charm they have  
 broken.

### III.2.

O rose, thou art sick.  
 The invisible worm  
 That flies in the night  
 In the howling storm

Has found out thy bed  
 Of crimson joy:  
 And his dark secret love  
 Does thy life destroy.

---

'The Sick Rose', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

III.3. The great mistake is that of looking upon men as virtuous.

#### IV.

##### IV.1.

To him who in the love of nature holds  
 Communion with her visible forms, she speaks  
 A various language; for his gayer hours  
 She has a voice of gladness, and a smile  
 And eloquence of beauty, and she glides  
 Into his darker musings, with a mild  
 And healing sympathy, that steals away  
 Their sharpness, ere he is aware. When thoughts  
 Of the last bitter hour come like a blight  
 Over thy spirit, and sad images  
 Of the stern agony, and shroud, and pall,  
 And breathless darkness, and the narrow house,  
 Make thee to shudder, and grow sick at heart;  
 Go forth, under the open sky, and list  
 To nature's teachings, while from all around –  
 Earth & her waters, & the depths of air –  
 Comes a still voice –

Yet a few days, and thee  
 The all-beholding sun shall see no more  
 In all his course; nor yet in the cold ground,  
 Where thy pale form was laid, with many tears,  
 Nor in the embrace of ocean, shall exist  
 Thy image. Earth, that nourished thee, shall claim  
 Thy growth, to be resolved to earth again,  
 And, lost each human trace, surrendering up  
 Thine individual being, shalt thou go  
 To mix for ever with the elements,  
 To be a brother to the insensible rock  
 And to the sluggish clod, which the rude swain  
 Turns with his share, and treads upon. The oak  
 Shall send his roots abroad, and pierce thy mould.  
 Yet not to thine eternal resting-place

---

Henry St John, 1st Viscount Bolingbroke (1678 – 1751), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Thanatopsis', William Bryant (1794 – 1878), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. A *thanatopsis* is a meditation on death. ¶52. Barca is the name of an ancient city in Libya, hence 'barcan wilderness'. ¶54. Oregon was the original name of the Columbia river in the State of Oregon.

Shalt thou retire alone, nor couldst thou wish  
Couch more magnificent. Thou shalt lie down  
With patriarchs of the infant world, with kings,  
The powerful of the earth, the wise, the good,  
Fair forms, & hoary seers of ages past,  
All in one mighty sepulchre. The hills  
Rock-ribbed & ancient as the sun, the vales  
Stretching in pensive quietness between;  
The venerable woods – rivers that move  
In majesty, and the complaining brooks  
That make the meadows green; and, poured round all,  
Old ocean's grey & melancholy waste,  
Are but the solemn decorations all  
Of the great tomb of man. The golden sun,  
The planets, all the infinite host of heaven,  
Are shining on the sad abodes of death,  
Through the still lapse of ages. All that tread  
The globe are but a handful to the tribes  
That slumber in its bosom. Take the wings  
Of morning, pierce the barcan wilderness,  
Or lose thyself in the continuous woods  
Where rolls the OREGON, and hears no sound,  
Save his own dashings – yet the dead are there:  
And 1,000,000s in those solitudes, since first  
The flight of years began, have laid them down  
In their last sleep—the dead reign there alone.  
So shalt thou rest, and what if thou withdraw  
In silence from the living, and no friend  
Take note of thy departure? All that breathe  
Will share thy destiny. The gay will laugh  
When thou art gone, the solemn brood of care  
Plod on, and each one as before will chase  
His favorite phantom; yet all these shall leave  
Their mirth & their employments, and shall come  
And make their bed with thee. As the long train  
Of ages glide away, the sons of men,  
The youth in life's green spring, and he who goes  
In the full strength of years, matron & maid,  
The speechless babe, and the grey-headed man  
Shall one by one be gathered to thy side,  
By those, who in their turn shall follow them.  
So live, that when thy summons comes to join

The innumerable caravan, which moves  
 To that mysterious realm, where each shall take  
 His chamber in the silent halls of death,  
 Thou go not, like the quarry-slave at night,  
 Scourged to his dungeon, but, sustained & soothed  
 By an unfaltering trust, approach thy grave,  
 Like one who wraps the drapery of his couch  
 About him, and lies down to pleasant dreams.

#### IV.2.

Winter uncovers distances, I find;  
 And so the cold and so the wintry mind  
 Takes leaves away, till there is left behind  
 A wide cold world. And so the heart grows blind  
 To the earth's green motions lying warm below  
 Field upon field, field upon field, of snow.

IV.3. Truth lies within a little and certain compass, but error is immense.

### V.

#### V.1.

The cypress curtain of the night is spread,  
 And over all a silent dew is cast.  
 The weaker cares by sleep are conquerèd.  
 But I alone with hideous grief aghast,  
 In spite of *Morpheus*' charms a watch do keep  
 Over mine eyes to banish careless sleep.

Yet oft my trembling eyes through faintness close;  
 And then the map of hell before me stands,  
 Which ghosts do see and I am one of those  
 Ordained to pine in sorrow's endless bands,  
 Since from my wretched soul all hopes are reft,  
 And now no cause of life to me is left.

Grief, sieze my soul for that will still endure  
 When my crazed body is consumed and gone;  
 Bear it to thy black den; there keep it sure,

---

Witter Bynner (1881 – 1968), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Henry St John, 1st Viscount Bolingbroke (1678 – 1751), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Dr Thomas Campion (1567 – 1620), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*.

Where thou 10,000 souls dost tire upon:  
 Yet all do not afford such food to thee  
 All this poor one, the worser part of me.

**V.2.**

As a white candle  
     In a holy place,  
 So is the beauty  
     Of an aged face.

As the spent radiance  
     Of the winter sun,  
 So is a woman  
     With her travail done,

Her brood gone from her,  
     And her thoughts as still  
 As the waters  
     Under a ruined mill.

**V.3.** Everybody favours free speech in the slack moments when no axes  
 are being ground.

**VI.**

**VI.1.**

When midnight comes a host of dogs & men  
 Go out and track the badger to his den,  
 And put a sack within the hole, and lie  
 Till the old grunting badger passes by.  
 He comes and hears. They let the strongest loose.  
 The old fox hears the noise and drops the goose.  
 The poacher shoots and hurries from the cry,  
 And the old hare half wounded buzzes by.  
 They get a forked stick to bear him down  
 And clap the dogs and take him to the town,  
 And bait him all the day with many dogs,  
 And laugh & shout & fright the scampering hogs.  
 He runs along and bites at all he meets:  
 They shout & hollo down the noisy streets.

---

‘The Old Woman’, Joseph Campbell (1879 – 1944), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

Heywood Broun (1888 – 1939), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

‘Badger’, John Clare (1793 – 1864), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

He turns about to face the loud uproar  
 And drives the rebels to their very door.  
 The frequent stone is hurled where'er they go;  
 When badgers fight, then everyone's a foe.  
 The dogs are clapped and urged to join the fray;  
 The badger turns and drives them all away.  
 Though scarcely half as big, demure & small,  
 He fights with dogs for bones and beats them all.  
 The heavy mastiff, savage in the fray,  
 Lies down and licks his feet and turns away.  
 The bulldog knows his match and waxes cold,  
 The badger grins and never leaves his hold.  
 He drives the crowd and follows at their heels  
 And bites them through; the drunkard swears & reels.

The frightened women take the boys away,  
 The blackguard laughs and hurries on the fray.  
 He tries to reach the woods, an awkward race,  
 But sticks & cudgels quickly stop the chase.  
 He turns againn and drives the noisy crowd  
 And beats the many dogs in noises loud.  
 He drives away and beats them every one,  
 And then they loose them all and set them on.  
 He falls as dead and kicked by boys & men,  
 Then starts and grins and drives the crowd again;  
 Till kicked & torn & beaten out he lies  
 And leaves his hold and cackles, groans, & dies.

## VI.2.

To these, whom death again did wed,  
 This grave's their second marriage bed.  
 For though the hand of fate could force  
 'Twixt soul & body a divorce,  
 It could not sunder man & wife,  
 Because they both lived but one life.  
 Peace, good reader. Do not weep.  
 Peace, the lovers are asleep.  
 They, sweet turtles, folded lie  
 In the last knot that love could tie.

---

R 'Upon a Young Married Couple Dead and Buryed Together', The Rev Canon Richard Crashaw (1613 – 1649), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. There is another, somewhat longer, version of this poem.



VI.3. Posterity is as likely to be wrong as anybody else.

## VII.

### VII.1.

Just when our drawing-rooms begin to blaze  
 With lights by clear reflection multiplied  
 From many a mirror (in which he of GATH,  
*Goliath*, might have seen his giant bulk  
 Whole without stooping, tow'ring crest & all),  
 My pleasures too begin. But me perhaps  
 The glowing hearth may satisfy awhile  
 With faint illumination that uplifts  
 The shadow to the ceiling, there by fits  
 Dancing uncouthly to the quiv'ring flame.  
 Not undelightful is an hour to me  
 So spent in parlour twilight; such a gloom  
 Suits well the thoughtful or unthinking mind,  
 The mind contemplative, with some new theme  
 Pregnant, or indisposed alike to all.  
 Laugh ye, who boast your more mercurial pow'rs  
 That never feel a stupor, know no pause  
 Nor need one. I am conscious, and confess  
 Fearless, a soul that does not always think.  
 Me oft has fancy ludicrous & wild  
 Soothed with a waking dream of houses, tow'rs,  
 Trees, churches, & strange visages expressed  
 In the red cinders, while with poring eye  
 I gazed, myself creating what I saw.  
 Nor less amused have I quiescent watched  
 The sooty films that play upon the bars –  
 Pendulous, & foreboding in the view  
 Of superstition, prophesying still,  
 Though still deceived, some stranger's near approach.  
 'Tis thus the understanding takes repose  
 In indolent vacuity of thought,  
 And sleeps & is refreshed. Meanwhile the face  
 Conceals the mood lethargic with a mask  
 Of deep deliberation, as the man  
 Were tasked to his full strength, absorbed & lost.

---

Heywood Broun (1888 – 1939), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

William Cowper (1731 – 1800), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is an excerpt from a long poem, *The Task*, a series of urbane reflections.

Thus oft reclined at ease, I lose an hour  
 At evening, till at length the freezing blast  
 That sweeps the bolted shutter, summons home  
 The recollected powers and, snapping short  
 The glassy threads with which the fancy weaves  
 Her brittle toys, restores me to myself.  
 How calm is my recess, and how the frost  
 Raging abroad, and the rough wind, endear  
 The silence & the warmth enjoyed within.  
 I saw the woods & fields at close of day,  
 A variegated show; the meadows green  
 Though faded, and the lands where lately waved  
 The golden harvest, of a mellow brown,  
 Upturned so lately by the forceful share.  
 I saw far off the weedy fallows smile  
 With verdure not unprofitable, grazed  
 By flocks fast-feeding & selecting each  
 His fav'rite herb; while all the leafless groves  
 That skirt th'horizon wore a sable hue  
 Scarce noticed in the kindred dusk of eve.  
 Tomorrow brings a change, a total change  
 Which even now – though silently performed  
 And slowly, and by most unfelt – the face  
 Of universal nature undergoes.  
 Fast falls a fleecy show'r. The downy flakes  
 Descending, and with never-ceasing lapse  
 Softly alighting upon all below,  
 Assimilate all objects. Earth receives  
 Gladly the thick'ning mantle, & the green  
 And tender blade that feared the chilling blast  
 Escapes unhurt beneath so warm a veil.

## VII.2.

Beauty, sweet love, is like the morning dew;  
 Whose short refresh upon the tender green,  
 Cheers for a time, but till the sun doth show:  
 And straight 'tis gone, as it had never been.  
 Soon doth it fade, that makes the fairest flourish;  
 Short is the glory of the blushing rose:  
 The hue which thou so carefully dost nourish;

---

R Samuel Daniel (1562 – 1619), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. This is one of Daniel's sonnets "To Delia".

Yet which, at length, thou must be forced to lose.  
 When thou, surcharged with burden of thy years,  
     Shalt bend thy wrinkles homeward to the earth;  
 When time hath made a passport for thy fears,  
     Dated in age, the Kalends of our death:  
 But, ah, no more. This hath been often told;  
 And women grieve to think they must be old.

**VII.3.** In you come with your cold music till I creep through every nerve.

## VIII.

### VIII.1.

Out walking in the frozen swamp one grey day,  
 I paused and said, 'I will turn back from here.  
 No, I will go on farther – and we shall see.'  
 The hard snow held me, save where now & then  
 One foot went through. The view was all in lines  
 Straight up & down of tall slim trees  
 Too much alike to mark or name a place by  
 So as to say for certain I was here  
 Or somewhere else: I was just far from home.  
 A small bird flew before me. He was careful  
 To put a tree between us when he lighted,  
 And say no word to tell me who he was  
 Who was so foolish as to think what he thought.  
 He thought that I was after him for a feather –  
 The white one in his tail; like one who takes  
 Everything said as personal to himself.  
 One flight out sideways would have undeceived him.  
 And then there was a pile of wood for which  
 I forgot him and let his little fear  
 Carry him off the way I might have gone,  
 Without so much as wishing him good night.  
 He went behind it to make his last stand.  
 It was a cord of maple, cut & split  
 And piled – and measured, four by four by eight.  
 And not another like it could I see.  
 No runner tracks in this year's snow looped near it.  
 And it was older sure than this year's cutting,

---

Robert Browning (1828 – 1889), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a line from "A Toccata of Galuppi's".

'The Wood-Pile', Robert Frost, Poet Laureate of Vermont (1874 – 1963), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Or even last year's or the year's before.  
 The wood was grey & the bark warping off it  
 And the pile somewhat sunken. Clematis  
 Had wound strings round & round it like a bundle.  
 What held it though on one side was a tree  
 Still growing, and on one a stake & prop,  
 These latter about to fall. I thought that only  
 Someone who lived in turning to fresh tasks  
 Could so forget his handiwork on which  
 He spent himself, the labor of his axe,  
 And leave it there far from a useful fireplace  
 To warm the frozen swamp as best it could  
 With the slow smokeless burning of decay.

### VIII.2.

Your beauty, ripe & calm & fresh  
 As eastern summers are,  
 Must now, forsaking time and flesh,  
 Add light to some small star.

'Whilst she yet lives, were stars decayed,  
 Their light by hers relief might find;  
 But death will lead her to a shade  
 Where love is cold and beauty blind.'

Lovers, whose priests all poets are,  
 Think every mistress, when she dies,  
 Is changed at least into a star:  
 And who dares doubt the poets wise?

'But ask not bodies doomed to die  
 To what abode they go;  
 Since knowledge is but sorrow's spy,  
 It is not safe to know.'

### VIII.3. I have not loved the world, nor the world me.

---

℞ 'The Philosopher and the Lover; to a Mistress dying', Sir William Davenant (1606 – 1668), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a line from the third canto of *Childe Harold's Pilgrimage*.

## IX.

## IX.1.

'Twas going to snow. 'Twas snowing. Curse his luck.  
 And 15 mile to travel. Here was he  
 With nothing but an empty pipe to suck,  
 And ½ a flask of rum – but that would be  
 More welcome later on. He'd had a drink  
 Before he left, and that would keep him warm  
 A tidy while; and 'twould be good to think  
 He'd something to fall back on if the storm  
 Should come to much. You never knew with snow.  
 A sup of rain he didn't mind at all,  
 But snow was different with so far to go –  
 Full 15 mile, and not a house of call.  
 Ay, snow was quite another story, quite –  
 Snow on the fell-tops with a north-east wind  
 Behind it, blowing steadily with a bite  
 That made you feel that you were stark & skinned.  
 And those poor beasts – and they just off the boat  
 A day or so, and hardly used to land –  
 Still dizzy with the sea, their wits afloat.  
 When they first reached the dock they scarce could stand,  
 They'd been so joggled. It's gey bad to cross,  
 After a long day's jolting in the train,  
 Thon Irish Channel, always pitch & toss –  
 And, heads or tails, not much for them to gain.  
 And then the market, and the throng & noise  
 Of yapping dogs; and they stung mad with fear,  
 Welled with switches by those senseless boys –  
 He'd like to dust their jackets. But 'twas queer,  
 A beast's life, when you came to think of it,  
 From start to finish – queerer, ay, a lot  
 Than any man's, and chancier a good bit.  
 With his ash-sapling at their heels they'd got  
 To travel before night those 15 miles  
 Of hard fell road against the driving snow,  
 Half-blinded, on & on. He thought at whiles  
 'Twas just as well for them they couldn't know...  
 Though, as for that, 'twas little that he knew

---

'The Drove-Road', Wilfrid Gibson (1878 – 1962), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. ¶23. The term 'Irish Channel' is an archaic name for the North Channel which connects the Irish Sea with the Atlantic.

Himself what was in store for him. He took  
Things as they came: 'twas all a man could do;  
And he'd kept going somehow by hook or crook.  
And here he was, with 15 mile of fell,  
And snow and... God, but it was blowing stiff.  
And no tobacco. Blessed if he could tell  
Where he had lost it – but for ½ a whiff  
He'd swop the very jacket off his back –  
Not that he'd miss the cobweb of old shreds  
That held the holes together. Thon cheap-jack  
Who'd sold it him had said it was Lord *Ted's*,  
And london-cut: but *Teddy* had grown fat  
Since he'd been made an alderman... His bid?  
And did the gentleman not want a hat  
To go with it, a topper? If he did,  
Here was the very... Hell, but it was cold,  
And driving dark it was – nigh dark as night.  
He'd almost think he must be getting old  
To feel the wind so. And long out of sight  
The beasts had trotted. Well, what odds. The way  
Ran straight for 10 miles on, and they'd go straight:  
They'd never heed a by-road. Many a day  
He'd had to trudge on, trusting them to fate,  
And always found them safe. They scamper fast,  
But in the end a man could walk them down:  
They're showy trotters, but they cannot last:  
He'd race the fastest beast for half-a-crown  
On a day's journey. Beasts were never made  
For steady travelling – drive them 20 mile  
And they were done; while he was not afraid  
To travel twice that distance with a smile.  
But not a day like this. He'd never felt  
A wind with such an edge. 'Twas like the blade  
Of the rasper in the pocket of his belt  
He kept for easy shaving. In his trade  
You'd oft to make your toilet under a dyke –  
And he was always one for a clean chin,  
And carried soap. He'd never felt the like –  
That wind, it cut clean through you to the skin.  
He might be mother-naked, walking bare,  
For all the use his clothes were, with the snow  
Half blinding him and clagging to his hair

And trickling down his spine. He'd like to know  
What was the sense of pegging steadily,  
Chilled to the marrow, after a daft herd  
Of draggled beasts he couldn't even see.  
But that was him all over – just a word,  
A nod, a wink, the price of  $\frac{1}{2}$  &  $\frac{1}{2}$ ,  
And he'd be setting out for God-knows-where  
With no more notion than a yearling calf  
Where he would find himself when he got there.  
And he'd been travelling hard on 60 year  
The same old road, the same old giddy gait;  
And he'd be walking, for a pint of beer,  
Into his coffin one day, soon or late –  
But not with such a tempest in his teeth,  
Half-blinded and  $\frac{1}{2}$  dothered, that he hoped.  
He'd met a sight of weather on the heath,  
But this beat all. 'Twas worse than when he'd groped  
His way that evening down the MALLERSTANG –  
Thon was a blizzard, thon, and he was done  
And almost dropping, when he came a bang  
Against a house – slap-bang, and like to stun.  
Though that just saved his senses: and right there  
He saw a lighted window he'd not seen,  
Although he'd nearly staggered through its glare  
Into a goodwife's kitchen, where she'd been  
Baking hot griddle-cakes upon the peat...  
And he could taste them now, and feel the glow  
Of steady, aching, tingly, drowsy heat  
As he sat there and let the caking snow  
Melt off his boots, staining the sanded floor.  
And that brown jug she took down from the shelf –  
And every time he'd finished fetching more  
And piping, Now reach up and help yourself!  
She was a wonder, thon, the gay old wife –  
But no such luck this journey. Things like that  
Could hardly happen every day of life,  
Or no one would be dying but the fat  
And oily undertakers, starved to death  
For want of custom... Hell, but he would soon  
Be giving them a job... It caught your breath,  
That throttling wind. And it was not yet noon.  
And he'd be travelling through it until dark.

Dark! 'Twas already dark, and might be night  
For all that he could see. And not a spark  
Of comfort for him. Just to strike a light  
And press the kindling shag down in the bowl,  
Keeping the flame well shielded with his hand,  
And puff & puff! He'd give his very soul  
For ½ a pipe. He couldn't understand  
How he had come to lose it. He'd the rum –  
Ay, that was safe enough, but it would keep  
A while: you never knew what chance might come  
In such a storm... If he could only sleep...  
If he could only sleep... That rustling sound  
Of drifting snow, it made him sleepy-like –  
Drowsy & dizzy, dithering round & round...  
If he could only curl up under a dyke  
And sleep & sleep. ... It dazzled him, that white,  
Drifting & drifting round & round & round...  
Just ½ a moment's snooze... He'd be all right.  
It made his head quite dizzy, that dry sound  
Of rustling snow: it made his head go round,  
That rustling in his ears... and drifting, drifting...  
If only he could sleep... He would sleep sound...  
God, he was nearly gone... The storm was lifting;  
And he'd run into something soft & warm –  
Slap into his own beasts, and never knew.  
Huddled they were, bamboozled by the storm –  
And little wonder either when it blew  
A blasted blizzard. Still, they'd got to go:  
They couldn't stand there snoozing until night.  
But they were sniffing something in the snow:  
'Twas that had stopped them, something big & white –  
A bundle – nay, a woman... And she slept –  
But it was death to sleep. He'd nearly dropped  
Asleep himself. 'Twas well that he had kept  
That rum, and lucky that the beasts had stopped.  
Ay, it was well that he had kept the rum:  
He liked his drink, but he had never cared  
For soaking by himself & sitting mum:  
Even the best rum tasted better shared.



## IX.2.

By the sad waters of separation  
 Where we have wandered by divers ways,  
 I have but the shadow & imitation  
 Of the old memorial days.

In music I have no consolation;  
 No roses are pale enough for me;  
 The sound of the waters of separation  
 Surpasseth roses & melody.

No man knoweth our desolation;  
 Memory pales of the old delight;  
 While the sad waters of separation  
 Bear us on to the ultimate night.

IX.3. Of its beauty is the mind diseased.

## X.

## X.1.

*Alice*, dear, what ails you,  
 Dazed & lost & shaken?  
 Has the chill night numbed you?  
 Is it fright you have taken?

‘Mother, I am very well;  
 I was never better.  
 Mother, do not hold me so,  
 Let me write my letter.’

Sweet, my dear, what ails you?  
 ‘No, but I am well.  
 The night was cold & frosty –  
 There’s no more to tell.’

---

‘Exile’, Ernest Dowson (1867 – 1900), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. The Almanacker has excised the third and fourth verses. Dowson dedicated this poem to the Anglo-Irish dramatist and novelist known as Conal Holmes O’Connell O’Riordan, who outlived him by almost a half-century.

George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a line from the fourth canto of *Childe Harold’s Pilgrimage*.

‘A Frosty Night’, Prof Robert Graves (1895 – 1985), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

Ay, the night was frosty,  
 Coldly gaped the moon,  
 Yet the birds seemed twittering  
 Through green boughs of june.

‘Soft & thick the snow lay;  
 Stars danced in the sky –  
 Not all the lambs of may-day  
 Skip so bold & high.’

Your feet were dancing, *Alice*,  
 Seemed to dance on air,  
 You looked a ghost or angel  
 In the star-light there.

Your eyes were frosted star-light;  
 Your heart, fire & snow.  
 Who was it said, I love you?  
 ‘Mother, let me go!’

## X.2.

She tells her love while  $\frac{1}{2}$  asleep,  
 In the dark hours,  
 With  $\frac{1}{2}$ -words whispered low:  
 As earth stirs in her winter sleep  
 And puts out grass & flowers  
 Despite the snow,  
 Despite the falling snow.

X.3. They died to save their country and they only saved the world.

## XI.

### XI.1.

Hereto I come to view a voiceless ghost;  
 Whither, O whither will its whim now draw me?  
 Up the cliff, down, till I’m lonely, lost,  
 And the unseen waters’ ejaculations awe me.  
 Where you will next be there’s no knowing,  
 Facing round about me everywhere,

---

Prof Robert Graves (1895 – 1985), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

Gilbert Chesterton, Knight (1874 – 1936), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
 This is the last line of Chesterton’s poem “English Graves”.

℞ ‘After a Journey’, Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. The ghost in question is that of Hardy’s first wife, Emma.

With your nut-coloured hair,  
And grey eyes, and rose-flush coming & going.

Yes: I have re-entered your olden haunts at last;  
Through the years, through the dead scenes I have tracked you;  
What have you now found to say of our past –  
Scanned across the dark space wherein I have lacked you?  
Summer gave us sweets, but autumn wrought division?  
Things were not lastly as firstly well  
With us twain, you tell?  
But all's closed now, despite time's derision.

I see what you are doing: you are leading me on  
To the spots we knew when we haunted here together,  
The waterfall, above which the mist-bow shone  
At the then fair hour in the then fair weather,  
And the cave just under, with a voice still so hollow  
That it seems to call out to me from forty years ago,  
When you were all aglow,  
And not the thin ghost that I now frailly follow.

Ignorant of what there is flitting here to see,  
The waked birds preen & the seals flop lazily,  
Soon you will have, dear, to vanish from me,  
For the stars close their shutters & the dawn whitens hazily.  
Trust me, I mind not, though life lours,  
The bringing me here; nay, bring me here again.  
I am just the same as when  
Our days were a joy, & our paths through flowers.

## XI.2.

In vain to me the smiling mornings shine,  
And reddening *Phoebus* lifts his golden fire;  
The birds in vain their amorous descant join;  
Or cheerful fields resume their green attire;  
These ears – alas! – for other notes repine,  
A different object do these eyes require;  
My lonely anguish melts no heart but mine;  
And in my breast the imperfect joys expire.  
Yet morning smiles the busy race to cheer,

---

‘On the Death of Mr Richard West’, Prof Thomas Gray (1716 – 1771), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Richard West is an obscure figure, the son of another Richard West, who was briefly Lord Chancellor of Ireland.

And new-born pleasure brings to happier men;  
 The fields to all their wonted tribute bear;  
 To warm their little loves the birds complain;  
 I fruitless mourn to him that cannot hear,  
 And weep the more because I weep in vain.

**XI.3.** We first crush people to the earth, and then claim the right of trampling on them forever, because they are prostrate.

## XII.

### XII.1.

I remember, I remember  
 The house where I was born,  
 The little window where the sun  
 Came peeping in at morn;  
 He never came a wink too soon,  
 Nor brought too long a day,  
 But now, I often wish the night  
 Had borne my breath away!

I remember, I remember,  
 The roses, red & white,  
 The violets, & the lily-cups,  
 Those flowers made of light!  
 The lilacs where the robin built,  
 And where my brother set  
 The laburnum on his birthday –  
 The tree is living yet!

I remember, I remember,  
 Where I was used to swing,  
 And thought the air must rush as fresh  
 To swallows on the wing;  
 My spirit flew in feathers then,  
 That is so heavy now,  
 And summer pools could hardly cool  
 The fever on my brow!

I remember, I remember,  
 The fir trees dark & high;

---

Mrs Lydia Child (1802 – 1880), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Thomas Hood (1799 – 1845), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. Prof Philip Larkin's own "I Remember, I Remember" is a sour response Hood's poem.

I used to think their slender tops  
 Were close against the sky:  
 It was a childish ignorance,  
 But now 'tis little joy  
 To know I'm farther off from heav'n  
 Than when I was a boy.

## XII.2.

These market-dames, mid-aged, with lips thin-drawn,  
 And tissues sere,  
 Are they the ones we loved in years ago,  
 And courted here?

Are these the muslined pink young things to whom  
 We vowed & swore  
 In nooks on summer sundays by the FROOM,  
 Or BUDMOUTH shore?

Do they remember those gay tunes we trod  
 Clasped on the green;  
 Aye; trod till moonlight set on the beaten sod  
 A satin sheen?

They must forget, forget. They cannot know  
 What once they were,  
 Or memory would transfigure them, and show  
 Them always fair.

XII.3. No crime's so great as daring to excel.

## XIII.

### XIII.1.

St *Agnes'* Eve – ah bitter chill it was!  
 The owl, for all his feathers, was a-cold;  
 The hare limped, trembling through the frozen grass,  
 And silent was the flock in woolly fold:  
 Numb were the beadsman's fingers, while he told  
 His rosary, and while his frosted breath,

---

'Former Beauties', Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. ¶7. 'Froom' = the river Frome.

The Rev Charles Churchill (1732 – 1764), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a line from Churchill's "Epistle to William Hogarth".

'The Eve of St Agnes', John Keats (1795 – 1821), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Like pious incense from a censer old,  
 Seemed taking flight for heaven, without a death,  
 Past the sweet Virgin's picture, while his prayer he saith.

His prayer he saith, this patient, holy man;  
 Then takes his lamp, and riseth from his knees,  
 And back returneth, meagre, barefoot, wan,  
 Along the chapel aisle by slow degrees:  
 The sculptured dead, on each side, seem to freeze,  
 Emprisoned in black, purgatorial rails:  
 Knights, ladies, praying in dumb orat'ries,  
 He passeth by; and his weak spirit fails  
 To think how they may ache in icy hoods & mails.

Northward he turneth through a little door,  
 And scarce three steps, ere music's golden tongue  
 Flattered to tears this agèd man & poor;  
 But no – already had his deathbell rung;  
 The joys of all his life were said & sung:  
 His was harsh penance on St *Agnes'* Eve:  
 Another way he went, and soon among  
 Rough ashes sat he for his soul's reprieve,  
 And all night kept awake, for sinners' sake to grieve.

That ancient beadsman heard the prelude soft;  
 And so it chanced, for many a door was wide,  
 From hurry to & fro. Soon, up aloft,  
 The silver, snarling trumpets 'gan to chide:  
 The level chambers, ready with their pride,  
 Were glowing to receive a 1000 guests:  
 The carvèd angels, ever eager-eyed,  
 Star, where upon their heads the cornice rests,  
 With hair blown back, and wings put cross-wise on their breasts.

At length burst in the argent revelry,  
 With plume, tiara, & all rich array,  
 Numerous as shadows haunting faerily  
 The brain, new-stuffed, in youth, with triumphs gay  
 Of old romance. These let us wish away,  
 And turn, sole-thoughted, to one lady there,  
 Whose heart had brooded, all that wintry day,  
 On love, and winged St *Agnes'* saintly care,  
 As she had heard old dames full many times declare.

They told her how, upon St *Agnes*' Eve,  
 Young virgins might have visions of delight,  
 And soft adorings from their loves receive  
 Upon the honeyed middle of the night,  
 If ceremonies due they did aright;  
 As, supperless to bed they must retire,  
 And couch supine their beauties, lily white;  
 Nor look behind, nor sideways, but require  
 Of heaven with upward eyes for all that they desire.

Full of this whim was thoughtful *Madeline*:  
 The music, yearning like a God in pain,  
 She scarcely heard: her maiden eyes divine,  
 Fixed on the floor, saw many a sweeping train  
 Pass by – she heeded not at all: in vain  
 Came many a tiptoe, amorous cavalier,  
 And back retired; not cooled by high disdain,  
 But she saw not: her heart was elsewhere:  
 She sighed for *Agnes*' dreams, the sweetest of the year.

She danced along with vague, regardless eyes,  
 Anxious her lips, her breathing quick & short:  
 The hallowed hour was near at hand: she sighs  
 Amid the timbrels, and the thronged resort  
 Of whisperers in anger, or in sport;  
 'Mid looks of love, defiance, hate, & scorn,  
 Hoodwinked with faery fancy; all amorn,  
 Save to St *Agnes* & her lambs unshorn,  
 And all the bliss to be before tomorrow morn.

So, purposing each moment to retire,  
 She lingered still. Meantime, across the moors,  
 Had come young *Porphyro*, with heart on fire  
 For *Madeline*. Beside the portal doors,  
 Buttressed from moonlight, stands he, and implores  
 All saints to give him sight of *Madeline*,  
 But for one moment in the tedious hours,  
 That he might gaze & worship all unseen;  
 Perchance speak, kneel, touch, kiss – in sooth such things have been.

He ventures in: let no buzzed whisper tell:  
 All eyes be muffled, or a 100 swords  
 Will storm his heart, love's fev'rous citadel:

For him, those chambers held barbarian hordes,  
 Hyena foemen, & hot-blooded lords,  
 Whose very dogs would execrations howl  
 Against his lineage: not one breast affords  
 Him any mercy, in that mansion foul,  
 Save one old beldame, weak in body & in soul.

Ah – happy chance! – the agèd creature came,  
 Shuffling along with ivory-headed wand,  
 To where he stood, hid from the torch's flame,  
 Behind a broad half-pillar, far beyond  
 The sound of merriment & chorus bland:  
 He startled her; but soon she knew his face,  
 And grasped his fingers in her palsied hand,  
 Saying, 'Mercy, *Porphyro*! hie thee from this place;  
 They are all here to-night, the whole blood-thirsty race!

'Get hence! Get hence! There's dwarfish *Hildebrand*;  
 He had a fever late, and in the fit  
 He cursèd thee & thine, both house & land:  
 Then there's that old Lord Maurice, not a whit  
 More tame for his gray hairs – Alas me! Flit!  
 Flit like a ghost away.' 'Ah, gossip dear,  
 We're safe enough; here in this armchair sit,  
 And tell me how' – 'Good saints! Not here, not here;  
 Follow me, child, or else these stones will be thy bier.'

He followed through a lowly archèd way,  
 Brushing the cobwebs with his lofty plume,  
 And as she muttered, 'Well-a—well-a-day!'  
 He found him in a little moonlight room,  
 Pale, latticed, chill, & silent as a tomb.  
 'Now tell me where is *Madeline*,' said he,  
 'O tell me, *Angela*, by the holy loom  
 Which none but secret sisterhood may see,  
 When they St *Agnes*' wool are weaving piously.'

'St *Agnes*! Ah! It is St *Agnes*' Eve –  
 Yet men will murder upon holy days:  
 Thou must hold water in a witch's sieve,  
 And be liege-lord of all the elves & fays,  
 To venture so: it fills me with amaze  
 To see thee, *Porphyro*! St *Agnes*' Eve!



God's help! my lady fair the conjuror plays  
 This very night: good angels her deceive!  
 But let me laugh awhile, I've mickle time to grieve.'

Feebly she laugheth in the languid moon,  
 While *Porphyro* upon her face doth look,  
 Like puzzled urchin on an agèd crone  
 Who keepeth closed a wond'rous riddle-book,  
 As spectacted she sits in chimney nook.  
 But soon his eyes grew brilliant, when she told  
 His lady's purpose; and he scarce could brook  
 Tears, at the thought of those enchantments cold,  
 And *Madeline* asleep in lap of legends old.

Sudden a thought came like a full-blown rose,  
 Flushing his brow, and in his painèd heart  
 Made purple riot: then doth he propose  
 A stratagem, that makes the beldame start:  
 'A cruel man & impious thou art:  
 Sweet lady, let her pray, and sleep, & dream  
 Alone with her good angels, far apart  
 From wicked men like thee. Go! Go! I deem  
 Thou canst not surely be the same that thou didst seem.'

'I will not harm her, by all saints I swear,'  
 Quoth *Porphyro*: 'O may I ne'er find grace  
 When my weak voice shall whisper its last prayer,  
 If one of her soft ringlets I displace,  
 Or look with ruffian passion in her face:  
 Good *Angela*, believe me by these tears;  
 Or I will, even in a moment's space,  
 Awake, with horrid shout, my foemen's ears,  
 And beard them, though they be more fanged than wolves & bears.'

'Ah! why wilt thou affright a feeble soul?  
 A poor, weak, palsy-stricken, churchyard thing,  
 Whose passing-bell may ere the midnight toll;  
 Whose prayers for thee, each morn & evening,  
 Were never missed.' Thus plaining, doth she bring  
 A gentler speech from burning *Porphyro*;  
 So woful, and of such deep sorrowing,  
 That *Angela* gives promise she will do  
 Whatever he shall wish, betide her weal or woe.

Which was, to lead him, in close secrecy,  
 Even to *Madeline's* chamber, and there hide  
 Him in a closet, of such privacy  
 That he might see her beauty unespied,  
 And win perhaps that night a peerless bride,  
 While legioned faeries paced the coverlet,  
 And pale enchantment held her sleepy-eyed.  
 Never on such a night have lovers met,  
 Since *Merlin* paid his demon all the monstrous debt.

'It shall be as thou wishest,' said the dame:  
 'All cates & dainties shall be storèd there  
 Quickly on this feast-night: by the tambour frame  
 Her own lute thou wilt see: no time to spare,  
 For I am slow & feeble, and scarce dare  
 On such a catering trust my dizzy head.  
 Wait here, my child, with patience; kneel in prayer  
 The while: Ah! thou must needs the lady wed,  
 Or may I never leave my grave among the dead.'

So saying, she hobbled off with busy fear.  
 The lover's endless minutes slowly passed;  
 The dame returned, and whispered in his ear  
 To follow her; with agèd eyes aghast  
 From fright of dim espial. Safe at last,  
 Through many a dusky gallery, they gain  
 The maiden's chamber, silken, hushed, & chaste;  
 Where *Porphyro* took covert, pleased amain.  
 His poor guide hurried back with agues in her brain.

Her falt'ring hand upon the balustrade,  
 Old *Angela* was feeling for the stair,  
 When *Madeline*, St *Agnes'* charmèd maid,  
 Rose, like a missioned spirit, unaware:  
 With silver taper's light, & pious care,  
 She turned, and down the agèd gossip led  
 To a safe level matting. Now prepare,  
 Young *Porphyro*, for gazing on that bed;  
 She comes, she comes again, like ring-dove frayed & fled.

Out went the taper as she hurried in;  
 Its little smoke, in pallid moonshine, died:  
 She closed the door, she panted, all akin

To spirits of the air, & visions wide:  
 No uttered syllable, or, woe betide!  
 But to her heart, her heart was voluble,  
 Paining with eloquence her balmy side;  
 As though a tongueless nightingale should swell  
 Her throat in vain, and die, heart-stifled, in her dell.

A casement high & triple-arched there was,  
 All garlanded with carven imag'ries  
 Of fruits, & flowers, & bunches of knot-grass,  
 And diamonded with panes of quaint device,  
 Innumerable of stains & splendid dyes,  
 As are the tiger-moth's deep-damasked wings;  
 And in the midst, 'mong 1000 heraldries,  
 And twilight saints, & dim emblazonings,  
 A shielded scutcheon blushed with blood of queens & kings.

Full on this casement shone the wintry moon,  
 And threw warm gules on *Madeline's* fair breast,  
 As down she knelt for heaven's grace & boon;  
 Rose-bloom fell on her hands, together prest,  
 And on her silver cross soft amethyst,  
 And on her hair a glory, like a saint:  
 She seemed a splendid angel, newly dressed,  
 Save wings, for heaven: *Porphyro* grew faint:  
 She knelt, so pure a thing, so free from mortal taint.

Anon his heart revives: her vespers done,  
 Of all its wreathèd pearls her hair she frees;  
 Uncasps her warmèd jewels one by one;  
 Loosens her fragrant boddice; by degrees  
 Her rich attire creeps rustling to her knees:  
 Half-hidden, like a mermaid in sea-weed,  
 Pensive awhile she dreams awake, and sees,  
 In fancy, fair St Agnes in her bed,  
 But dares not look behind, or all the charm is fled.

Soon, trembling in her soft & chilly nest,  
 In sort of wakeful swoon, perplexed she lay,  
 Until the poppièd warmth of sleep oppressed  
 Her soothèd limbs, & soul fatigued away;  
 Flown, like a thought, until the morrow-day;  
 Blissfully havened both from joy & pain;

Clasped like a missal where swart paynims pray;  
 Blinded alike from sunshine & from rain,  
 As though a rose should shut, and be a bud again.

Stol'n to this paradise, and so entranced,  
*Porphyro* gazed upon her empty dress,  
 And listened to her breathing, if it chanced  
 To wake into a slumberous tenderness;  
 Which when he heard, that minute did he bless,  
 And breathed himself: then from the closet crept,  
 Noiseless as fear in a wide wilderness,  
 And over the hushed carpet, silent, stept,  
 And 'tween the curtains peeped, where – lo! – how fast she slept.

Then by the bed-side, where the faded moon  
 Made a dim, silver twilight, soft he set  
 A table, and, ½ anguished, threw thereon  
 A cloth of woven crimson, gold, & jet:  
 O for some drowsy morphean amulet!  
 The boisterous, midnight, festive clarion,  
 The kettle-drum, & far-heard clarinet,  
 Affray his ears, though but in dying tone:  
 The hall-door shuts again, and all the noise is gone.

And still she slept an azure-lidded sleep,  
 In blanchèd linen, smooth, & lavendered,  
 While he forth from the closet brought a heap  
 Of candied apple, quince, & plum, & gourd;  
 With jellies soother than the creamy curd,  
 And lucent syrups, tinct with cinnamon;  
 Manna & dates, in argosy transferred  
 From FEZ; & spicèd dainties, every one,  
 From silken SAMARCAND to cedared Lebanon.

These delicacies he heaped with glowing hand  
 On golden dishes & in baskets bright  
 Of wreathèd silver: sumptuous they stand  
 In the retirèd quiet of the night,  
 Filling the chilly room with perfume light.  
 'And now, my love, my seraph fair, awake!  
 Thou art my heaven, and I thine eremite:  
 Open thine eyes, for meek St *Agnes'* sake,  
 Or I shall drowse beside thee, so my soul doth ache.'

Thus whispering, his warm, unnervèd arm  
 Sank in her pillow. Shaded was her dream  
 By the dusk curtains:—'twas a midnight charm  
 Impossible to melt as icèd stream:  
 The lustrous salvers in the moonlight gleam;  
 Broad golden fringe upon the carpet lies:  
 It seemed he never, never could redeem  
 From such a stedfast spell his lady's eyes;  
 So mused awhile, entailed in woofèd phantasies.

Awakening up, he took her hollow lute,  
 Tumultuous, and, in chords that tenderest be,  
 He played an ancient ditty, long since mute,  
 In Provence called, "La belle dame sans mercy":  
 Close to her ear touching the melody;  
 Wherewith disturbed, she uttered a soft moan:  
 He ceased – she panted quick – and suddenly  
 Her blue affrayèd eyes wide open shone:  
 Upon his knees he sank, pale as smooth-sculptured stone.

Her eyes were open, but she still beheld,  
 Now wide awake, the vision of her sleep:  
 There was a painful change, that nigh expelled  
 The blisses of her dream so pure & deep  
 At which fair *Madeline* began to weep,  
 And moan forth witless words with many a sigh;  
 While still her gaze on *Porphyro* would keep;  
 Who knelt, with joinèd hands & piteous eye,  
 Fearing to move or speak, she looked so dreamingly.

'Ah, *Porphyro*!' said she, 'But even now  
 Thy voice was at sweet tremble in mine ear,  
 Made tuneable with every sweetest vow;  
 And those sad eyes were spiritual & clear:  
 How changed thou art! how pallid, chill, & drear!  
 Give me that voice again, my *Porphyro*,  
 Those looks immortal, those complainings dear!  
 O leave me not in this eternal woe,  
 For if thy diest, my love, I know not where to go.'

Beyond a mortal man impassioned far  
 At these voluptuous accents, he arose  
 Ethereal, flushed, and like a throbbing star

Seen 'mid the sapphire heaven's deep repose;  
 Into her dream he melted, as the rose  
 Blendeth its odour with the violet –  
 Solution sweet: meantime the frost-wind blows  
 Like love's alarum pattering the sharp sleet  
 Against the window-panes; St *Agnes'* moon hath set.

'Tis dark: quick pattereth the flaw-blown sleet:  
 'This is no dream, my bride, my *Madeline!*'  
 'Tis dark: the icèd gusts still rave & beat:  
 'No dream, Alas! Alas! And woe is mine!  
*Porphyro* will leave me here to fade & pine.  
 Cruel! what traitor could thee hither bring?  
 I curse not, for my heart is lost in thine,  
 Though thou forsakest a deceived thing;  
 A dove forlorn & lost with sick unpruned wing.'

'My *Madeline!* sweet dreamer! lovely bride!  
 Say, may I be for aye thy vassal blest?  
 Thy beauty's shield, heart-shaped & vermeil-dyed?  
 Ah silver shrine, here will I take my rest  
 After so many hours of toil & quest,  
 A famished pilgrim, saved by miracle.  
 Though I have found, I will not rob thy nest  
 Saving of thy sweet self; if thou think'st well  
 To trust, fair *Madeline*, to no rude infidel.

'Hark! 'Tis an elfin-storm from faery land,  
 Of haggard seeming, but a boon indeed:  
 Arise! Arise! the morning is at hand;  
 The bloated wassaillers will never heed:  
 Let us away, my love, with happy speed;  
 There are no ears to hear, or eyes to see,  
 Drowned all in rhenish & the sleepy mead:  
 Awake! Arise, my love, and fearless be,  
 For o'er the southern moors I have a home for thee.'

She hurried at his words, beset with fears,  
 For there were sleeping dragons all around,  
 At glaring watch, perhaps, with ready spears,  
 Down the wide stairs a darkling way they found.  
 In all the house was heard no human sound.  
 A chain-drooped lamp was flickering by each door;

The arras, rich with horseman, hawk, & hound,  
Fluttered in the besieging wind's uproar;  
And the long carpets rose along the gusty floor.

They glide, like phantoms, into the wide hall;  
Like phantoms, to the iron porch, they glide;  
Where lay the porter, in uneasy sprawl,  
With a huge empty flaggon by his side:  
The wakeful bloodhound rose, and shook his hide,  
But his sagacious eye an inmate owns:  
By one, & one, the bolts full easy slide:  
The chains lie silent on the footworn stones;  
The key turns, and the door upon its hinges groans.

And they are gone: ay, ages long ago  
These lovers fled away into the storm.  
That night the baron dreamt of many a woe,  
And all his warrior-guests, with shade & form  
Of witch, & demon, & large coffin-worm,  
Were long be-nightmared. *Angela* the old  
Died palsy-twitched, with meagre face deform;  
The beadsman, after 1000 aves told,  
For aye unsought for slept among his ashes cold.

### XIII.2.

Ensanguining the skies  
How heavily it dies  
    Into the west away;  
Past touch & sight & sound,  
Not further to be found,  
How hopeless under ground  
    Falls the remorseful day.

### XIII.3.

The present is the funeral of the past,  
And man the living sepulchre of life.

---

Prof Alfred Housman (1859 – 1936), Holden and Holden, *Poems that Make Grown Men Cry*.  
John Clare (1793 – 1864), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

## XIV.

## XIV.1.

I saw wherein the shroud did lurk  
 A curious frame of nature's work.  
 A flow'ret crushèd in the bud,  
 A nameless piece of babyhood,  
 Was in a cradle-coffin lying;  
 Extinct, with scarce the sense of dying;  
 So soon to exchange the imprisoning womb  
 For darker closets of the tomb!  
 She did but ope an eye, and put  
 A clear beam forth, then strait up shut  
 For the long dark: ne'er more to see  
 Through glasses of mortality.  
 Riddle of destiny, who can show  
 What thy short visit meant, or know  
 What thy errand here below?  
 Shall we say, that nature blind  
 Checked her hand, & changed her mind,  
 Just when she had exactly wrought  
 A finished pattern without fault?  
 Could she flag, or could she tire,  
 Or lacked she the promethean fire  
 (With her nine moons' long workings sickened)  
 That should thy little limbs have quickened?  
 Limbs so firm, they seemed to assure  
 Life of health, and days mature:  
 Woman's self in miniature!  
 Limbs so fair, they might supply  
 (Themselves now but cold imagery)  
 The sculptor to make beauty by.  
 Or did the stern-eyed fate descry,  
 That babe, or mother, one must die;  
 So in mercy left the stock,  
 And cut the branch; to save the shock  
 Of young years widowed; and the pain,  
 When single state comes back again  
 To the lone man who, 'reft of wife,  
 Thenceforward drags a maimed life?

---

'On an Infant Dying as Soon as Born', Charles Lamb (1775 – 1834), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.



The economy of heaven is dark;  
 And wisest clerks have missed the mark,  
 Why human buds, like this, should fall,  
 More brief than fly ephemeral,  
 That has his day; while shrivelled crones  
 Stiffen with age to stocks & stones;  
 And crabbed use the conscience sears  
 In sinners of an hundred years.  
 Mother's prattle, mother's kiss,  
 Baby fond, thou ne'er wilt miss.  
 Rites, which custom does impose,  
 Silver bells & baby clothes;  
 Coral redder than those lips,  
 Which pale death did late eclipse;  
 Music framed for infants' glee,  
 Whistle never tuned for thee;  
 Though thou want'st not, thou shalt have them,  
 Loving hearts were they which gave them.  
 Let not one be missing; nurse,  
 See them laid upon the hearse  
 Of infant slain by doom perverse.  
 Why should kings & nobles have  
 Pictured trophies to their grave;  
 And we, churls, to thee deny  
 Thy pretty toys with thee to lie,  
 A more harmless vanity?

#### XIV.2.

Others – I am not the first –  
 Have willed more mischief than they durst:  
 If in the breathless night I too  
 Shiver now, 'tis nothing new.

More than I, if truth were told,  
 Have stood and sweated hot & cold,  
 And through their reins in ice & fire  
 Fear contended with desire.

Agued once like me were they,  
 But I like them shall win my way

Lastly to the bed of mould  
Where there's neither heat nor cold.

But from my grave across my brow  
Plays no wind of healing now,  
And fire & ice within me fight  
Beneath the suffocating night.

#### XIV.3.

Heaven has no rage, like love to hatred turned;  
Nor hell a fury, like a woman scorned.

#### XV.

##### XV.1.

Her failing spirits with derisive glee  
And fondness he refreshed: her anxious thoughts  
Followed, and upon *Corythos* they dwelt.  
Often he met her eyes, nor shunned they his.  
For, royal as she was and born of *Zeus*,  
She was compassionate, and bowed her head  
To share her smiles & griefs with those below.  
All in her sight were level, for she stood  
High above all within the sea-girt world.  
At last she questioned *Corythos* what brought  
His early footsteps through such dangerous ways.  
And from abode so peaceable & safe.  
At once he told her why he came: she held  
Her hand to *Corythos*: he stood ashamed  
Not to have hated her: he looked; he sighed.  
He hung upon her words. What gentle words!  
How chaste her countenance.

What open brows  
The brave & beauteous ever have! thought she,  
But even the hardest, when above their heads  
Death is impending, shudder at the sight  
Of barrows on the sands and bones exposed

---

William Congreve (1670 – 1729), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Walter Landor (1775 – 1864), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. These are lines 271-93 of Landor's "Helen and Corythos". The Helen in question is the same woman whose beauty sparked the Trojan War. Corythos – the name is usually Latinised as Corythus, from the Greek Κόρυθος – was the son of Paris and Oenone; his mother sent the young man to Troy, where he and Helen fell in love with each other; Paris, not recognising his own son, killed him out of jealousy.

And whitening in the wind, and cypresses  
From IDA waiting for dissevered friends.

### XV.2.

Here, ever since you went abroad,  
If there be change, no change I see;  
I only walk our wonted road;  
The road is only walked by me.

Yes; I forgot; a change there is;  
Was it of that you bade me tell?  
I catch at times, at times I miss  
The sight, the tone, I know so well.

Only two months since you stood here!  
Two shortest months! Then tell me why  
Voices are harsher than they were,  
And tears are longer ere they dry.

**XV.3.** The terrorist and the policeman both come from the same basket.

### XVI.

#### XVI.1.

This is the forest primeval. The murmuring pines & the hemlocks,  
Bearded with moss, and in garments green, indistinct in the twilight,  
Stand like druids of old, with voices sad & prophetic,  
Stand like harpers hoar, with beards that rest on their bosoms  
Loud from its rocky caverns, the deep-voiced neighboring ocean  
Speaks, and in accents disconsolate answers the wail of the forest.

This is the forest primeval; but where are the hearts that beneath it  
Leaped like the roe, when he hears in the woodland the voice of the hunts-  
man?

Where is the thatch-roofed village, the home of acadian farmers,  
Men whose lives glided on like rivers that water the woodlands,  
Darkened by shadows of earth, but reflecting an image of heaven?  
Waste are those pleasant farms, and the farmers forever departed.  
Scattered like dust & leaves, when the mighty blasts of october  
Seize them, and whirl them aloft, and sprinkle them far o'er the ocean.  
Naught but tradition remains of the beautiful village of GRAND-PRZZ.

---

℞ 'What News', Walter Landor (1775 – 1864), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

Captain Joseph Conrad (1857 – 1924), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ Prof Henry Longfellow (1807 – 1882), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

## XVI.2.

And if tonight my soul may find her peace  
 In sleep, and sink in good oblivion,  
 And in the morning wake like a new-opened flower  
 Then I have been dipped again in God, and new-created.

And if, as weeks go round, in the dark of the moon  
 My spirit darkens and goes out, and soft strange gloom  
 Pervades my movements & my thoughts & words  
 Then I shall know that I am walking still  
 With God, we are close together now the moon's in shadow.

And if, as autumn deepens & darkens  
 I feel the pain of falling leaves, and stems that break in storms  
 And trouble & dissolution & distress  
 And then the softness of deep shadows folding,  
 Folding around my soul & spirit, around my lips  
 So sweet, like a swoon, or more like the drowse of a low, sad song  
 Singing darker than the nightingale, on, on to the solstice  
 And the silence of short days, the silence of the year, the shadow,  
 Then I shall know that my life is moving still  
 With the dark earth, and drenched  
 With the deep oblivion of earth's lapse & renewal.

And if, in the changing phases of man's life,  
 I fall in sickness & in misery;  
 My wrists seem broken and my heart seems dead  
 And strength is gone, and my life  
 Is only the leavings of a life:

And still, among it all, snatches of lovely oblivion, and snatches  
 Of renewal  
 Odd, wintry flowers upon the withered stem, yet new, strange flowers  
 Such as my life has not brought forth before, new blossoms of me

Then I must know that still  
 I am in the hands of the unknown God;  
 He is breaking me down to his own oblivion  
 To send me forth on a new morning, a new man.

---

'Shadows', David Lawrence (1885 – 1930), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. ¶31. Prof Larkin places the 'of' in this line in square brackets, presumably because of its absence in some manuscript from which the text is ultimately drawn.

**XVI.3.** The law has made him equal, but man has not.

## XVII.

### XVII.1.

When thou & I are dead, my dear,  
 The earth above us lain,  
 When we no more in autumn hear  
 The fall of leaves & rain,  
 Or round the snow-enshrouded year  
 The midnight winds complain;

When we no more in green mid-spring,  
 Its sights & sounds may mind;  
 The warm wet leaves set quivering  
 With touches of the wind,  
 The birds at morn, & birds that sing  
 When day is left behind;

When over all the moonlight lies,  
 Intensely bright & still;  
 When some meandering brooklet sighs,  
 At parting from its hill;  
 And scents from voiceless gardens rise,  
 The peaceful air to fill;

When we no more through summer light  
 The deep, dim woods discern,  
 Nor hear the nightingales at night,  
 In vehement singing, yearn  
 To stars & moon, that, dumb & bright,  
 In nightly vigil burn;

When smiles, & hopes, & joys, and fears,  
 And words that lovers say,  
 And sighs of love, & passionate tears  
 Are lost to us for aye,  
 What thing of all our love appears,  
 In cold & coffined clay?

---

Clarence Darrow (1857 – 1938), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. From a speech concerning ‘the Negro race’.

‘Inseparable’, Philip Marston (1850 – 1887), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. Other sources give the first line as ‘When I and thou are dead, my dearest’.

When all their kisses, sweet & close,  
 Our lips shall quite forget;  
 When, where the day upon us rose,  
 The day shall rise & set,  
 While we for love's sublime repose  
 Shall have not one regret;

O this true comfort is, I think,  
 That, be death near or far,  
 When we have crossed the fatal brink,  
 And found nor moon nor star –  
 To know not, when in death we sink,  
 The lifeless things we are.

Yet one thought is, I deem, more kind,  
 That when we sleep so well,  
 On memories that we leave behind,  
 When kindred spirits dwell,  
 My name to thine in words they'll bind  
 Of love inseparable.

## XVII.2.

My love looks like a girl tonight,  
 But she is old.  
 The plaits that lie along her pillow  
 Are not gold,  
 But threaded with filigree silver  
 And uncanny cold.

She looks like a young maiden, since her brow  
 Is smooth & fair;  
 Her cheeks are very smooth; her eyes are closed.  
 She sleeps a rare  
 Still winsome sleep, so still, and so composed.

Nay, but she sleeps like a bride, and dreams her dreams  
 Of perfect things.  
 She lies at last, the darling, in the shape of her dream.  
 And her dead mouth sings  
 By its shape, like the thrushes in clear evenings.

---

'The Bride', David Lawrence (1885 – 1930), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

**XVII.3.** It takes all the running you can do, to keep in the same place; if you want to get somewhere else, you must run at least twice as fast as that.

## XVIII.

### XVIII.1.

Beautiful RAILWAY BRIDGE of the silvery TAY!  
 Alas! I am very sorry to say  
 That 90 lives have been taken away  
 On the last sabbath day of eighteen seventy-nine,  
 Which will be remembered for a very long time.

'Twas about seven o'clock at night,  
 And the wind it blew with all its might,  
 And the rain came pouring down,  
 And the dark clouds seemed to frown,  
 And the demon of the air seemed to say,  
 I'll blow down the BRIDGE OF TAY.

When the train left EDINBURGH  
 The passengers' hearts were light & felt no sorrow,  
 But *Boreas* blew a terrific gale,  
 Which made their hearts for to quail,  
 And many of the passengers with fear did say,  
 I hope God will send us safe across the BRIDGE OF TAY.

But when the train came near to WORMIT BAY,  
*Boreas* he did loud & angry bray,  
 And shook the central girders of the BRIDGE OF TAY  
 On the last sabbath day of eighteen seventy-nine,  
 Which will be remembered for a very long time.

So the train sped on with all its might,  
 And bonny DUNDEE soon hove in sight,  
 And the passengers' hearts felt light,  
 Thinking they would enjoy themselves on the New Year,

---

The Rev Charles Dodgson (1832 – 1898), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Sir William McGonagall (1825 – 1902), McGonagall, Knight of the White Elephant, Burmah, *McGonagall: A Selection*. William McGonagall (his knighthood would seem to have been self-bestowed; but where's the harm in that?) is often said to be the worst poet in the English language, and this his worst poem. Yet the Almanacker cannot help but discern a particular kind of genius in his works, rarely seen outside of the writings of Joseph Smith and L Ron Hubbard. The disaster described was indeed a genuine tragedy, and remains the most lethal British railway disaster to this day.

With their friends at home they loved most dear,  
And wish them all a happy New Year.

So the train moved slowly along the BRIDGE OF TAY,  
Until it was about midway,  
Then the central girders with a crash gave way,  
And down went the train & passengers into the TAY!  
The storm fiend did loudly bray,  
Because go lives had been taken away,  
On the last sabbath day of eighteen seventy-nine,  
Which will be remembered for a very long time.

As soon as the catastrophe came to be known  
The alarm from mouth to mouth was blown,  
And the cry rang out all o'er the town:  
Good Heavens! The TAY BRIDGE is blown down,  
And a passenger train from Edinburgh,  
Which filled all the people's hearts with sorrow,  
And made them for to turn pale,  
Because none of the passengers were saved to tell the tale  
How the disaster happened on the last sabbath day of eighteen  
seventy-nine,  
Which will be remembered for a very long time.

It must have been an awful sight,  
To witness in the dusky moonlight,  
While the storm fiend did laugh, and angry did bray,  
Along the RAILWAY BRIDGE of the silvery TAY.  
O ill-fated BRIDGE of the silvery TAY,  
I must now conclude my lay  
By telling the world fearlessly without the least dismay,  
That your central girders would not have given way,  
At least many sensible men do say,  
Had they been supported on each side with buttresses,  
At least many sensible men confesses,  
For the stronger we our houses do build,  
The less chance we have of being killed.

## XVIII.2.

What is the world, O soldiers?  
It is I:

---

'Napoleon', Walter de la Mare (1873 – 1956), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This poem presumably concerns Napoleon's disastrous invasion of Russia.



I, this incessant snow,  
     This northern sky;  
 Soldiers, this solitude  
 Through which we go  
     Is I.

**XVIII.3.** Jam tomorrow and jam yesterday – but never jam today.

## XIX.

### XIX.1.

Three summers since I chose a maid,  
 Too young maybe – but more's to do  
 At harvest-time than bide & woo.

When us was wed she turned afraid  
 Of love & me & all things human;  
 Like the shut of a winter's day  
 Her smile went out, and 'twasn't a woman –  
 More like a little frightened fay.

One night, in the fall, she runned away.

Out 'mong the sheep, her be, they said;  
 'Should properly have been abed;  
 But sure enough she wasn't there  
 Lying awake with her wide brown stare.  
 So over seven-acre field & up-along across the down  
 We chased her, flying like a hare  
 Before out lanterns. To CHURCH-TOWN  
     All in a shiver & a scare  
 We caught her, fetched her home at last  
     And turned the key upon her, fast.

She does the work about the house  
 As well as most, but like a mouse:  
 Happy enough to chat & play  
     With birds & rabbits & such as they,  
     So long as men-folk keep away.  
 Not near, not near! her eyes beseech  
 When one of us comes within reach.  
     The women say that beasts in stall

---

The Rev Charles Dodgson (1832 – 1898), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
 'The Farmer's Bride', Miss Charlotte Mew (1869 – 1928), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Miss Mew never married, and was fond of wearing male clothing.

Look round like children at her call.  
I've hardly heard her speak at all.

Shy as a leveret, swift as he,  
Straight & slight as a young larch tree,  
Sweet as the first wild violets, she,  
To her wild self. But what to me?

The short days shorten & the oaks are brown;  
The blue smoke rises to the low grey sky;  
One leaf in the still air falls slowly down;  
A magpie's spotted feathers lie  
On the black earth spread white with rime;  
The berries redden up to Christmas-time.  
What's Christmas-time without there be  
Some other in the house than we!

She sleeps up in the attic there  
Alone, poor maid. 'Tis but a stair  
Betwixt us. Oh! my God! the down,  
The soft young down of her, the brown,  
The brown of her – her eyes, her hair, her hair!

## XIX.2.

In Flanders fields the poppies grow  
Between the crosses, row on row,  
That mark our place; and in the sky  
The larks, still bravely singing, fly  
Scarce heard amid the guns below.

We are the dead. Short days ago  
We lived, felt dawn, saw sunset glow,  
Loved & were loved, and now we lie  
In Flanders fields.

Take up our quarrel with the foe:  
To you from failing hands we throw  
The torch; be yours to hold it high.  
If ye break faith with us who die

---

Dr John McCrae (1872 – 1918), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The argument of the poem – that the living should give their lives to avenge the dead – is clearly stupid. Where would the killing end before the whole world was sacrificed to this quasi-religion of military honour? And indeed the First World War provided a kind of answer to that question. But it remains a fine poem, and was popular with the ordinary soldiers of that most terrible of wars.

We shall not sleep, though poppies grow  
In Flanders fields.

**XIX.3.** Comfort's a cripple.

**XX.**

**XX.1.**

If honour to an ancient name be due,  
Or riches challenge it for one that's new,  
The british language claims in either sense  
Both for its age, and for its opulence.  
But all great things must be from us removed,  
To be with higher reverence beloved.  
So landscapes which in prospects distant lie,  
With greater wonder draw the pleasèd eye.  
Is not great TROY to one dark ruin hurled?  
Once the famed scene of all fighting world.  
Where's ATHENS now, to whom ROME learning owes,  
And the safe laurels that adorned her brows?  
A strange reverse of fate she did endure,  
Never once greater, than she's now obscure.  
Even ROME herself can but some footsteps show  
Of *Scipio's* times, or those of *Cicero*.  
And as the roman & the grecian state,  
The british fell, the spoil of time & fate.  
But though the language hath the beauty lost,  
Yet she has still some great remains to boast.  
For 'twas in that, the sacred bards of old,  
In deathless numbers did their thoughts unfold.  
In groves, by rivers, and on fertile plains,  
They civilized & taught the listening swains;  
Whilst with high raptures, and as great success,  
Virtue they clothed in music's charming dress.  
This *Merlin* spoke, who in his gloomy cave,  
Even destiny herself seemed to enslave.  
For to his sight the future time was known,  
Much better than to others is their own;  
And with such state, predictions from him fell,  
As if he did decree, and not foretell.

---

Michael Drayton (1563 – 1631), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. These words can be found in canto 2 of *The Baron's Wars*.

℞ 'On the Welsh Language', Mrs Katherine Philips (1632 – 1664), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

This spoke King *Arthur*, who, if fame be true,  
 Could have compelled mankind to speak it too.  
 In this once *Boadicca* valour taught,  
 And spoke more nobly than her soldiers fought:  
 Tell me what hero could be more than she,  
 Who fell at once for fame & liberty?  
 Nor could a greater sacrifice belong,  
 Or to her children's, or her country's wrong.  
 This spoke *Caractacus*, who was so brave,  
 That to the roman fortune check he gave:  
 And when their yoke he could decline no more,  
 He it so decently & nobly wore,  
 That ROME herself with blushes did believe,  
 A briton would the law of honour give;  
 And hastily his chains away she threw,  
 Lest her own captive else should her subdue.

## XX.2.

I am the ghost of SHADWELL STAIR.  
     Along the wharves by the waterhouse,  
     And through the cavernous slaughterhouse,  
 I am the shadow that walks there.

Yet I have flesh both firm & cool,  
     And eyes tumultuous as the gems  
     Of moons & lamps in the full THAMES  
 When dusk sails wavering down the pool.

Shuddering the purple street arc burns  
     Where I watch always; from the banks  
     Dolorously the shipping clanks  
 And after me a strange tide turns.

I walk till the stars of LONDON wane  
     And dawn creeps up the SHADWELL STAIR.  
     But when the crowing sirens blare  
 I with another ghost am lain.

---

'Shadwell Stair', Wilfred Owen (1893 – 1918), Heath-Stubbs and Wright, *The Faber Book of Twentieth Century Verse*. Shadwell Stair is an obscure alleyway leading down to the Thames, in Rotherhithe, a district on the outskirts of London proper. The place is said to have been, in Owen's time, one of those spots where gay men pick each other up for sexual encounters; although it has to be countered that the same could be said of a great many locations.

**XX.3.** Good men starve for want of impudence.

## XXI.

**XXI.1.**

See from the brake the whirring pheasant springs,  
 And mounts exulting on triumphant wings;  
 Short is his joy. He feels the fiery wound,  
 Flutters in blood, and panting beats the ground.  
 Ah what avail his glossy, varying dyes,  
 His purple crest, & scarlet-circled eyes,  
 The vivid green his shining plumes unfold;  
 His painted wings, & breast that flames with gold?  
 Nor yet, when moist *Arcturus* clouds the sky,  
 The woods & fields their pleasing toils deny.  
 To plains with well-breathed beagles we repair,  
 And trace the mazes of the circling hare.  
 (Beasts, urged by us, their fellow beasts pursue,  
 And learn of man each other to undo.)  
 With slaughtering guns th'unwearied fowler roves,  
 When frosts have whitened all the naked groves;  
 Where doves in flocks the leafless trees o'ershade,  
 And lonely woodcocks haunt the watery glade.  
 He lifts the tube, and levels with his eye;  
 Strait a short thunder breaks the frozen sky.  
 Oft, as in airy rings they skim the heath,  
 The clamorous lapwings feel the leaden death:  
 Oft as the mounting larks their notes prepare,  
 They fall, and leave their little lives in air.

**XXI.2.**

Two separate divided silences,  
     Which, brought together, would find loving voice;  
     Two glances which together would rejoice  
 In love, now lost like stars beyond dark trees;  
 Two hands apart whose touch alone gives ease;  
     Two bosoms which, heart-shrined with mutual flame,  
     Would, meeting in one clasp, be made the same;

---

John Dryden, Poet Laureate (1631 – 1700), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a line from the epilogue to *Constantine the Great*.

℞ Alexander Pope (1688 – 1744), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. These are lines 37-60 of Pope's longer poem, "Windsor-Forest".

Gabriel Rossetti (1828 – 1882), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. This sonnet is from Rossetti's sequence, *The House of Life*.

Two souls, the shore wave-mocked of sundering seas:  
 Such are we now. Ah may our hope forecast  
     Indeed one hour again, when on this stream  
     Of darkened love once more the light shall gleam?  
 An hour how slow to come – how quickly past –  
 Which blooms & fades, and only leaves at last,  
     Faint as shed flowers, the attenuated dream.

**XXI.3.** Whores and silver in one age were born.

## XXII.

**XXII.1.**

No more with overflowing light  
     Shall fill the eyes that now are faded,  
 Nor shall another's fringe with night  
     Their woman-hidden world as they did.  
     No more shall quiver down the days  
     The flowing wonder of her ways,  
 Whereof no language may requite  
     The shifting & the many-shaded.

The grace, divine, definitive,  
     Clings only as a faint forestalling;  
 The laugh that love could not forgive  
     Is hushed, and answers to no calling;  
     The forehead & the little ears  
     Have gone where *Saturn* keeps the years;  
 The breast where roses could not live  
     Has done with rising and with falling.

The beauty, shattered by the laws  
     That have creation in their keeping,  
 No longer trembles at applause,  
     Or over children that are sleeping;  
     And we who delve in beauty's lore  
     Know all that we have known before  
 Of what inexorable cause  
     Makes time so vicious in his reaping.

---

John Dryden, Poet Laureate (1631 – 1700), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This is from line 35 of Dryden's *Sixth Satyr of Juvenal*.

'For a Dead Lady', Edwin Robinson (1869 – 1935), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

**XXII.2.**

Good morning! Good morning! the General said  
 When we met him last week on our way to the line.  
 Now the soldiers he smiled at are most of 'em dead,  
 And we're cursing his staff for incompetent swine.  
 He's a cheery old card, grunted *Harry to Jack*  
 As they slogged up to ARRAS with rifle & pack.

But he did for them both by his plan of attack.

**XXII.3.** A nation is not to be governed, which is perpetually to be conquered.

**XXIII.****XXIII.1.**

Why, *Damon*, with the forward day  
 Dost thou thy little spot survey,  
 From tree to tree, with doubtful cheer,  
 Pursue the progress of the year,  
 What winds arise, what rains descend,  
 When thou before that year shalt end?

What do thy noontide walks avail,  
 To clear the leaf, & pick the snail,  
 Then wantonly to death decree  
 An insect usefuller than thee?  
 Thou & the worm are brother-kind,  
 As low, as earthy, & as blind.

Vain wretch! canst thou expect to see  
 The downy peach make court to thee?  
 Or that thy sense shall ever meet  
 The bean-flower's deep-embosomed sweet  
 Exhaling with an evening blast?  
 Thy evenings then will all be past!

Thy narrow pride, thy fancied green  
 (For vanity's in little seen),

---

'The General', Siegfried Sassoon (1886 – 1967), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. Arras was the site of a battle between the British and German Empires in 1917, which resulted in some three hundred thousand casualties.

The Rt Hon Edmund Burke (1729 – 1797), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'The Dying Man in His Garden', Dr George Sewall (1687 – 1726), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

All must be left when death appears,  
 In spite of wishes, groans, & tears;  
 Nor one of all thy plants that grow  
 But rosemary will with thee go.

### XXIII.2.

Proud *Maisie* is in the wood,  
 Walking so early;  
 Sweet robin sits on the bush,  
 Singing so rarely.

Tell me, thou bonny bird,  
 When shall I marry me?  
 When six braw gentlemen  
 Kirk-ward shall carry ye.

Who makes the bridal bed,  
 Birdie, say truly?  
 The gray-headed sexton  
 That delves the grave duly.

The glowworm o'er grave & stone  
 Shall light thee steady;  
 The owl from the steeple sing,  
 Welcome, proud lady.

**XXIII.3.** It is a general popular error to imagine that the loudest complainers for the public to be the most anxious for its welfare.

### XXIV.

#### XXIV.1.

I dreamed that, as I wandered by the way,  
 Bare winter suddenly was changed to spring,  
 And gentle odours led my steps astray,  
 Mixed with a sound of waters murmuring  
 Along a shelving bank of turf, which lay  
 Under a copse, and hardly dared to fling  
 Its green arms round the bosom of the stream,  
 But kissed it and then fled, as thou mightest in dream.

---

'The Pride of Youth', Sir Walter Scott, 1st Baronet (1771 – 1832), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

The Rt Hon Edmund Burke (1729 – 1797), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'A Dream of the Unknown', Percy Shelley (1792 – 1822), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.



There grew pied wind-flowers & violets,  
 Daisies, those pearled Arcturi of the earth,  
 The constellated flower that never sets;  
 Faint oxlips; tender bluebells, at whose birth  
 The sod scarce heaved; and that tall flower that wets –  
 Like a child, ½ in tenderness & mirth –  
 Its mother's face with heaven's collected tears,  
 When the low wind, its playmate's voice, it hears.

And in the warm hedge grew lush eglantine,  
 Green cowbind & the moonlight-coloured may,  
 And cherry-blossoms, and white cups, whose wine  
 Was the bright dew, yet drained not by the day;  
 And wild roses, and ivy serpentine,  
 With its dark buds & leaves, wandering astray;  
 And flowers azure, black, & streaked with gold,  
 Fairer than any wakened eyes behold.

And nearer to the river's trembling edge  
 There grew broad flag-flowers, purple pranked with white,  
 And starry river buds among the sedge,  
 And floating water-lilies, broad & bright,  
 Which lit the oak that overhung the hedge  
 With moonlight beams of their own watery light;  
 And bulrushes, and reeds of such deep green  
 As soothed the dazzled eye with sober sheen.

Methought that of these visionary flowers  
 I made a nosegay, bound in such a way  
 That the same hues, which in their natural bowers  
 Were mingled or opposed, the like array  
 Kept these imprisoned children of the hours  
 Within my hand – and then, elate & gay,  
 I hastened to the spot whence I had come,  
 That I might there present it! O! to whom?

## XXIV.2.

When icicles hang by the wall,  
 And *Dick* the shepherd blows his nail,  
 And *Tom* bears logs into the hall,

---

℞ William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This song is sung in *Love's Labours Lost* V.2. ¶2. Blowing one's nail means breathing on one's hands to warm them up. ¶11. The parson's saw is more likely his sermon than an implement for cutting wood; likewise the crabs hissing in the bowl are more likely crab apples than sea creatures.

And milk comes frozen home in pail,  
 When blood is nipped and ways be foul,  
 Then nightly sings the staring owl,  
     Tu-whit;  
     Tu-who, a merry note,  
 While greasy *Joan* doth keel the pot.

When all aloud the wind doth blow,  
     And coughing drowns the parson's saw,  
 And birds sit brooding in the snow,  
     And *Marian's* nose looks red & raw,  
 When roasted crabs hiss in the bowl,  
 Then nightly sings the staring owl,  
     Tu-whit;  
     Tu-who, a merry note,  
 While greasy *Joan* doth keel the pot.

**XXIV.3.** Kings will be tyrants from policy when subjects are rebels from principle.

## XXV.

### XXV.1.

Night came, but without darkness or repose,  
     A dismal picture of the general doom;  
 Where souls distracted when the trumpet blows  
     And half unready with their bodies come.

Those who have homes, when home they do repair,  
     To a last lodging call their wandering friends:  
 Their short uneasy sleeps are broke with care,  
     To look how near their own destruction tends.

Those who have none, sit round where once it was,  
     And with full eyes each wonted room require:  
 Haunting the yet warm ashes of the place,  
     As murdered men walk where they did expire.

Some stir up coals, and watch the vestal fire,  
     Others in vain from sight of ruin run;

---

The Rt Hon Edmund Burke (1729 – 1797), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey (1517 – 1547), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. These are verses 254-259 of Dryden's longer poem *Annus Mirabilis*.

And while through burning labyrinths they retire,  
 With loathing eyes repeat what they would shun.

The most in fields like herded beasts lie down,  
 To dews obnoxious on the grassy floor;  
 And while their babes in sleep their sorrows drown,  
 Sad parents watch the remnants of their store.

While by the motion of the flames they guess  
 What streets are burning now, and what are near,  
 An infant waking to the paps would press,  
 And meets, instead of milk, a falling tear.

### XXV.2.

Leave me, O love, which reachest but to dust;  
 And thou, my mind, aspire to higher things;  
 Grow rich in that which never taketh rust;  
 Whatever fades but fading pleasure brings.  
 Draw in thy beams and humble all thy might  
 To that sweet yoke where lasting freedoms be;  
 Which breaks the clouds and opens forth the light,  
 That doth both shine and give us sight to see.  
 O take fast hold; let that light be thy guide  
 In this small course which birth draws out to death,  
 And think how evil becometh him to slide,  
 Who seeketh heav'n, and comes of heav'nly breath.  
 Then farewell, world; thy uttermost I see:  
 Eternal love, maintain thy life in me.

**XXV.3.** There is, however, a limit at which forbearance ceases to be a virtue.

### XXVI.

#### XXVI.1.

Calm is the morn without a sound,  
 Calm as to suit a calmer grief,  
 And only through the faded leaf,  
 The chestnut pattering to the ground:

---

℞ 'A Complaint by Night of the Lover not Beloved', Sir Philip Sidney (1554 – 1586), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

The Rt Hon Edmund Burke (1729 – 1797), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Calm & deep peace on this high wold,  
 And on these dews that drench the furze.  
 And all the silvery gossamers  
 That twinkle into green & gold:

Calm & still light on yon great plain  
 That sweeps with all its autumn bowers,  
 And crowded farms & lessening towers,  
 To mingle with the bounding main:

Calm & deep peace in this wide air,  
 These leaves that redden to the fall;  
 And in my heart, if calm at all,  
 If any calm, a calm despair:

Calm on the seas, & silver sleep,  
 And waves that sway themselves in rest,  
 And dead calm in that noble breast  
 Which heaves but with the heaving deep.

## XXVI.2.

Dark house, by which once more I stand  
 Here in the long unlovely street,  
 Doors, where my heart was used to beat  
 So quickly, waiting for a hand,

A hand that can be clasped no more –  
 Behold me, for I cannot sleep,  
 And like a guilty thing I creep  
 At earliest morning to the door.

He is not here; but far away  
 The noise of life begins again,  
 And ghastly through the drizzling rain  
 On the bald street breaks the blank day.

## XXVI.3. A little learning is a dangerous thing.

---

Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Alexander Pope (1688 – 1744), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This is line 215 of Pope's *Essay on Criticism*.

## XXVII.

## XXVII.1.

Tears, idle tears, I know not what they mean;  
 Tears from the depth of some divine despair  
 Rise in the heart, and gather to the eyes,  
 In looking on the happy autumn fields,  
 And thinking of the days that are no more.

Fresh as the first beam glittering on a sail,  
 That brings our friends up from the underworld,  
 Sad as the last which reddens over one  
 That sinks with all we love below the verge;  
 So sad, so fresh, the days that are no more.

Ah sad & strange as in dark summer dawns  
 The earliest pipe of  $\frac{1}{2}$  awakened birds  
 To dying ears, when unto dying eyes  
 The casement slowly grows a glimmering square;  
 So sad, so strange, the days that are no more.

Dear as remembered kisses after death,  
 And sweet as those by hopeless fancy feigned  
 On lips that are for others; deep as love,  
 Deep as first love, and wild with all regret;  
 O death in life, the days that are no more.

## XXVII.2.

Out in the dark over the snow  
 The fallow fawns invisible go  
 With the fallow doe;  
 And the winds blow  
 Fast as the stars are slow.

Stealthily the dark haunts round  
 And, when the lamp goes, without sound  
 At a swifter bound  
 Than the swiftest hound,  
 Arrives, and all else is drowned;

---

Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Edward Thomas (1878 – 1917), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

And star & I & wind & deer  
 Are in the dark together – near,  
 Yet far – and fear  
 Drums on my ear  
 In that sage company drear.

How weak & little is the light,  
 All the universe of sight,  
 Love & delight,  
 Before the might,  
 If you love it not, of night.

**XXVII.3.** Dislike of realism is the rage of Caliban seeing his own face in the glass.

### XXVIII.

#### XXVIII.1.

The DANUBE to the SEVERN gave  
 The darkened heart that beat no more;  
 They laid him by the pleasant shore,  
 And in the hearing of the wave.

There twice a day the SEVERN fills;  
 The salt sea-water passes by,  
 And hushes half the babbling WYE,  
 And makes a silence in the hills.

The WYE is hushed nor moved along,  
 And hushed my deepest grief of all,  
 When filled with tears that cannot fall,  
 I brim with sorrow drowning song.

The tide flows down, the wave again  
 Is vocal in its wooded walls;  
 My deeper anguish also falls,  
 And I can speak a little then.

---

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. The original, in Wilde's preface to his *Portrait of Dorian Gray*, begins, 'The nineteenth century dislike of realism...'

Alfred Tennyson, 1st Baron Tennyson, Poet Laureate (1809 – 1892), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

**XXVIII.2.**

A slumber did my spirit seal;  
 I had no human fears:  
 She seemed a thing that could not feel  
 The touch of earthly years.

No motion has she now, no force;  
 She neither hears nor sees;  
 Rolled round in earth's diurnal course  
 With rocks, & stones, & trees.

**XXVIII.3.** Each man kills the thing he loves.**XXIX.****XXIX.1.**

Late in the lowering sky red fiery streaks  
 Begin to flush about; the reeling clouds  
 Stagger with dizzy aim, as doubting yet  
 Which master to obey: while rising, slow,  
 Sad, in the leaden-coloured east, the moon  
 Wears a black circle round her sullied orb.  
 Then issues forth the storm, with loud control,  
 And the thin fabrick of the pillared air  
 O'erturns, at once. Prone, on th'uncertain main,  
 Descends th'ethereal force, and ploughs its waves,  
 With dreadful rift: from the mid-deep appears  
 Surge after surge, the rising watery war.  
 Whitening, the angry billows rowl immense,  
 And roar their rerrors, through the shuddering soul  
 Of feeble man, amidst their fury caught,  
 And dashed upon his fate: then, o'er the cliff,  
 Where dwells the sea-mew, unconfined, they fly,  
 And, hurrying, swallow up the sterile shore.

The mountain growls; and all its sturdy sons  
 Stoop to the bottom of the rocks they shade:  
 Lone on its midnight side, and all aghast,  
 The dark wayfaring stranger, breathless, toils

---

Dr William Wordsworth, Poet Laureate (1770 – 1850), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This is a line from *The Ballad of Reading Gaol*.

James Thomson (1700 – 1748), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. These lines are from poet's longer poem "Winter", which seems to exist in several versions.

And climbs against the blast –  
 Low waves the rooted forest, vexed, and sheds  
 What of its leafy honours yet remains.  
 Thus, struggling through the dissipated grove,  
 The whirling tempest raves along the plain;  
 And, on the cottage thatched, or lordly dome,  
 Keen-fastening, shakes 'em to the solid base.  
 Sleep, frightened, flies; the hollow chimney howls,  
 The windows rattle, and the hinges creak.

**XXIX.2.**

From low to high doth dissolution climb,  
 And sink from high to low, along a scale  
 Of awful notes, whose concord shall not fail;  
 A musical but melancholy chime,  
 Which they can hear who meddle not with crime,  
 Nor avarice, nor over-anxious care.  
 Truth fails not; but her outward forms that bear  
 The longest date do melt like frosty rime,  
 That in the morning whitened hill & plain  
 And is no more; drop like the tower sublime  
 Of yesterday, which royally did wear  
 His crown of weeds, but could not even sustain  
 Some casual shout that broke the silent air,  
 Or the unimaginable touch of time.

**XXIX.3.** It is well for his peace that the saint goes to his martyrdom;  
 he is spared the sight of the horror of his harvest.

---

'Mutability', Dr William Wordsworth, Poet Laureate (1770 – 1850), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Oscar Wilde (1854 – 1900), Wilde, *The Critic as Artist*.



## CHAPTER 11

# Unodecember

### I.

#### I.1.

Since I no more do see your face  
Up stairs or down below,  
I'll sit me in the lonesome place  
Where flat-boughed beech do grow;  
Below the beeches' bough, my love,  
Where you did never come,  
An' I don't look to meet ye now  
As I do look at home.

Since you no more be at my side  
In walks in summer het  
I'll go alone where mist do ride,  
Through trees a-drippin' wet;  
Below the rain-wet bough, my love,  
Where you did never come,  
An' I don't grieve to miss ye now  
As I do grieve at home.

Since now beside my dinner-board  
Your voice do never sound,  
I'll eat the bit I can afford,  
A-yeild upon the ground;  
Below the darksome bough, my love,  
Where you did never dine,  
An' I don't grieve to miss ye now  
As I at home do pine.

Since I do miss your voice an' face  
In prayer at eventide,

---

℞ 'The Wife A-Lost', The Rev William Barnes (1801 – 1886), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

I'll pray wi' one sad voice for grace  
 To go where you do bide;  
 Above the tree an' bough, my love,  
 Where you be gone afore,  
 An' be a waitin' for me now  
 To come for evermore.

## I.2.

Cruel were my parents to tear my love from me.  
 Cruel were the press-gang that took him off to sea.  
 Cruel was the little ship that rowed him off the strand,  
 And cruel was the great big ship that sailed from the land.

I.3. I shall go to him but he shall not return to me.

## II.

### II.1.

With proud thanksgiving, a mother for her children,  
 England mourns for her dead across the sea.  
 Flesh of her flesh they were, spirit of her spirit,  
 Fallen in the cause of the free.

Solemn the drums thrill; death august & royal  
 Sings sorrow up into immortal spheres,  
 There is music in the midst of desolation  
 And a glory that shines upon our tears.

They went with songs to the battle; they were young,  
 Straight of limb, true of eye, steady & aglow.  
 They were staunch to the end against odds uncounted;  
 They fell with their faces to the foe.

They shall grow not old, as we that are left grow old:  
 Age shall not weary them, nor the years condemn.  
 At the going down of the sun & in the morning  
 We will remember them.

---

℞ 'Oh! Cruel', Anonymous, *Bodleian 8227*. This is the first verse in a ballad; sadly the others are much inferior. The 'Oh!' has been excised from the front of the first line, and the 'And' has been excised from the front of the middle two lines.

<sup>2</sup> Samuel 22.22, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*. King David says this of his dead son, the first child Bathsheba bore him.

'For the Fallen', Prof Laurence Binyon (1869 – 1943), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

They mingle not with their laughing comrades again;  
 They sit no more at familiar tables of home;  
 They have no lot in our labour of the day-time;  
 They sleep beyond England's foam.

But where our desires are & our hopes profound,  
 Felt as a well-spring that is hidden from sight,  
 To the innermost heart of their own land they are known  
 As the stars are known to the night;

As the stars that shall be bright when we are dust,  
 Moving in marches upon the heavenly plain;  
 As the stars that are starry in the time of our darkness,  
 To the end, to the end, they remain.

## II.2.

Alone at the shut of day was I,  
 With a star or two in a frost-clear sky,  
 And the byre smell in the air.  
 I'd tramped the length & breadth of the fen;  
 But never a farmer wanted men;  
 Naught doing anywhere.

A great calm moon rose back of the mill,  
 And I told myself it was God's will  
 Who went hungry and who went fed.  
 I tried to whistle; I tried to be brave;  
 But the new-ploughed fields smelt dank as the grave;  
 And I wished I were dead.

## II.3. My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

## III.

### III.1.

All things within this fading world hath end;  
 Adversity doth still our joys attend;  
 No ties so strong, no friends so dear & sweet,  
 But with death's parting blow is sure to meet.

---

'Out of Work', Kenneth Ashley (1885 – 1969), Holden and Holden, *Poems that Make Grown Men Cry*.

Matthew 27.46, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*. Christ is quoting here the first line of Psalm 22. The Aramaic, following the KJV's transliteration, is 'Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?'.  
 'Before the Birth of One of Her Children', Mrs Anne Bradstreet (1612 – 1672), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

The sentence past is most irrevocable,  
 A common thing, yet O inevitable.  
 How soon, my dear, death may my steps attend  
 How soon't may be thy lot to lose thy friend,  
 We are both ignorant, yet love bids me  
 These farewell lines to recommend to thee,  
 That when that knot's untied that made us one,  
 I may seem thine, who in effect am none.  
 And if I see not  $\frac{1}{2}$  my days that's due,  
 What nature would, God grant to yours & you;  
 The many faults that well you know I have  
 Let be interred in my oblivious grave;  
 If any worth or virtue were in me,  
 Let that live freshly in thy memory  
 And when thou feel'st no grief, as I no harms,  
 Yet love thy dead, who long lay in thine arms.  
 And when thy loss shall be repaid with gains,  
 Look to my little babes, my dear remains.  
 And if thou love thyself, or loved'st me,  
 These O protect from step-dames' injury.  
 And if chance to thine eyes shall bring this verse,  
 With some sad sighs honour my absent hearse;  
 And kiss this paper for thy loves dear sake,  
 Who with salt tears this last farewell did take.

### III.2.

I come among the peoples like a shadow.  
 I sit down by each man's side.

None sees me, but they look on one another,  
 And know that I am there.

My silence is like the silence of the tide  
 That buries the playground of children;

Like the deepening of frost in the slow night,  
 When birds are dead in the morning.

Armies trample, invade, destroy,  
 With guns roaring from earth & air.

---

'Hunger', Prof Laurence Binyon (1869 – 1943), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. Prof Binyon was clearly inspired by the Old English riddles, such as are found in the *Exeter Book*. The Almanacker has excised the last two lines, since these give the game away.

I am more terrible than armies;  
I am more feared than the cannon.

Kings and chancellors give commands;  
I give no command to any;

But I am listened to more than kings  
And more than passionate orators.

I unswear words, and undo deeds.  
Naked things know me.

**III.3.** Summer is ended, and we are not saved.

#### IV.

##### IV.1.

When we two parted  
In silence & tears,  
Half broken-hearted  
To sever for years,  
Pale grew thy cheek & cold,  
Colder thy kiss;  
Truly that hour foretold  
Sorrow to this.

The dew of the morning  
Sunk chill on my brow –  
It felt like the warning  
Of what I feel now.  
Thy vows are all broken,  
And light is thy fame;  
I hear thy name spoken,  
And share in its shame.

They name thee before me,  
A knell to mine ear;  
A shudder comes o'er me –  
Why wert thou so dear?  
They know not I knew thee,  
Who knew thee too well –  
Long, long shall I rue thee,  
Too deeply to tell.

---

Jeremiah 8.20, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

In secret we met –  
 In silence I grieve,  
 That thy heart could forget,  
 Thy spirit deceive.  
 If I should meet thee  
 After long years,  
 How should I greet thee?  
 With silence & tears.

#### IV.2.

I am ashes where once I was fire,  
 And the bard in my bosom is dead;  
 What I loved I now merely admire,  
 And my heart is as grey as my head.

My life is not dated by years –  
 There are moments which act as a plough;  
 And there is not a furrow appears  
 But is deep in my soul as my brow.

Let the young & the brilliant aspire  
 To sing what I gaze on in vain;  
 For sorrow has torn from my lyre  
 The string which was worthy the strain.

#### IV.3. The axe is laid unto the root of the trees.

### V.

#### V.1.

Now winter nights enlarge  
 The number of their hours;  
 And clouds their storms discharge  
 Upon the airy towers.  
 Let now the chimneys blaze  
 And cups o'erflow with wine;  
 Let well-turned words amaze  
 With harmony divine.  
 Now yellow waxen lights

---

'To the Countess of Blessington', George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Byron, *The Poems and Dramas of Lord Byron*. The Almanacker has excised the first two verses.

Matthew 3.10, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*. The KJV's rendering of Matthew 3.10 in full: 'And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.'

Dr Thomas Campion (1567 – 1620), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Shall wait on honey love  
 While youthful revels, masques & courtly sights  
 Sleep's leaden spells remove.

This time doth well dispense  
 With lovers' long discourse;  
 Much speech hath some defense,  
 Though beauty no remorse.  
 All do not all things well;  
 Some measures comely tread,  
 Some knotted riddles tell,  
 Some poems smoothly read.  
 The summer hath his joys,  
 And winter his delights;  
 Though love & all his pleasures are but toys,  
 They shorten tedious nights.

## V.2.

So we'll go no more a roving  
 So late into the night,  
 Though the heart be still as loving,  
 And the moon be still as bright.

For the sword outwears its sheath,  
 And the soul wears out the breast,  
 And the heart must pause to breathe,  
 And love itself have rest.

Though the night was made for loving,  
 And the day returns too soon,  
 Yet we'll go no more a roving  
 By the light of the moon.

## V.3. They have sown the wind, and they shall reap the whirlwind.

---

George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Here Lord Byron is codifying, in a manner not dissimilar to Burns, an ancient English folk song, known in one of its variations as “The Maid of Amsterdam”.

Hosea 8.7, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*.

## VI.

## VI.1.

I was a stricken deer that left the herd  
 Long since, with many an arrow deep infixed  
 My panting side was charged, when I withdrew  
 To seek a tranquil death in distant shades.  
 There was I found by one who had himself  
 Been hurt by th'archers. In his side he bore,  
 And in his hands & feet, the cruel scars.  
 With gentle force soliciting the darts,  
 He drew them forth, and healed and bade me live.  
 Since then, with few associates, in remote  
 And silent woods I wander, far from those,  
 My former partners of the peopled scene;  
 With few associates, and not wishing more.  
 Here much I ruminate, as much I may,  
 With other views of men and manners now  
 Than once, and others of a life to come.  
 I see that all are wanderers, gone astray  
 Each in his own delusions; they are lost  
 In chase of fancied happiness, still wooed  
 And never won. Dream after dream ensues,  
 And still they dream that they shall still succeed,  
 And still are disappointed. Rings the world  
 With the vain stir. I sum up  $\frac{1}{2}$  mankind  
 And add two thirds of the remaining  $\frac{1}{2}$ ,  
 And find the total of their hopes & fears  
 Dreams, empty dreams. The million flit as gay,  
 As if created only like the fly,  
 That spreads his motley wings in the eye of noon  
 To sport their season and be seen no more.  
 The rest are sober dreamers, grave & wise  
 And pregnant with discoveries new & rare.  
 Some write a narrative of wars & feats,  
 Of heroes little known, and call the rant  
 A history; describe the man, of whom  
 His own coevals took but little note,

---

R 'The Stricken Deer', William Cowper (1731 – 1800), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*. ¶144. Pilgrims to the oracle at Delphi would first wash themselves in the Castalian spring. Drinking therefrom was said to induce poetical inspiration. ¶150. Themis was a Greek goddess of prophecy, named in some sources as the mother of Prometheus. ¶151. 'Immortal Hale' = Sir Matthew Hale.



And paint his person, character, & views,  
As they had know him from his mother womb.  
They disentangle from the puzzled skein  
In which obscurity has wrapped them up,  
The threads of politic & shrewd design  
That ran through all his purposes, and charge  
His mind with meanings that he never had  
Or having, kept concealed. Some drill & bore  
The solid earth, and from the strata there  
Extract a register, by which we learn  
That he, who made it and revealed its date  
To *Moses*, was mistaken in its age.  
Some, more acute & more industrious still,  
Contrive creation, travel nature up  
To the sharp peak of her sublimest height,  
Tell us whence the stars, why some are fixed,  
And planetary some, what gave them first  
Rotation, from what fountain flowed their light.  
Great contest follows, and much learned dust  
Involves the combatants, each claiming truth,  
And truth disclaiming both. And thus they spend  
The little wick of life's poor shallow lamp  
In playing tricks with nature, giving laws  
To distant worlds, and trifling in their own.  
Is't not a pity now, that tickling rheums  
Should ever tease the lungs, and blear the sight  
Of oracles like these. Great pity too  
That having wielded the elements, and built  
A 1000 systems, each in his own way,  
They should go out in fame and be forgot!  
Ah what is life thus spent? And what are they  
But frantic who thus spend it? All for smoke –  
Eternity for bubbles proves at last  
A senseless bargain. When I see such games  
Played by the creatures of a power who swears  
That he will judge the earth, and call the fool  
To a sharp reckoning that has lived in vain;  
And when I weigh this seeming wisdom well,  
And prove it the infallible result  
So hollow and so false – I feel my heart  
Dissolve in pity, and account the learned,  
If this be learning, most of all deceived.

Great crimes alarm the conscience, but it sleeps  
While thoughtful man is plausibly amused.  
Defend me therefore, common sense, say I,  
Prom reveries so airy, from the toil  
Of dropping buckets into empty wells,  
And growing old in drawing nothing up!

'Twere well says one sage erudite, profound,  
Terribly arched & aquiline his nose,  
And overbuilt with most impending brows,  
'Twere well could you permit the world to live  
As the world pleases. What's the world to you?  
Much. I was born of woman, and drew milk,  
As sweet as charity, from human breasts.  
I think, articulate; I laugh and weep  
And exercise all functions of a man.  
How then should I and any man that lives  
Be strangers to each other? Pierce my vein;  
Take of the crimson stream meandering there,  
And catechise it well. Apply your glass,  
Search it, and prove now if it be not blood  
Congenial with thine own: and if it be,  
With edge of subtlety canst thou suppose  
Keen enough, wise & skilful as thou art,  
To cut the link of brotherhood, by which  
One common maker bound me to the kind.  
True; I am no proficient, I confess,  
In arts like yours I cannot call the swift  
And perilous lightnings from the angry clouds,  
And bid them hide themselves in th'earth beneath;  
I cannot analyse the air, nor catch  
The parallax of yonder luminous point  
That seems  $\frac{1}{2}$  quenched in the immense abyss;  
Such powers I boast not – neither can I rest  
A silent witness of the headlong rage,  
Or heedless folly by which thousands die,  
Bone of my bone, & kindred souls to mine.

God never meant that man should scale the heavens  
By strides of human wisdom. In his works,  
Though wondrous, he commands us in his word  
To seek him rather where his mercy shines.  
The mind indeed, enlightened from above,

Views him in all; ascribes to the grand cause  
 The grand effect, acknowledges with joy  
 His manner, and with rapture tastes his style.  
 But never yet did philosophic tube  
 That brings the planets home into the eye  
 Of observation, and discovers, else  
 Not visible, his family of worlds,  
 Discover him that rules them: such a veil  
 Hangs oyer mortal eyes, blind from the birth,  
 And dark in things divine. Full often too  
 Our wayward intellect, the more we learn  
 Of nature, overlooks her author more;  
 From instrumental causes proud to draw  
 Conclusions retrograde, and mad mistake.  
 But if his word once teach us, shoot a ray  
 Through all the heart's dark chambers, and reveal  
 Truths undiscern'd but by that holy light,  
 Then all is plain. Philosophy baptised  
 In the pure fountain of eternal love  
 Has eyes indeed; and viewing all she sees,  
 As meant to indicate a God to man,  
 Gives him his praise, and forfeits not her own.  
 Learning has borne such fruit in other days  
 On all her branches: piety has found  
 Friends in the friends of science, and true prayer  
 Has flowed from lips wet with castalian dews.  
 Such was thy wisdom, *Newton*, childlike sage,  
 Sagacious reader of the works of God,  
 And in his word sagacious. Such too thine,  
*Milton*, whose genius had angelic wings,  
 And fed on manna. And such thine, in whom  
 Our british *Themis* gloried with just cause,  
 Immortal *Hale*, for deep discernment praised,  
 And sound integrity not more, than famed  
 For sanctity of manners undefiled.

## VI.2.

My dearest dust, could not thy hasty day  
 Afford thy drowsy patience leave to stay  
 One hour longer: so that we might either  
 Sit up, or gone to bed together?  
 But since thy finished labour hath possessed  
 Thy weary limbs with early rest,  
 Enjoy it sweetly: and thy widow bride  
 Shall soon repose her by thy slumb'ring side.  
 Whose business, now, is only to prepare  
 My nightly dress, and call to prayer:  
 Mine eyes wax heavy and the day grows old.  
 The dew falls thick; my blood grows cold.  
 Draw, draw the closèd curtains: and make room:  
 My dear, my dearest dust; I come, I come.

VI.3. Thou art weighed in the balances and art found wanting.

## VII.

## VII.1.

Farewell, too little & too lately known,  
 Whom I began to think & call my own;  
 For sure our souls were near allied; and thine  
 Cast in the same poetic mould with mine.  
 One common note on either lyre did strike,  
 And knaves & fools we both abhorred alike:  
 To the same goal did both our studies drive,

---

Catherine Dyer, Lady Dyer (1590 – 1654), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. Lady Dyer had this remarkable epitaph inscribed on the monument of her late husband, Sir William Dyer (1583 – 1621), which can be found in St Denys' Church in the village of Colmworth, Bedfordshire. This sonnet is actually just the second half of the complete epitaph. ¶12. There is some ambiguity in this line: some books give 'my blood grows cold', while others give 'my beloved grows' cold. The Almanacker is no scholar of seventeenth century English orthography, but he has seen the original monument himself, and can report that it reads 'MY BLOVD GROWES COLD', and thus he concludes that either interpretation may be correct.

Daniel 5.27, *The Holy Bible, King James Version*. This is a portion of Daniel's interpretation of the famous writing on the wall at Belshazzar's feast.

'To the Memory of Mr Oldham', John Dryden, Poet Laureate (1631 – 1700), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. ¶10. Nisus is a character from the *Aeneid*, who, having slipped and fallen during a race, and seeing that he can't recover his lead, tackles one of the other competitors to ensure his friend's victory. ¶23. The name Marcellus refers to a number of figures from Roman history, although Dryden is probably referring here to Marcus Claudius Marcellus, the nephew and proposed heir of Augustus, whose death at nineteen years of age is a good example of a man who died before his youthful promise could be realised – just like John Oldham, the subject of this elegy.

The last set out the soonest did arrive.  
 Thus *Nisus* fell upon the slippery place,  
 While his young friend performed and won the race.  
 O early ripe! to thy abundant store  
 What could advancing age have added more?  
 It might (what nature never gives the young)  
 Have taught the numbers of thy native tongue.  
 But satire needs not those, and wit will shine  
 Through the harsh cadence of a rugged line.  
 A noble error, and but seldom made,  
 When poets are by too much force betrayed.  
 Thy generous fruits, though gathered ere their prime  
 Still showed a quickness; and maturing time  
 But mellows what we write to the dull sweets of rhyme.  
 Once more, hail & farewell; farewell thou young,  
 But ah too short, *Marcellus* of our tongue;  
 Thy brows with ivy, and with laurels bound;  
 But fate & gloomy night encompass thee around.

## VII.2.

The sheep get up and make their many tracks  
 And bear a load of snow upon their backs,  
 And gnaw the frozen turnip to the ground  
 With sharp quick bite, and then go noising round  
 The boy that pecks the turnips all the day  
 And knocks his hands to keep the cold away  
 And laps his legs in straw to keep them warm  
 And hides behind the hedges from the storm.  
 The sheep, as tame as dogs, go where he goes  
 And try to shake their fleeces from the snows.  
 Then leave their frozen meal and wander round  
 The stubble stack that stands beside the ground,  
 And lie all night and face the drizzling storm  
 And shun the hovel where they might be warm.

VII.3. Beware of too much explaining, lest we end by too much explaining.

---

John Clare (1793 – 1864), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

John Dalberg-Acton, 1st Baron Acton (1834 – 1902), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

## VIII.

## VIII.1.

It was too lonely for her there,  
 And too wild,  
 And since there were but two of them,  
 And no child,

And work was little in the house,  
 She was free,  
 And followed where he furrowed field,  
 Or felled tree.

She rested on a log and tossed  
 The fresh chips,  
 With a song only to herself  
 On her lips.

And once she went to break a bough  
 Of black alder.  
 She strayed so far she scarcely heard  
 When he called her –

And didn't answer – didn't speak –  
 Or return.  
 She stood, and then she ran & hid  
 In the fern.

He never found her, though he looked  
 Everywhere,  
 And he asked at her mother's house  
 Was she there.

Sudden & swift & light as that  
 The ties gave,  
 And he learned of finalities  
 Besides the grave.

## VIII.2.

Why were you born when the snow was falling?  
 You should have come to the cuckoo's calling,

---

'The Impulse', Robert Frost, Poet Laureate of Vermont (1874 – 1963), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is part of a sequence of poems called "The Hill Wife".

'A Dirge', Miss Christina Rossetti (1830 – 1894), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

Or when grapes are green in the cluster,  
 Or, at least, when lithe swallows muster  
     For their far off flying  
     From summer dying.

Why did you die when the lambs were cropping?  
 You should have died at the apples' dropping,  
 When the grasshopper comes to trouble,  
 And the wheat-fields are sodden stubble,  
     And all winds go sighing  
     For sweet things dying.

**VIII.3.** Every harlot was a virgin once.

## IX.

### IX.1.

When I see birches bend to left & right  
 Across the lines of straighter darker trees,  
 I like to think some boy's been swinging them.  
 But swinging doesn't bend them down to stay  
 As ice-storms do. Often you must have seen them  
 Loaded with ice a sunny winter morning  
 After a rain. They click upon themselves  
 As the breeze rises, and turn many-coloured  
 As the stir cracks & crazes their enamel.  
 Soon the sun's warmth makes them shed crystal shells  
 Shattering & avalanching on the snow-crust –  
 Such heaps of broken glass to sweep away  
 You'd think the inner dome of heaven had fallen.  
 They are dragged to the withered bracken by the load,  
 And they seem not to break; though once they are bowed  
 So low for long, they never right themselves:  
 You may see their trunks arching in the woods  
 Years afterwards, trailing their leaves on the ground  
 Like girls on hands & knees that throw their hair  
 Before them over their heads to dry in the sun.  
 But I was going to say when truth broke in  
 With all her matter-of-fact about the ice-storm  
 I should prefer to have some boy bend them

---

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

'Birches', Robert Frost, Poet Laureate of Vermont (1874 – 1963), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

As he went out & in to fetch the cows –  
 Some boy too far from town to learn baseball,  
 Whose only play was what he found himself,  
 Summer or winter, and could play alone.  
 One by one he subdued his father's trees  
 By riding them down over & over again  
 Until he took the stiffness out of them,  
 And not one but hung limp, not one was left  
 For him to conquer. He learned all there was  
 To learn about not launching out too soon  
 And so not carrying the tree away  
 Clear to the ground. He always kept his poise  
 To the top branches, climbing carefully  
 With the same pains you use to fill a cup  
 Up to the brim, and even above the brim.  
 Then he flung outward, feet first, with a swish,  
 Kicking his way down through the air to the ground.  
 So was I once myself a swinger of birches.  
 And so I dream of going back to be.  
 It's when I'm weary of considerations,  
 And life is too much like a pathless wood  
 Where your face burns and tickles with the cobwebs  
 Broken across it, and one eye is weeping  
 From a twig's having lashed across it open.  
 I'd like to get away from earth awhile  
 And then come back to it and begin over.  
 May no fate wilfully misunderstand me  
 And  $\frac{1}{2}$  grant what I wish & snatch me away  
 Not to return. Earth's the right place for love:  
 I don't know where it's likely to go better.  
 I'd like to go by climbing a birch tree,  
 And climb black branches up a snow-white trunk  
 Toward heaven, till the tree could bear no more,  
 But dipped its top and set me down again.  
 That would be good both going & coming back.  
 One could do worse than be a swinger of birches.

## IX.2.

Care-charmer sleep, son of the sable night,  
 Brother to death, in silent darkness born:

---

R Samuel Daniel (1562 – 1619), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. This is one of Daniel's sonnets "To Delia". Beaumont and Fletcher borrowed heavily from these lines in writing one of the songs in their play *Valentinian*.



Relieve my languish, and restore the light,  
 With dark forgetting of my cares, return;  
 And let the day be time enough to mourn  
 The shipwreck of my ill-adventured youth:  
 Let waking eyes suffice to wail their scorn,  
 Without the torment of the night's untruth.  
 Cease dreams, th'imagery of our day-desires,  
 To model forth the passions of the morrow;  
 Never let rising sun approve you liars,  
 To add more grief to aggravate my sorrow.  
 Still let me sleep, embracing clouds in vain;  
 And never wake to feel the day's disdain.

**IX.3.** One law for the lion and ox is oppression.

## X.

### X.1.

He talked of DELHI brothels ½ the night,  
 Quaking with fever; and then, dragging tight  
 The frouzy blankets to his chattering chin,  
 Cursed for an hour because they were so thin  
 And nothing would keep out that gnawing cold –  
 Scarce 40 years of age, and yet so old,  
 Haggard and worn with burning eyes set deep –  
 Until at last he cursed himself asleep.

Before I'd shut my eyes reveille came;  
 And as I dressed by the one candle-flame  
 The mellow golden light fell on his face  
 Still sleeping, touching it to tender grace,  
 Rounding the features life had scarred so deep,  
 Till youth came back to him in quiet sleep:  
 And then what women saw in him I knew  
 And why they'd love him all his brief life through.

---

William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. This is one of Blake's 'Proverbs of Hell' from *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

℞ 'Long Tom', Wilfrid Gibson (1878 – 1962), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

**X.2.**

We who are left, how shall we look again  
 Happily on the sun or feel the rain  
     Without remembering how they who went  
     Ungrudgingly and spent  
 Their lives for us loved, too, the sun & rain?

A bird among the rain-wet lilac sings –  
 But we, how shall we turn to little things  
     And listen to the birds & winds & streams  
     Made holy by their dreams,  
 Nor feel the heart-break in the heart of things?

**X.3.** The angel of death has been abroad throughout the land; you may also hear the beating of his wings.

**XI.****XI.1.**

In a solitude of the sea  
 Deep from human vanity,  
 And the pride of life that planned her, stilly couches she.

Steel chambers, late the pyres  
 Of her salamandrine fires,  
 Cold currents thrid, and turn to rhythmic tidal lyres.

Over the mirrors meant  
 To glass the opulent  
 The sea-worm crawls – grotesque, slimed, dumb, indifferent.

Jewels in joy designed  
 To ravish the sensuous mind  
 Lie lightless, all their sparkles bleared & black & blind.

---

‘Lament’, Wilfrid Gibson (1878 – 1962), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. Although Gibson joined the British Army during the First World War, he never served abroad. Due to some kind of medical defect, possibly poor eyesight, he ultimately served as a clerk, which – when one compares his lifespan to that of Edward Thomas, who was born in the same year – turned out to be a good career move.

The Rt Hon John Bright (1811 – 1889), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

‘The Convergence of the Twain’, Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Hardy wrote this poem in response to the sinking of the RMS *Titanic*. His ideas about the ‘immanent will’ seem to owe a debt to the philosophy of Arthur Schopenhauer.

Dim moon-eyed fishes near  
 Gaze at the gilded gear  
 And query, What does this vaingloriousness down here?

Well: while was fashioning  
 This creature of cleaving wing,  
 The immanent will that stirs & urges everything

Prepared a sinister mate  
 For her – so gaily great –  
 A shape of ice, for the time far & dissociate.

And as the smart ship grew  
 In stature, grace, & hue,  
 In shadowy silent distance grew the iceberg too.

Alien they seemed to be;  
 No mortal eye could see  
 The intimate welding of their later history,

Or sign that they were bent  
 By paths coincident  
 On being anon twin halves of one august event,

Till the spinner of the years  
 Said, Now! And each one hears,  
 And consummation comes, and jars two hemispheres.

## XI.2.

I suppose France this morning is as white as here:  
 High white clouds veiling the sun, and the mere  
 Cabbage fields & potato plants lovely to see,  
 Back behind at ROBEQ there with the day free.

In the ~~estaminets~~ I suppose the air as cool, and the floor  
 Grateful dark red; the beer and the different store  
 Of citron, grenadine, red wine as surely delectable  
 As in 1916; with the round stains on the dark table.

Journals Français tell the same news and the queer  
 Black printed columns give news, but no longer the fear

---

‘Behind the Line’, Ivor Gurney (1890 – 1937), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. ¶15.  
 An *estimanet* is a French word for a kind of café which serves alcohol.

Of shrapnel or any evil metal torments.  
 High white morning as here one is sure is on France.

**XI.3.** Sweet love of youth, forgive, if I forget thee.

## **XII.**

### **XII.1.**

Not a line of her writing have I,  
 Not a thread of her hair,  
 No mark of her late time as dame in her dwelling, whereby  
 I may picture her there;  
 And in vain do I urge my unsight  
 To conceive my lost prize  
 At her close, whom I knew when her dreams were upbrimming with  
 light,  
 And with laughter her eyes.

What scenes spread around her last days,  
 Sad, shining, or dim?  
 Did her gifts & compassions enray & enarch her sweet ways  
 With an aureat nimb?  
 Or did life-light decline from her years,  
 And mischances control  
 Her full day-star; unease, or regret, or forebodings, or fears  
 Disennoble her soul?

Thus I do but the phantom retain  
 Of the maiden of yore  
 As my relic; yet haply the best of her – fined in my brain  
 It may be the more  
 That no line of her writing have I,  
 Nor a thread of her hair,  
 No mark of her late time as dame in her dwelling, whereby  
 I may picture her there.

---

Miss Emily Brontë (1818 – 1848), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. This is a line from Miss Brontë's poem "Remembrance".

'Thoughts of Phena', Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. Subtitle: 'At News of Her Death'. The Phena in question was a Tryphena Sparks, Hardy's probable lover and cousin (or possibly niece) and at one time his intended bride. Prof Larkin commented once that reading this poem brought about his conversion to the genuinely English tradition of poetry, and away from Yeats's shoddy school.

**XII.2.**

When you shall see me in the toils of time,  
 My lauded beauties carried off from me,  
 My eyes no longer stars as in their prime,  
 My name forgot of maiden fair & free;  
 When, in your being, heart concedes to mind,  
 And judgment, though you scarce its process know,  
 Recalls the excellencies I once enshrined,  
 And you are irked that they have withered so;  
 Remembering mine the loss is, not the blame,  
 That sportsman time but rears his brood to kill,  
 Knowing me in my soul the very same  
 One who would die to spare you touch of ill,  
 Will you not grant to old affection's claim  
 The hand of friendship down life's sunless hill?

**XII.3.** One leak will sink a ship.

**XIII.****XIII.1.**

As I drive to the junction of lane & highway,  
 And the drizzle bedrenches the waggonette,  
 I look behind at the fading byway,  
 And see on its slope, now glistening wet,  
 Distinctly yet

Myself and a girlish form benighted  
 In dry march weather. We climb the road  
 Beside a chaise. We had just alighted  
 To ease the sturdy pony's load  
 When he sighed & slowed.

What we did as we climbed, and what we talked of  
 Matters not much, nor to what it led –

---

She to Him 1, Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

John Bunyan (1628 – 1688), Bunyan, *Pilgrim's Progress*. The quotation continues: 'and one sin will destroy a sinner.' Bunyan was no sailor, or else he would have written: one *flood* will cause a ship to *funder*.

℞ 'At Castle Boterel', Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Holden and Holden, *Poems that Make Grown Men Cry*. Kastel Boterel is the Cornish-language name for the English village of Boscastle. The village is named after a nearby castle (of which very little survives) which itself was named after the Barons Botreaux (pronounced like the English word *buttery*), a title in the Peerage of England in abeyance at the time of writing.

Something that life will not be balked of  
 Without rude reason till hope is dead,  
 And feeling fled.

It filled but a minute. But was there ever  
 A time of such quality, since or before,  
 In that hill's story ? To one mind never,  
 Though it has been climbed, foot-swift, foot-sore,  
 By 1000s more.

Primeval rocks form the road's steep border,  
 And much have they faced there, first & last,  
 Of the transitory in earth's long order;  
 But what they record in colour & cast  
 Is – that we two passed.

And to me, though time's unflinching rigour,  
 In mindless rote, has ruled from sight  
 The substance now, one phantom figure  
 Remains on the slope, as when that night  
 Saw us alight.

I look & see it there, shrinking, shrinking;  
 I look back at it amid the rain  
 For the very last time; for my sand is sinking,  
 And I shall traverse old love's domain  
 Never again.

### XIII.2.

I will remember how some threescore years  
 And 10 ago, a helpless babe, I toddled  
 From chair to chair about my mother's chamber,  
 Feeling, as 'twere, my way in the new world  
 And foolishly afraid of, or, as 't might be,  
 Foolishly pleased with, th' unknown objects round me.  
 And now with stiffened joints I sit all day  
 In one of those same chairs, as foolishly  
 Hoping or fearing something from me hid  
 Behind the thick, dark veil which I see hourly  
 And minutely on every side round closing  
 And from my view all objects shutting out.

---

'Very Old Man', Dr James Henry (1798 – 1876), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

**XIII.3.** You should have a softer pillow than my heart.

## XIV.

### XIV.1.

We kissed at the barrier; and passing through  
 She left me, and moment by moment got  
 Smaller & smaller, until to my view  
 She was but a spot;

A wee white spot of muslin fluff  
 That down the diminishing platform bore  
 Through hustling crowds of gentle & rough  
 To the carriage door.

Under the lamplight's fitful glowers,  
 Behind dark groups from far & near,  
 Whose interests were apart from ours,  
 She would disappear,

Then show again, till I ceased to see  
 That flexible form, that nebulous white;  
 And she who was more than my life to me  
 Had vanished quite.

We have penned new plans since that fair fond day,  
 And in season she will appear again  
 – Perhaps in the same soft white array –  
 But never as then.

And why, young man, must eternally fly  
 A joy you'll repeat, if you love her well?  
 O friend, nought happens twice thus; why,  
 I cannot tell.

### XIV.2.

Sweet, be not proud of those two eyes,  
 Which starlike sparkle in their skies;  
 Nor be you proud that you can see  
 All hearts your captives, yours yet free;

---

George Noel, 6th Baron Byron (1788 – 1824), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. Lord Byron is said to have uttered these words to his wife.

'On the Departure Platform', Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

'To Dianeme', Robert Herrick (1591 – 1634), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Be you not proud of that rich hair  
 Which wantons with the lovesick air;  
 Whenas that ruby which you wear,  
 Sunk from the tip of your soft ear,  
 Will last to be a precious stone  
 When all your world of beauty's gone.

**XIV.3.** The optimist proclaims that we live in the best of all possible worlds; and the pessimist fears this is true.

## XV.

### XV.1.

We stood by a pond that winter day,  
 And the sun was white, as though chidden of God,  
 And a few leaves lay on the starving sod;  
 They had fallen from an ash, and were grey.

Your eyes on me were as eyes that rove  
 Over tedious riddles of years ago;  
 And some words played between us to & fro  
 On which lost the more by our love.

The smile on your mouth was the deadliest thing  
 Alive enough to have strength to die;  
 And a grin of bitterness swept thereby  
 Like an ominous bird a-wing...

Since then, keen lessons that love deceives,  
 And wrings with wrong, have shaped to me  
 Your face, and the God-cursed sun, & a tree,  
 And a pond edged with greyish leaves.

### XV.2.

It is not death, that sometime in a sigh  
 This eloquent breath shall take its speechless flight;  
 That sometime these bright stars, that now reply  
 In sunlight to the sun, shall set in night;  
 That this warm conscious flesh shall perish quite,  
 And all life's ruddy springs forget to flow;  
 That thoughts shall cease, and the immortal spright  
 Be lapped in alien clay and laid below;

---

James Cabell (1879 – 1958), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Neutral Tones', Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

'Sonnet', Thomas Hood (1799 – 1845), Read and Dobrée, *The London Book of English Verse*.



It is not death to know this – but to know  
 That pious thoughts, which visit at new graves  
 In tender pilgrimage, will cease to go  
 So duly and so oft – and when grass waves  
 Over the past-away, there may be then  
 No resurrection in the minds of men.

**XV.3.** Experience is the best of schoolmasters, only the school fees are heavy.

## XVI.

### XVI.1.

When the present has latched its postern behind my tremulous stay,  
 And the may month flaps its glad green leaves like wings,  
 Delicate-filmed as new-spun silk, will the neighbours say,  
 ‘He was a man who used to notice such things’?

If it be in the dusk when, like an eyelid’s soundless blink,  
 The dewfall-hawk comes crossing the shades to alight  
 Upon the wind-warped upland thorn, a gazer may think,  
 ‘To him this must have been a familiar sight.’

If I pass during some nocturnal blackness, mothy & warm,  
 When the hedgehog travels furtively over the lawn,  
 One may say, ‘He strove that such innocent creatures should come to no  
 harm,  
 But he could do little for them; and now he is gone.’

If, when hearing that I have been stilled at last, they stand at the door,  
 Watching the full-starred heavens that winter sees,  
 Will this thought rise on those who will meet my face no more,  
 ‘He was one who had an eye for such mysteries’?

And will any say when my bell of quittance is heard in the gloom,  
 And a crossing breeze cuts a pause in its outrollings,  
 Till they rise again, as they were a new bell’s boom,  
 ‘He hears it not now, but used to notice such things’?

---

Thomas Carlyle (1795 – 1881), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

‘Afterwards’, Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

**XVI.2.**

Into my heart an air that kills  
 From yon far country blows:  
 What are those blue remembered hills?  
 What spires, what farms are those?

That is the land of lost content  
 – I see it shining plain –  
 The happy highways where I went  
 And cannot come again.

**XVI.3.** The heart of another is a dark forest.

**XVII.****XVII.1.**

What is a woman that you forsake her,  
 And the hearth-fire and the home-acre,  
 To go with the old grey widow-maker?

She has no house to lay a guest in –  
 But one chill bed for all to rest in,  
 That the pale suns & the stray bergs nest in.

She has no strong white arms to fold you,  
 But the 10-times-fingering weed to hold you –  
 Out on the rocks where the tide has rolled you.

Yet, when the signs of summer thicken,  
 And the ice breaks, and the birch-buds quicken,  
 Yearly you turn from our side, and sicken –

Sicken again for the shouts & the slaughters.  
 You steal away to the lapping waters,  
 And look at your ship in her winter quarters.

You forget our mirth, and talk at the tables,  
 The kine in the shed & the horse in the stables –  
 To pitch her sides and go over her cables.

---

Prof Alfred Housman (1859 – 1936), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

Miss Wilella Cather (1873 – 1947), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

‘Harp Song of the Dane Women’, Rudyard Kipling (1865 – 1936), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. These lines are found in Kipling’s story “The Knights of the Joyous Venture”, which is in the collection *Puck of Pook’s Hill*.

Then you drive out where the storm clouds swallow,  
 And the sound of your oar-blades, falling hollow,  
 Is all we have left through the months to follow.

Ah what is woman that you forsake her,  
 And the hearth-fire and the home-acre,  
 To go with the old grey widow-maker?

## XVII.2.

Stand close around, ye stygian set,  
 With *Dirce* in one boat conveyed;  
 Or *Charon*, seeing, may forget  
 That he is old and she a shade.

**XVII.3.** Nothing to be done without a bribe I find, in love as well as law.

## XVIII.

### XVIII.1.

At dinner, she is hostess; I am host.  
 Went the feast ever cheerfuller? She keeps  
 The topic over intellectual deeps  
 In buoyancy afloat. They see no ghost.  
 With sparkling surface-eyes we ply the ball:  
 It is in truth a most contagious game:  
 “Hiding the Skeleton” shall be its name.  
 Such play as this the devils might appal!  
 But here’s the greater wonder; in that we,  
 Enamoured of an acting nought can tire,  
 Each other, like true hypocrites, admire;  
 Warm-lighted looks, love’s ephemerae,  
 Shoot gaily o’er the dishes & the wine.  
 We waken envy of our happy lot.  
 Fast, sweet, & golden, shows the marriage-knot.  
 Dear guests, you now have seen love’s corpse-light shine.

---

‘Dirce’, Walter Landor (1775 – 1864), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. Dirce is an obscure figure in Greek mythology, the wicked aunt – according to Pseudo-Apollodorus – of Zeus’ twin sons Amphion and Zethus. The myth seems to have only a tangential connection to this poem.

Mrs Susanna Centlivre (1669 – 1723), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ George Meredith (1828 – 1909), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is taken from *Modern Love*, Meredith’s sequence of poems describing the breakdown of his first marriage.

**XVIII.2.**

Violets from PLUG STREET WOOD,  
 Sweet, I send you from oversea.  
 (It is strange they should be blue,  
 Blue, when his soaked blood was red,  
 For they grew around his head:  
 It is strange they should be blue.)

Violets from PLUG STREET WOOD,  
 Think what they have meant to me –  
 Life & hope & love & you.  
 (And you did not see them grow,  
 Where his mangled body lay,  
 Hiding horror from the day;  
 Sweetest it was better so.)

Violets from oversea,  
 To your dear, far, forgetting land,  
 These I send in memory,  
 Knowing you will understand.

**XVIII.3.** There is no hope but we will try to have no fear.

**XIX.****XIX.1.**

By this he knew she wept with waking eyes:  
 That, at his hand's light quiver by her head,  
 The strange low sobs that shook their common bed  
 Were called into her with a sharp surprise,  
 And strangled mute, like little gaping snakes,  
 Dreadfully venomous to him. She lay  
 Stone-still, and the long darkness flowed away  
 With muffled pulses. Then, as midnight makes  
 Her giant heart of memory & tears  
 Drink the pale drug of silence, and so beat  
 Sleep's heavy measure, they from head to feet  
 Were moveless, looking through their dead black years,

---

'Villanelle', Roland Leighton (1895 – 1915), Caitlin, *Testament of Youth*. The Almanacker heard this poem recited over Leighton's grave when he was sixteen. ¶1. Plug Street was the name adopted by the British soldiers for Ploegsteert, a Belgian village.

Mrs Mary Chesnut (1823 – 1886), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

George Meredith (1828 – 1909), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is taken from *Modern Love*, Meredith's sequence of poems describing the breakdown of his first marriage.

By vain regret scrawled over the blank wall.  
 Like sculptured effigies they might be seen  
 Upon their marriage-tomb, the sword between;  
 Each wishing for the sword that severs all.

### XIX.2.

I saw the ramparts of my native land,  
 One time so strong, now dropping in decay,  
 Their strength destroyed by this new age's way  
 That has worn out and rotted what was grand.  
 I went into the fields: there I could see  
 The sun drink up the waters newly thawed,  
 And on the hills the moaning cattle pawed;  
 Their miseries robbed the day of light for me.

I went into my house: I saw how spotted,  
 Decaying things made that old home their prize.  
 My withered walking-staff had come to bend;  
 I felt the age had won; my sword was rotted,  
 And there was nothing on which I set my eyes  
 That was not a reminder of the end.

**XIX.3.** It isn't that they can't see the solution; it is that they can't see the problem.

## XX.

### XX.1.

He found her by the ocean's moaning verge,  
 Nor any wicked change in her discerned;  
 And she believed his old love had returned,  
 Which was her exultation, & her scourge.  
 She took his hand, and walked with him, and seemed  
 The wife he sought, though shadow-like & dry.  
 She had one terror, lest her heart should sigh,  
 And tell her loudly that she no longer dreamed.  
 She dared not say, 'This is my breast: look in.'  
 But there's a strength to help the desperate weak.  
 That night he learned how silence best can speak

---

'Sonnet', Dr John Masefield, Poet Laureate (1878 – 1967), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This is a translation of a poem by Don Francisco de Quevedo.

Gilbert Chesterton, Knight (1874 – 1936), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

George Meredith (1828 – 1909), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is taken from *Modern Love*, Meredith's sequence of poems describing the breakdown of his first marriage.

The awful things when pity pleads for sin.  
 About the middle of the night her call  
     Was heard, and he came wondering to the bed.  
     Now kiss me, dear! It may be, now! she said.  
 LETHE had passed those lips, and he knew all.

## XX.2.

Methought I saw my late espoused saint  
     Brought to me, like *Alcestis*, from the grave,  
     Whom *Jove's* great son to her glad husband gave,  
 Rescued from death by force, though pale & faint.  
 Mine, as whom washed from spot of child-bed taint  
     Purification in the old law did save,  
     And such as yet once more I trust to have  
 Full sight of her in heaven without restraint,  
 Came vested all in white, pure as her mind;  
     Her face was veiled, yet to my fancied sight  
 Love, sweetness, goodness, in her person shined  
     So clear as in no face with more delight.  
 But O as to embrace me she inclined,  
     I waked, she fled, and day brought back my night.

**XX.3.** The poor have sometimes objected to being governed badly; the rich have always objected to being governed at all.

## XXI.

### XXI.1.

It is the clay what makes the earth stick to his spade;  
     He fills in holes like this year after year;  
 The others have gone; they were tired, and ½ afraid  
     But I would rather be standing here;

There is nowhere else to go. I have seen this place  
     From the windows of the train that's going past  
 Against the sky. This is rain on my face;  
     It was raining here when I saw it last.

---

Sonnet 23, John Milton (1608 – 1674), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. ¶2. Alcestis was the wife of Admetus. Having given her life to ensure her husband's survival, Heracles broke into the underworld and returned her to her home.

Gilbert Chesterton, Knight (1874 – 1936), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ 'In Nunhead Cemetery', Miss Charlotte Mew (1869 – 1928), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

There is something horrible about a flower;  
This, broken in my hand, is one of those  
He threw it in just now; it will not live another hour;  
There are 1000s more; you do not miss a rose.

One of the children hanging about  
Pointed at the whole dreadful heap and smiled  
This morning after that was carried out;  
There is something terrible about a child.

We were like children last week, in the STRAND;  
That was the day you laughed at me  
Because I tried to make you understand  
The cheap, stale chap I used to be  
Before I saw the things you made me see.

This is not a real place; perhaps by & by  
I shall wake – I am getting drenched with all this rain:  
Tomorrow I will tell you about the eyes of the CRYSTAL PALACE train  
Looking down on us, and you will laugh & I shall see what you see  
again.

Not here, not now. We said, Not yet  
Across our low stone parapet  
Will the quick shadows of the sparrows fall.

But still it was a lovely thing  
Through the grey months to wait for spring  
With the birds that go a-gypsying  
In the parks till the blue seas call.  
And next to these, you used to care  
For the lions in TRAFALGAR SQUARE,  
Who'll stand & speak for LONDON when her bell of judgement tolls –  
And the gulls at WESTMINSTER that were  
The old sea-captains' souls.  
Today again the brown tide splashes step by step, the river-stair,  
And the gulls are there!

By a month we have missed our day:  
The children would have hung about  
Round the carriage & over the way  
As you & I came out.

We should have stood on the gulls' black cliffs & heard the sea  
And seen the moon's white track;  
I would have called; you would have come to me  
And kissed me back.

You have never done that: I do not know  
Why I stood staring at your bed  
And heard you, though you spoke so low,  
But could not reach your hands, your little head;  
There was nothing we could not do, you said,  
And you went, and I let you go!

Now I will burn you back; I will burn you through,  
Though I am damned for it we two will lie  
And burn, here where the starlings fly  
To these white stones from the wet sky;  
Dear, you will say this is not I –  
It would not be you! It would not be you!

If for only a little while  
You will think of it you will understand;  
If you will touch my sleeve & smile  
As you did that morning in the STRAND  
I can wait quietly with you  
Or go away if you want me to –  
God! What is God? But your face has gone & your hand!  
Let me stay here too.

When I was quite a little lad  
At Christmas time we went ½ mad  
For joy of all the toys we had,  
And then we used to sing about the sheep  
The shepherds watched by night;  
We used to pray to *Christ* to keep  
Our small souls safe till morning light;  
I am scared; I am staying with you tonight –  
Put me to sleep.

I shall stay here: here you can see the sky;  
The houses in the street are much too high;  
There is no one left to speak to there;  
Here they are everywhere,  
And just above them fields & fields of roses lie –  
If he would dig it all up again they would not die.



**XXI.2.**

Here lies wise and valiant dust  
 Huddled up 'twixt fit & just,  
*Strafford*, who was hurried hence  
 'Twixt treason & convenience.  
 He spent his time here in a mist,  
 A papist, yet a calvinist;  
 His prince's nearest joy & grief,  
 He had, yet wanted all relief;  
 The prop & ruin of the state;  
 The people's violent love & hate;  
 One in extremes loved & abhorred.  
 Riddles lie here, or in a word,  
 Here lies blood; and let it lie  
 Speechless still and never cry.

**XXI.3.** What we all dread most... is a maze with no centre.

**XXII.****XXII.1.**

Down the close, darkening lanes they sang their way  
 To the siding-shed,  
 And lined the train with faces grimly gay.

Their breasts were stuck all white with wreath & spray  
 As men's are, dead.

Dull porters watched them, and a casual tramp  
 Stood staring hard,  
 Sorry to miss them from the upland camp.  
 Then, unmoved, signals nodded, and a lamp  
 Winked to the guard.

So secretly, like wrongs hushed-up, they went.  
 They were not ours:  
 We never heard to which front these were sent.

---

'Epitaph on the Earl of Strafford', The Rev Dr Clement Paman (1612 – 1664), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. Strafford, one of the Charles I's ministers, offered himself up to the king as a sacrifice to appease a certain faction in the House of Commons, and was duly beheaded. Sir Christopher notes that others have attributed this poem to John Cleveland.

Gilbert Chesterton, Knight (1874 – 1936), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
 'The Send-Off', Wilfred Owen (1893 – 1918), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

Nor there if they yet mock what women meant  
Who gave them flowers.

Shall they return to beatings of great bells  
In wild trainloads?  
A few, a few, too few for drums & yells,  
May creep back, silent, to still village wells  
Up ½ known roads.

## XXII.2.

Come away, come away, death,  
And in sad cypress let me be laid;  
Fly away, fly away, breath;  
I am slain by a fair cruel maid.  
My shroud of white, stuck all with yew,  
O prepare it!  
My part of death, no one so true  
Did share it.

Not a flower, not a flower sweet  
On my black coffin let there be strown;  
Not a friend, not a friend greet  
My poor corpse, where my bones shall be thrown:  
A thousand thousand sighs to save,  
Lay me O where  
Sad true lover never find my grave,  
To weep there.

**XXII.3.** Ignorance more frequently begets confidence than does knowledge.

## XXIII.

### XXIII.1.

The miller's wife had waited long;  
The tea was cold; the fire was dead;  
And there might yet be nothing wrong  
In how he went & what he said:  
'There are no millers any more,'  
Was all that she had heard him say;

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. This song is sung by Feste in *Twelfth Night* II.4.

Dr Charles Darwin (1809 – 1882), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'The Mill', Edwin Robinson (1869 – 1935), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

And he had lingered at the door  
 So long that it seemed yesterday.

Sick with a fear that had no form  
 She knew that she was there at last;  
 And in the mill there was a warm  
 And mealy fragrance of the past.  
 What else there was would only seem  
 To say again what he had meant;  
 And what was hanging from a beam  
 Would not have heeded where she went.

And if she thought it followed her,  
 She may have reasoned in the dark  
 That one way of the few there were  
 Would hide her & would leave no mark:  
 Black water, smooth above the weir  
 Like starry velvet in the night,  
 Though ruffled once, would soon appear  
 The same as ever to the sight.

## XXIII.2.

Fear no more the heat o' the sun,  
 Nor the furious winter's rages;  
 Thou thy worldly task hast done,  
 Home art gone, and ta'en thy wages:  
 Golden lads & girls all must,  
 As chimney-sweepers, come to dust.

Fear no more the frown o' the great;  
 Thou art past the tyrant's stroke;  
 Care no more to clothe & eat;  
 To thee the reed is as the oak:  
 The sceptre, learning, physic must  
 All follow this, and come to dust.

Fear no more the lightning flash,  
 Nor the all-dreaded thunder stone;  
 Fear not slander, censure rash;  
 Thou hast finished joy & moan:

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. These lines are sung by the king's two sons in *Cymbeline* IV.2.

All lovers young, all lovers must  
Consign to thee, and come to dust.

**XXIII.3.** The good die early, and the bad die late.

## XXIV.

### XXIV.1.

The quality of mercy is not strained;  
It droppeth as the gentle rain from heaven  
Upon the place beneath. It is twice blest;  
It blesseth him that gives & him that takes:  
'Tis mightiest in the mightiest; it becomes  
The throned monarch better than his crown:  
His sceptre shows the force of temporal power,  
The attribute to awe & majesty,  
Wherein doth sit the dread & fear of kings;  
But mercy is above this sceptred sway;  
It is enthronèd in the hearts of kings;  
It is an attribute to God himself;  
And earthly power doth then show likest God's  
When mercy seasons justice. Therefore, jew,  
Though justice be thy plea, consider this,  
That, in the course of justice, none of us  
Should see salvation: we do pray for mercy;  
And that same prayer doth teach us all to render  
The deeds of mercy. I have spoke thus much  
To mitigate the justice of thy plea;  
Which if thou follow, this strict court of VENICE  
Must needs give sentence 'gainst the merchant there.

### XXIV.2.

How like a winter hath my absence been  
From thee, the pleasure of the fleeting year!  
What freezings have I felt, what dark days seen,  
What old december's bareness everywhere!

And yet this time removed was summer's time:  
The teeming autumn, big with rich increase,

---

Daniel Defoe (1660 – 1731), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. These lines are spoken by Portia in *The Merchant of Venice* IV.1

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Bearing the wanton burden of the prime  
Like widowed wombs after their lords' decease:

Yet this abundant issue seemed to me  
But hope of orphans, & unfathered fruit;  
For summer & his pleasures wait on thee,  
And, thou away, the very birds are mute;

Or if they sing, 'tis with so dull a cheer,  
That leaves look pale, dreading the winter's near.

**XXIV.3.** A conscience is a more expensive encumbrance than a wife or a carriage.

## XXV.

### XXV.1.

What says my brother? 'Death is a fearful thing.'  
And shamèd life a hateful.  
'Ay, but to die, and go we know not where;  
To lie in cold obstruction and to rot;  
This sensible warm motion to become  
A kneaded clod; and the delighted spirit  
To bathe in fiery floods, or to reside  
In thrilling region of thick-ribbèd ice;  
To be imprisoned in the viewless winds,  
And blown with restless violence round about  
The pendent world; or to be worse than worst  
Of those that lawless & incertain thought  
Imagine howling: 'tis too horrible!  
The weariest & most loathèd worldly life  
That age, ache, penury & imprisonment  
Can lay on nature is a paradise  
To what we fear of death.'

### XXV.2.

She should have died hereafter;  
There would have been a time for such a word.  
Tomorrow & tomorrow & tomorrow,  
Creeps in this petty pace from day to day

---

Thomas de Quincey (1785 – 1859), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. This is a dialogue between Isabella and Claudio from *Measure for Measure* III.1.

℞ William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. These lines form the eponymous villain's lament for his wife from *Macbeth* V.5.

To the last syllable of recorded time,  
 And all our yesterdays have lighted fools  
 The way to dusty death. Out, out, brief candle!  
 Life's but a walking shadow, a poor player  
 That struts & frets his hour upon the stage  
 And then is heard no more: it is a tale  
 Told by an idiot, full of sound & fury,  
 Signifying nothing.

**XXV.3.** Parting is all who know of heaven, and all we need of hell.

## XXVI.

### XXVI.1.

When the lamp is shattered  
 The light in the dust lies dead –  
 When the cloud is scattered  
 The rainbow's glory is shed.  
 When the lute is broken,  
 Sweet tones are remembered not;  
 When the lips have spoken,  
 Loved accents are soon forgot.

As music & splendor  
 Survive not the lamp & the lute,  
 The heart's echoes render  
 No song when the spirit is mute:–  
 No song but sad dirges,  
 Like the wind through a ruined cell,  
 Or the mournful surges  
 That ring the dead seaman's knell.

When hearts have once mingled  
 Love first leaves the well-built nest;  
 The weak one is singled  
 To endure what it once possessed.  
 O love! who bewailest  
 The frailty of all things here,  
 Why choose you the frailest  
 For your cradle, your home, and your bier?

---

Charles Dickens (1812 – 1870), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. These words are last two lines of Miss Dickinson's poem beginning 'My life closed twice before its close'.

'The Flight of Love', Percy Shelley (1792 – 1822), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Its passions will rock thee  
 As the storms rock the ravens on high;  
 Bright reason will mock thee,  
 Like the sun from a wintry sky.  
 From thy nest every rafter  
 Will rot, and thine eagle home  
 Leave thee naked to laughter,  
 When leaves fall & cold winds come.

## XXVI.2.

A widow bird sate mourning for her love  
 Upon a wintry bough;  
 The frozen wind crept on above,  
 The freezing stream below.

There was no leaf upon the forest bare.  
 No flower upon the ground,  
 And little motion in the air  
 Except the mill-wheel's sound.

**XXVI.3.** There are strings... in the human heart that had better not  
 be vibrated.

## XXVII.

## XXVII.1.

We are as clouds that veil the midnight moon;  
 How restlessly they speed, & gleam, & quiver,  
 Streaking the darkness radiantly – yet soon  
 Night closes round, and they are lost forever:

Or like forgotten lyres, whose dissonant strings  
 Give various response to each varying blast,  
 To whose frail frame no second motion brings  
 One mood or modulation like the last.

We rest. A dream has power to poison sleep;  
 We rise. One wandering thought pollutes the day;

---

Percy Shelley (1792 – 1822), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

Charles Dickens (1812 – 1870), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. These words are uttered by Mr Tappertit in *Barnaby Rudge*, chapter 22.

‘The third and fourth verses of this poem appear in Mrs Mary Shelley’s *Frankenstein*, without attribution to her husband; it is unclear whether or not she was their genuine author.’, Percy Shelley (1792 – 1822), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

We feel, conceive or reason, laugh or weep;  
Embrace fond woe, or cast our cares away:

It is the same. For, be it joy or sorrow,  
The path of its departure still is free:  
Man's yesterday may ne'er be like his morrow;  
Nought may endure but mutability.

## XXVII.2.

Lift not the painted veil which those who live  
Call life: though unreal shapes be pictured there,  
And it but mimic all we would believe  
With colours idly spread – behind, lurk fear  
And hope, twin destinies; who ever weave  
Their shadows, o'er the chasm, sightless & drear.  
I knew one who had lifted it – he sought,  
For his lost heart was tender, things to love,  
But found them not, alas, nor was there aught  
The world contains, the which he could approve.  
Through the unheeding many he did move,  
A splendour among shadows, a bright blot  
Upon this gloomy scene, a spirit that strove  
For truth, and like the preacher found it not.

**XXVII.3.** You will be damned if you do, and you will be damned if you don't.

## XXVIII.

### XXVIII.1.

Nothing is better, I well think,  
Than love; the hidden well-water  
Is not so delicate to drink:  
This was well seen of me & her.

I served her in a royal house;  
I served her wine & curious meat.

---

'A Complaint by Night of the Lover not Beloved', Percy Shelley (1792 – 1822), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. The title Somerset Maugham's novel *The Painted Veil* is drawn from this sonnet.

Lorenzo Dow (1777 – 1834), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. Dow was speaking specifically about the Calvinist doctrine of

'The Leper', Algernon Swinburne (1837 – 1909), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. As Swinburne's own note indicates, this poem is a retelling of a digression in the *Grand Chroniques de France*, 1505.



For will to kiss between her brows,  
I had no heart to sleep or eat.

Mere scorn God knows she had of me,  
A poor scribe, nowise great or fair,  
Who plucked his clerk's hood back to see  
Her curled-up lips & amorous hair.

I vex my head with thinking this.  
Yea, though God always hated me,  
And hates me now that I can kiss  
Her eyes, plait up her hair to see

How she then wore it on the brows,  
Yet am I glad to have her dead  
Here in this wretched wattled house  
Where I can kiss her eyes & head.

Nothing is better, I well know,  
Than love; no amber in cold sea  
Or gathered berries under snow:  
That is well seen of her & me.

Three thoughts I make my pleasure of:  
First I take heart & think of this:  
That knight's gold hair she chose to love,  
His mouth she had such will to kiss.

Then I remember that sundawn  
I brought him by a privy way  
Out at her lattice, and thereon  
What gracious words she found to say.

(Cold rushes for such little feet —  
Both feet could lie into my hand.  
A marvel was it of my sweet  
Her upright body could so stand.)

'Sweet friend, God give you thank & grace;  
Now am I clean & whole of shame,  
Nor shall men burn me in the face  
For my sweet fault that scandals them.'

I tell you over word by word.  
She, sitting edgewise on her bed,

Holding her feet, said thus. The third,  
A sweeter thing than these, I said.

God, that makes time and ruins it  
And alters not, abiding God,  
Changed with disease her body sweet,  
The body of love wherein she abode.

Love is more sweet & comelier  
Than a dove's throat strained out to sing.  
All they spat out and cursed at her  
And cast her forth for a base thing.

They cursed her, seeing how God had wrought  
This curse to plague her, a curse of his.  
Fools were they surely, seeing not  
How sweeter than all sweet she is.

He that had held her by the hair,  
With kissing lips blinding her eyes,  
Felt her bright bosom, strained & bare,  
Sigh under him, with short mad cries

Out of her throat & sobbing mouth  
And body broken up with love,  
With sweet hot tears his lips were loth  
Her own should taste the savour of,

Yea, he inside whose grasp all night  
Her fervent body leapt or lay,  
Stained with sharp kisses red & white,  
Found her a plague to spurn away.

I hid her in this wattled house,  
I served her water & poor bread.  
For joy to kiss between her brows  
Time upon time I was nigh dead.

Bread failed; we got but well-water  
And gathered grass with dropping seed.  
I had such joy of kissing her,  
I had small care to sleep or feed.

Sometimes when service made me glad  
The sharp tears leapt between my lids,

Falling on her, such joy I had  
To do the service God forbids.

‘I pray you let me be at peace;  
Get hence, make room for me to die.’  
She said that: her poor lip would cease,  
Put up to mine, and turn to cry.

I said, ‘Bethink yourself how love  
Fared in us twain, what either did;  
Shall I unclothe my soul thereof?  
That I should do this, God forbid.’

Yea, though God hateth us, he knows  
That hardly in a little thing  
Love faileth of the work it does  
Till it grow ripe for gathering.

Six months, and now my sweet is dead  
A trouble takes me; I know not  
If all were done well, all well said,  
No word or tender deed forgot.

Too sweet, for the least part in her,  
To have shed life out by fragments; yet,  
Could the close mouth catch breath and stir,  
I might see something I forget.

Six months, and I sit still and hold  
In two cold palms her cold two feet.  
Her hair,  $\frac{1}{2}$  grey  $\frac{1}{2}$  ruined gold,  
Thrills me and burns me in kissing it.

Love bites and stings me through, to see  
Her keen face made of sunken bones.  
Her worn-off eyelids madden me,  
That were shot through with purple once.

She said, ‘Be good with me; I grow  
So tired for shame’s sake, I shall die  
If you say nothing:’ even so.  
And she is dead now, and shame put by.

Yea, and the scorn she had of me  
In the old time, doubtless vexed her then.

I never should have kissed her. See  
 What fools God's anger makes of men!

She might have loved me a little too,  
 Had I been humbler for her sake.  
 But that new shame could make love new  
 She saw not – yet her shame did make.

I took too much upon my love,  
 Having for such mean service done  
 Her beauty & all the ways thereof,  
 Her face & all the sweet thereon.

Yea, all this while I tended her,  
 I know the old love held fast his part:  
 I know the old scorn waxed heavier,  
 Mixed with sad wonder, in her heart.

It may be all my love went wrong –  
 A scribe's work writ awry and blurred,  
 Scrawled after the blind evensong –  
 Spoilt music with no perfect word.

But surely I would fain have done  
 All things the best I could. Perchance  
 Because I failed, came short of one,  
 She kept at heart that other man's.

I am grown blind with all these things:  
 It may be now she hath in sight  
 Some better knowledge; still there clings  
 The old question. Will not God do right?

## XXVIII.2.

Call for the robin-redbreast & the wren,  
 Since o'er shady groves they hover  
 And with leaves & flowers do cover  
 The friendless bodies of unburied men.  
 Call unto his funeral dole  
 The ant, the field-mouse, & the mole  
 To rear him hillocks that shall keep him warm  
 And (when gay tombs are robbed) sustain no harm:

---

"A Land Dirge", John Webster (1580 – 1634), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

But keep the wolf far thence, that's foe to men,  
For with his nails he'll dig them up again.

**XXVIII.3.** Where there is no imagination there is no horror.

## XXIX.

### XXIX.1.

Rain, midnight rain, nothing but the wild rain  
On this bleak hut, & solitude, and me  
Remembering again that I shall die  
And neither hear the rain nor give it thanks  
For washing me cleaner than I have been  
Since I was born into solitude.  
Blessèd are the dead that the rain rains upon:  
But here I pray that none whom once I loved  
Is dying tonight or lying still awake  
Solitary, listening to the rain,  
Either in pain or thus in sympathy  
Helpless among the living and the dead,  
Like a cold water among broken reeds,  
Myriads of broken reeds all still & stiff,  
Like me who have no love which this wild rain  
Has not dissolved except the love of death,  
If love it be towards what is perfect and  
Cannot, the tempest tells me, disappoint.

### XXIX.2.

The world is too much with us; late & soon,  
Getting & spending, we lay waste our powers;  
Little we see in nature that is ours;  
We have given our hearts away, a sordid boon!  
This sea that bares her bosom to the moon,  
The winds that will be howling at all hours,  
And are up-gathered now like sleeping flowers,  
For this, for everything, we are out of tune;  
It moves us not. Great God! I'd rather be  
A pagan suckled in a creed outworn;  
So might I, standing on this pleasant lea,

---

Sir Arthur Doyle (1859 – 1930), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Rain', Edward Thomas (1878 – 1917), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Dr William Wordsworth, Poet Laureate (1770 – 1850), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. ¶13. Proteus and Triton are minor aquatic deities from Greek mythology who appear in Homer's *Ὀδύσσεια* and Hesiod's *Θεογονία* respectively.

Have glimpses that would make me less forlorn;  
Have sight of *Proteus* rising from the sea;  
Or hear old *Triton* blow his wreathèd horn.

**XXIX.3.** Where are the snows of yesteryear?

---

Gabriel Rossetti (1828 – 1882), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. This quotation forms the refrain of a ballad, which was translated from a French poem, “Ballad des dames du temps jadis”, by François Villon. The French is, ‘Mais où sont les neiges d’antan?’

## CHAPTER 12

# Duodecember

### I.

#### I.1.

'Tis the year's midnight, and it is the day's,  
*Lucy's*, who scarce seven hours herself unmasks;  
The sun is spent, and now his flasks  
Send forth light squibs, no constant rays;  
The world's whole sap is sunk;  
The general balm th'hydroptic earth hath drunk,  
Whither, as to the bed's feet, life is shrunk,  
Dead & interred; yet all these seem to laugh,  
Compared with me, who am their epitaph.

Study me then, you who shall lovers be  
At the next world, that is, at the next spring;  
For I am every dead thing,  
In whom love wrought new alchemy.  
For his art did express  
A quintessence even from nothingness,  
From dull privations, and lean emptiness;  
He ruined me, and I am re-begot  
Of absence, darkness, death: things which are not.

All others, from all things, draw all that's good,  
Life, soul, form, spirit, whence they being have;  
I, by love's limbeck, am the grave

---

'A Nocturnal upon St Lucy's Day, Being the Shortest Day', The Very Rev Dr John Donne (1572 – 1631), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. St Lucy's day falls on the thirteenth day of December in both the Julian and Gregorian calendars. Christmas, the twenty-fifth of December, being a kind of successor to a Roman festival in honour of the sun, was intended to fall on (or very close to) the winter solstice; however, due to the slight failings of the Julian calendar, by the seventeenth century the solstice actually occurred on the thirteenth. The Gregorian reforms essentially rectified the situation, although they've also anachronised a rather beautiful poem. ¶139. The 'goat' refers primarily to Aries, the sign of the zodiac corresponding to spring.

Of all that's nothing. Oft a flood  
 Have we two wept, and so  
 Drowned the whole world, us two; oft did we grow  
 To be two chaoses, when we did show  
 Care to aught else; and often absences  
 Withdrew our souls, and made us carcasses.

But I am by her death (which word wrongs her)  
 Of the first nothing the elixir grown;  
     Were I a man, that I were one  
     I needs must know; I should prefer,  
     If I were any beast,  
 Some ends, some means; yea plants, yea stones detest,  
 And love; all, all some properties invest;  
 If I an ordinary nothing were,  
 As shadow, a light and body must be here.

But I am none; nor will my sun renew.  
 You lovers, for whose sake the lesser sun  
     At this time to the goat is run  
     To fetch new lust, and give it you,  
     Enjoy your summer all;  
 Since she enjoys her long night's festival,  
 Let me prepare towards her, and let me call  
 This hour her vigil, and her eve, since this  
 Both the year's, and the day's deep midnight is.

## I.2.

Farewell, thou child of my right hand, and joy;  
 My sin was too much hope of thee, loved boy.  
 Seven years tho' wert lent to me, and I thee pay,  
 Exacted by thy fate, on the just day.  
 O could I lose all father now! For why  
 Will man lament the state he should envy?  
 To have so soon 'scaped world's & flesh's rage,  
 And if no other misery, yet age?  
 Rest in soft peace, and, asked, say, Here doth lie  
*Ben Jonson* his best piece of poetry –  
 For whose sake henceforth all his vows be such,  
 As what he loves may never like too much.

---

'On My First Son', Ben Jonson (1572 – 1637), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.  
 The name Benjamin, the name of the departed child, means 'son of my right hand'.



**I.3.** A nightingale... dies for shame if another bird sings better.

## II.

### II.1.

Go & catch a falling star;  
 Get with child a mandrake root;  
 Tell me where all past years are,  
 Or who cleft the devil's foot;  
 Teach me to hear mermaids singing,  
 Or to keep off envy's stinging,  
 And find  
 What wind  
 Serves to advance an honest mind.

If thou be'st born to strange sights,  
 Things invisible to see,  
 Ride 10,000 days & nights,  
 Till age snow white hairs on thee;  
 Thou, when thou return'st, wilt tell me,  
 All strange wonders that befell thee,  
 And swear:  
 Nowhere  
 Lives a woman true, and fair.

If thou find'st one, let me know;  
 Such a pilgrimage were sweet;  
 Yet do not; I would not go,  
 Though at next door we might meet;  
 Though she were true when you met her,  
 And last till you write your letter,  
 Yet she  
 Will be  
 False, ere I come, to two, or three.

---

The Rev Robert Burton (1577 – 1640), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

The Very Rev Dr John Donne (1572 – 1631), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The line about the 'mandrake root' is puzzling. Surely it should be, 'Get with child *by* mandrake root' since mandrakes were once believed to have aphrodisiac and fertilising qualities (as per Genesis 30), an old wives' tale similar to the legends about Ulysses and the sirens or, indeed, a faithful beautiful woman? Or is the Very Rev Dr Donne genuinely inviting the reader to ejaculate into a plant?

## II.2.

Here lies, to each her parents' ruth,  
*Mary*, the daughter of their youth;  
 Yet all heaven's gifts being heaven's due,  
 It makes the father less to rue.  
 At six months' end she parted hence  
 With safety of her innocence;  
 Whose soul heaven's queen, whose name she bears,  
 In comfort of her mother's tears,  
 Hath placed amongst her virgin-train:  
 Where, while that severed doth remain,  
 This grave partakes the fleshly birth;  
 Which cover lightly, gentle earth.

**II.3.** In the groves of their academy, at the end of every vista, you see nothing but the gallows.

## III.

## III.1.

When my grave is broke up again,  
 Some second guest to entertain  
 (For graves have learned that womanhead,  
 To be to more than one a bed)  
     And he that digs it spies  
 A bracelet of bright hair about the bone,  
     Will he not let'us alone,  
 And think that there a loving couple lies,  
 Who thought that this device might be some way  
 To make their souls, at the last busy day,  
 Meet at this grave, and make a little stay?

If this fall in a time, or land,  
 Where misdevotion doth command,  
 Then he, that digs us up, will bring  
 Us to the bishop & the king,  
     To make us relics; then  
 Thou shalt be a *Mary Magdalen*, and I

---

'On My First Daughter', Ben Jonson (1572 – 1637), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

The Rt Hon Edmund Burke (1729 – 1797), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'The Relic', The Very Rev Dr John Donne (1572 – 1631), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. ¶180. The Almanacker cannot help noticing that "Jesus Christ" would scan just as well as 'something else', though this is pure speculation.

A something else thereby;  
 All women shall adore us, and some men;  
 And since at such time miracles are sought,  
 I would have that age by this paper taught  
 What miracles we harmless lovers wrought.

First, we loved well and faithfully,  
 Yet knew not what we loved, nor why;  
 Difference of sex no more we knew  
 Than our guardian angels do;  
 Coming & going, we  
 Perchance might kiss, but not between those meals;  
 Our hands ne'er touched the seals  
 Which nature, injured by late law, sets free;  
 These miracles we did, but now alas,  
 All measure, and all language, I should pass,  
 Should I tell what a miracle she was.

### III.2.

Here she lies, a pretty bud,  
 Lately made of flesh & blood,  
 Who as soon fell fast asleep  
 As her little eyes did peep.  
 Give her strewings, but not stir  
 The earth that lightly covers her.

**III.3.** Justice brings knowledge within the reach of those who have suffered.

## IV.

### IV.1.

Not a drum was heard, not a funeral note  
 As his corpse to the rampart we hurried;  
 Not a soldier discharged his farewell shot  
 O'er the grave where our hero we buried.

---

'Upon a Child that Died', Robert Herrick (1591 – 1634), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This little poem was clearly influenced by Ben Jonson's "On My First Daughter".

Prof William Goodwin (1831 – 1912), Aeschylus, *Agamemnon*. Professor Goodwin is here translating a line from Aeschylus's Ἀγαμέμνων.

The Rev Charles Wolfe (1791 – 1823), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. Lieutenant General Sir John Moore died of wounds, having led his men into battle, at the battle of Corunna in the Peninsular War.

We buried him darkly at dead of night,  
The sods with our bayonets turning,  
By the struggling moonbeam's misty light  
And the lantern dimly burning.

No useless coffin enclosed his breast,  
Not in sheet or in shroud we wound him;  
But he lay like a warrior taking his rest  
With his martial cloak around him.

Few & short were the prayers we said,  
And we spoke not a word of sorrow;  
But we steadfastly gazed on the face that was dead,  
And we bitterly thought of the morrow.

We thought, as we hollowed his narrow bed  
And smoothed down his lonely pillow,  
That the foe & the stranger would tread o'er his head,  
And we far away on the billow!

Lightly they'll talk of the spirit that's gone,  
And o'er his cold ashes upbraid him –  
But little he'll reck, if they let him sleep on  
In the grave where a briton has laid him.

But ½ of our heavy task was done  
When the clock struck the hour for retiring;  
And we heard the distant & random gun  
That the foe was sullenly firing.

Slowly & sadly we laid him down,  
From the field of his fame fresh & gory;  
We carved not a line, and we raised not a stone,  
But we left him alone with his glory.

#### IV.2.

He's gone, and all our plans  
Are useless indeed.  
We'll walk no more on Cotswold  
Where the sheep feed  
Quietly and take no heed.

---

'To His Love', Ivor Gurney (1890 – 1937), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

His body that was so quick  
 Is not as you  
 Knew it, on SEVERN RIVER  
 Under the blue  
 Driving our small boat through.

You would not know him now...  
 But still he died  
 Nobly, so cover him over  
 With violets of pride  
 Purple from SEVERN side.

Cover him! Cover him soon!  
 And with thick-set  
 Masses of memoried flowers  
 Hide that red wet  
 Thing I must somehow forget.

IV.3. Men talk of killing time, while time quietly kills them.

## V.

### V.1.

As I beheld a winter's evening air,  
 Curled in her court false locks of living hair,  
 Buttered with jessamine the sun left there.

Galliard & clinquant she appeared to give,  
 A serenade or ball to us that grieve,  
 And teach us *à la mode* more gently live.

But as a moor, who to her cheeks prefers  
 White spots, t'allure her black idolaters,  
 Me thought she looked all o'er bepatched with stars.

Like the dark front of some ethiopian queen,  
 Veiled all o'er with gems of red, blue, green,  
 Whose ugly night seemed masked with days' skreen.

Whilst the fond people offered sacrifice  
 To sapphires, 'stead of veins & arteries,  
 And bowed unto the diamonds, not her eyes.

---

Dion Boursiquot (1820 – 1890), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Another: A Black patch on Lucasta's Face', Col Richard Lovelace (1617 – 1657), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*.

Behold *Lucasta's* face, how't glows like noon!  
 A sun entire is her complexion,  
 And formed of one whole constellation.

So gently shining, so serene, so clear,  
 Her look doth universal nature cheer;  
 Only a cloud or two hangs here & there.

## V.2.

Whose woods these are I think I know.  
 His house is in the village though;  
 He will not see me stopping here  
 To watch his woods fill up with snow.

My little horse must think it queer  
 To stop without a farmhouse near  
 Between the woods & frozen lake  
 The darkest evening of the year.

He gives his harness bells a shake  
 To ask if there is some mistake.  
 The only other sound's the sweep  
 Of easy wind & downy flake.

The woods are lovely, dark & deep,  
 But I have promises to keep,  
 And miles to go before I sleep,  
 And miles to go before I sleep.

V.3. My life will be sour grapes and ashes without you.

## VI.

### VI.1.

Bent double, like old beggars under sacks,  
 Knock-kneed, coughing like hags, we cursed through sludge,  
 Till on the haunting flares we turned our backs,  
 And towards our distant rest began to trudge.

---

'Stopping by Woods on a Snowy Evening', Robert Frost, Poet Laureate of Vermont (1874 – 1963), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Mrs Daisy Devlin (1881 – 1972), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Dulce et Decorum Est', Wilfred Owen (1893 – 1918), Holden and Holden, *Poems that Make Grown Men Cry*. The Latin phrase is from Horace (*Carmina* III.2); it means, 'It is sweet and fitting to die for one's country.' Although credited to Owen, the poem was written in close collaboration with Siegfried Sassoon. It is sometimes said to be a response to the poetry of Jessie Pope.

Men marched asleep. Many had lost their boots,  
 But limped on, blood-shod. All went lame; all blind;  
 Drunk with fatigue; deaf even to the hoots  
 Of gas-shells dropping softly behind.

Gas! Gas! Quick, boys! An ecstasy of fumbling  
 Fitting the clumsy helmets just in time,  
 But someone still was yelling out and stumbling  
 And flound'ring like a man in fire or lime.  
 Dim through the misty panes & thick green light,  
 As under a green sea, I saw him drowning.

In all my dreams before my helpless sight,  
 He plunges at me, guttering, choking, drowning.

If in some smothering dreams, you too could pace  
 Behind the wagon that we flung him in,  
 And watch the white eyes writhing in his face,  
 His hanging face, like a devil's sick of sin;  
 If you could hear, at every jolt, the blood  
 Come gargling from the froth-corrupted lungs,  
 Obscene as cancer, bitter as the cud  
 Of vile, incurable sores on innocent tongues –  
 My friend, you would not tell with such high zest  
 To children ardent for some desperate glory  
 The old lie: **Dulce et decorum est**  
**Pro patria mori.**

## VI.2.

She had no saying dark enough  
 For the dark pine that kept  
 Forever trying the window latch  
 Of the room where they slept.

The tireless but ineffectual hands  
 That with every futile pass  
 Made the great tree seem as a little bird  
 Before the mystery of glass.

It never had been inside the room,  
 And only one of the two

---

'The Oft-Repeated Dream', Robert Frost, Poet Laureate of Vermont (1874 – 1963), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is part of a sequence of poems called "The Hill Wife".

Was afraid in an oft-repeated dream  
Of what the tree might do.

**VI.3.** Power tends to corrupt and absolute power corrupts absolutely.

## VII.

### VII.1.

He sat in a wheeled chair, waiting for dark,  
And shivered in his ghastly suit of grey,  
Legless, sewn short at elbow. Through the park  
Voices of boys rang saddening like a hymn,  
Voices of play & pleasure after day,  
Till gathering sleep had mothered them from him.

About this time town used to swing so gay  
When glow-lamps budded in the light blue trees,  
And girls glanced lovelier as the air grew dim –  
In the old times, before he threw away his knees.  
Now he will never feel again how slim  
Girls' waists are, or how warm their subtle hands.  
All of them touch him like some queer disease.

There was an artist silly for his face,  
For it was younger than his youth, last year.  
Now, he is old; his back will never brace;  
He's lost his colour very far from here,  
Poured it down shell-holes till the veins ran dry,  
And ½ his lifetime lapsed in the hot race  
And leap of purple spurted from his thigh.

One time he liked a blood-smear down his leg,  
After the matches, carried shoulder-high.  
It was after football, when he'd drunk a peg,  
He thought he'd better join. He wonders why.  
Someone had said he'd look a god in kilts,  
That's why; and maybe, too, to please his *Meg*,  
Aye, that was it, to please the giddy jilts  
He asked to join. He didn't have to beg;

---

John Dalberg-Acton, 1st Baron Acton (1834 – 1902), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Disabled', Wilfred Owen (1893 – 1918), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. ¶12. Owen is generally considered to have been a homosexual, but this line forces the Almanacker to doubt – to reconsider at least – this hypothesis. ¶19. Nineteen was a significant age, since this was the youngest age at which a soldier could be sent to the front line.



Smiling they wrote his lie: aged 19 years.  
 Germans he scarcely thought of; all their guilt,  
 And Austria's, did not move him. And no fears  
 Of fear came yet. He thought of jewelled hilts  
 For daggers in plaid socks; of smart salutes;  
 And care of arms; and leave; and pay arrears;  
**Esprit de corps**; and hints for young recruits.  
 And soon, he was drafted out with drums & cheers.

Some cheered him home, but not as crowds cheer, Goal!  
 Only a solemn man who brought him fruits  
 Thánked him; and then enquired about his soul.

Now, he will spend a few sick years in institutes,  
 And do what things the rules consider wise,  
 And take whatever pity they may dole.  
 Tonight he noticed how the women's eyes  
 Passed from him to the strong men that were whole.  
 How cold & late it is. Why don't they come  
 And put him into bed? Why don't they come?

## VII.2.

Here dead lie we because we did not choose  
 To live and shame the land from which we sprung.  
 Life, to be sure, is nothing much to lose,  
 But young men think it is, and we were young.

## VII.3. The fate of love is that it always seems too little or too much.

## VIII.

### VIII.1.

They flee from me that sometime did me seek  
 With naked foot stalking in my chamber.  
 I have seen them gentle, tame and meek  
 That now are wild and do not remember.  
 That sometime they put themselves in danger  
 To take bread at my hand; and now they range  
 Busily seeking with a continual change.

Thanked be fortune, it hath been otherwise  
 Twenty times better, but once in special

---

Prof Alfred Housman (1859 – 1936), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.  
 Mrs Amelia Barr (1831 – 1919), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
 Sir Thomas Wyatt (1503 – 1542), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

In thin array after a pleasant guise  
 When her loose gown from her shoulders did fall,  
 And me she caught in her arms long & small;  
 Therewithal sweetly did me kiss,  
 And softly said, Dear heart, how like you this?

It was no dream: I lay broad waking.  
 But all is turned thorough my gentleness  
 Into a strange fashion of forsaking;  
 And I have leave to go of her goodness  
 And she also to use newfangleness.  
 But since that I so kindly am served,  
 I would fain know what she hath deserved.

### VIII.2.

With rue my heart is laden  
 For golden friends I had,  
 For many a rose-lipped maiden  
 And many a lightfoot lad.

By brooks too broad for leaping  
 The lightfoot boys are laid;  
 The rose-lipped girls are sleeping  
 In fields where roses fade.

VIII.3. The post of honour is a private station.

## IX.

### IX.1.

The sea is calm tonight.  
 The tide is full; the moon lies fair  
 Upon the straits; on the french coast the light  
 Gleams & is gone; the cliffs of England stand,  
 Glimmering & vast, out in the tranquil bay.  
 Come to the window; sweet is the night-air.  
 Only, from the long line of spray  
 Where the sea meets the moon-blanch'd land,  
 Listen. You hear the grating roar  
 Of pebbles which the waves draw back, and fling,

---

Prof Alfred Housman (1859 – 1936), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

The Rt Hon Joseph Addison (1672 – 1719), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Dover Beach', Prof Matthew Arnold (1822 – 1888), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

At their return, up the high strand,  
 Begin, and cease, and then again begin,  
 With tremulous cadence slow, and bring  
 The eternal note of sadness in.

*Sophocles* long ago  
 Heard it on the Aegean, and it brought  
 Into his mind the turbid ebb & flow  
 Of human misery; we  
 Find also in the sound a thought,  
 Hearing it by this distant northern sea.

The sea of faith  
 Was once, too, at the full, and round earth's shore  
 Lay like the folds of a bright girdle furled.  
 But now I only hear  
 Its melancholy, long, withdrawing roar,  
 Retreating, to the breath  
 Of the night-wind, down the vast edges drear  
 And naked shingles of the world.

Ah, love, let us be true  
 To one another, for the world, which seems  
 To lie before us like a land of dreams,  
 So various, so beautiful, so new,  
 Hath really neither joy, nor love, nor light,  
 Nor certitude, nor peace, nor help for pain;  
 And we are here as on a darkling plain  
 Swept with confused alarms of struggle & flight,  
 Where ignorant armies clash by night.

## IX.2.

When thou must home to shades of underground,  
     And there arrived, a new admirèd guest,  
 The beauteous spirits do engirt thee round,  
     White *Iope*, blithe *Helen*, & the rest,  
 To hear the stories of thy finished love  
 From that smooth tongue whose music hell can move;

Then wilt thou speak of banqueting delights,  
     Of masques & revels which sweet youth did make,  
 Of tourneys & great challenges of knights,

And all these triumphs for thy beauty's sake:  
 When thou hast told these honours done to thee,  
 Then tell, O tell, how thou didst murder me.

**IX.3.** The public... takes in its milk on the principle that it is cheaper to do this than to keep a cow. So it is, but the milk is more likely to be watered.

## X.

### X.1.

The rain set early in tonight;  
 The sullen wind was soon awake;  
 It tore the elm-tops down for spite,  
 And did its worst to vex the lake:  
 I listened with heart fit to break.  
 When glided in *Porphyria*; straight  
 She shut the cold out & the storm,  
 And kneeled and made the cheerless grate  
 Blaze up, & all the cottage warm;  
 Which done, she rose, and from her form  
 Withdrew the dripping cloak & shawl,  
 And laid her soiled gloves by, untied  
 Her hat & let the damp hair fall,  
 And, last, she sat down by my side  
 And called me. When no voice replied,  
 She put my arm about her waist,  
 And made her smooth white shoulder bare,  
 And all her yellow hair displaced,  
 And, stooping, made my cheek lie there,  
 And spread, o'er all, her yellow hair,  
 Murmuring how she loved me – she  
 Too weak, for all her heart's endeavour,  
 To set its struggling passion free  
 From pride, & vainer ties dissever,  
 And give herself to me for ever.  
 But passion sometimes would prevail,  
 Nor could tonight's gay feast restrain  
 A sudden thought of one so pale

---

Samuel Butler (1835 – 1902), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'Porphyria's Lover', Robert Browning (1828 – 1889), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Porphyria is a blood disorder commonly thought to induce madness, although this complication is actually very rare, even when one takes into account the rarity of the disease itself.

For love of her, and all in vain:  
 So, she was come through wind & rain.  
 Be sure I looked up at her eyes  
 Happy & proud; at last I knew  
*Porphyria* worshipped me; surprise  
 Made my heart swell, and still it grew  
 While I debated what to do.  
 That moment she was mine, mine, fair,  
 Perfectly pure & good: I found  
 A thing to do, and all her hair  
 In one long yellow string I wound  
 Three times her little throat around,  
 And strangled her. No pain felt she;  
 I am quite sure she felt no pain.  
 As a shut bud that holds a bee,  
 I warily oped her lids: again  
 Laughed the blue eyes without a stain.  
 And I untightened next the tress  
 About her neck; her cheek once more  
 Blushed bright beneath my burning kiss:  
 I propped her head up as before,  
 Only, this time my shoulder bore  
 Her head, which droops upon it still:  
 The smiling rosy little head,  
 So glad it has its utmost will,  
 That all it scorned at once is fled,  
 And I, its love, am gained instead!  
*Porphyria's* love: she guessed not how  
 Her darling one wish would be heard.  
 And thus we sit together now,  
 And all night long we have not stirred,  
 And yet God has not said a word!

## X.2.

Ah what avails the sceptred race,  
 Ah what the form divine!  
 What every virtue, every grace!  
*Rose Aylmer*, all were thine.  
*Rose Aylmer*, whom these wakeful eyes  
 May weep, but never see,

---

'Rose Aylmer', Walter Landor (1775 – 1864), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.  
 Landor was inspired to write these verses by The Hon Rose Aylmer, daughter of the 4th Baron  
 Aylmer; she is an obscure character, who appears to have died in 1800.

A night of memories & of sighs  
I consecrate to thee.

**X.3.** All poets are mad.

## **XI.**

### **XI.1.**

She lay all naked in her bed,  
And I myself lay by;  
No veil but curtains about her spread,  
No covering but I:  
Her head upon her shoulders seeks  
To hang in careless wise,  
And full of blushes was her cheeks,  
And of wishes were her eyes.

Her blood still fresh into her face,  
As on a message came,  
To say that in another place  
It meant another game;  
Her cherry lip moist, plump & fair,  
Millions of kisses crown,  
Which ripe & uncropped dangle there,  
And weigh the branches down.

Her breasts, that welled so plump & high,  
Bred pleasant pain in me;  
For all the world I do defy  
The like felicity;  
Her thighs & belly, soft & fair,  
To me were only shown:  
To have seen such meat, and not to have eat,  
Would have angered any stone.

Her knees lay upward gently bent,  
And all lay hollow under,  
As if on easy terms, they meant  
To fall unforced asunder;  
Just so the cyprian queen did lie,  
Expecting in her bower;

---

The Rev Robert Burton (1577 – 1640), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
Anonymous, Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

When too long stay had kept the boy  
Beyond his promised hour.

Dull clown, quoth she, why dost delay  
Such proffered bliss to take?

Canst thou find out no other way  
Similitudes to make?

Mad with delight I thundering  
Throw my arms about her,

But – pox upon't – 'twas but a dream;  
And so I lay without her.

### XI.2.

Remember me when I am gone away,  
Gone far away into the silent land;  
When you can no more hold me by the hand,  
Nor I ½ turn to go yet turning stay.  
Remember me when no more day by day  
You tell me of our future that you planned:  
Only remember me; you understand  
It will be late to counsel then or pray.  
Yet if you should forget me for a while  
And afterwards remember, do not grieve:  
For if the darkness & corruption leave  
A vestige of the thoughts that once I had,  
Better by far you should forget, and smile  
Than that you should remember & be sad.

### XI.3. Naught so sweet as melancholy.

## XII.

### XII.1.

Now is the time for the burning of the leaves.  
They go to the fire; the nostril pricks with smoke  
Wandering slowly into a weeping mist.  
Brittle & blotched, ragged & rotten sheaves.  
A flame seizes the smouldering ruin and bites  
On stubborn stalks that crackle as they resist.

---

Miss Christina Rossetti (1830 – 1894), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

The Rev Robert Burton (1577 – 1640), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Prof Laurence Binyon (1869 – 1943), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. Prof Larkin calls these four verses “The Burning of the Leaves”, although in other books they are the first of five parts of a longer poem of the same name.

The last hollyhock's fallen tower is dust;  
     All the spices of june are a bitter reek,  
     All the extravagant riches spent & mean.  
 All burns. The reddest rose is a ghost;  
     Sparks whirl up, to expire in the mist: the wild  
     Fingers of fire are making corruption clean.  
  
 Now is the time for stripping the spirit bare,  
     Time for the burning of days ended & done,  
     Idle solace of things that have gone before:  
 Rootless hope & fruitless desire are there;  
     Let them go to the fire, with never a look behind.  
     The world that was ours is a world that is ours no more.

They will come again, the leaf & the flower, to arise  
     From squalor of rottenness into the old splendour,  
     And magical scents to a wondering memory bring;  
 The same glory, to shine upon different eyes.  
     Earth cares for her own ruins, naught for ours.  
     Nothing is certain, only the certain spring.

## XII.2.

When I am dead, my dearest,  
     Sing no sad songs for me;  
 Plant thou no roses at my head,  
     Nor shady cypress tree:  
 Be the green grass above me  
     With showers & dewdrops wet;  
 And if thou wilt, remember,  
     And if thou wilt, forget.  
  
 I shall not see the shadows;  
     I shall not feel the rain;  
 I shall not hear the nightingale  
     Sing on, as if in pain:  
 And dreaming through the twilight  
     That doth not rise nor set,  
 Haply I may remember,  
     And haply may forget.



**XII.3.** One was never married, and that's his hell; another is, and that's his...

### XIII.

#### XIII.1.

Let us go hence, my songs; she will not hear.

Let us go hence together without fear;

Keep silence now, for singing-time is over,  
And over all old things & all things dear.

She loves not you nor me as all we love her.  
Yea, though we sang as angels in her ear,  
She would not hear.

Let us rise up and part; she will not know.

Let us go seaward as the great winds go,

Full of blown sand & foam; what help is here?  
There is no help, for all these things are so,  
And all the world is bitter as a tear.

And how these things are, though ye strove to show,  
She would not know.

Let us go home & hence; she will not weep.

We gave love many dreams & days to keep,

Flowers without scent, and fruits that would not grow,  
Saying, If thou wilt, thrust in thy sickle and reap.

All is reaped now; no grass is left to mow;  
And we that sowed, though all we fell on sleep,  
She would not weep.

Let us go hence and rest; she will not love.

She shall not hear us if we sing hereof,

Nor see love's ways, how sore they are & steep.  
Come hence, let be, lie still; it is enough.

Love is a barren sea, bitter & deep;  
And though she saw all heaven in flower above,  
She would not love.

Let us give up, go down; she will not care.

Though all the stars made gold of all the air,  
And the sea moving saw before it move

---

The Rev Robert Burton (1577 – 1640), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ 'A Leave-Taking', Algernon Swinburne (1837 – 1909), Hayward, *The Penguin Book of English Verse*.

One moon-flower making all the foam-flowers fair;  
 Though all those waves went over us, and drove  
 Deep down the stifling lips & drowning hair,  
 She would not care.

Let us go hence, go hence; she will not see.  
 Sing all once more together; surely she,  
 She too, remembering days & words that were,  
 Will turn a little toward us, sighing; but we,  
 We are hence, we are gone, as though we had not been there.  
 Nay, and though all men seeing had pity on me,  
 She would not see.

### XIII.2.

On a starred night Prince *Lucifer* uprose.  
 Tired of his dark dominion swung the fiend  
 Above the rolling ball in cloud part screened,  
 Where sinners hugged their spectre of repose.  
 Poor prey to his hot fit of pride were those.  
 And now upon his western wing he leaned;  
 Now his huge bulk o'er Afric's sands careened;  
 Now the black planet shadowed arctic snows.  
 Soaring through wider zones that pricked his scars  
 With memory of the old revolt from Awe,  
 He reached a middle height, and at the stars,  
 Which are the brain of heaven, he looked, and sank.  
 Around the ancient track marched, rank on rank,  
 The army of unalterable law.

### XIII.3. The pen is worse than the sword.

## XIV.

### XIV.1.

To see a world in a grain of sand  
 And a heaven in a wild flower,  
 Hold infinity in the palm of your hand  
 And eternity in an hour:  
 A robin redbreast in a cage

---

'Lucifer in Starlight', George Meredith (1828 – 1909), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

The Rev Robert Burton (1577 – 1640), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ 'Auguries of Innocence', William Blake (1757 – 1827), Blake, *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*.

Puts all heaven in a rage.  
A dove-house filled with doves & pigeons  
Shudders hell through all its regions.  
A dog starved at his master's gate  
Predicts the ruin of the state.  
A horse misused upon the road  
Calls to heaven for human blood.  
A skylark wounded in the wing,  
A cherubim does cease to sing.  
The game cock clipped & armed for fight  
Does the rising sun affright.  
Every wolf's & lion's howl  
Raises from hell a human soul.  
The wild deer, wandering here & there  
Keeps the human soul from care.  
The lamb misused breeds public strife  
And yet forgives the butcher's knife.  
The bat that flits at close of eve  
Has left the brain that won't believe.  
The owl that calls upon the night  
Speaks the unbeliever's fright.  
He who shall hurt the little wren  
Shall never be beloved by men.  
He who the ox to wrath has moved  
Shall never be by woman loved.  
The wanton boy that kills the fly  
Shall feel the spider's enmity.  
He who torments the chafer's sprite  
Weaves a bower in endless night.  
The beggar's dog & widow's cat,  
Feed them & thou wilt grow fat.  
The gnat that sings his summer's song  
Poison gets from slander's tongue.  
The poison of the snake & newt  
Is the sweat of envy's foot.  
The poison of the honey bee  
Is the artist's jealousy.  
The prince's robes & beggar's rags  
Are toadstools on the miser's bags.  
A truth that's told with bad intent  
Beats all the lies you can invent.  
The soldier armed with sword & gun

Palsied strikes the summer's sun.  
 The poor man's farthing is worth more  
 Than all the gold on Afric's shore.  
 One mite wrung from the lab'rer's hands  
 Shall buy & sell the miser's lands,  
 Or if protected from on high  
 Does that whole nation sell & buy.  
 He who mocks the infant's faith  
 Shall be mocked in age & death.  
 He who shall teach the child to doubt  
 The rotting grave shall ne'er get out.  
 He who respects the infant's faith  
 Triumphs over hell & death.  
 The child's toys & the old man's reasons  
 Are the fruits of the two seasons.  
 The questioner who sits so sly  
 Shall never know how to reply.  
 He who replies to words of doubt  
 Doth put the light of knowledge out.  
 The strongest poison ever known  
 Came from caesar's laurel crown.  
 Nought can deform the human race  
 Like to the armour's iron brace.  
 When gold & gems adorn the plough  
 To peaceful arts shall envy bow.  
 A riddle or the cricket's cry  
 Is to doubt a fit reply.  
 The emmet's inch & eagle's mile  
 Make lame philosophy to smile.  
 He who doubts from what he sees  
 Will ne'er believe do what you please.  
 God appears & God is light  
 To those poor souls who dwell in night,  
 But does a human form display  
 To those who dwell in realms of day.

#### XIV.2.

Farewell to the bushy clump close to the river  
 And the flags where the butter-bump hides in for ever;  
 Farewell to the weedy nook, hemmed in by waters;  
 Farewell to the miller's brook & his three bonny daughters;

---

'Farewell', John Clare (1793 – 1864), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Farewell to them all while in prison I lie –  
In the prison a thrall sees nought but the sky.

Shut out are the green fields and birds in the bushes;  
In the prison yard nothing builds, blackbirds or thrushes.  
Farewell to the old mill & dash of the waters,  
To the miller &, dearer still, to his three bonny daughters.

In the nook, the large burdock grows near the green willow;  
In the flood, round the moorcock dashes under the billow;  
To the old mill farewell, to the lock, pens, & waters,  
To the miller himsel', & his three bonny daughters.

**XIV.3.** All places are distant from heaven alike.

## XV.

**XV.1.**

All the world's a stage,  
And all the men & women merely players;  
They have their exits & their entrances,  
And one man in his time plays many parts,  
His acts being seven ages. At first, the infant,  
Mewling & puking in the nurse's arms.  
Then the whining schoolboy, with his satchel  
And shining morning face, creeping like snail  
Unwillingly to school. And then the lover,  
Sighing like furnace, with a woeful ballad  
Made to his mistress' eyebrow. Then a soldier,  
Full of strange oaths and bearded like the pard,  
Jealous in honor, sudden & quick in quarrel,  
Seeking the bubble reputation  
Even in the cannon's mouth. And then the justice,  
In fair round belly with good capon lined,  
With eyes severe & beard of formal cut,  
Full of wise saws & modern instances;  
And so he plays his part. The sixth age shifts  
Into the lean & slippered pantaloon,  
With spectacles on nose & pouch on side;  
His youthful hose, well saved, a world too wide  
For his shrunk shank, and his big manly voice,

---

The Rev Robert Burton (1577 – 1640), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. These lines are spoken by Jaques in *As You Like It*, II.7.

Turning again toward childish treble, pipes  
 And whistles in his sound. Last scene of all,  
 That ends this strange eventful history,  
 Is second childishness & mere oblivion,  
 Sans teeth, sans eyes, sans taste, sans everything.

### XV.2.

The snow falls deep; the forest lies alone:  
 The boy goes hasty for his load of brakes,  
 Then thinks upon the fire and hurries back;  
 The gypsy knocks his hands and tucks them up,  
 And seeks his squalid camp,  $\frac{1}{2}$  hid in snow,  
 Beneath the oak, which breaks away the wind,  
 And bushes close, with snow like hovel warm:  
 There stinking mutton roasts upon the coals,  
 And the  $\frac{1}{2}$ -roasted dog squats close and rubs,  
 Then feels the heat too strong and goes aloof;  
 He watches well, but none a bit can spare,  
 And vainly waits the morsel thrown away:  
 'Tis thus they live – a picture to the place;  
 A quiet, pilfering, unprotected race.

**XV.3.** Were it not that they are loath to lay out money for a rope, they would be hanged forthwith.

### XVI.

#### XVI.1.

It is the cause, it is the cause, my soul.  
 Let me not name it to you, you chaste stars;  
 It is the cause. Yet I'll not shed her blood,  
 Nor scar that whiter skin of hers than snow  
 And smooth as monumental alabaster.  
 Yet she must die, else she'll betray more men.  
 Put out the light, and then put out the light.  
 If I quench thee, thou flaming minister,  
 I can again thy former light restore  
 Should I repent me. But once put out thy light,  
 Thou cunning'st pattern of excelling nature,  
 I know not where is that promethean heat

---

'Gypsies', John Clare (1793 – 1864), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

The Rev Robert Burton (1577 – 1640), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Ricks, *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. These lines are spoken by Othello over the sleeping Desdemona in *Othello* V.2.

That can thy light relume. When I have plucked thy rose  
 I cannot give it vital growth again,  
 It must needs wither. I'll smell thee on the tree.  
 O balmy breath, that dost almost persuade  
 Justice to break her sword! One more, one more.  
 Be thus when thou art dead and I will kill thee  
 And love thee after. One more, and that's the last.  
 So sweet was ne'er so fatal. I must weep,  
 But they are cruel tears. This sorrow's heavenly,  
 It strikes where it doth love. She wakes.

## XVI.2.

Full fathom five thy father lies:  
 Of his bones are coral made;  
 Those are pearls that were his eyes:  
 Nothing of him that doth fade  
 But doth suffer a sea-change  
 Into something rich & strange.  
 Sea-nymphs hourly ring his knell:  
 Hark! now I hear them –  
 Ding-dong, bell.

**XVI.3.** Good wombs have borne bad sons.

## XVII.

### XVII.1.

In our old shipwrecked days there was an hour,  
 When, in the firelight steadily aglow,  
 Joined slackly, we beheld the red chasm grow  
 Among the clicking coals. Our library-bower  
 That eve was left to us: and hushed we sat  
 As lovers to whom time is whispering.  
 From sudden-opened doors we heard them sing:  
 The nodding elders mixed good wine with chat.  
 Well knew we that life's greatest treasure lay  
 With us, and of it was our talk. 'Ah, yes!

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. This song is sung by Ariel in *The Tempest* I.2.

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. This is uttered by Miranda in *The Tempest* I.2.

George Meredith (1828 – 1909), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. This is taken from *Modern Love*, Meredith's sequence of poems describing the breakdown of his first marriage.

Love dies!' I said: I never thought it less.  
 She yearned to me that sentence to unsay.  
 Then when the fire domed blackening, I found  
     Her cheek was salt against my kiss, and swift  
     Up the sharp scale of sobs her breast did lift:  
 Now am I haunted by that taste, that sound.

### XVII.2.

Poor soul, the centre of my sinful earth,  
 Foiled by those rebel powers that thee array,  
 Why dost thou pine within, and suffer dearth,  
 Painting thy outward walls so costly gay?

Why so large cost, having so short a lease,  
 Dost thou upon thy fading mansion spend?  
 Shall worms, inheritors of this excess,  
 Eat up thy charge? is this thy body's end?

Then, soul, live thou upon thy servant's loss,  
 And let that pine to aggravate thy store;  
 Buy terms divine in selling hours of dross;  
 Within be fed, without be rich no more:—

So shalt thou feed on death, that feeds on men;  
 And death once dead, there's no more dying then.

**XVII.3.** Hell is empty, and all the devils are here.

## XVIII.

### XVIII.1.

Farewell, ungrateful traitor;  
     Farewell, my perjured swain.  
 Let never injured creature  
     Believe a man again.  
 The pleasure of possessing  
 Surpasses all expressing,  
 But 'tis too short a blessing,  
     And love too long a pain.

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. This is uttered by Ariel in *The Tempest* I.2.

John Dryden, Poet Laureate (1631 – 1700), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.



'Tis easy to deceive us  
     In pity of your pain,  
 But when we love you leave us  
     To rail at you in vain.  
 Before we have descried it,  
 There is no bliss beside it,  
 But she that once has tried it  
     Will never love again.

The passion you pretended  
     Was only to obtain,  
 But when the charm is ended  
     The charmer you disdain.  
 Your love by ours we measure  
 Till we have lost our treasure,  
 But dying is a pleasure,  
     When living is a pain.

## XVIII.2.

When I do count the clock that tells the time,  
     And see the brave day sunk in hideous night;  
 When I behold the violet past prime,  
     And sable curls all silvered o'er with white;  
 When lofty trees I see barren of leaves  
     Which erst from heat did canopy the herd,  
 And summer's green all girded up in sheaves  
     Borne on the bier with white & bristly beard,  
 Then of thy beauty do I question make,  
     That thou among the wastes of time must go,  
 Since sweets & beauties do themselves forsake  
     And die as fast as they see others grow;  
 And nothing 'gainst time's scythe can make defence  
 Save breed, to brave him when he takes thee hence.

## XVIII.3. Misery acquaints a man with strange bedfellows.

---

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Shakespeare, *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. This is uttered by Trinculo in *The Tempest* II.2.

## XIX.

## XIX.1.

My prime of youth is but a frost of cares;  
 My feast of joy is but a dish of pain;  
 My crop of corn is but a field of tares;  
 And all my good is but vain hope of gain;  
 The day is past, and yet I saw no sun,  
 And now I live, and now my life is done.

My tale was heard and yet it was not told;  
 My fruit is fallen, and yet my leaves are green;  
 My youth is spent and yet I am not old;  
 I saw the world and yet I was not seen;  
 My thread is cut and yet it is not spun,  
 And now I live, and now my life is done.

I sought my death and found it in my womb;  
 I looked for life and saw it was a shade;  
 I trod the earth and knew it was my tomb,  
 And now I die, and now I was but made;  
 My glass is full, and now my glass is run,  
 And now I live, and now my life is done.

## XIX.2.

Art thou pale for weariness  
 Of climbing heaven, and gazing on the earth,  
 Wandering companionless  
 Among the stars that have a different birth –  
 And ever-changing, like a joyless eye  
 That finds no object worth its constancy?

## XIX.3. Roses have thorns, and silver fountains mud.

---

‘Tichborne’s Lament’, Chidiock Tichborne (1562 – 1586), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. The ultimate written source for this poem is a letter which Tichborne wrote to his wife on the night before he was hanged, drawn and quartered for his part in a conspiracy against Elizabeth I. Tichborne was part of the same family which provided the fourteen Tichborne baronets (of Tichborne in the County of Hampshire) who held the title from its creation in 1621 until its extinction in 1968. He was also a distant cousin of Henry Tichborne, 1st Baron Ferrard and 1st Baronet (of Beaulieu in the County of Meath), who sadly left no heirs to his titles. ¶17. The word ‘glass’ refers here to an hourglass, rather than a drinking vessel.

‘To the Moon’, Percy Shelley (1792 – 1822), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

‘This is a line from Sonnet 35.’, William Shakespeare (1564 – 1616), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

## XX.

## XX.1.

Is there anybody there? said the traveller,  
Knocking on the moonlit door;  
And his horse in the silence champed the grasses  
Of the forest's ferny floor:  
And a bird flew up out of the turret,  
Above the traveller's head:  
And he smote upon the door again a second time;  
Is there anybody there? he said.  
But no one descended to the traveller;  
No head from the leaf-fringed sill  
Leaned over & looked into his grey eyes,  
Where he stood perplexed & still.  
But only a host of phantom listeners  
That dwelt in the lone house then  
Stood listening in the quiet of the moonlight  
To that voice from the world of men:  
Stood thronging the faint moonbeams on the dark stair,  
That goes down to the empty hall,  
Harkening in an air stirred & shaken  
By the lonely traveller's call.  
And he felt in his heart their strangeness,  
Their stillness answering his cry,  
While his horse moved, cropping the dark turf,  
'Neath the starred & leafy sky;  
For he suddenly smote on the door, even  
Louder, and lifted his head:  
Tell them I came, and no one answered,  
That I kept my word, he said.  
Never the least stir made the listeners,  
Though every word he spake  
Fell echoing through the shadowiness of the still house  
From the one man left awake:  
Ay, they heard his foot upon the stirrup,  
And the sound of iron on stone,  
And how the silence surged softly backward,  
When the plunging hoofs were gone.

---

'The Listeners', Walter de la Mare (1873 – 1956), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This poem was said to be a favourite of St Teresa of Calcutta.

**XX.2.**

I strove with none, for none was worth my strife:  
 Nature I loved, and, next to nature, art:  
 I warmed both hands before the fire of life;  
 It sinks; and I am ready to depart.

**XX.3.** There is no living with thee, nor without thee.

**XXI.****XXI.1.**

Part I

It is an ancient mariner  
 And he stoppeth one of three.  
 'By thy long grey beard & glittering eye,  
 Now wherefore stopp'st thou me?  
  
 'The bridegroom's doors are opened wide,  
 And I am next of kin;  
 The guests are met; the feast is set:  
 May'st hear the merry din.'

He holds him with his skinny hand,  
 'There was a ship,' quoth he.  
 'Hold off! Unhand me, grey-beard loon!  
 Eftsoons his hand dropped he.

He holds him with his glittering eye –  
 The wedding-guest stood still,  
 And listens like a three years' child:  
 The mariner hath his will.

The wedding-guest sat on a stone:  
 He cannot choose but hear;  
 And thus spake on that ancient man,  
 The bright-eyed mariner.

'The ship was cheered, the harbour cleared,  
 Merrily did we drop

---

'Dying Speech of an Old Philosopher', Walter Landor (1775 – 1864), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

The Rt Hon Joseph Addison (1672 – 1719), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

'The Rime of the Ancient Mariner', Samuel Coleridge (1772 – 1834), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Coleridge kicks off his "Rime" with a lengthy quotation from a seventeenth century theologian, Thomas Burnet, and the original text is peppered with margin notes throughout.

Below the kirk, below the hill,  
Below the lighthouse-top.

‘The sun came up upon the left,  
Out of the sea came he.  
And he shone bright, and on the right  
Went down into the sea.

‘Higher & higher every day,  
Till over the mast at noon –’  
The wedding-guest here beat his breast,  
For he heard the loud bassoon.

‘The bride hath paced into the hall,  
Red as a rose is she;  
Nodding their heads before her goes  
The merry minstrelsy.

‘The wedding-guest he beat his breast,  
Yet he cannot choose but hear;  
And thus spake on that ancient man,  
The bright-eyed mariner.

‘And now the storm-blast came, and he  
Was tyrannous & strong:  
He struck with his o’ertaking wings,  
And chased us south along.

‘With sloping masts & dipping prow,  
As who pursued with yell & blow  
Still treads the shadow of his foe,  
And forward bends his head,  
The ship drove fast, loud roared the blast,  
And southward aye we fled.

‘And now there came both mist & snow,  
And it grew wondrous cold:  
And ice, mast-high, came floating by,  
As green as emerald.

‘And through the drifts the snowy clifts  
Did send a dismal sheen:  
Nor shapes of men nor beasts we ken –  
The ice was all between.

‘The ice was here; the ice was there;  
The ice was all around:  
It cracked & growled, and roared & howled,  
Like noises in a swound!

‘At length did cross an albatross,  
Thorough the fog it came;  
As if it had been a christian soul,  
We hailed it in God’s name.

‘It ate the food it ne’er had eat,  
And round & round it flew.  
The ice did split with a thunder-fit;  
The helmsman steered us through.

‘And a good south wind sprung up behind;  
The albatross did follow,  
And every day, for food or play,  
Came to the mariner’s hollo!

‘In mist or cloud, on mast or shroud,  
It perched for vespers nine;  
Whiles all the night, through fog-smoke white,  
Glimmered the white Moon-shine.’

‘God save thee, ancient Mariner!  
From the fiends, that plague thee thus!  
Why look’st thou so?’ ‘With my cross-bow  
I shot the albatross.

Part II

‘The sun now rose upon the right:  
Out of the sea came he,  
Still hid in mist, and on the left  
Went down into the sea.

‘And the good south wind still blew behind,  
But no sweet bird did follow,  
Nor any day for food or play  
Came to the mariner’s hollo.

‘And I had done a hellish thing,  
And it would work ’em woe:  
For all averred, I had killed the bird  
hat made the breeze to blow.

“Ah wretch!” said they, “The bird to slay,  
That made the breeze to blow!”

‘Nor dim nor red, like God’s own head,  
The glorious sun uprist:  
Then all averred, I had killed the bird  
That brought the fog and mist.  
“’Twas right,” said they, “Such birds to slay,  
That bring the fog & mist.”

‘The fair breeze blew; the white foam flew;  
The furrow followed free;  
We were the first that ever burst  
Into that silent sea.

‘Down dropped the breeze, the sails dropt down;  
’Twas sad as sad could be;  
And we did speak only to break  
The silence of the sea!

‘All in a hot & copper sky,  
The bloody sun, at noon,  
Right up above the mast did stand,  
No bigger than the moon.

‘Day after day, day after day,  
We stuck, nor breath nor motion;  
As idle as a painted ship  
Upon a painted ocean.

‘Water, water, every where,  
And all the boards did shrink;  
Water, water, every where,  
Nor any drop to drink.

‘The very deep did rot: O *Christ!*  
That ever this should be!  
Yea, slimy things did crawl with legs  
Upon the slimy sea.

‘About, about, in reel & rout  
The death-fires danced at night;  
The water, like a witch’s oils,  
Burnt green, and blue & white.

‘And some in dreams assurèd were  
Of the spirit that plagued us so;  
Nine fathom deep he had followed us  
From the land of mist & snow.

‘And every tongue, through utter drought,  
Was withered at the root;  
We could not speak, no more than if  
We had been choked with soot.

‘Ah well a-day what evil looks  
Had I from old & young!  
Instead of the cross, the albatross  
About my neck was hung.

Part III

‘There passed a weary time. Each throat  
Was parched, and glazed each eye.  
A weary time! a weary time!  
How glazed each weary eye,  
When looking westward, I beheld  
A something in the sky.

‘At first it seemed a little speck,  
And then it seemed a mist;  
It moved & moved, and took at last  
A certain shape, I wist.

‘A speck, a mist, a shape, I wist!  
And still it neared & neared:  
As if it dodged a water-sprite,  
It plunged & tacked & veered.

‘With throats unslaked, with black lips baked,  
We could nor laugh nor wail;  
Through utter drought all dumb we stood.  
I bit my arm; I sucked the blood,  
And cried, “A sail! A sail!”

‘With throats unslaked, with black lips baked,  
Agape they heard me call:  
“Gramercy!” they for joy did grin,  
And all at once their breath drew in.  
As they were drinking all.



“See! See!” I cried. “She tacks no more  
Hither to work us weal;  
Without a breeze, without a tide,  
She steadies with upright keel!”

‘The western wave was all aflame.  
The day was well nigh done.  
Almost upon the western wave  
Rested the broad bright sun;  
When that strange shape drove suddenly  
Betwixt us and the sun.

‘And straight the sun was flecked with bars,  
(Heaven’s mother send us grace!)  
As if through a dungeon-grate he peered  
With broad & burning face.

“Alas!” thought I, and my heart beat loud,  
“How fast she nears & nears!  
Are those her sails that glance in the sun,  
Like restless gossameres?

“Are those her ribs through which the sun  
Did peer, as through a grate?  
And is that woman all her crew?  
Is that a death? and are there two?  
Is death that woman’s mate?”

‘Her lips were red; her looks were free;  
Her locks were yellow as gold:  
Her skin was as white as leprosy;  
The nightmare life-in-death was she,  
Who thicks man’s blood with cold.

‘The naked hulk alongside came,  
And the twain were casting dice;  
“The game is done! I’ve won! I’ve won!”  
Quoth she, and whistles thrice.

‘The sun’s rim dips; the stars rush out;  
At one stride comes the dark;  
With far-heard whisper, o’er the sea,  
Off shot the spectre-bark.

‘We listened & looked sideways up!  
Fear at my heart, as at a cup,  
    My life-blood seemed to sip!  
The stars were dim, and thick the night,  
The steersman’s face by his lamp gleamed white;  
    From the sails the dew did drip –  
Till clomb above the eastern bar  
The hornèd moon, with one bright star  
    Within the nether tip.

‘One after one, by the star-dogged moon,  
    Too quick for groan or sigh,  
Each turned his face with a ghastly pang,  
    And cursed me with his eye.

‘Four times 50 living men,  
    (And I heard nor sigh nor groan)  
With heavy thump, a lifeless lump,  
    They dropped down one by one.

‘The souls did from their bodies fly –  
    They fled to bliss or woe!  
And every soul, it passed me by,  
    Like the whizz of my cross-bow!’

## Part IV

‘I fear thee, ancient mariner!  
    I fear thy skinny hand!  
And thou art long, & lank, & brown,  
    As is the ribbed sea-sand.

‘I fear thee and thy glittering eye,  
    And thy skinny hand, so brown.’  
‘Fear not, fear not, thou wedding-guest!  
    This body dropped not down.

‘Alone, alone, all, all alone,  
    Alone on a wide wide sea!  
And never a saint took pity on  
    My soul in agony.

‘The many men, so beautiful!  
    And they all dead did lie:  
And a 1000 1000 slimy things  
    Lived on; and so did I.

'I looked upon the rotting sea,  
And drew my eyes away;  
I looked upon the rotting deck,  
And there the dead men lay.

'I looked to heaven, and tried to pray;  
But or ever a prayer had gushed,  
A wicked whisper came, and made  
My heart as dry as dust.

'I closed my lids, and kept them close,  
And the balls like pulses beat;  
For the sky & the sea, and the sea & the sky  
Lay dead like a load on my weary eye,  
And the dead were at my feet.

'The cold sweat melted from their limbs,  
Nor rot nor reek did they:  
The look with which they looked on me  
Had never passed away.

'An orphan's curse would drag to hell  
A spirit from on high;  
But O more horrible than that  
Is the curse in a dead man's eye!  
Seven days, seven nights, I saw that curse,  
And yet I could not die.

'The moving moon went up the sky,  
And no where did abide:  
Softly she was going up,  
And a star or two beside –

'Her beams bemoaned the sultry main,  
Like april hoar-frost spread;  
But where the ship's huge shadow lay,  
The charmed water burnt alway  
A still & awful red.

'Beyond the shadow of the ship,  
I watched the water-snakes:  
They moved in tracks of shining white,  
And when they reared, the elfish light  
Fell off in hoary flakes.

‘Within the shadow of the ship  
I watched their rich attire:  
Blue, glossy green, and velvet black,  
They coiled & swam; and every track  
Was a flash of golden fire.

‘O happy living things, no tongue  
Their beauty might declare:  
A spring of love gushed from my heart,  
And I blessed them unaware:  
Sure my kind saint took pity on me,  
And I blessed them unaware.

‘The selfsame moment I could pray;  
And from my neck so free  
The albatross fell off, and sank  
Like lead into the sea.

## Part V

‘O sleep, it is a gentle thing,  
Beloved from pole to pole!  
To *Mary* Queen the praise be given!  
She sent the gentle sleep from heaven,  
That slid into my soul.

‘The silly buckets on the deck,  
That had so long remained,  
I dreamt that they were filled with dew;  
And when I awoke, it rained.

‘My lips were wet; my throat was cold;  
My garments all were dank;  
Sure I had drunken in my dreams,  
And still my body drank.

‘I moved, and could not feel my limbs:  
I was so light – almost  
I thought that I had died in sleep,  
And was a blessed ghost.

‘And soon I heard a roaring wind:  
It did not come anear;  
But with its sound it shook the sails,  
That were so thin & sere.

‘The upper air burst into life!  
And a 100 fire-flags sheen,  
To & fro they were hurried about!  
And to & fro, and in & out,  
The wan stars danced between.

‘And the coming wind did roar more loud,  
And the sails did sigh like sedge,  
And the rain poured down from one black cloud;  
The moon was at its edge.

‘The thick black cloud was cleft, and still  
The moon was at its side:  
Like waters shot from some high crag,  
The lightning fell with never a jag,  
A river steep & wide.

‘The loud wind never reached the ship,  
Yet now the ship moved on!  
Beneath the lightning and the moon  
The dead men gave a groan.

‘They groaned; they stirred; they all uprose,  
Nor spake, nor moved their eyes;  
It had been strange, even in a dream,  
To have seen those dead men rise.

‘The helmsman steered, the ship moved on;  
Yet never a breeze up-blew;  
The mariners all ‘gan work the ropes,  
Where they were wont to do;  
They raised their limbs like lifeless tools –  
We were a ghastly crew.

‘The body of my brother’s son  
Stood by me, knee to knee:  
The body & I pulled at one rope,  
But he said nought to me.’

‘I fear thee, ancient mariner!’  
‘Be calm, thou wedding-guest!’  
‘Twas not those souls that fled in pain,  
Which to their corpses came again,  
But a troop of spirits blest:

‘For when it dawned – they dropped their arms,  
And clustered round the mast;  
Sweet sounds rose slowly through their mouths,  
And from their bodies passed.

‘Around, around, flew each sweet sound,  
Then darted to the sun;  
Slowly the sounds came back again,  
Now mixed, now one by one.

‘Sometimes a-dropping from the sky  
I heard the sky-lark sing;  
Sometimes all little birds that are,  
How they seemed to fill the sea and air  
With their sweet jargoning!

‘And now ’twas like all instruments,  
Now like a lonely flute;  
And now it is an angel’s song,  
That makes the heavens be mute.

‘It ceased; yet still the sails made on  
A pleasant noise till noon,  
A noise like of a hidden brook  
In the leafy month of June,  
That to the sleeping woods all night  
Singeth a quiet tune.

‘Till noon we quietly sailed on,  
Yet never a breeze did breathe:  
Slowly & smoothly went the ship,  
Moved onward from beneath.

‘Under the keel nine fathom deep,  
From the land of mist & snow,  
The spirit slid: and it was he  
That made the ship to go.  
The sails at noon left off their tune,  
And the ship stood still also.

‘The sun, right up above the mast,  
Had fixed her to the ocean:  
But in a minute she ’gan stir,  
With a short uneasy motion –

Backwards & forwards ½ her length  
 With a short uneasy motion.

‘Then like a pawing horse let go,  
 She made a sudden bound:  
 It flung the blood into my head,  
 And I fell down in a swoond.

‘How long in that same fit I lay,  
 I have not to declare;  
 But ere my living life returned,  
 I heard and in my soul discerned  
 Two voices in the air.

“‘Is it he?” quoth one, “Is this the man?  
 By him who died on cross,  
 With his cruel bow he laid full low  
 The harmless albatross.

““The spirit who bideth by himself  
 In the land of mist & snow,  
 He loved the bird that loved the man  
 Who shot him with his bow.”

‘The other was a softer voice,  
 As soft as honey-dew:  
 Quoth he, “The man hath penance done,  
 And penance more will do.”

Part VI  
 First Voice

““But tell me! Tell me! Speak again,  
 Thy soft response renewing –  
 What makes that ship drive on so fast?  
 What is the ocean doing?”

Second Voice

““Still as a slave before his lord,  
 The ocean hath no blast;  
 His great bright eye most silently  
 Up to the moon is cast –

““If he may know which way to go;  
 For she guides him smooth or grim.  
 See, brother, see! how graciously  
 She looketh down on him.”

First Voice

“But why drives on that ship so fast,  
Without or wave or wind?”

Second Voice

“The air is cut away before,  
And closes from behind.

“Fly, brother, fly! More high, more high!  
Or we shall be belated:  
For slow & slow that ship will go,  
When the mariner’s trance is abated.”

‘I woke, and we were sailing on  
As in a gentle weather:  
’Twas night, calm night, the moon was high;  
The dead men stood together.

‘All stood together on the deck,  
For a charnel-dungeon fitter:  
All fixed on me their stony eyes,  
That in the moon did glitter.

‘The pang, the curse, with which they died,  
Had never passed away:  
I could not draw my eyes from theirs,  
Nor turn them up to pray.

‘And now this spell was snapped: once more  
I viewed the ocean green,  
And looked far forth, yet little saw  
Of what had else been seen –

‘Like one, that on a lonesome road  
Doth walk in fear & dread,  
And having once turned round walks on,  
And turns no more his head;  
Because he knows, a frightful fiend  
Doth close behind him tread.

‘But soon there breathed a wind on me,  
Nor sound nor motion made:  
Its path was not upon the sea,  
In ripple or in shade.

‘It raised my hair; it fanned my cheek  
Like a meadow-gale of spring –



It mingled strangely with my fears,  
Yet it felt like a welcoming.

‘Swiftly, swiftly flew the ship,  
Yet she sailed softly too:  
Sweetly, sweetly blew the breeze –  
On me alone it blew.

‘O dream of joy, is this indeed  
The light-house top I see?  
Is this the hill? Is this the kirk?  
Is this mine own country?

‘We drifted o’er the harbour-bar,  
And I with sobs did pray –  
“O let me be awake, my God!  
Or let me sleep alway.”

‘The harbour-bay was clear as glass,  
So smoothly it was strewn.  
And on the bay the moonlight lay,  
And the shadow of the moon.

‘The rock shone bright, the kirk no less,  
That stands above the rock:  
The moonlight steeped in silentness  
The steady weathercock.

‘And the bay was white with silent light,  
Till rising from the same,  
Full many shapes, that shadows were,  
In crimson colours came.

‘A little distance from the prow  
Those crimson shadows were:  
I turned my eyes upon the deck –  
O *Christ!* What saw I there!

‘Each corse lay flat, lifeless & flat,  
And, by the holy rood!  
A man all light, a seraph-man,  
On every corse there stood.

‘This seraph-band, each waved his hand:  
It was a heavenly sight!

They stood as signals to the land,  
Each one a lovely light;

‘This seraph-band, each waved his hand,  
No voice did they impart –  
No voice; but O the silence sank  
Like music on my heart.

‘But soon I heard the dash of oars,  
I heard the pilot’s cheer;  
My head was turned perforce away  
And I saw a boat appear.

‘The pilot & the pilot’s boy,  
I heard them coming fast:  
Dear Lord in Hhaven! it was a joy  
The dead men could not blast.

‘I saw a third – I heard his voice:  
It is the hermit good!  
He singeth loud his godly hymns  
That he makes in the wood.  
He’ll shrieve my soul, he’ll wash away  
The albatross’s blood.

Part VII

‘This hermit good lives in that wood  
Which slopes down to the sea.  
How loudly his sweet voice he rears!  
He loves to talk with marineres  
That come from a far country.

‘He kneels at morn, and noon, and eve –  
He hath a cushion plump:  
It is the moss that wholly hides  
The rotted old oak-stump.

‘The skiff-boat neared: I heard them talk,  
“Why, this is strange, I trow!  
Where are those lights so many & fair,  
That signal made but now?”

“‘Strange, by my faith!” the hermit said,  
“And they answered not our cheer!  
The planks looked warped! And see those sails,

How thin they are & sere!  
I never saw aught like to them,  
Unless perchance it were

“Brown skeletons of leaves that lag  
My forest-brook along;  
When the ivy-tod is heavy with snow,  
And the owlet whoops to the wolf below,  
That eats the she-wolf’s young.”

“Dear Lord, it hath a fiendish look —”  
The pilot made reply,  
“I am afeared.” “Push on! Push on!”  
Said the hermit cheerily.

‘The boat came closer to the ship,  
But I nor spake nor stirred;  
The boat came close beneath the ship,  
And straight a sound was heard.

‘Under the water it rumbled on,  
Still louder & more dread:  
It reached the ship; it split the bay;  
The ship went down like lead.

‘Stunned by that loud & dreadful sound,  
Which sky & ocean smote,  
Like one that hath been seven days drowned  
My body lay afloat;  
But swift as dreams, myself I found  
Within the pilot’s boat.

‘Upon the whirl, where sank the ship,  
The boat spun round & round;  
And all was still, save that the hill  
Was telling of the sound.

‘I moved my lips – the pilot shrieked  
And fell down in a fit;  
The holy hermit raised his eyes,  
And prayed where he did sit.

‘I took the oars: the pilot’s boy,  
Who now doth crazy go,

Laughed loud & long, and all the while  
His eyes went to & fro.  
“Ha ha!” quoth he, “Full plain I see,  
The devil knows how to row.”

‘And now, all in my own country,  
I stood on the firm land.  
The hermit stepped forth from the boat,  
And scarcely he could stand.

“O shrieve me! Shrieve me, holy man!”  
The hermit crossed his brow.  
“Say quick,” quoth he, “I bid thee say –  
What manner of man art thou?”

‘Forthwith this frame of mine was wrenched  
With a woeful agony,  
Which forced me to begin my tale;  
And then it left me free.

‘Since then, at an uncertain hour,  
That agony returns:  
And till my ghastly tale is told,  
This heart within me burns.

‘I pass, like night, from land to land;  
I have strange power of speech;  
That moment that his face I see,  
I know the man that must hear me:  
To him my tale I teach.

‘What loud uproar bursts from that door!  
The wedding-guests are there:  
But in the garden-bower the bride  
And bride-maids singing are:  
And hark the little vesper bell,  
Which biddeth me to prayer!

‘O wedding-guest, this soul hath been  
Alone on a wide wide sea:  
So lonely ’twas, that God himself  
Scarce seemèd there to be.

‘O sweeter than the marriage-feast,  
 ’Tis sweeter far to me,  
 To walk together to the kirk  
 With a goodly company!

‘To walk together to the kirk,  
 And all together pray,  
 While each to his great Father bends,  
 Old men, and babes, and loving friends  
 And youths & maidens gay!

‘Farewell, farewell! But this I tell  
 To thee, thou wedding-guest!  
 He prayeth well, who loveth well  
 Both man & bird & beast.

‘He prayeth best, who loveth best  
 All things both great & small;  
 For the dear God who loveth us,  
 He made & loveth all.’

The mariner, whose eye is bright,  
 Whose beard with age is hoar,  
 Is gone: and now the wedding-guest  
 Turned from the bridegroom’s door.

He went like one that hath been stunned,  
 And is of sense forlorn:  
 A sadder & a wiser man,  
 He rose the morrow morn.

## XXI.2.

Razors pain you;  
 Rivers are damp;  
 Acids stain you;  
 And drugs cause cramp.  
 Guns aren’t lawful;  
 Nooses give;  
 Gas smells awful;  
 You might as well live.

---

‘Résumé’, Mrs Dorothy Parker (1893 – 1967), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.  
 Sir Thomas Browne (1605 – 1682), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

**XXI.3.** For the world, I count it not an inn, but an hospital, and a place, not to live, but to die in.

## XXII.

### XXII.1.

The frost performs its secret ministry,  
 Unhelped by any wind. The owlet's cry  
 Came loud – and hark, again, loud as before.  
 The inmates of my cottage, all at rest,  
 Have left me to that solitude, which suits  
 Abstruser musings: save that at my side  
 My cradled infant slumbers peacefully.  
 'Tis calm indeed, so calm that it disturbs  
 And vexes meditation with its strange  
 And extreme silentness. Sea, hill, & wood,  
 This populous village! Sea, & hill, & wood,  
 With all the numberless goings-on of life,  
 Inaudible as dreams! The thin blue flame  
 Lies on my low-burnt fire, and quivers not;  
 Only that film, which fluttered on the grate,  
 Still flutters there, the sole unquiet thing.  
 Methinks, its motion in this hush of nature  
 Gives it dim sympathies with me who live,  
 Making it a companionable form,  
 Whose puny flaps & freaks the idling spirit  
 By its own moods interprets, everywhere  
 Echo or mirror seeking of itself,  
 And makes a toy of thought.

But O how oft,  
 How oft, at school, with most believing mind,  
 Presageful, have I gazed upon the bars,  
 To watch that fluttering stranger, and as oft  
 With unclosed lids, already had I dreamt  
 Of my sweet birth-place, and the old church-tower,  
 Whose bells, the poor man's only music, rang  
 From morn to evening, all the hot fair-day,  
 So sweetly, that they stirred & haunted me  
 With a wild pleasure, falling on mine ear

---

'Frost at Midnight', Samuel Coleridge (1772 – 1834), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. In folklore, the flakes of ash floating up the flue were said to predict the arrival of strangers, and thus Coleridge refers to them as such.

Most like articulate sounds of things to come.  
 So gazed I, till the soothing things, I dreamt,  
 Lulled me to sleep, and sleep prolonged my dreams.  
 And so I brooded all the following morn,  
 Awed by the stern preceptor's face, mine eye  
 Fixed with mock study on my swimming book:  
 Save if the door half opened, and I snatched  
 A hasty glance, and still my heart leaped up,  
 For still I hoped to see the stranger's face,  
 Townsman, or aunt, or sister more beloved,  
 My play-mate when we both were clothed alike.

Dear babe, that sleepest cradled by my side,  
 Whose gentle breathings, heard in this deep calm,  
 Fill up the intersperséd vacancies  
 And momentary pauses of the thought.  
 My babe so beautiful, it thrills my heart  
 With tender gladness, thus to look at thee,  
 And think that thou shalt learn far other lore,  
 And in far other scenes. For I was reared  
 In the great city, pent 'mid cloisters dim,  
 And saw nought lovely but the sky & stars.  
 But thóu, my babe, shalt wander like a breeze  
 By lakes & sandy shores, beneath the crags  
 Of ancient mountain, and beneath the clouds,  
 Which image in their bulk both lakes & shores  
 And mountain crags: so shalt thou see & hear  
 The lovely shapes & sounds intelligible  
 Of that eternal language, which thy God  
 Utters, who from eternity doth teach  
 Himself in all, and all things in himself.  
 Great universal Teacher, he shall mould  
 Thy spirit, and by giving make it ask.

Therefore all seasons shall be sweet to thee,  
 Whether the summer clothe the general earth  
 With greenness, or the redbreast sit & sing  
 Betwixt the tufts of snow on the bare branch  
 Of mossy apple-tree, while the night-thatch  
 Smokes in the sun-thaw; whether the eave-drops fall  
 Heard only in the trances of the blast,  
 Or if the secret ministry of frost

Shall hang them up in silent icicles,  
 Quietly shining to the quiet moon.

## XXII.2.

In the long, sleepless watches of the night,  
     A gentle face – the face of one long dead –  
     Looks at me from the wall, where round its head  
 The night-lamp casts a halo of pale light.  
 Here in this room she died; and soul more white  
     Never through martyrdom of fire was led  
     To its repose; nor can in books be read  
 The legend of a life more benedight.  
 There is a mountain in the distant west  
     That, sun-defying, in its deep ravines  
     Displays a cross of snow upon its side.  
 Such is the cross I wear upon my breast  
     These 18 years, through all the changing scenes  
     And seasons, changeless since the day she died.

**XXII.3.** There was never any thing by the wit of man so well devised,  
 or so sure established, which in continuance of time hath not been corrupted.

## XXIII.

### XXIII.1.

My heart aches, and a drowsy numbness pains  
     My sense, as though of hemlock I had drunk,  
 Or emptied some dull opiate to the drains  
     One minute past, and LETHE-wards had sunk:  
 'Tis not through envy of thy happy lot,  
     But being too happy in thine happiness –  
     That thou, light-winged dryad of the trees  
         In some melodious plot

---

'The Cross of Snow', Prof Henry Longfellow (1807 – 1882), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Prof Longfellow survived both of his wives. The first, Elizabeth, died at twenty-two following a miscarriage. The second, Frances, having given him six children, died in an horrific accident; her dress caught fire while she was sealing envelopes with melted wax, and, although Prof Longfellow heroically tried to smother the flames with his own body, she was burned to death. Naturally, the professor was badly burned himself, which perhaps explains the 'cross of snow... I wear upon my breast'.

Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*.

℞ 'Ode to a Nightingale', John Keats (1795 – 1821), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*. Where the Almanacker gives 'foreign', Palgrave gives 'alien'; 'foreign' is the Almanacker's invention, but 'alien' is an intolerable metrical sin.



Of beechen green, & shadows numberless,  
Singing of summer in full-throated ease.

O for a draught of vintage! that hath been  
Cooled a long age in the deep-delvèd earth,  
Tasting of *Flora* & the country green,  
Dance, & provencal song, & sunburnt mirth!  
O for a beaker full of the warm south,  
Full of the true, the blushful HIPPOCRENE,  
With beaded bubbles winking at the brim,  
And purple-stainèd mouth;  
That I might drink, and leave the world unseen,  
And with thee fade away into the forest dim:

Fade far away, dissolve, and quite forget  
What thou among the leaves hast never known,  
The weariness, the fever, & the fret  
Here, where men sit and hear each other groan;  
Where palsy shakes a few, sad, last gray hairs,  
Where youth grows pale, & spectre-thin, and dies;  
Where but to think is to be full of sorrow  
And leaden-eyed despairs,  
Where beauty cannot keep her lustrous eyes,  
Or new Love pine at them beyond tomorrow.

Away! away! for I will fly to thee,  
Not charioted by *Bacchus* & his pards,  
But on the viewless wings of poesy,  
Though the dull brain perplexes & retards:  
Already with thee! tender is the night,  
And haply the queen-moon is on her throne,  
Clustered around by all her starry fays;  
But here there is no light,  
Save what from heaven is with the breezes blown  
Through verdurous glooms & winding mossy ways.

I cannot see what flowers are at my feet,  
Nor what soft incense hangs upon the boughs,  
But, in embalmèd darkness, guess each sweet  
Wherewith the seasonable month endows  
The grass, the thicket, & the fruit-tree wild;  
White hawthorn, & the pastoral eglantine;  
Fast fading violets covered up in leaves;

And mid-may's eldest child,  
 The coming musk-rose, full of dewy wine,  
 The murmurous haunt of flies on summer eves.

Darkling I listen; and, for many a time  
 I have been ½ in love with easeful death,  
 Called him soft names in many a musèd rhyme,  
 To take into the air my quiet breath;  
 Now more than ever seems it rich to die,  
 To cease upon the midnight with no pain,  
 While thou art pouring forth thy soul abroad  
 In such an ecstasy!  
 Still wouldst thou sing, and I have ears in vain –  
 To thy high requiem become a sod.

Thou wast not born for death, immortal bird!  
 No hungry generations tread thee down;  
 The voice I hear this passing night was heard  
 In ancient days by emperor & clown:  
 Perhaps the selfsame song that found a path  
 Through the sad heart of *Ruth*, when, sick for home,  
 She stood in tears amid the foreign corn;  
 The same that oft-times hath  
 Charmed magic casements, opening on the foam  
 Of perilous seas, in fairy lands forlorn.

Forlorn! The very word is like a bell  
 To toll me back from thee to my sole self!  
 Adieu! The fancy cannot cheat so well  
 As she is fabled to do, deceiving elf.  
 Adieu! Adieu! Thy plaintive anthem fades  
 Past the near meadows, over the still stream,  
 Up the hillside; and now 'tis buried deep  
 In the next valley-glades:  
 Was it a vision, or a waking dream?  
 Fled is that music. Do I wake or sleep?

### XXIII.2.

It was evening all afternoon.  
 It was snowing  
 And it was going to snow.

---

Wallace Stevens (1879 – 1955), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. This is the thirteenth of Stevens's famous "Thirteen Ways of Looking at a Blackbird".

The blackbird sat  
In the cedar-limbs.

**XXIII.3.** Come away; poverty's catching.

## XXIV.

### XXIV.1.

No, no, go not to LETHE, neither twist  
Wolf's-bane, tight-rooted, for its poisonous wine;  
Nor suffer thy pale forehead to be kissed  
By nightshade, ruby grape of *Proserpine*;  
Make not your rosary of yew-berries,  
Nor let the beetle, nor the death-moth be  
Your mournful *Psyche*, nor the downy owl  
A partner in your sorrow's mysteries;  
For shade to shade will come too drowsily,  
And drown the wakeful anguish of the soul.

But when the melancholy fit shall fall  
Sudden from heaven like a weeping cloud,  
That fosters the droop-headed flowers all,  
And hides the green hill in an april shroud;  
Then glut thy sorrow on a morning rose,  
Or on the rainbow of the salt sand-wave,  
Or on the wealth of globèd peonies;  
Or if thy mistress some rich anger shows,  
Emprison her soft hand, and let her rave,  
And feed deep, deep upon her peerless eyes.

She dwells with beauty – beauty that must die;  
And joy, whose hand is ever at his lips  
Bidding adieu; and aching pleasure nigh,  
Turning to poison while the bee-mouth sips:  
Ay, in the very temple of delight  
Veiled melancholy has her sov'reign shrine,  
Though seen of none save him whose strenuous tongue  
Can burst joy's grape against his palate fine;  
His soul shalt taste the sadness of her might,  
And be among her cloudy trophies hung.

---

Mrs Aphra Behn (1640 – 1689), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.  
'Ode on Melancholy', John Keats (1795 – 1821), Palgrave, *The Golden Treasury*.

**XXIV.2.**

Long neglect has worn away  
 Half the sweet enchanting smile;  
 Time has turned the bloom to grey;  
 Mould & damp the face defile.

But that lock of silky hair,  
 Still beneath the picture twined,  
 Tells what once those features were,  
 Paints their image on the mind.

Fair the hand that traced that line,  
 ‘Dearest, ever deem me true’;  
 Swiftly flew the fingers fine  
 When the pen that motto drew.

**XXIV.3.** Proud people breed sad sorrows for themselves.

**XXV.****XXV.1.**

By the waters of BABYLON we sat down and wept  $\wp$  when  
 we remembered thee, O ZION.

As for our harps, we hanged them up  $\wp$  upon the trees that  
 are therein.

For they that led us away captive required of us then a  
 song, and melody in our heaviness:  $\wp$  sing us one of  
 the songs of ZION.

How shall we sing the Lord’s song  $\wp$  in a strange land?  
 If I forget thee, O JERUSALEM,  $\wp$  let my right hand forget  
 her cunning.

Let my tongue cleave to the roof of my mouth, if I do not  
 remember thee;  $\wp$  yea, if I prefer not JERUSALEM in  
 my mirth.

Remember the children of Edom, O Lord,  $\wp$  in the day of  
 JERUSALEM,

How they said, Down with it, down with it,  $\wp$  even to the  
 ground.

---

Miss Emily Brontë (1818 – 1848), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Miss Emily Brontë (1818 – 1848), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

℞ Psalm 137, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, *The Book of Common Prayer*. ¶11. The Almanacker has reversed the order of the clauses in this line. ¶18. The *BCP* gives ‘throweth’ in this line, but the Almanacker prefers the KJV’s ‘dasheth’.

O daughter of BABYLON, wasted with misery, *o* yea, happy  
shall he be that rewardeth thee, as thou hast served  
us.

Blessed shall he be that taketh thy children *o* and dasheth  
them against the stones.

## XXV.2.

The silver swan, who, living, had no note,  
When death approached, unlocked her silent throat.  
Leaning her breast upon the reedy shore,  
Thus sang her first & last, and sang no more:  
Farewell, all joys. O death, come close mine eyes.  
More geese than swans now live, more fools than wise.

**XXV.3.** The tyrant grinds down his slaves and they don't turn against him; they crush those beneath them.

## XXVI.

### XXVI.1.

In the vaulted way, where the passage turned  
To the shadowy corner that none could see,  
You paused for our parting – plaintively:  
Though overnight had come words that burned  
My fond frail happiness out of me.

And then I kissed you – despite my thought  
That our spell must end when reflection came  
On what you had deemed me, whose one long aim  
Had been to serve you; that what I sought  
Lay not in a heart that could breathe such blame.

But yet I kissed you: whereon you again  
As of old kissed me. Why, why was it so?  
Do you cleave to me after that light-tongued blow?  
If you scorned me at eventide, how love then?  
The thing is dark, dear. I do not know.

---

'The Silver Swan', This brief poem was made into a famous madrigal by Orlando Gibbons. The identity of the author of the words is unclear, although it may have been Gibbons himself or his patron Sir Christopher Hatton., Anonymous, Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Miss Emily Brontë (1818 – 1848), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*.

**XXVI.2.**

I look into my glass  
 And view my wasting skin,  
 And say, Would God it came to pass  
 My heart had shrunk as thin!

For then, I, undistressed  
 By hearts grown cold to me,  
 Could lonely wait my endless rest  
 With equanimity.

But time, to make me grieve,  
 Part steals, lets part abide;  
 And shakes this fragile frame at eve  
 With throbbings of noontide.

**XXVI.3.** All men would be tyrants if they could.

**XXVII.****XXVII.1.**

In the black winter morning  
 No light will be struck near my eyes  
 While the clock in the stairway is warning  
 For five, when he used to rise.

*Leave the door unbarred,  
 The clock unwound;  
 Make my lone bed hard;  
 Would 'twere underground!*

When the summer dawns clearly,  
 And the apple tree tops seem alight,  
 Who will undraw the curtain and cheerly  
 Call out that the morning is bright?

When I tarry at market  
 No form will cross Durnover Lea

---

Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Abigail Adams, First Lady of the United States (1744 – 1818), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Stallworthy, *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. ¶16. Grey's Bridge is a bridge over the River Frome just outside of Dorchester, and Durnover Lea is a nearby meadow.

In the gathering darkness, to hark at  
 GREY'S BRIDGE for the pit-pat o' me.

When the supper crock's steaming,  
 And the time is the time of his tread,  
 I shall sit by the fire and wait dreaming  
 In a silence as of the dead.

*Leave the door unbarred,  
 The clock unwound;  
 Make my lone bed hard;  
 Would 'twere underground!*

## XXVII.2.

What passing-bells for these who die as cattle?  
 Only the monstrous anger of the guns.  
 Only the stuttering rifles' rapid rattle  
 Can patter out their hasty orisons.  
 No mockeries now for them; no prayers nor bells;  
 Nor any voice of mourning save the choirs,  
 The shrill, demented choirs of wailing shells;  
 And bugles calling for them from sad shires.

What candles may be held to speed them all?  
 Not in the hands of boys, but in their eyes  
 Shall shine the holy glimmers of good-bys.  
 The pallor of girls' brows shall be their pall;  
 Their flowers the tenderness of patient minds,  
 And each slow dusk a drawing-down of blinds.

**XXVII.3.** You do well to weep as a woman over what you could not defend as a man.

## XXVIII.

### XXVIII.1.

He paused on the sill of a door ajar  
 That screened a lively liquor bar,

---

℞ 'Anthem for Doomed Youth', Wilfred Owen (1893 – 1918), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.

Washington Irving (1783 – 1859), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. Irving attributed this quotation to Ayesha, the mother of Sultan Muhammad XII of Granada (called Boabdil by the Spanish), the last Muslim ruler on the Iberian peninsular.

'The Newcomer's Wife', Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Larkin, *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*.

For the name had reached him through the door  
Of her he had married the week before.

‘We called her the hack of the parade;  
But she was discreet in the games she played;  
If slightly worn, she’s pretty yet,  
And gossips, after all, forget.

‘And he knows nothing of her past;  
I am glad the girl’s in luck at last;  
Such ones, though stale to native eyes,  
Newcomers snatch at as a prize.’

‘Yes, being a stranger he sees her blent  
Of all that’s fresh & innocent,  
Nor dreams how many a love campaign  
She had enjoyed before his reign!’

That night there was the splash of a fall  
Over the slimy harbour-wall:  
They searched, and at the deepest place  
Found him with crabs upon his face.

## XXVIII.2.

Move him into the sun –  
Gently its touch awoke him once,  
At home, whispering of fields  $\frac{1}{2}$ -sown.  
Always it woke him, even in France,  
Until this morning & this snow.  
If anything might rouse him now  
The kind old sun will know.

Think how it wakes the seeds –  
Woke once the clays of a cold star.  
Are limbs, so dear-achieved, are sides  
Full-nerved, still warm, too hard to stir?  
Was it for this the clay grew tall?  
O what made fatuous sunbeams toil  
To break earth’s sleep at all?

**XXVIII.3.** All animals, except man, know that the principal business of life is to enjoy it.

---

‘Futility’, Wilfred Owen (1893 – 1918), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*.  
Samuel Butler (1835 – 1902), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.



## XXIX.

## XXIX.1.

I leant upon a coppice gate  
 When frost was spectre-grey,  
 And winter's dregs made desolate  
 The weakening eye of day.  
 The tangled bine-stems scored the sky  
 Like strings of broken lyres,  
 And all mankind that haunted nigh  
 Had sought their household fires.

The land's sharp features seemed to be  
 The century's corpse outleant,  
 His crypt the cloudy canopy,  
 The wind his death-lament.  
 The ancient pulse of germ & birth  
 Was shrunken hard & dry,  
 And every spirit upon earth  
 Seemed fervourless as I.

At once a voice arose among  
 The bleak twigs overhead  
 In a full-hearted evensong  
 Of joy illimited;  
 An aged thrush, frail, gaunt, & small,  
 In blast-beruffled plume,  
 Had chosen thus to fling his soul  
 Upon the growing gloom.

So little cause for carolings  
 Of such ecstatic sound  
 Was written on terrestrial things  
 Afar or nigh around,  
 That I could think there trembled through  
 His happy good-night air  
 Some blessed hope, whereof he knew  
 And I was unaware.

---

'The Darkling Thrush', Thomas Hardy (1840 – 1928), Stallworthy, *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Hardy began writing this poem on the thirty-first day of December (of the New Style) of 1900.

**XXIX.2.**

And I said to the man who stood at the gate of the year,  
Give me a light that I may tread safely into the unknown.

And he replied:

Go out into the darkness and put your hand into the hand of God.

That shall be to you better than light and safer than a known way.

So I went forth, and finding the hand of God, trod gladly into the night.

And he led me towards the hills & the breaking of day in the lone east.

**XXIX.3.** Then I saw that there was a way to hell, even from the gates of heaven.

---

‘God Knows’, Miss Minnie Haskins (1875 – 1957), Haskins, *The Desert*. The Almanacker has excised all but the first verse. George VI recited the first five lines of this poem in the Royal Christmas Message of 1939.

‘This is the penultimate line of *Pilgrim’s Progress* (or, more precisely, the first part thereof – the second part being a kind of sequel). The remaining prose reads: ‘as well as from the City of Destruction. So I awoke, and behold it was a dream.’, John Bunyan (1628 – 1688), Knowles, *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*.

## CHAPTER 13

# Intercalaris

### I.

#### I.1.

About suffering they were never wrong,  
The Old Masters: how well they understood  
Its human position; how it takes place;  
While someone else is eating or opening a window or just walking dully  
along;  
How, when the agèd are reverently, passionately waiting  
For the miraculous birth, there must always be  
Children who did not specially want it to happen, skating  
On a pond at the edge of the wood:  
They never forgot  
That even the dreadful martyrdom must run its course  
Anyhow in a corner, some untidy spot  
Where the dogs go on with their doggy life and the torturer's horse  
Scratches its innocent behind on a tree.

In *Bruegel's Icarus*, for instance: how everything turns away  
Quite leisurely from the disaster; the ploughman may  
Have heard the splash, the forsaken cry,  
But for him it was not an important failure; the sun shone  
As it had to on the white legs disappearing into the green  
Water; and the expensive delicate ship that must have seen  
Something amazing, a boy falling out of the sky,  
Had somewhere to get to and sailed calmly on.

#### I.2.

Carry her over the water,  
And set her down under a tree,  
Where the culvers white all day & all night

---

<sup>1</sup>'Musée des Beaux Arts', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*. The Musée des Beaux Arts in questions is to be found in Brussels.  
Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*.

And the winds from every  $\frac{1}{4}$   
Sing agreeably, agreeably, agreeably of love.

Put a gold ring on her finger  
And press her close to your heart,  
While the fish in the lake their snapshots take,  
And the frog, that sanguine singer,  
Sings agreeably, agreeably, agreeably of love.

The streets shall flock to your marriage,  
The houses turn round to look,  
The tables & chairs say suitable prayers,  
And the horses drawing your carriage  
Sing agreeably, agreeably, agreeably of love.

**I.3.** Heroes are buried who did not believe in death.

## II.

### II.1.

As I listened from a beach-chair in the shade  
To all the noises that my garden made,  
It seemed to me only proper that words  
Should be withheld from vegetables & birds.

A robin with no christian name ran through  
The robin-anthem which was all it knew,  
While rustling flowers for some third party waited  
To say which pairs, if any, should get mated.

Not one of them was capable of lying;  
There was not one of them which knew that it was dying,  
Or could have with a rhythm or a rhyme  
Assumed responsibility for time.

Let them leave language to their lonely betters  
Who count some days and long for certain letters;  
We, too, make noises when we laugh or weep:  
Words are for those with promises to keep.

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. These are two lines taken from Auden's early poem "Missing".

'Their Lonely Betters', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*.

## II.2.

Control of the passes was, he saw, the key  
 To this new district, but who would get it?  
 He, the trained spy, had walked into the trap  
 For a bogus guide, seduced with the old tricks.

At GREENHEARTH was a fine site for a dam  
 And easy power, had they pushed the rail  
 Some stations nearer. They ignored his wires.  
 The bridges were unbuilt and trouble coming.

The street music seemed gracious now to one  
 For weeks up in the desert. Woken by water  
 Running away in the dark, he often had  
 Reproached the night for a companion  
 Dreamed of already. They would shoot, of course,  
 Parting easily who were never joined.

II.3. There could be no question of living if we did not win.

## III.

## III.1.

For us who, from the moment  
 We are first worlded,  
 Lapse into disarray,

Who seldom know exactly  
 What we are up to,  
 And, as a rule, don't want to,

What a joy to know,  
 Even when we can't see or hear you,  
 That you are around,

Though very few of you  
 Find us worth looking at,  
 Unless we come too close.

---

'The Secret Agent', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*. The text here follows that of the earliest published version. In later editions, Auden amended the final line to read: 'Parting easily two that were never joined.'

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. These words are drawn from two lines of Auden's early poem "Let History Be My Judge".

'Address to the Beasts', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*.

To you all scents are sacred  
Except our smell & those  
We manufacture.

How promptly & ably  
You execute nature's policies,  
And are never

Lured into misconduct  
Except by some unlucky  
Chance imprinting.

Endowed from birth with good manners,  
You wag no snobbish elbows,  
Don't leer,

Don't look down your nostrils,  
Nor poke them into another  
Creature's business.

Your own habitations  
Are cosy & private, not  
Pretentious temples.

Of course, you have to take lives  
To keep your own, but never  
Kill for applause.

Compared with even your greediest,  
How non-U  
Our hunting gentry seem.

Exempt from taxation,  
You have never felt the need  
To become literate,

But your oral cultures  
Have inspired our poets to pen  
Dulcet verses,

And, though unconscious of God,  
Your sung eucharists  
Are more hallowed than ours.

Instinct is commonly said  
 To rule you: I would call it  
 Common sense.

If you cannot engender  
 A genius like *Mozart*,  
 Neither can you

Plague the earth  
 With brilliant sillies like *Hegel*  
 Or clever nasties like *Hobbes*.

Shall we ever become adulated,  
 As you all soon do?  
 It seems unlikely.

Indeed, one balmy day,  
 We might all become  
 Not fossils, but vapour.

Distinct now,  
 In the end we shall join you  
 (How soon all corpses look alike),

But you exhibit no signs  
 Of knowing that you are sentenced.  
 Now, could that be why

We upstarts are often  
 Jealous of your innocence,  
 But never envious.

### III.2.

I woke. You were not there. But as I dressed  
 Anxiety turned to shame, feeling all three  
 Intended one rebuke. For had not each  
 In its own way tried to teach  
 My will to love you that it cannot be,  
 As I think, of such consequence to want  
 What anyone is given, if they want?

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*.  
 This is the last verse of “The Lesson”.

## III.3.

I'm afraid there's many a spectacled sod  
Prefers the BRITISH MUSEUM to God.

## IV.

## IV.1.

I can't imagine anything  
That I would less like to be  
Than a disincarnate spirit,  
Unable to chew or sip  
Or make contact with surfaces  
Or breathe the scents of summer  
Or comprehend speech or music  
Or gaze at what lies beyond.  
No, God has placed me exactly  
Where I'd have chosen to be:  
The sub-lunar world is such fun,  
Where man is male or female  
And gives proper names to all things.

I can, however, conceive  
That the organs nature gave me,  
My ductless glands for instance,  
Slaving 24 hours a day  
With no show of resentment  
To gratify me, their master,  
And keep me in proper shape,  
(Not that I give them their orders;  
I wouldn't know what to yell)  
Dream of another existence  
Than that they have known so far.  
Yes, it could well be that my flesh,  
Is praying for 'him' to die,  
So setting her free to become  
Irresponsible matter.

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

'No, Plato, No', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*.



## IV.2.

No one now imagines you answer idle questions  
 – How long shall I live? How long remain single?  
 Will butter be cheaper? – nor does your shout make  
 Husbands uneasy.

Compared with arias by the great performas  
 Such as the merle, your two-note act is kid-stuff:  
 Our most hardened crooks are sincerely shocked by  
 Your nesting habits.

Science, aesthetics, ethics may huff & puff but they  
 Cannot extinguish your magic: you marvel  
 The commuter as you wondered the savage.  
 Hence, in my diary,

Where I normally enter nothing but social  
 Engagements and, lately, the death of friends, I  
 Scribble year after year when I first hear you,  
 Of a holy moment.

IV.3. One doubts the virtue, one the beauty of his wife.

## V.

## V.1.

If it form the landscape that we, the inconstant ones,  
 Are constantly homesick for, this is chiefly  
 Because it dissolves in water. Mark these rounded slopes  
 With their surface fragrance of thyme and, beneath,  
 A secret system of caves & conduits; hear the springs  
 That spurt out everywhere with a chuckle,  
 Each filling a private pool for its fish and carving  
 Its own little ravine whose cliffs entertain  
 The butterfly & the lizard; examine this region  
 Of short distances & definite places:  
 What could be more like mother or a fitter background  
 For her son, the flirtatious male who lounges  
 Against a rock in the sunlight, never doubting

---

‘Short Ode to the Cuckoo’, Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is a line from Prof Auden’s sonnet “The Ship”.

‘In Praise of Limestone’, Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*.

That for all his faults he is loved; whose works are but  
 Extensions of his power to charm? From weathered outcrop  
 To hill-top temple, from appearing waters to  
 Conspicuous fountains, from a wild to a formal vineyard,  
 Are ingenious but short steps that a child's wish  
 To receive more attention than his brothers, whether  
 By pleasing or teasing, can easily take.

Watch, then, the band of rivals as they climb up & down  
 The steep stone gennels in twos & threes, at times  
 Arm in arm, but never, thank God, in step; or engaged  
 On a shady side of a square at midday in  
 Voluble discourse, knowing each other too well to think  
 There are any important secrets, unable  
 To conceive a god whose temper-tantrums are moral  
 And not to be pacified by a clever line  
 Or a good lay: for, accustomed to a stone that responds,  
 They have never had to veil their faces in awe  
 Of a crater whose blazing fury could not be fixed;  
 Adjusted to the local needs of valleys  
 Where everything can be touched or reached by walking,  
 Their eyes have never looked into infinite space  
 Through the lattice-work of a nomad's comb; born lucky,  
 Their legs have never encountered the fungi  
 And insects of the jungle, the monstrous forms & lives  
 With which we have nothing, we like to think, in common.  
 So, when one of them goes to the bad, the way his mind works  
 Remains comprehensible: to become a pimp  
 Or deal in fake jewellery or ruin a fine tenor voice  
 For effects that bring down the house, could happen to all  
 But the best & the worst of us... That is why, I suppose,  
 The best & worst never stayed here long but sought  
 Immoderate soils where the beauty was not so external,  
 The light less public and the meaning of life  
 Something more than a mad camp. 'Come!' cried the granite wastes,

'How evasive is your humour, how accidental  
 Your kindest kiss, how permanent is death.' (Saints-to-be  
 Slipped away sighing.) 'Come!' purred the clays & gravels,  
 'On our plains there is room for armies to drill; rivers  
 Wait to be tamed and slaves to construct you a tomb  
 In the grand manner: soft as the earth is mankind and both  
 Need to be altered.' (Intendant Caesars rose and

Left, slamming the door.) But the really reckless were fetched  
 By an older colder voice, the oceanic whisper:  
 'I am the solitude that asks & promises nothing;  
 That is how I shall set you free. There is no love;  
 There are only the various envies, all of them sad.

They were right, my dear; all those voices were right  
 And still are; this land is not the sweet home that it looks,  
 Nor its peace the historical calm of a site  
 Where something was settled once & for all: a backward  
 And dilapidated province, connected  
 To the big busy world by a tunnel, with a certain  
 Seedy appeal, is that all it is now? Not quite:  
 It has a worldly duty which in spite of itself  
 It does not neglect, but calls into question  
 All the great powers assume; it disturbs our rights. The poet,  
 Admired for his earnest habit of calling  
 The sun the sun, his mind puzzle, is made uneasy  
 By these marble statues which so obviously doubt  
 His anti-mythological myth; and these gamins,  
 Pursuing the scientist down the tiled colonnade  
 With such lively offers, rebuke his concern for nature's  
 Remotest aspects: I, too, am reproached, for what  
 And how much you know. Not to lose time, not to get caught,  
 Not to be left behind, not – please! – to resemble  
 The beasts who repeat themselves or a thing like water  
 Or stone whose conduct can be predicted, these  
 Are our **Common Prayer**, whose greatest comfort is music  
 Which can be made anywhere, is invisible,  
 And does not smell. In so far as we have to look forward  
 To death as a fact, no doubt we are right: but if  
 Sins can be forgiven, if bodies rise from the dead,  
 These modifications of matter into  
 Innocent athletes & gesticulating fountains,  
 Made solely for pleasure, make a further point:  
 The blessed will not care what angle they are regarded from,  
 Having nothing to hide. Dear, I know nothing of  
 Either, but when I try to imagine a faultless love  
 Or the life to come, what I hear is the murmur  
 Of underground streams, what I see is a limestone landscape.

**V.2.**

Perfection, of a kind, was what he was after,  
 And the poetry he invented was easy to understand;  
 He knew human folly like the back of his hand,  
 As was greatly interested in armies & fleets;  
 When he laughed, respectable senators burst with laughter,  
 And when he cried the little children died in the streets.

**V.3.** Churches alongside brothels testify that faith can pardon natural behaviour.

**VI.****VI.1.**

Ladies & gentlemen, you have made most remarkable  
 Progress, and progress, I agree, is a boon;  
 You have built more automobiles than are parkable,  
 Crashed the sound-barrier, and may very soon  
 Be setting up juke-boxes on the moon:  
 But I beg to remind you that, despite all that,  
 I, death, am & will always be cosmocrat.

Still I sport with the young & daring; at my whim  
 The climber steps upon the rotten boulder;  
 The undertow catches boys as they swim;  
 The speeder steers onto the slippery shoulder:  
 With others I wait until they are older,  
 Before assigning, according to my humour,  
 To one a coronary, to another a tumour.

Liberal my views on religion & race;  
 Tax-posture, credit-rating, social ambition  
 Cut no ice with me. We shall meet face to face  
 Despite the drugs & lies of your physician,  
 The costly euphemisms of the mortician:  
 WESTCHESTER matron and BOWERY bum,  
 Both shall dance with me when I rattle my drum.

---

‘Epitaph on a Tyrant’, Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. These are two lines from Prof Auden’s sonnet “Macao”.

‘Recitative by Death’, Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*.

## VI.2.

The ogre does what ogres can,  
 Deeds quite impossible for man,  
 But one prize is beyond his reach;  
 The ogre cannot master speech.  
 About a subjugated plain,  
 Among its desperate & slain,  
 The ogre stands with hands on hips,  
 While drivel gushes from his lips.

VI.3. And nothing serious can happen here.

## VII.

## VII.1.

On a mid-december day,  
 Frying sausages  
 For myself, I abruptly  
 Felt under fingers  
 Thirty years younger the rim  
 Of a steering-wheel,  
 On my cheek the parching wind  
 Of an august noon,  
 As passenger beside me  
 You as then you were.

Slap across a veg'-growing  
 Alluvial plain  
 We raced in clouds of white dust,  
 And geese fled screaming  
 As we missed them by inches,  
 Making a bee-line  
 For mountains gradually  
 Enlarging eastward,  
 Joyfully certain nightfall  
 Would occasion joy.

---

'August 1968', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*. The Soviet-led invasion of Czechoslovakia occurred in August 1968.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is the last line of Prof Auden's sonnet "Macao".

'Since', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*.

It did. In a flagged kitchen  
 We were served broiled trout  
 And a rank cheese: for a while  
 We talked by the fire,  
 Then, carrying candles, climbed  
 Steep stairs. Love was made  
 Then & there: so halcyoned,  
 Soon we fell asleep  
 To the sound of a river  
 Swabbling through a gorge.

Since then, other enchantments  
 Have blazed & faded,  
 Enemies changed their address,  
 And war made ugly  
 An uncountable number  
 Of unknown neighbours,  
 Precious as us to themselves:  
 But round your image  
 There is no fog, and the earth  
 Can still astonish.

Of what, then, should I complain,  
 Pottering about  
 A neat suburban kitchen?  
 Solitude? Rubbish!  
 It's social enough with real  
 Faces & landscapes  
 For whose friendly countenance  
 I at least can learn  
 To live with obesity  
 And a little fame.

## VII.2.

This lunar beauty  
 Has no history,  
 Is complete & early;  
 If beauty later  
 Bear any feature,

---

'This Lunar Beauty', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. Prof Auden made minor, but semantically helpful, amendments to the punctuation of this poem in later editions.

It had a lover  
And is another.

This like a dream  
Keeps other time,  
And daytime is  
The loss of this;  
For time is inches  
And the heart's changes  
Where ghost has haunted,  
Lost & wanted.

But this was never  
A ghost's endeavour  
Nor, finished this,  
Was ghost at ease;  
And till it pass  
Love shall not near  
The sweetness here  
Nor sorrow take  
His endless look.

**VII.3.** Another time has other lives to live.

## VIII.

### VIII.1.

O what is that sound which so thrills the ear  
Down in the valley drumming, drumming?  
Only the scarlet soldiers, dear,  
The soldiers coming.

O what is that light I see flashing so clear  
Over the distance brightly, brightly?  
Only the sun on their weapons, dear,  
As they step lightly.

O what are they doing with all that gear?  
What are they doing this morning, this morning?

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is the last line of Prof Auden's "Another Time".

'O What Is That Sound', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*. Note that Prof Auden consistently declined to add a question mark to the title of this poem.

Only the usual manoeuvres, dear,  
Or perhaps a warning.

O why have they left the road down there;  
Why are they suddenly wheeling, wheeling?  
Perhaps a change in the orders, dear;  
Why are you kneeling?

O haven't they stopped for the doctor's care;  
Haven't they reined their horses, their horses?  
Why, they are none of them wounded, dear,  
None of these forces.

O is it the parson they want with white hair;  
Is it the parson, is it, is it?  
No, they are passing his gateway, dear,  
Without a visit.

O it must be the farmer who lives so near;  
It must be the farmer so cunning, so cunning.  
They have passed the farm already, dear,  
And now they are running.

O where are you going? Stay with me here!  
Were the vows you swore me deceiving, deceiving.  
No, I promised to love you, dear,  
But I must be leaving.

O it's broken the lock & splintered the door;  
O it's the gate where they're turning, turning;  
Their feet are heavy on the floor  
And their eyes are burning.

## VIII.2.

Pick a quarrel, go to war,  
Leave the hero in the bar;  
Hunt the lion, climb the peak:  
No one guesses you are weak.



## VIII.3.

Any heaven we think it decent to enter  
Must be ptolemaic with ourselves at the centre.

## IX.

## IX.1.

O where are you going? said reader to rider.  
That valley is fatal where furnaces burn;  
Younder's the midden whose odours will madden;  
That gap is the grave where the tall return.

O do you imagine, said fearer to farer,  
That dusk will delay on your path to the pass,  
Your diligent looking discover the lacking  
Your footsteps feel from granite to grass?

O what was that bird?' said horror to hearer.  
Did you see that shape in the twisted trees?  
Behind you swiftly the figure comes softly;  
That spot on your skin is a shocking disease.

Out of this house, said rider to reader;  
Yours never will, said farer to fearer;  
They're looking for you, said hearer to horror  
As he left him there, as he left him there.

## IX.2.

I'm beginning to lose patience  
With my personal relations:  
They are not deep,  
And they are not cheap.

## IX.3. Look if you like, but you will have to leap.

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This couplet was taken from one of the “Shorts” Prof Auden composed around 1940.

‘Epilogue’, Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*. Prof Auden was certainly inspired by the third Child Ballad (“The Fause Knight on the Road”) in writing this poem. It is an epilogue in the sense that it is the final piece in *The Orators*, the most enigmatic of his anthologies.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is a line from Prof Auden’s “Leap Before You Look”.

## X.

## X.1.

Stop all the clocks, cut off the telephone,  
Prevent the dog from barking with a juicy bone,  
Silence the pianos and with muffled drum  
Bring out the coffin, let the mourners come.

Let aeroplanes circle, moaning overhead,  
Scribbling on the sky the message, He is dead;  
Put ~~crêpe~~ bows round the white necks of the public doves;  
Let the traffic policemen wear black cotton gloves.

He was my north, my south, my east & west,  
My working week and my sunday rest,  
My noon, my midnight, my talk, my song;  
I thought that love would last forever: I was wrong.

The stars are not wanted now; put out every one,  
Pack up the moon and dismantle the sun;  
Pour away the ocean and sweep up the wood;  
For nothing now can ever come to any good.

## X.2.

Let us honour if we can  
The vertical man,  
Though we value none  
But the horizontal one.

## X.3. Music is international.

## XI.

## XI.1.

Taller today, we remember similar evenings, evenings,  
Walking together in the windless orchard  
Where the brook runs over the gravel, far from the glacier.

---

‘Funeral Blues’, Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. The terms ‘vertical’ and ‘horizontal’ in this short poem refer to the living and the dead respectively.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is the title of a poem.

‘Taller Today’, Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*. The text here follows that of the earliest published version. In later editions, Auden excised the second and third verses.

Again in the room with the sofa hiding the grate,  
 Look down to the river when the rain is over,  
 See him turn to the window, hearing our last  
 Of Captain *Ferguson*.

It is seen how excellent hands have turned to commonness.  
 One staring too long, went blind in a tower,  
 One sold all his manors to fight, broke through, and faltered.

Nights come bringing the snow, and the dead howl  
 Under the headlands in their windy dwelling  
 Because the Adversary put too easy questions  
 On lonely roads

But happy now, though no nearer each other,  
 We see the farms lighted all along the valley;  
 Down at the mill-shed the hammering stops  
 And men go home.

Noises at dawn will bring  
 Freedom for some, but not this peace  
 No bird can contradict: passing, but is sufficient now  
 For something fulfilled this hour, loved or endured.

### **XI.2.**

These had stopped seeking  
 But went on speaking,  
 Have not contributed,  
 But have diluted.

These ordered light  
 But had no right,  
 And handed on  
 War & a son.

### **XI.3.**

To save your world, you asked this man to die:  
 Would this man, could he see you now, ask why?

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This was Prof Auden's suggestion for an epitaph for a tomb of the unknown soldier.

## XII.

## XII.1.

The piers are pummelled by the waves;  
 In a lonely field the rain  
 Lashes an abandoned train;  
 Outlaws fill the mountain caves.

Fantastic grow the evening gowns;  
 Agents of the Fisc pursue  
 Absconding tax-defaulters through  
 The sewers of provincial towns.

Private rites of magic send  
 The temple prostitutes to sleep;  
 All the literati keep  
 An imaginary friend.

Cerebrotonic *Cato* may  
 Extol the ancient disciplines,  
 But the muscle-bound marines  
 Mutiny for food & pay.

Caesar's double bed is warm  
 While an unimportant clerk  
 Writes, 'I do not like my work,'  
 On a pink official form.

Unendowed with wealth or pity,  
 Little birds with scarlet legs,  
 Sitting on their speckled eggs,  
 Eye each flu-infected city.

Altogether elsewhere, vast  
 Herds of reindeer move across  
 Miles & miles of golden moss,  
 Silently and very fast.

---

'The Fall of Rome', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*. Prof Auden dedicated the poem to Cyril Connolly. Each verse seems to consider a reason frequently given by historians for the collapse of the Roman Empire. In particular, the last verse concerns the following theory: changes in the climate forced the migration of certain species (amongst them, reindeer) on the steppes of Eastern Europe, which in turn forced the migration of those tribes which depended on said species. This led to a chain of tribal migrations, culminating in the barbarian invasions of Late Antiquity which brought about the Empire's demise.

## XII.2.

That night when joy began  
 Our narrowest veins to flush,  
 We waited for the flash  
 Of morning's levelled gun.

But morning let us pass,  
 And day by day relief  
 Outgrows his nervous laugh,  
 Grown credulous of peace,

As mile by mile is seen  
 No trespasser's reproach,  
 And love's best glasses reach  
 No fields but are his own.

XII.3. Hindsight as foresight makes no sense.

## XIII.

## XIII.1.

Time that is intolerant  
 Of the brave & innocent,  
 And indifferent in a week  
 To a beautiful physique,

Worships language and forgives  
 Everyone by whom it lives.;  
 Pardons cowardice, conceit,  
 Lays its honours at their feet.

Time that which this strange excuse  
 Pardoned *Kipling* & his views,  
 And will pardon *Paul Claudel*,  
 Pardons him for writing well.

In the nightmare of the dark  
 All the dogs of Europe bark,

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is a line from Prof Auden's "Secondary Epic".

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*. These lines constitute the third section of Prof Auden's "In Memory of W B Yeats", omitting the first verse. They were written shortly after Yeats's death in 1939.

And the living nations wait,  
Each sequestered in its hate;

Intellectual disgrace  
Stares from every human face,  
And the seas of pity lie  
Locked & frozen in each eye.

Follow, poet, follow right  
To the bottom of the night;  
With your unconstraining voice  
Still persuade us to rejoice;

With the farming of a verse  
Make a vineyard of the curse;  
Sing of human unsuccess  
In a rapture of distress;

In the deserts of the heart  
Let the healing fountain start;  
In the prison of his days  
Teach the free man how to praise.

### XIII.2.

Having abdicated with comparative ease  
And dismissed the greater part of your friends,  
Escaping by submarine  
In a false beard,  $\frac{1}{2}$  hoping the ports were watched,  
You have got here, and it isn't snowing:  
How shall we celebrate your arrival?

### XIII.3. The truest poetry is the most feigning.

## XIV.

### XIV.1.

Who stands, the crux left of the watershed,  
On the wet road between the chafing grass  
Below him sees dismantled washing-floors,  
Snatches of tramline running to a wood,

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. These lines constitute the first verse of “Half Way”.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is the title of one of Prof Auden's poems.

‘The Watershed’, Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

An industry already comatose,  
 Yet sparsely living. A ramshackle engine  
 At CASHWELL raises water; for 10 years  
 It lay in flooded workings until this,  
 Its latter office, grudgingly performed.  
 And, further, here and there, though many dead  
 Lie under the poor soil, some acts are chosen,  
 Taken from recent winters; two there were  
 Cleaned out a damaged shaft by hand, clutching  
 The winch a gale would tear them from; one died  
 During a storm, the fells impassable,  
 Not at his village, but in wooden shape  
 Through long abandoned levels nosed his way  
 And in his final valley went to ground.

Go home, now, stranger, proud of your young stock,  
 Stranger, turn back again, frustrate & vexed:  
 This land, cut off, will not communicate,  
 Be no accessory content to one  
 Aimless for faces rather there than here.  
 Beams from your car may cross a bedroom wall,  
 They wake no sleeper; you may hear the wind  
 Arriving driven from the ignorant sea  
 To hurt itself on pane, on bark of elm  
 Where sap un baffled rises, being spring;  
 But seldom this. Near you, taller than the grass,  
 Ears poise before decision, scenting danger.

#### XIV.2.

A shilling life will give you all the facts:  
     How father beat him, how he ran away,  
 What were the struggles of his youth, what acts  
     Made him the greatest figure of his day;  
 Of how he fought, fished, hunted, worked all night,  
     Though giddy, climbed new mountains; named a sea;  
 Some of the last researchers even write  
     Love made him weep his pints like you & me.  
 With all his honours on, he sighed for one  
     Who, say astonished critics, lived at home;  
     Did little jobs about the house with skill  
     And nothing else; could whistle; would sit still

---

‘Who’s Who’, Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

Or potter round the garden; answered some  
Of his long marvellous letters but kept none.

**XIV.3.** Good poets have a weakness for bad puns.

## XV.

**XV.1.**

Since you are going to begin today  
Let us consider what it is you do.  
You are the one whose part it is to lean,  
For whom it is not good to be alone.  
Laugh warmly turning shyly in the hall  
Or climb with bare knees the volcanic hill,  
Acquire that flick of wrist and after strain  
Relax in your darling's arms like a stone,  
Remembering everything you can confess,  
Making the most of firelight, of hours and fuss;  
But joy is mine not yours – to have come so far,  
Whose cleverest invention was lately fur;  
Lizards my best once who took years to breed,  
Could not control the temperature of blood.  
To reach that shape for your face to assume,  
Pleasure to many and despair to some,  
I shifted ranges, lived epochs handicapped  
By climate, wars, or what the young men kept,  
Modified theories on the types of dross,  
Altered desire and history of dress.  
You in the town now call the exile fool  
That writes home once a year as last leaves fall,  
Think – romans had a language in their day  
And ordered roads with it, but it had to die:  
Your culture can but leave – forgot as sure  
As place-name origins in favorite shire –  
Jottings for stories, some often-mentioned *Jack*,  
And references in letters to a private joke,  
Equipment rusting in unweeded lanes,  
Virtues still advertised on local lines;  
And your conviction shall help none to fly,  
Cause rather a perversion on next floor.

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is a line from Prof Auden's "The Truest Poetry is the Most Feigning".

'Venus Will Now Say a Few Words', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.



Nor even in despair your own, when swiftly  
 Comes general assault on your ideas of safety:  
 That sense of famine, central anguish felt  
 For goodness wasted at peripheral fault,  
 Your shutting up the house and taking prow  
 To go into the wilderness to pray,  
 Means that I wish to leave and to pass on,  
 Select another form, perhaps your son;  
 Though he reject you, join opposing team  
 Be late or early at another time,  
 My treatment will not differ – he will be tipped,  
 Found weeping, signed for, made to answer, topped.  
 Do not imagine you can abdicate;  
 Before you reach the frontier you are caught;  
 Others have tried it and will try again  
 To finish that which they did not begin:  
 Their fate must always be the same as yours,  
 To suffer the loss they were afraid of, yes,  
 Holders of one position, wrong for years.

## XV.2.

It's farewell to the drawing room's mannerly cry,  
 The professor's logical whereto & why,  
 The frock-coated diplomat's polished aplomb,  
 Now matters are settled with gas & with bomb.

**XV.3.** You need not see what someone is doing to know if it is his vocation; you have only to watch his eyes.

## XVI.

### XVI.1.

It is time for the destruction of error.  
 The chairs are being brought in from the garden,  
 The summer talk stopped on that savage coast  
 Before the storms, after the guests & birds:  
 In sanatoriums they laugh less & less,

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is the first verse of Prof Auden's "Danse Macabre".

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. These are three lines from Prof Auden's "Horae Canonicae".

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is the fourth and final section of Auden's "1929", written in the autumn of that year.

Less certain of cure; and the loud madman  
Sinks now into a more terrible calm.

The falling leaves know it, the children,  
At play on the fuming alkali-tip  
Or by the flooded football ground, know it –  
This is the dragon's day, the devourer's:  
Orders are given to the enemy for a time  
With underground proliferation of mould,  
With constant whisper & the casual question,  
To haunt the poisoned in his shunned house,  
To destroy the efflorescence of the flesh,  
To censor the play of the mind, to enforce  
Conformity with the orthodox bone,

With organised fear, the articulated skeleton.  
You whom I gladly walk with, touch,  
Or wait for as one certain of good,  
We know it, we know that love  
Needs more than the admiring excitement of union,  
More than the abrupt self-confident farewell,  
The heel on the finishing blade of grass,  
The self-confidence of the falling root,  
Needs death, death of the grain, our death.  
Death of the old gang; would leave them  
In sullen valley where is made no friend,  
The old gang to be forgotten in the spring,  
The hard bitch and the riding-master,  
Stiff underground; deep in clear lake  
The lolling bridegroom, beautiful, there.

## XVI.2.

They noticed that virginity was needed  
To trap the unicorn in every case,  
But not that, of those virgins who succeeded,  
A high percentage had an ugly face.

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is the first verse of the tenth sonnet in Prof Auden's sequence "The Quest". The rest of the poem, sadly, does not live up the promise of these marvellous first four lines.

**XVI.3.**

Though one cannot always  
 Remember exactly why one has been happy,  
 There is no forgetting that one was.

**XVII.****XVII.1.**

What's in your mind, my dove, my coney?  
 Do thoughts grow like feathers, the dead end of life?  
 Is it making of love or counting of money,  
 Or raid on the jewels, the plans of a thief?

Open your eyes, my dearest dallier;  
 Let hunt with your hands for escaping me;  
 Go through the motions of exploring the familiar;  
 Stand on the brink of the warm white day.

Rise with the wind, my great big serpent;  
 Silence the birds and darken the air;  
 Change me with terror, alive in a moment;  
 Strike for the heart and have me there.

**XVII.2.**

My second thoughts condemn  
 And wonder how I dare  
     To look you in the eye.  
 What right have I to swear  
 Even at one AM  
     To love you till I die?

Earth meets too many crimes  
 For fibs to interest her;  
     If I can give my word,  
 Forgiveness can recur  
 Any number of times  
     In time. Which is absurd.

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. These are the closing words of Prof Auden's "Good-Bye to the Mezzogiorno".

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. The first of Prof Auden's "Five Songs".

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

**Tempus fugit.** Quite.

So finish up your drink.

‘All flesh is grass.’ It is.

But who on earth can think

With heavy heart or light

Of what will come of this?

**XVII.3.** Money cannot buy the fuel of love: but is excellent kindling.

### **XVIII.**

#### **XVIII.1.**

Consider this and in our time  
 As the hawk sees it or the helmeted airman:  
 The clouds rift suddenly – look there  
 At cigarette-end smouldering on a border  
 At the first garden party of the year.  
 Pass on, admire the view of the massif  
 Through plate-glass windows of the SPORT HOTEL;  
 Join there the insufficient units  
 Dangerous, easy, in furs, in uniform  
 And constellated at reserved tables  
 Supplied with feelings by an efficient band  
 Relayed elsewhere to farmers and their dogs  
 Sitting in kitchens in the stormy fens.

Long ago, supreme antagonist,  
 More powerful than the great northern whale  
 Ancient and sorry at life’s limiting defect,  
 In Cornwall, Mendip, or the Pennine moor  
 Your comments on the highborn mining-captains,  
 Found they no answer, made them wish to die  
 - Lie since in barrows out of harm.  
 You talk to your admirers every day  
 By silted harbours, derelict works,  
 In strangled orchard, and the silent comb  
 Where dogs have worried or a bird was shot.  
 Order the ill that they attack at once:  
 Visit the ports and, interrupting  
 The leisurely conversation in the bar  
 Within a stone’s throw of the sunlit water,

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. These words are a haiku from Prof Auden’s “Thanksgiving for a Habitat”.

‘Consider’, Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

Beckon your chosen out. Summon  
 Those handsome and diseased youngsters, those women  
 Your solitary agents in the country parishes;  
 And mobilise the powerful forces latent  
 In soils that make the farmer brutal  
 In the infected sinus, and the eyes of stoats.  
 Then, ready, start your rumour, soft  
 But horrifying in its capacity to disgust  
 Which, spreading magnified, shall come to be  
 A polar peril, a prodigious alarm,  
 Scattering the people, as torn up paper  
 Rags and utensils in a sudden gust,  
 Seized with immeasurable neurotic dread.

Seekers after happiness, all who follow  
 The convolutions of your simple wish,  
 It is later than you think; nearer that day  
 Far other than that distant afternoon  
 Amid rustle of frocks and stamping feet  
 They gave the prizes to the ruined boys.  
 You cannot be away, then, no  
 Not though you pack to leave within an hour,  
 Escaping humming down arterial roads:  
 The date was yours; the prey to fugues,  
 Irregular breathing and alternate ascendancies  
 After some haunted migratory years  
 To disintegrate on an instant in the explosion of mania  
 Or lapse forever into a classic fatigue.

## XVIII.2.

Looking up at the stars, I know quite well  
 That, for all they care, I can go to hell,  
 But on earth indifference is the least  
 We have to dread from man or beast.

How should we like it were stars to burn  
 With a passion for us we could not return?  
 If equal affection cannot be,  
 Let the more loving one be me.

Admirer as I think I am  
 Of stars that do not give a damn,

---

'The More Loving One', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

I cannot, now I see them, say  
I missed one terribly all day.

Were all stars to disappear or die,  
I should learn to look at an empty sky  
And feel its total dark sublime,  
Though this might take me a little time.

**XVIII.3.** No one hears his own remarks as prose.

## **XIX.**

### **XIX.1.**

You are the town & we are the clock.  
We are the guardians of the gate in the rock,  
The two.  
On your left & on your right,  
In the day & in the night,  
We are watching you.

Wiser not to ask just what has occurred  
To them who disobeyed our word;  
To those  
We were the whirlpool, we were the reef,  
We were the formal nightmare, grief  
And the unlucky rose.

Climb up the crane, learn the sailor's words  
When the ships from the islands laden with birds  
Come in.  
Tell your stories of fishing & other men's wives:  
The expansive moments of constricted lives  
In the lighted inn.

But do not imagine we do not know  
Nor that what you hide with such care won't show  
At a glance.  
Nothing is done, nothing is said,  
But don't make the mistake of believing us dead:  
I shouldn't dance.

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907–1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is a line from Prof Auden's "At the Party".

'The Two', Prof Wystan Auden (1907–1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

We're afraid in that case you'll have a fall.  
 We've been watching you over the garden wall  
     For hours.  
 The sky is darkening like a stain;  
 Something is going to fall like rain  
     And it won't be flowers.

When the green field comes off like a lid  
 Revealing what was much better hid:  
     Unpleasant.  
 And look, behind you without a sound  
 The woods have come up and are standing round  
     In deadly crescent.

The bolt is sliding in its groove;  
 Outside the window is the black remov-  
     -er's van.  
 And now with sudden swift emergence  
 Come the hooded women, humpbacked surgeons  
     And the scissor man.

This might happen any day;  
 So be careful what you say  
     And do:  
 Be clean, be tidy, oil the lock,  
 Trim the garden, wind the clock;  
     Remember the two.

## **XIX.2.**

Why thén, why thére,  
 Why thús, we cry, did he die?  
 The heavens are silent.

What he was, he was:  
 What he is fated to become  
 Depends on us.

Remembering his death,  
 How we choose to live  
 Will decide its meaning.

---

'Elegy for JFK', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

When a just man dies,  
Lamentation & praise,  
Sorrow & joy, are one.

**XIX.3.** To some, ill health is a way to be important, others are stoics, a few fanatics who won't feel happy until they are cut open.

## XX.

### XX.1.

Hearing of harvests rotting in the valleys,  
Seeing at end of street the barren mountains,  
Round corners coming suddenly on water,  
Knowing them shipwrecked who were launched for islands,  
We honour founders of these starving cities  
Whose honour is the image of our sorrow,

Which cannot see its likeness in their sorrow  
That brought them desperate to the brink of valleys;  
Dreaming of evening walks through learned cities  
They reined their violent horses on the mountains,  
Those fields like ships to castaways on islands,  
Visions of green to them who craved for water.

They built by rivers and at night the water  
Running past windows comforted their sorrow;  
Each in his little bed conceived of islands  
Where every day was dancing in the valleys  
And all the green trees blossomed on the mountains  
Where love was innocent, being far from cities.

But dawn came back and they were still in cities;  
No marvellous creature rose up from the water;  
There was still gold & silver in the mountains  
But hunger was a more immediate sorrow,

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is a verse from Prof Auden's "The Art of Healing", an elegy for a doctor.

'Paysage Moralisé', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. According to an article by one Harry Eyres, published in the *Financial Times* in 2012: 'The art historian Erwin Panofsky coined the phrase *paysage moralisé* to describe the kind of renaissance painting in which aspects of landscape have moral significance. The example he took was Piero di Cosimo's *The Discovery of Honey by Bacchus*, "where the antithesis between Virtue and Pleasure is symbolised by the contrast between an easy road winding through beautiful country and a steep stony path leading up to a forbidding rock". Panofsky was apparently rather chuffed that his coinage provided W. H. Auden with the title for one of his most anthologised poems'.



Although to moping villagers in valleys  
Some waving pilgrims were describing islands...

‘The gods,’ they promised, ‘visit us from islands,  
Are stalking, head-up, lovely, through our cities;  
Now is the time to leave your wretched valleys  
And sail with them across the lime-green water,  
Sitting at their white sides, forget your sorrow,  
The shadow cast across your lives by mountains.’

So many, doubtful, perished in the mountains,  
Climbing up crags to get a view of islands;  
So many, fearful, took with them their sorrow  
Which stayed them when they reached unhappy cities;  
So many, careless, dived & drowned in water;  
So many, wretched, would not leave their valleys.

It is our sorrow. Shall it melt? Ah water  
Would gush, flush, green these mountains & these valleys,  
And we rebuild our cities, not dream of islands.

## XX.2.

God never makes knots,  
But is expert, if asked to,  
At untying them.

**XX.3.** An adventure it would not have occurred to women to think  
worth while.

## XXI.

### XXI.1.

Now from my window-sill I watch the night,  
The church clock's yellow face, the green pier light  
Burn for a new imprudent year;  
The silence buzzes in my ear;  
The lights of near-by families are out.

Under the darkness nothing seems to stir;  
The lilac bush like a conspirator

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. These words are taken from Prof Auden's "Moon Landing". The correctness of 'worth while' as two separate words in this context is not universally acknowledged.

℞ 'The Watchers', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

Shams dead upon the lawn, and there  
 Above the flagstaff the great bear  
 Hangs as a portent over HELENSBURGH.

O lords of limit, training dark & light  
 And setting a taboo 'twixt left & right,  
 The influential quiet twins  
 From whom all property begins,  
 Look leniently upon us all to-night.

No one has seen you: none can say, 'Of late –  
 Here. You can see the marks. They lay in wait,'  
 But in my thoughts to-night you seem  
 Forms which I saw once in a dream,  
 The stocky keepers of a wild estate.

With guns beneath your arms, in sun & wet,  
 At doorways posted or on ridges set,  
 By cope or bridge we know you there  
 Whose sleepless presences endear  
 Our peace to us with a perpetual threat.

Look not too closely, be not over-quick;  
 We have no invitation, but we are sick,  
 Using the mole's device, the carriage  
 Of peacock or rat's desperate courage,  
 And we shall only pass you by a trick.

Deeper towards the summer the year moves on.  
 What if the starving visionary have seen  
 The carnival within our gates,  
 Your bodies kicked about the streets,  
 We need your power still: use it, that none,

O, from their tables break uncontrollably away,  
 Lunging, insensible to injury,  
 Dangerous in a room or out wild-  
 -ly spinning like a top in the field,  
 Mopping & mowing through the sleepless day.

## XXI.2.

As the poets have mournfully sung,  
 Death takes the innocent young,

The rolling in money,  
 The screamingly funny,  
 And those who are very well hung.

**XXI.3.** Both God and the Accuser speak very softly.

## XXII.

### XXII.1.

At last the secret is out,  
 As it always must come in the end;  
 The delicious story is ripe  
 To tell to the intimate friend;  
 Over the tea-cups & in the square  
 The tongue has its desire;  
 Still waters run deep, my dear;  
 There's never smoke without fire.

Behind the corpse in the reservoir,  
 Behind the ghost on the links,  
 Behind the lady who dances and  
 The man who madly drinks,  
 Under the look of fatigue,  
 The attack of migraine & the sigh  
 There is always another story;  
 There is more than meets the eye.

For the clear voice suddenly singing,  
 High up in the convent wall,  
 The scent of the elder bushes,  
 The sporting prints in the hall,  
 The croquet matches in summer,  
 The handshake, the cough, the kiss,  
 There is always a wicked secret,  
 A private reason for this.

### XXII.2.

A poet's hope: to be,  
 Like some valley cheese,  
 Local, but prized elsewhere.

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. These words are taken from one of Prof Auden's 'Shorts'.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

**XXII.3.** Friendship never ages.**XXIII.****XXIII.1.**

As I walked out one evening,  
 Walking down BRISTOL STREET,  
 The crowds upon the pavement  
 Were fields of harvest wheat.

And down by the brimming river  
 I heard a lover sing  
 Under an arch of the railway:  
 'Love has no ending.

'I'll love you, dear, I'll love you  
 Till China & Africa meet,  
 And the river jumps over the mountain  
 And the salmon sing in the street;

'I'll love you till the ocean  
 Is folded & hung up to dry  
 And the seven stars go squawking  
 Like geese about the sky.

'The years shall run like rabbits,  
 For in my arms I hold  
 The flower of the ages,  
 And the first love of the world.'

But all the clocks in the city  
 Began to whirr & chime:  
 'O let not time deceive you;  
 You cannot conquer time.

'In the burrows of the nightmare  
 Where justice naked is,  
 Time watches from the shadow  
 And coughs when you would kiss.

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is a line from one of Prof Auden's 'Shorts'.

'As I Walked Out One Evening', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. ¶12. The Bristol Street which Prof Auden had in mind is probably the one in Birmingham – and the Birmingham in England, not the one in Alabama. ¶12. This is likely an allusion to Burns's famous love lyric: 'Till a' the seas gang dry, my dear,/ And the rocks melt wi' the sun'.

'In headaches & in worry  
     Vaguely life leaks away,  
 And time will have his fancy  
     To-morrow or to-day.

'Into many a green valley  
     Drifts the appalling snow;  
 Time breaks the threaded dances  
     And the diver's brilliant bow.

'O plunge your hands in water,  
     Plunge them in up to the wrist;  
 Stare, stare in the basin  
     And wonder what you've missed.

'The glacier knocks in the cupboard,  
     The desert sighs in the bed,  
 And the crack in the tea-cup opens  
     A lane to the land of the dead.

'Where the beggars raffle the banknotes  
     And the giant is enchanting to *Jack*,  
 And the lily-white boy is a roarer,  
     And *Jill* goes down on her back.

'O look, look in the mirror,  
     O look in your distress:  
 Life remains a blessing  
     Although you cannot bless.

'O stand, stand at the window  
     As the tears scald & start;  
 You shall love your crooked neighbour  
     With your crooked heart.'

It was late, late in the evening;  
     The lovers they were gone;  
 The clocks had ceased their chiming,  
     And the deep river ran on.

## XXIII.2.

Give me a doctor, partridge-plump,  
 Short in the leg & broad in the rump,

An endomorph with gentle hands  
 Who'll never make absurd demands  
 That I abandon all my vices,  
 Nor pull a long face in a crisis,  
 But with a twinkle in his eye  
 Will tell me that I have to die.

**XXIII.3.** Goodness is timeless.

## **XXIV.**

**XXIV.1.**

Underneath an abject willow,  
 Lover, sulk no more:  
 Act from thought should quickly follow.  
 What is thinking for?  
 Your unique and moping station  
 Proves you cold;  
 Stand up and fold  
 Your map of desolation.

Bells that toll across the meadows  
 From the sombre spire  
 Toll for these unloving shadows  
 Love does not require.  
 All that lives may love; why longer  
 Bow to loss  
 With arms across?  
 Strike and you shall conquer.

Geese in flocks above you flying.  
 Their direction know,  
 Icy brooks beneath you flowing,  
 To their ocean go.  
 Dark & dull is your distraction:  
 Walk then, come,  
 No longer numb  
 Into your satisfaction.

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is the last line in Prof Auden's "Archaeology", and thus the last line in his *Collected Poems*.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

## XXIV.2.

River, sooner or later,  
 All reach some ocean,  
 And in due season all men  
 Arrive at a death bed, but  
 Neither on purpose.

## XXIV.3.

Sad is *Eros*, builder of cities,  
 And weeping anarchic *Aphrodite*.

## XXV.

## XXV.1.

May with its light behaving  
 Stirs vessel, eye & limb,  
 The singular & sad  
 Are willing to recover,  
 And to each swan-delighting river  
 The careless picnics come  
 In living white & red.

Our dead, remote & hooded,  
 In hollows rest, but we  
 From their vague woods have broken,  
 Forests where children meet  
 And the white angel-vampires flit,  
 Stand now with shaded eye,  
 The dangerous apple taken.

The real world lies before us,  
 Brave motions of the young,  
 Abundant wish for death,  
 The pleasing, pleased, haunted:  
 A dying master sinks tormented  
 In his admirers' ring,  
 The unjust walk the earth.

And love that makes impatient  
 Tortoise & roe, that lays

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is a couplet from Prof Auden's "In Memory of Sigmund Freud".

'May', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

The blonde beside the dark,  
 Urges upon our blood,  
 Before the evil & the good  
 How insufficient is  
 Touch, endearment, look.

## XXV.2.

Although you be, as I am, one of those  
 Who feel a christian ought to write in prose,  
 For poetry is magic: born in sin, you  
 May read them to exorcise the gentile in you.

## XXV.3. History marched to the drums of a clear idea.

## XXVI.

### XXVI.1.

Dear, though the night is gone,  
 Its dream still haunts today,  
 That brought us to a room  
 Cavernous, lofty as  
 A railway terminus,  
 And crowded in that gloom  
 Were beds, and we in one  
 In a far corner lay.

Our whisper woke no clocks,  
 We kissed and I was glad  
 At everything you did,  
 Indifferent to those  
 Who sat with hostile eyes  
 In pairs on every bed,  
 Arms round each other's neck,  
 Inert & vaguely sad.

What hidden worm of guilt  
 Or what malignant doubt  
 Am I the victim of,

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This dedication to Christopher Isherwood and Chester Kallman appears at the beginning of at least two collections of Prof Auden's poetry.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is a line from Prof Auden's "Memorial for the City".

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is probably the strongest of Prof Auden's love lyrics. ¶17. Earlier versions give: 'O but what worm of guilt'.



That you then, unabashed,  
 Did what I never wished,  
 Confessed another love;  
 And I, submissive, felt  
 Unwanted and went out?

### XXVI.2.

The emperor's favourite concubine  
 Was in the eunuch's pay.  
 The wardens of the marches turned  
 Their spears the other way.  
 The vases crack; the ladies die;  
 The oracles are wrong.  
 We suck our thumbs or sleep; the show  
 Is gamey & too long.

But – music ho! – at last it comes,  
 The transformation scene:  
 A rather scruffy-looking god  
 Descends in a machine,  
 And, gabbling off his rustic rhymes,  
 Misplacing one or two,  
 Commands the prisoners to walk,  
 The enemies to screw.

### XXVI.3.

History to the defeated  
 May say alas but cannot help nor pardon.

## XXVII.

### XXVII.1.

Only their hands are living, to the wheel attracted,  
 Are moved, as deer trek desperately towards a creek  
 Through the dust & scrub of a desert, or gently,  
 As sunflowers turn to the light,

And, as night takes up the cries of feverish children,  
 The cravings of lions in dens, the loves of dons,

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. These are the last words of Prof Auden's "Spain 1937". He quoted them disapprovingly in the introduction to his *Collected Poems*.

'Casino', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

Gathers them all and remains the night, the  
Great room is full of their prayers.

To a last feast of isolation self-invited,  
They flock, and in a rite of disbelief are joined;  
From numbers all their stars are recreated,  
The enchanted, the worldly, the sad.

Without, calm rivers flow among the wholly living  
Quite near their trysts, and mountains part them, and birds,  
Deep in the greens & moistures of summer,  
Sing towards their work.

But here no nymph comes naked to the youngest shepherd;  
The fountain is deserted; the laurel will not grow;  
The labyrinth is safe but endless, and broken  
Is *Ariadne's* thread,

As deeper in these hands is grooved their fortune: lucky  
Were few, and it is possible that none was loved,  
And what was god-like in this generation  
Was never to be born.

## XXVII.2.

Wishing no harm  
But to be warm,  
These fell asleep  
On the burning heap.

## XXVII.3. We must love one another or die.

## XXVIII.

### XXVIII.1.

He was found by the Bureau of Statistic to be  
One against whom there was no official complaint,  
And all the reports on his conduct agree  
That, in the modern sense of an old-fashioned word, he was a saint,  
For in everything he did he served the Greater Community.

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*.

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Another Time*. This is a line from Prof Auden's "September 1. 1939". He later amended the line to read, 'We must love one another *and* die', and later still omitted the poem altogether from collections of his poems.

'The Unknown Citizen', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. Prof Auden's subtitle: 'To JS/07/M/378 This Marble Monument Is Erected by the State'

Except for the war till the day he retired  
 He worked in a factory and never got fired,  
 But satisfied his employers, Fudge Motors Inc.  
 Yet he wasn't a scab or odd in his views,  
 For his union reports that he paid his dues,  
 (Our report on his union shows it was sound)  
 And our Social Psychology workers found  
 That he was popular with his mates & liked a drink.  
 The press are convinced that he bought a paper every day  
 And that his reactions to advertisements were normal in every way.  
 Policies taken out in his name prove that he was fully insured,  
 And his health card shows he was once in hospital but left it cured.  
 Both Producers Research and High Grade Living declare  
 He was fully sensible to the advantages of the Installment Plan  
 And had every thing necessary to the Modern Man,  
 A phonograph, a radio, a car & a frigidaire.  
 Our research ers into Public Opinion are content  
 That he held the proper opinions for the time of year;  
 When there was peace, he was for peace; when there was war, he went.  
 He was married and added five children to the population,  
 Which our eugenist says was the right number for a parent of his generation,  
  
 And our teachers report that he never interfered with their education.  
 Was he free? Was he happy? The question is absurd:  
 Had anything been wrong, we should certainly have heard.

## XXVIII.2.

Over the heather the wet wind blows.  
 I've lice in my tunic & a cold in my nose.

The rain comes pattering out of the sky,  
 I'm a wall soldier. I don't know why.

The mist creeps over the hard grey stone.  
 My girl's in Tungria; I sleep alone.

*Aulus* goes hanging around her place.  
 I don't like his manners; I don't like his face.

*Piso's* a christian; he worships a fish;  
 There'd be no kissing if he had his wish.

---

'Roman Wall Blues', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. ¶16. The Tungrians were an ancient people within the Roman Empire, who inhabited an ill-defined region centred around the later settlement of Liège.

She gave me a ring but I dived it away;  
I want my girl and I want my pay.

When I'm a veteran with only one eye  
I shall do nothing but look at the sky.

### XXVIII.3.

Those to whom evil is done  
Do evil in return.

### XXIX.

#### XXIX.1.

Generally, reading palms or handwriting or faces  
Is a job of translation, since the kind  
Gentleman often is  
A seducer, the frowning schoolgirl may  
Be dying to be asked to stay;  
But the body of this old lady exactly indicates her mind;

*Rorschach* or *Binet* could not add to what a fool can see  
From the plain fact that she is alive & well;  
For when one is 80  
Even a teeny-weeny bit of greed  
Makes one very ill indeed,  
And a touch of despair is instantaneously fatal:

Whether the town once drank bubbly out of her shoes or whether  
She was a governess with a good name  
In church circles, if her  
Husband spoiled her or if she lost her son,  
Is by this time all one.  
She survived whatever happened; she forgave; she became.

So the painter may please himself; give her an english park,  
Rice-fields in China, or a slum tenement;  
Make the sky light or dark;  
Put green plush behind her or a red brick wall.  
She will compose them all,  
Centering the eye on their essential human element.

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Another Time*. This is a couplet from Prof Auden's "September 1. 1939".

'The Model', Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. Whether Prof Auden had a specific model and/or painting in mind is unclear.

**XXIX.2.**

Look in your heart and see:  
There lies the answer,  
Though the heart like a clever  
Conjuror or dancer  
Deceive you with many  
A curious sleight,  
And motives like stowaways  
Are found too late.

**XXIX.3.** We would rather be ruined than changed

---

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. These lines are a verse from Prof Auden's "The Witnesses".

Prof Wystan Auden (1907 – 1973), Auden, *Collected Poems*. This is a line from the epilogue to Prof Auden's *The Age of Anxiety*.



## **Part 2**

# **Supplementary Material**





## CHAPTER 14

# Ecclesiastes

### I of the month

The words of the Preacher, the son of David, king in Jerusalem.

Vanity of vanities, saith the Preacher, vanity of vanities; all is vanity.

What profit hath a man of all his labour which he taketh under the sun?

One generation passeth away, and another generation cometh: but the earth abideth for ever.

The sun also ariseth, and the sun goeth down, and hasteth to his place where he arose.

The wind goeth toward the south, and turneth about unto the north; it whirleth about continually, and the wind returneth again according to his circuits.

All the rivers run into the sea; yet the sea is not full; unto the place from whence the rivers come, thither they return again.

All things are full of labour; man cannot utter it: the eye is not satisfied with seeing, nor the ear filled with hearing.

The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun.

Is there any thing whereof it may be said, See, this is new? it hath been already of old time, which was before us.

There is no remembrance of former things; neither shall there be any remembrance of things that are to come with those that shall come after.

### II of the month

I the Preacher was king over Israel in Jerusalem.

And I gave my heart to seek and search out by wisdom concerning all things that are done under heaven: this sore travail hath God given to the sons of man to be exercised therewith.

I have seen all the works that are done under the sun; and, behold, all is vanity and vexation of spirit.

That which is crooked cannot be made straight: and that which is wanting cannot be numbered.

### III of the month

I communed with mine own heart, saying, Lo, I am come to great estate, and have gotten more wisdom than all they that have been before me in Jerusalem: yea, my heart had great experience of wisdom and knowledge.

And I gave my heart to know wisdom, and to know madness and folly: I perceived that this also is vexation of spirit.

For in much wisdom is much grief: and he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow.

### IV of the month

I said in mine heart, Go to now, I will prove thee with mirth, therefore enjoy pleasure: and, behold, this also is vanity.

I said of laughter, It is mad: and of mirth, What doeth it?

I sought in mine heart to give myself unto wine, yet acquainting mine heart with wisdom; and to lay hold on folly, till I might see what was that good for the sons of men, which they should do under the heaven all the days of their life.

I made me great works; I builded me houses; I planted me vineyards:

I made me gardens and orchards, and I planted trees in them of all kind of fruits:

I made me pools of water, to water therewith the wood that bringeth forth trees:

I got me servants and maidens, and had servants born in my house; also I had great possessions of great and small cattle above all that were in Jerusalem before me:

☞ I gathered me also silver and gold, and the peculiar treasure of kings and of the provinces: I gat me men singers and women singers, and the delights of the sons of men, concubines very many.

So I was great, and increased more than all that were before me in Jerusalem: also my wisdom remained with me.

And whatsoever mine eyes desired I kept not from them, I withheld not my heart from any joy; for my heart rejoiced in all my labour: and this was my portion of all my labour.

Then I looked on all the works that my hands had wrought, and on the labour that I had laboured to do: and, behold, all was vanity and vexation of spirit, and there was no profit under the sun.

### V of the month

And I turned myself to behold wisdom, and madness, and folly: for what can the man do that cometh after the king? even that which hath been already done.

Then I saw that wisdom excelleth folly, as far as light excelleth darkness.

The wise man's eyes are in his head; but the fool walketh in darkness: and I myself perceived also that one event happeneth to them all.

Then said I in my heart, As it happeneth to the fool, so it happeneth even to me; and why was I then more wise? Then I said in my heart, that this also is vanity.

For there is no remembrance of the wise more than of the fool for ever; seeing that which now is in the days to come shall all be forgotten. And how dieth the wise man? as the fool.

Therefore I hated life; because the work that is wrought under the sun is grievous unto me: for all is vanity and vexation of spirit.

## VI of the month

☞ I hated all my labour which I had taken under the sun: because I should leave it unto the man that shall be after me.

And who knoweth whether he shall be a wise man or a fool? yet shall he have rule over all my labour wherein I have laboured, and wherein I have shewed myself wise under the sun. This is also vanity.

Therefore I went about to cause my heart to despair of all the labour which I took under the sun.

For there is a man whose labour is in wisdom, and in knowledge, and in equity; yet to a man that hath not laboured therein shall he leave it for his portion. This also is vanity and a great evil.

For what hath man of all his labour, and of the vexation of his heart, wherein he hath laboured under the sun?

For all his days are sorrows, and his travail grief; yea, his heart taketh not rest in the night. This is also vanity.

## VII of the month

There is nothing better for a man, than that he should eat and drink, and that he should make his soul enjoy good in his labour. This also I saw, that it was from the hand of God.

For who can eat, or who else can hasten hereunto, more than I?

For God giveth to a man that is good in his sight wisdom, and knowledge, and joy: but to the sinner he giveth travail, to gather and to heap up, that he may give to him that is good before God. This also is vanity and vexation of spirit.

## VIII of the month

To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under the heaven:

A time to be born, and a time to die; a time to plant, and a time to pluck up that which is planted;

A time to kill, and a time to heal; a time to break down, and a time to build up;

A time to weep, and a time to laugh; a time to mourn, and a time to dance;

A time to cast away stones, and a time to gather stones together; a time to embrace, and a time to refrain from embracing;

A time to get, and a time to lose; a time to keep, and a time to cast away;

A time to rend, and a time to sew; a time to keep silence, and a time to speak;

☞ A time to love, and a time to hate; a time for war, and a time for peace.

### IX of the month

What profit hath he that worketh in that wherein he laboureth?

I have seen the travail, which God hath given to the sons of men to be exercised in it.

☞ He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also he hath set eternity in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end.

I know that there is no good in them, but for a man to rejoice, and to do good in his life.

And also that every man should eat and drink, and enjoy the good of all his labour, it is the gift of God.

I know that, whatsoever God doeth, it shall be for ever: nothing can be put to it, nor any thing taken from it: and God doeth it, that men should fear before him.

☞ That which hath been is now; and that which is to be hath already been; and God seeketh again that which is passed away.

### X of the month

And moreover I saw under the sun the place of judgment, that wickedness was there; and the place of righteousness, that iniquity was there.

I said in mine heart, God shall judge the righteous and the wicked: for there is a time there for every purpose and for every work.

I said in mine heart concerning the estate of the sons of men, that God might manifest them, and that they might see that they themselves are beasts.

For that which befalleth the sons of men befalleth beasts; even one thing befalleth them: as the one dieth, so dieth the other; yea, they have all one breath; so that a man hath no preeminence above a beast: for all is vanity.

All go unto one place; all are of the dust, and all turn to dust again.

☞ Who knoweth the spirit of man, whether it goeth upward, and the spirit of the beast, whether it goeth downward to the earth?

Wherefore I perceive that there is nothing better, than that a man should rejoice in his own works; for that is his portion: for who shall bring him to see what shall be after him?

### **XI of the month**

So I returned, and considered all the oppressions that are done under the sun: and behold the tears of such as were oppressed, and they had no comforter; and on the side of their oppressors there was power; but they had no comforter.

Wherefore I praised the dead which are already dead more than the living which are yet alive.

Yea, better is he than both they, which hath not yet been, who hath not seen the evil work that is done under the sun.

### **XII of the month**

Again, I considered all travail, and every right work, that for this a man is envied of his neighbour. This is also vanity and vexation of spirit.

The fool foldeth his hands together, and eateth his own flesh.

Better is an handful with quietness, than both the hands full with travail and vexation of spirit.

### **XIII of the month**

Then I returned, and I saw vanity under the sun.

There is one alone, and there is not a second; yea, he hath neither child nor brother: yet is there no end of all his labour; neither is his eye satisfied with riches; neither saith he, For whom do I labour, and bereave my soul of good? This is also vanity, yea, it is a sore travail.

### **XIV of the month**

Two are better than one; because they have a good reward for their labour.

For if they fall, the one will lift up his fellow: but woe to him that is alone when he falleth; for he hath not another to help him up.

Again, if two lie together, then they have heat: but how can one be warm alone?

And if one prevail against him, two shall withstand him; and a threefold cord is not quickly broken.

### **XV of the month**

Better is a poor and a wise child than an old and foolish king, who will no more be admonished.

For out of prison he cometh to reign; whereas also he that is born in his kingdom becometh poor.

I considered all the living which walk under the sun, with the second child that shall stand up in his stead.

There is no end of all the people, even of all that have been before them: they also that come after shall not rejoice in him. Surely this also is vanity and vexation of spirit.

### **XVI of the month**

Keep thy foot when thou goest to the house of God, and be more ready to hear, than to give the sacrifice of fools: for they consider not that they do evil.

Be not rash with thy mouth, and let not thine heart be hasty to utter any thing before God: for God is in heaven, and thou upon earth: therefore let thy words be few.

For a dream cometh through the multitude of business; and a fool's voice is known by multitude of words.

When thou vowest a vow unto God, defer not to pay it; for he hath no pleasure in fools: pay that which thou hast vowed.

Better is it that thou shouldest not vow, than that thou shouldest vow and not pay.

Suffer not thy mouth to cause thy flesh to sin; neither say thou before the angel, that it was an error: wherefore should God be angry at thy voice, and destroy the work of thine hands?

For in the multitude of dreams and many words there are also divers vanities: but fear thou God.

### **XVII of the month**

If thou seest the oppression of the poor, and violent perverting of judgment and justice in a province, marvel not at the matter: for he that is higher than the highest regardeth; and there be higher than they.

Moreover the profit of the earth is for all: the king himself is served by the field.

He that loveth silver shall not be satisfied with silver; nor he that loveth abundance with increase: this is also vanity.

When goods increase, they are increased that eat them: and what good is there to the owners thereof, saving the beholding of them with their eyes?

The sleep of a labouring man is sweet, whether he eat little or much: but the abundance of the rich will not suffer him to sleep.

There is a sore evil which I have seen under the sun, namely, riches kept for the owners thereof to their hurt.

But those riches perish by evil travail: and he begetteth a son, and there is nothing in his hand.

As he came forth of his mother's womb, naked shall he return to go as he came, and shall take nothing of his labour, which he may carry away in his hand.

And this also is a sore evil, that in all points as he came, so shall he go: and what profit hath he that hath laboured for the wind?

All his days also he eateth in darkness, and he hath much sorrow and wrath with his sickness.

Behold that which I have seen: it is good and comely for one to eat and to drink, and to enjoy the good of all his labour that he taketh under the sun all the days of his life, which God giveth him: for it is his portion.

Every man also to whom God hath given riches and wealth, and hath given him power to eat thereof, and to take his portion, and to rejoice in his labour; this is the gift of God.

For he shall not much remember the days of his life; because God answereth him in the joy of his heart.

### **XVIII of the month**

There is an evil which I have seen under the sun, and it is common among men:

A man to whom God hath given riches, wealth, and honour, so that he wanteth nothing for his soul of all that he desireth, yet God giveth him not power to eat thereof, but a stranger eateth it: this is vanity, and it is an evil disease.

If a man beget an hundred children, and live many years, so that the days of his years be many, and his soul be not filled with good, and also that he have no burial; I say, that an untimely birth is better than he.

For he cometh in with vanity, and departeth in darkness, and his name shall be covered with darkness.

Moreover he hath not seen the sun, nor known any thing: this hath more rest than the other.

Yea, though he live a thousand years twice told, yet hath he seen no good: do not all go to one place?

### **XIX of the month**

All the labour of man is for his mouth, and yet the appetite is not filled.

For what hath the wise more than the fool? what hath the poor, that knoweth to walk before the living?

Better is the sight of the eyes than the wandering of the desire: this is also vanity and vexation of spirit.

☞ Whatsoever hath been, the name thereof was given long ago, and it is known what man is; neither may he contend with him that is mightier than he.

Seeing there be many things that increase vanity, what is man the better?

For who knoweth what is good for man in this life, all the days of his vain life which he spendeth as a shadow? for who can tell a man what shall be after him under the sun?

## XX of the month

A good name is better than precious ointment; and the day of death than the day of one's birth.

It is better to go to the house of mourning, than to go to the house of feasting; for that is the end of all men; and the living will lay it to his heart.

Sorrow is better than laughter: for by the sadness of the countenance the heart is made better.

The heart of the wise is in the house of mourning; but the heart of fools is in the house of mirth.

It is better to hear the rebuke of the wise, than for a man to hear the song of fools.

For as the crackling of thorns under a pot, so is the laughter of the fool: this also is vanity.

☞ Surely oppression maketh a wise man mad; and a bribe destroyeth the heart.

Better is the end of a thing than the beginning thereof: and the patient in spirit is better than the proud in spirit.

Be not hasty in thy spirit to be angry: for anger resteth in the bosom of fools.

Say not thou, What is the cause that the former days were better than these? for thou dost not enquire wisely concerning this.

Wisdom is good with an inheritance: and by it there is profit to them that see the sun.

For wisdom is a defence, and money is a defence: but the excellency of knowledge is, that wisdom giveth life to them that have it.

Consider the work of God: for who can make that straight, which he hath made crooked?

In the day of prosperity be joyful, but in the day of adversity consider: God also hath set the one over against the other, to the end that man should find nothing after him.



**XXI of the month**

All things have I seen in the days of my vanity: there is a just man that perisheth in his righteousness, and there is a wicked man that longeth his life in his wickedness.

Be not righteous over much; neither make thyself over wise: why shouldest thou destroy thyself?

Be not over much wicked, neither be thou foolish: why shouldest thou die before thy time?

It is good that thou shouldest take hold of this; yea, also from this withdraw not thine hand: for he that feareth God shall come forth of them all.

Wisdom strengtheneth the wise more than ten mighty men which are in the city.

For there is not a just man upon earth, that doeth good, and sinneth not.

Also take no heed unto all words that are spoken; lest thou hear thy servant curse thee:

For oftentimes also thine own heart knoweth that thou thyself likewise hast cursed others.

All this have I proved by wisdom: I said, I will be wise; but it was far from me.

That which is far off, and exceeding deep, who can find it out?

I applied mine heart to know, and to search, and to seek out wisdom, and the reason of things, and to know the wickedness of folly, even of foolishness and madness:

And I find more bitter than death the woman, whose heart is snares and nets, and her hands as bands: whoso pleaseth God shall escape from her; but the sinner shall be taken by her.

Behold, this have I found, saith the preacher, counting one by one, to find out the account:

Which yet my soul seeketh, but I find not: one man among a thousand have I found; but a woman among all those have I not found.

Lo, this only have I found, that God hath made man upright; but they have sought out many inventions.

**XXII of the month**

Who is as the wise man? and who knoweth the interpretation of a thing? a man's wisdom maketh his face to shine, and the boldness of his face shall be changed.

I counsel thee to keep the king's commandment, and that in regard of the oath of God.

Be not hasty to go out of his sight: stand not in an evil thing; for he doeth whatsoever pleaseth him.

Where the word of a king is, there is power: and who may say unto him, What doest thou?

Whoso keepeth the commandment shall feel no evil thing: and a wise man's heart discerneth both time and judgment.

Because to every purpose there is time and judgment, therefore the misery of man is great upon him.

For he knoweth not that which shall be: for who can tell him when it shall be?

There is no man that hath power over the spirit to retain the spirit; neither hath he power in the day of death: and there is no discharge in that war; neither shall wickedness deliver those that are given to it.

All this have I seen, and applied my heart unto every work that is done under the sun: there is a time wherein one man ruleth over another to his own hurt.

### **XXIII of the month**

And so I saw the wicked buried, who had come and gone from the place of the holy, and they were forgotten in the city where they had so done: this is also vanity.

Because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily, therefore the heart of the sons of men is fully set in them to do evil.

Though a sinner do evil an hundred times, and his days be prolonged, yet surely I know that it shall be well with them that fear God, which fear before him:

But it shall not be well with the wicked, neither shall he prolong his days, which are as a shadow; because he feareth not before God.

There is a vanity which is done upon the earth; that there be just men, unto whom it happeneth according to the work of the wicked; again, there be wicked men, to whom it happeneth according to the work of the righteous: I said that this also is vanity.

Then I commended mirth, because a man hath no better thing under the sun, than to eat, and to drink, and to be merry: for that shall abide with him of his labour the days of his life, which God giveth him under the sun.

When I applied mine heart to know wisdom, and to see the business that is done upon the earth: (for also there is that neither day nor night seeth sleep with his eyes:)

Then I beheld all the work of God, that a man cannot find out the work that is done under the sun: because though a man labour to seek it out, yet he shall not find it; yea farther; though a wise man think to know it, yet shall he not be able to find it.

**XXIV of the month**

☞ For all this I considered in my heart even to explore all this, that the righteous, and the wise, and their works, are in the hand of God: no man knoweth whether it be love or hatred; all is before them.

All things come alike to all: there is one event to the righteous, and to the wicked; to the good and to the clean, and to the unclean; to him that sacrificeth, and to him that sacrificeth not: as is the good, so is the sinner; and he that sweareth, as he that feareth an oath.

This is an evil among all things that are done under the sun, that there is one event unto all: yea, also the heart of the sons of men is full of evil, and madness is in their heart while they live, and after that they go to the dead.

For to him that is joined to all the living there is hope: for a living dog is better than a dead lion.

For the living know that they shall die: but the dead know not any thing, neither have they any more a reward; for the memory of them is forgotten.

☞ Their love, and their hatred, and their envy, is now perished; neither have they any more a portion for ever in any thing that is done under the sun.

Go thy way, eat thy bread with joy, and drink thy wine with a merry heart; for God now accepteth thy works.

Let thy garments be always white; and let thy head lack no ointment.

Live joyfully with the wife whom thou lovest all the days of the life of thy vanity, which he hath given thee under the sun, all the days of thy vanity: for that is thy portion in this life, and in thy labour which thou takest under the sun.

Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest.

I returned, and saw under the sun, that the race is not to the swift, nor the battle to the strong, neither yet bread to the wise, nor yet riches to men of understanding, nor yet favour to men of skill; but time and chance happeneth to them all.

For man also knoweth not his time: as the fishes that are taken in an evil net, and as the birds that are caught in the snare; so are the sons of men snared in an evil time, when it falleth suddenly upon them.

**XXV of the month**

This wisdom have I seen also under the sun, and it seemed great unto me:

There was a little city, and few men within it; and there came a great king against it, and besieged it, and built great bulwarks against it:

Now there was found in it a poor wise man, and he by his wisdom delivered the city; yet no man remembered that same poor man.

Then said I, Wisdom is better than strength: nevertheless the poor man's wisdom is despised, and his words are not heard.

The words of wise men are heard in quiet more than the cry of him that ruleth among fools.

Wisdom is better than weapons of war: but one sinner destroyeth much good.

## XXVI of the month

Dead flies cause the ointment of the apothecary to send forth a stinking savour: so doth a little folly him that is in reputation for wisdom and honour.

A wise man's heart is at his right hand; but a fool's heart at his left.

Yea also, when he that is a fool walketh by the way, his wisdom faileth him, and he saith to every one that he is a fool.

If the spirit of the ruler rise up against thee, leave not thy place; for yielding pacifieth great offences.

There is an evil which I have seen under the sun, as an error which proceedeth from the ruler:

Folly is set in great dignity, and the rich sit in low place.

I have seen servants upon horses, and princes walking as servants upon the earth.

He that diggeth a pit shall fall into it; and whoso breaketh an hedge, a serpent shall bite him.

Whoso removeth stones shall be hurt therewith; and he that cleaveth wood shall be endangered thereby.

If the iron be blunt, and he do not whet the edge, then must he put to more strength: but wisdom is profitable to direct.

☞ If the serpent bite before it is enchanted, then is there no advantage in the charmer.

The words of a wise man's mouth are gracious; but the lips of a fool will swallow up himself.

The beginning of the words of his mouth is foolishness: and the end of his talk is mischievous madness.

A fool also is full of words: a man cannot tell what shall be; and what shall be after him, who can tell him?

The labour of the foolish wearieth every one of them, because he knoweth not how to go to the city.

Woe to thee, O land, when thy king is a child, and thy princes eat in the morning!

Blessed art thou, O land, when thy king is the son of nobles, and thy princes eat in due season, for strength, and not for drunkenness!

By much slothfulness the building decayeth; and through idleness of the hands the house droppeth through.

A feast is made for laughter, and wine maketh merry: but money answereth all things.

Curse not the king, no not in thy thought; and curse not the rich in thy bedchamber: for a bird of the air shall carry the voice, and that which hath wings shall tell the matter.

### XXVII of the month

Cast thy bread upon the waters: for thou shalt find it after many days.

Give a portion to seven, and also to eight; for thou knowest not what evil shall be upon the earth.

If the clouds be full of rain, they empty themselves upon the earth: and if the tree fall toward the south, or toward the north, in the place where the tree falleth, there it shall be.

He that observeth the wind shall not sow; and he that regardeth the clouds shall not reap.

As thou knowest not what is the way of the spirit, nor how the bones do grow in the womb of her that is with child: even so thou knowest not the works of God who maketh all.

In the morning sow thy seed, and in the evening withhold not thine hand: for thou knowest not whether shall prosper, either this or that, or whether they both shall be alike good.

### XXVIII of the month

Truly the light is sweet, and a pleasant thing it is for the eyes to behold the sun:

But if a man live many years, and rejoice in them all; yet let him remember the days of darkness; for they shall be many. All that cometh is vanity.

Rejoice, O young man, in thy youth; and let thy heart cheer thee in the days of thy youth, and walk in the ways of thine heart, and in the sight of thine eyes: but know thou, that for all these things God will bring thee into judgment.

Therefore remove sorrow from thy heart, and put away evil from thy flesh: for childhood and youth are vanity.

### XXIX of the month

Remember now thy Creator in the days of thy youth, while the evil days come not, nor the years draw nigh, when thou shalt say, I have no pleasure in them;

While the sun, or the light, or the moon, or the stars, be not darkened, nor the clouds return after the rain:

In the day when the keepers of the house shall tremble, and the strong men shall bow themselves, and the grinders cease because they are few, and those that look out of the windows be darkened,

And the doors shall be shut in the streets, when the sound of the grinding is low, and he shall rise up at the voice of the bird, and all the daughters of musick shall be brought low;

☞ Also when they shall be afraid of that which is high, and fears shall be in the way, and the almond tree shall flourish, and the grasshopper shall be a burden, and desire shall fail: because man goeth to his everlasting home, and the mourners go about the streets:

Or ever the silver cord be loosed, or the golden bowl be broken, or the pitcher be broken at the fountain, or the wheel broken at the cistern.

Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was: and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it.

Vanity of vanities, saith the preacher; all is vanity.

### XXX of the month

And moreover, because the preacher was wise, he still taught the people knowledge; yea, he gave good heed, and sought out, and set in order many proverbs.

The preacher sought to find out acceptable words: and that which was written was upright, even words of truth.

The words of the wise are as goads, and as nails fastened by the masters of assemblies, which are given from one shepherd.

And further, by these, my son, be admonished: of making many books there is no end; and much study is a weariness of the flesh.

Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this is the whole duty of man.

For God shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil.

## CHAPTER 15

# The Song of Solomon

### First-day (I, VIII, XV and XXII of the month)

The song of songs, which is Solomon's.

Let him kiss me with the kisses of his mouth: for thy love is better than wine.

Because of the savour of thy good ointments thy name is as ointment poured forth, therefore do the virgins love thee.

☞ Draw me, we will run after thee: the king hath brought me into his chambers: we will be glad and rejoice in thee, we will remember thy love more than wine: rightly do they love thee.

I am black, but comely, O ye daughters of Jerusalem, as the tents of Kedar, as the curtains of Solomon.

Look not upon me, because I am black, because the sun hath looked upon me: my mother's children were angry with me; they made me the keeper of the vineyards; but mine own vineyard have I not kept.

Tell me, O thou whom my soul loveth, where thou feedest, where thou makest thy flock to rest at noon: for why should I be as one that turneth aside by the flocks of thy companions?

If thou know not, O thou fairest among women, go thy way forth by the footsteps of the flock, and feed thy kids beside the shepherds' tents.

I have compared thee, O my love, to a company of horses in Pharaoh's chariots.

Thy cheeks are comely with rows of jewels, thy neck with chains of gold.

We will make thee borders of gold with studs of silver.

While the king sitteth at his table, my spikenard sendeth forth the smell thereof.

A bundle of myrrh is my well-beloved unto me; he shall lie all night betwixt my breasts.

My beloved is unto me as a cluster of camphire in the vineyards of Engedi.

Behold, thou art fair, my love; behold, thou art fair; thou hast doves' eyes.

Behold, thou art fair, my beloved, yea, pleasant: also our bed is green.

The beams of our house are cedar, and our rafters of fir.

### Second-day (II, IX, XVI and XXII of the month)

I am the rose of Sharon, and the lily of the valleys.

As the lily among thorns, so is my love among the daughters.

As the apple tree among the trees of the wood, so is my beloved among the sons. I sat down under his shadow with great delight, and his fruit was sweet to my taste.

He brought me to the banqueting house, and his banner over me was love.

☞ Stay me with flagons, comfort me with apples: for I am sick from love.

His left hand is under my head, and his right hand doth embrace me.

I charge you, O ye daughters of Jerusalem, by the roes, and by the hinds of the field, that ye stir not up, nor awake my love, till he please.

The voice of my beloved! behold, he cometh leaping upon the mountains, skipping upon the hills.

My beloved is like a roe or a young hart: behold, he standeth behind our wall, he looketh forth at the windows, shewing himself through the lattice.

My beloved spake, and said unto me, Rise up, my love, my fair one, and come away.

For, lo, the winter is past, the rain is over and gone;

☞ The flowers appear on the earth; the time of the singing of birds is come, and the voice of the turtle dove is heard in our land;

The fig tree putteth forth her green figs, and the vines with the tender grape give a good smell. Arise, my love, my fair one, and come away.

O my dove, that art in the clefts of the rock, in the secret places of the stairs, let me see thy countenance, let me hear thy voice; for sweet is thy voice, and thy countenance is comely.

Take us the foxes, the little foxes, that spoil the vines: for our vines have tender grapes.

My beloved is mine, and I am his: he feedeth among the lilies.

Until the day break, and the shadows flee away, turn, my beloved, and be thou like a roe or a young hart upon the mountains of Bether.

### Third-day (III, X, XVII and XXIV of the month)

By night on my bed I sought him whom my soul loveth: I sought him, but I found him not.

I will rise now, and go about the city in the streets, and in the broad ways I will seek him whom my soul loveth: I sought him, but I found him not.

The watchmen that go about the city found me: to whom I said, Saw ye him whom my soul loveth?

It was but a little that I passed from them, but I found him whom my soul loveth: I held him, and would not let him go, until I had brought him into my mother's house, and into the chamber of her that conceived me.



I charge you, O ye daughters of Jerusalem, by the roes, and by the hinds of the field, that ye stir not up, nor awake my love, till he please.

Who is this that cometh out of the wilderness like pillars of smoke, perfumed with myrrh and frankincense, with all powders of the merchant?

Behold his bed, which is Solomon's; threescore valiant men are about it, of the valiant of Israel.

They all hold swords, being expert in war: every man hath his sword upon his thigh because of fear in the night.

King Solomon made himself a chariot of the wood of Lebanon.

He made the pillars thereof of silver, the bottom thereof of gold, the covering of it of purple, the midst thereof being paved with love, for the daughters of Jerusalem.

Go forth, O ye daughters of Zion, and behold king Solomon with the crown wherewith his mother crowned him in the day of his espousals, and in the day of the gladness of his heart.

#### **Fourth-day (IV, XI, XVIII and XXV of the month)**

Behold, thou art fair, my love; behold, thou art fair; thou hast doves' eyes within thy locks: thy hair is as a flock of goats, that appear from mount Gilead.

Thy teeth are like a flock of sheep that are even shorn, which came up from the washing; whereof every one bear twins, and none is barren among them.

Thy lips are like a thread of scarlet, and thy speech is comely: thy temples are like a piece of a pomegranate within thy locks.

Thy neck is like the tower of David builded for an armoury, whereon there hang a thousand bucklers, all shields of mighty men.

Thy two breasts are like two young roes that are twins, which feed among the lilies.

Until the day break, and the shadows flee away, I will get me to the mountain of myrrh, and to the hill of frankincense.

Thou art all fair, my love; there is no spot in thee.

Come with me from Lebanon, my spouse, with me from Lebanon: look from the top of Amana, from the top of Shenir and Hermon, from the lions' dens, from the mountains of the leopards.

Thou hast ravished my heart, my sister, my spouse; thou hast ravished my heart with one of thine eyes, with one chain of thy neck.

How fair is thy love, my sister, my spouse! how much better is thy love than wine! and the smell of thine ointments than all spices!

Thy lips, O my spouse, drop as the honeycomb: honey and milk are under thy tongue; and the smell of thy garments is like the smell of Lebanon.

A garden inclosed is my sister, my spouse; a spring shut up, a fountain sealed.

Thy plants are an orchard of pomegranates, with pleasant fruits; camphire, with spikenard,

Spikenard and saffron; calamus and cinnamon, with all trees of frankincense; myrrh and aloes, with all the chief spices:

A fountain of gardens, a well of living waters, and streams from Lebanon.

Awake, O north wind; and come, thou south; blow upon my garden, that the spices thereof may flow out. Let my beloved come into his garden, and eat his pleasant fruits.

### **Fifth-day (V, XII, XIX and XXVI of the month)**

I am come into my garden, my sister, my spouse: I have gathered my myrrh with my spice; I have eaten my honeycomb with my honey; I have drunk my wine with my milk: eat, O friends; drink, yea, drink abundantly, O beloved.

I sleep, but my heart waketh: it is the voice of my beloved that knocketh, saying, Open to me, my sister, my love, my dove, my undefiled: for my head is filled with dew, and my locks with the drops of the night.

I have put off my coat; how shall I put it on? I have washed my feet; how shall I defile them?

☞ My beloved put in his hand by the hole of the door, and my heart was moved for him.

I rose up to open to my beloved; and my hands dropped with myrrh, and my fingers with sweet smelling myrrh, upon the handles of the lock.

I opened to my beloved; but my beloved had withdrawn himself, and was gone: my soul failed when he spake: I sought him, but I could not find him; I called him, but he gave me no answer.

The watchmen that went about the city found me, they smote me, they wounded me; the keepers of the walls took away my veil from me.

☞ I charge you, O daughters of Jerusalem, if ye find my beloved, that ye tell him, that I am sick from love.

What is thy beloved more than another beloved, O thou fairest among women? what is thy beloved more than another beloved, that thou dost so charge us?

My beloved is white and ruddy, the chiefest among ten thousand.

His head is as the most fine gold, his locks are bushy, and black as a raven.

His eyes are as the eyes of doves by the rivers of waters, washed with milk, and fitly set.

His cheeks are as a bed of spices, as sweet flowers: his lips like lilies, dropping sweet smelling myrrh.

His hands are as gold rings set with the beryl: his belly is as bright ivory overlaid with sapphires.

His legs are as pillars of marble, set upon sockets of fine gold: his countenance is as Lebanon, excellent as the cedars.

His mouth is most sweet: yea, he is altogether lovely. This is my beloved, and this is my friend, O daughters of Jerusalem.

### **Sixth-day (VI, XIII, XX and XXVII of the month)**

Whither is thy beloved gone, O thou fairest among women? whither is thy beloved turned aside? that we may seek him with thee.

My beloved is gone down into his garden, to the beds of spices, to feed in the gardens, and to gather lilies.

I am my beloved's, and my beloved is mine: he feedeth among the lilies.

Thou art beautiful, O my love, as Tirzah, comely as Jerusalem, terrible as an army with banners.

Turn away thine eyes from me, for they have overcome me: thy hair is as a flock of goats that appear from Gilead.

Thy teeth are as a flock of sheep which go up from the washing, whereof every one beareth twins, and there is not one barren among them.

As a piece of a pomegranate are thy temples within thy locks.

There are threescore queens, and fourscore concubines, and virgins without number.

My dove, my undefiled is but one; she is the only one of her mother, she is the choice one of her that bare her. The daughters saw her, and blessed her; yea, the queens and the concubines, and they praised her.

Who is she that looketh forth as the morning, fair as the moon, clear as the sun, and terrible as an army with banners?

I went down into the garden of nuts to see the fruits of the valley, and to see whether the vine flourished and the pomegranates budded.

Or ever I was aware, my soul made me like the chariots of Amminadib.

Return, return, O Shulamite; return, return, that we may look upon thee. What will ye see in the Shulamite? As it were the company of two armies.

### **Seventh-day (VII, XIV, XXI and XXVIII of the month)**

How beautiful are thy feet with shoes, O prince's daughter! the joints of thy thighs are like jewels, the work of the hands of a cunning workman.

Thy navel is like a round goblet, which wanteth not liquor: thy belly is like an heap of wheat set about with lilies.

Thy two breasts are like two young roes that are twins.

Thy neck is as a tower of ivory; thine eyes like the fishpools in Heshbon, by the gate of Bathrabbim: thy nose is as the tower of Lebanon which looketh toward Damascus.

Thine head upon thee is like Carmel, and the hair of thine head like purple; the king is held in the galleries.

How fair and how pleasant art thou, O love, for delights!

This thy stature is like to a palm tree, and thy breasts to clusters of grapes.

I said, I will go up to the palm tree, I will take hold of the boughs thereof: now also thy breasts shall be as clusters of the vine, and the smell of thy breath like apples;

And the roof of thy mouth like the best wine for my beloved, that goeth down sweetly, causing the lips of those that are asleep to speak.

I am my beloved's, and his desire is toward me.

Come, my beloved, let us go forth into the field; let us lodge in the villages.

Let us get up early to the vineyards; let us see if the vine flourish, whether the tender grape appear, and the pomegranates bud forth: there will I give thee my loves.

The mandrakes give a smell, and at our gates are all manner of pleasant fruits, new and old, which I have laid up for thee, O my beloved.

### **Eighth-day (XXIX of the month)**

O that thou wert as my brother, that sucked the breasts of my mother! when I should find thee without, I would kiss thee; yea, I should not be despised.

I would lead thee, and bring thee into my mother's house, who would instruct me: I would cause thee to drink of spiced wine of the juice of my pomegranate.

His left hand should be under my head, and his right hand should embrace me.

I charge you, O daughters of Jerusalem, that ye stir not up, nor awake my love, until he please.

Who is this that cometh up from the wilderness, leaning upon her beloved? I raised thee up under the apple tree: there thy mother brought thee forth: there she brought thee forth that bare thee.

Set me as a seal upon thine heart, as a seal upon thine arm: for love is strong as death; jealousy is cruel as the grave: the coals thereof are coals of fire, which hath a most vehement flame.

Many waters cannot quench love, neither can the floods drown it: if a man would give all the substance of his house for love, it would utterly be contemned.

We have a little sister, and she hath no breasts: what shall we do for our sister in the day when she shall be spoken for?

If she be a wall, we will build upon her a palace of silver: and if she be a door, we will inclose her with boards of cedar.

I am a wall, and my breasts like towers: then was I in his eyes as one that found favour.

Solomon had a vineyard at Baalhamon; he let out the vineyard unto keepers; every one for the fruit thereof was to bring a thousand pieces of silver.

My vineyard, which is mine, is before me: thou, O Solomon, must have a thousand, and those that keep the fruit thereof two hundred.

Thou that dwellest in the gardens, the companions hearken to thy voice: cause me to hear it.

Make haste, my beloved, and be thou like to a roe or to a young hart upon the mountains of spices.



## Sources

- 2nd South Carolina String Band. *Hard Road*. 2001.
- *In High Cotton*. 2002.
- *Lightning in a Jar*. 2008.
- *Southern Soldier*. 1997.
- Aeschylus. *Agamemnon*. Ed. by Prof William Goodwin. 1906.
- Albion Band, The. *The Albion Band: Live at the Cambridge Folk Festival*. 1988.
- Animals, The. *The Animals*. 1964.
- Aristotle. *Nicomachean Ethics*. Trans. by The Rev Dr Drummond Chase. 1910.
- *The Politics of Aristotle*. Trans. by Prof Benjamin Jowett. 1885.
- Auden, Prof Wystan. *Another Time*. 1940.
- *Collected Poems*. Ed. by Prof Edward Mendelson. 1991.
- *W H Auden: Poems Selected by John Fuller*. Ed. by John Fuller. 2000.
- Augustine of Hippo, St. *Homilies on the Gospel According to St John, and His First Epistle*. 1849.
- *The Confessions of St Augustine*. Trans. by The Rev Prof William Shedd. 1860.
- Beach Boys, The. *Dumb Angel Rarities, Vol 3*. 2001.
- Blake, William. *Milton: A Poem in Two Books*. 1811.
- *William Blake: Poems selected by James Fenton*. Ed. by Prof James Fenton. 2010.
- Bodleian 17687*. 1840.
- Bodleian 8227*. 1780.
- Braithwaite, Prof William. *The Book of Elizabethan Verse*. 1907.
- Brontë, Miss Emily. *Wuthering Heights*. 1847.
- Bunyan, John. *Pilgrim's Progress*. 1904.
- Burns, Robert. *Complete Poems*. Ed. by Allan Cunningham. 1858.
- Burwell, Carter, ed. *True Grit: Original Motion Picture Soundtrack*. 2010.
- Butler, Samuel. *The Way of All Flesh*. 1904.
- Byron, George Noel, 6th Baron. *The Poems and Dramas of Lord Byron*. 1879.
- Cabin Fever*. 2002.

- Caesar Marcus Aurelius Antoninus Augustus. *The Meditations of the Emperor Marcus Aurelius Antoninus*. Trans. by Prof George Long. 1896.
- Caitlin, Vera Caitlin, Lady. *Testament of Youth*. 1933.
- Campbell, John Campbell, 1st Baron. *The Lives of the Chief Justices of England, Vol II*. 1849.
- Carthy, Martin. *Rigs of the Time: The Best of Martin Carthy*. 1994.
- Child, Prof Francis, ed. *The English and Scottish Popular Ballads*. 1898.
- Collins, John. *Sea Shanties and Songs of the Sea*. 1999.
- Connolly, John. *The Man from Fiddlers' Green*. 2010.
- Copland, Aaron. *Old American Songs, Set 1*. 2009.
- Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, Thomas, ed. *The Book of Common Prayer*. 1662.
- Davidson, Emily and Robert Santelli. *Hard Travelin': The Life and Legacy of Woody Guthrie*. 1999.
- Donegan, Lonnie. *Puttin' on the Style*. 1978.
- *Far Cry: New Dawn*. 2019.
- Father, Son and Friends. *The Black Album*. 2015.
- Fenton, Prof James, ed. *The New Faber Book of Love Poems*. 2006.
- Goldsmith, Oliver. *The Poems and Plays of Oliver Goldsmith*. 1818.
- Hart, Tim. *Folk Songs of Old England, Vol 1*. 1968.
- *Folk Songs of Old England, Vol 2*. 1969.
- Haskins, Miss Minnie. *The Desert*. 1912.
- Hayward, John, ed. *The Penguin Book of English Verse*. 1986.
- Heath-Stubbs, Prof John and David Wright, eds. *The Faber Book of Twentieth Century Verse*. 1953.
- Holden, Anthony and Ben Holden, eds. *Poems that Make Grown Men Cry*. 2014.
- Holloway, Prof John, ed. *The Oxford Book of Local Verses*. 1987.
- Hyde Street Chantey Singers. *Sea Songs and Chanteys*. 2002.
- *Inside Llewyn Davis Soundtrack*. 2013.
- Johnson, James and Robert Burns, eds. *Scots Musical Museum, Vol IV*. 1792.
- Kevin Mayhew Ltd, ed. *Anglican Hymns Old and New*. 2008.
- Killen, Louis. *Assassin's Creed IV: Black Flag*. 2013.
- Kipling, Rudyard. *Collected Poems of Rudyard Kipling*. 1994.
- Knowles, Elizabeth, ed. *The Oxford Dictionary of Quotations*. 2014.
- Larkin, Prof Philip, ed. *The Oxford Book of Twentieth Century English Verse*. 1973.
- Lloyd, Albert and Ewan MacColl. *Blow Boys Blow*. 1957.
- MacColl, Ewan. *The Jacobite Rebellions*. 1962.
- Masefield, Dr John. *The Poems and Plays of John Masefield: Poems*. 1919.
- McCusker, Mrs Kate. *Awkward Annie*. 2007.
- *The Girl Who Couldn't Fly*. 2005.



- *While Mortals Sleep*. 2011.
- McGonagall, Knight of the White Elephant, Burmah, Sir William. *McGonagall: A Selection*. Ed. by Colin Walker. 1998.
- McKusker, Mrs Kate. *Hourglass*. 1997.
- *Little Lights*. 2001.
- *Underneath the Stars*. 2003.
- Moore, Christy and Planxty. *Christy Moore and Friends*. 1980.
- Moorman, Prof Frederic, ed. *Songs of the Ridings*. 1918.
- Newman, Cardinal-Deacon of San Giorgio in Velabro, Saint John, ed. *Lyra Apostolica*. 1836.
- Newton, Rev Dr John and William Cowper. *Olney Hymns*. 1779.
- *O Brother, Where Art Thou? Soundtrack*. 2000.
- Oates, Jackie. *The Spyglass and the Herringbone*. 2015.
- Palgrave, Prof Francis, ed. *The Golden Treasury*. 1861.
- Read, Prof Sir Herbert and Prof Bonamy Dobrée, eds. *The London Book of English Verse*. 1949.
- Ricks, Prof Christopher, ed. *The Oxford Book of English Verse*. 1999.
- *Sailors' Songs and Sea Shanties*. 2004.
- Saint-Clair, Isla. *Highland Songs*. 2004.
- Saltus, Edgar. *Oscar Wilde: An Idler's Impression*. 1917.
- Schmidt, Prof Michael, ed. *The Great Modern Poets*. 2010.
- Shakespeare, William. *The Complete Works of William Shakespeare*. Trans. by Prof William Craig. 1963.
- Springsteen, Bruce. *We Shall Overcome: The Seeger Sessions*. 2006.
- Stallworthy, Prof Jonathan, ed. *The New Penguin Book of Love Poetry*. 2003.
- ed. *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. 2005.
- Stanley, Ralph. *My All and All*. 1997.
- Steeleye Span. *All Around My Hat*. 1975.
- *Commoners Crown*. 1975.
- *Spanning the Years*. 1995.
- Tannahill, Robert. *The Poems and Songs of Robert Tannahill*. Ed. by Robert Sample. 1874.
- Terfel, Bryn. *Simple Gifts*. 2005.
- The Corries. *The Compact Collection*. 2002.
- *The Corries: In Concert*. 1995.
- The Dubliners. *At Their Best*. 2008.
- *Finnegan Wakes*. 1966.
- *Wild Rover*. 1998.
- *The Holy Bible, King James Version*. 1611.
- *The Man Who Would Be King*. 1975.
- The Oldtime Stringband. *Gotta Stop Kickin' My Dog Around*. 2012.
- The Spinners. *The Spinners*. 1994.

The Young Tradition. *The Young Tradition Sampler*. 1970.

Vitruvius Pollo. *The Ten Books on Architecture*. Trans. by Prof Morris Morgan. 1914.

Whall, Captain William. *Ships, Sea Songs and Shanties*. 1913.

Wilde, Oscar. *A House of Pomegranates*. 1891.

— *An Ideal Husband*. 1895.

— *Aristotle at Afternoon Tea: The Rare Oscar Wilde*. Ed. by John Jackson. 1991.

— *Phrases and Philosophies for the Use of the Young*. 1894.

— *The Critic as Artist*. 1891.

— *The Decay of Lying*. 1889.

— *The Epigrams of Oscar Wilde*. Ed. by Alvin Redman. 1952.

— *The Happy Prince and Other Tales*. 1888.

— *Vera*. 1880.

NOTE: I only give here the details of those texts which provided material for the *Almanack* proper. Details of other texts, such as those quoted in the Introduction, are to be found in the relevant footnotes.